THE NEWE TESTAMENT OF OVR LORD IESVS CHRIST.

Faithfully translated out of Greeke.



IMPRINTED AT LONDON by the Deputies of Christopher Barker, Printer to the Queenes most excellent Maiestie.

ANNO 1593.

C.C.

FENIX LIBRARY
NEW YORK

THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS CHRIST ACCORDING to Saint Matthewe.

CHAP. I. 1. *That Ieſus is the Meſſias.* Luke 3.23

THe *booke of the generation of Ieſus Chriſt the ſonne of Dauid, the ſonne of Abraham. 2 * Abraham begat Iſaac. * And Iſaac begat Iacob. And * Iacob begat Iudas and his brethren. 3 * And Iudas begat Phares, and Zara of Thamar. And * Phares begat Eſrom. And Eſrom begat Aram. 4 And Arā begat Aminadab. And Aminadab begat Naaſſon. And Naaſſon begat Salmon. 5 And Salmon begat Booz of Rachab. And * Booz begat Obed of Ruth. And Obed begat Ieſſe. 6 And * Ieſſe begat Dauid the king. And * Dauid the king begat Solomon of her that was *the wife* of Vrias. 7 And * Solomon begat Roboam. And Roboam begat Abia. And Abia begat Aſa. 8 And Aſa begat Ioſaphat. And Ioſaphat begat Ioram. And Ioram begat Hozias. 9 And Hozias begat Ioatham. And Ioatham begat Achaz. And Achaz begat Ezekias. 10 And * Ezekias begat Manaſſes. And Manaſſes begat Amon. And Amon begat Ioſias. 11 And * Ioſias begat Iakim. And Iakim begat Iechonias and his brethrē about the time they were caried away to Babylon. 12 And after they were caried into Babylō, * Iechonias begat Salathiel. And * Salathiel begate

Gen. 21.2 Gen. 25.26 Gen. 29.35 Gene. 38.27 1.Chr. 2.5 Ruth 4.21. 1.Sa. 16.1. 2.Sa. 12.24 1.King. 15.24 2.King. 23.30 1.Chr. 3.15 1.Chr. 3.

gate Zorobabel. 13 And Zorobabel begat Abiud. And Abiud begat Eliacim. And Eliacim begat Azor. 14 And Azor begat Sadoc. And Sadoc begat Achim. And Achim begat Eliud. 15 And Eliud begat Eleazar. And Eleazar begat Matthan. And Matthan begat Iacob. 16 And Iacob begat Ioseph the husband of Mary, of whom was borne IESVS, that is called Christ. 17 So all the generations from Abraham to Dauid, are fourteene generations. And from Dauid vntill they were caried away into Babylon, fourteene generations: and after they were caried away into Babylon vntil Christ, fourteene generations. 18 Now the birth of IESVS Christ was thus. When as his mother Mary was * betrothed to Ioseph, before they came together, she was founde with childe of the holy Ghost. 19 Then Ioseph her husband being a iust man, & not willing to *make her a publike example, was minded to put her away secretly. 20 But whiles he thought these things, behold, the Angel of the Lord appeared vnto him in a dreame, saying, Ioseph the sonne of Dauid, feare not to take Mary thy wife: for that which is conceiued in her, is of the holy Ghost. 21 And shee shall bring foorth a sonne, and thou shalt * call his Name IESVS: for he shall * saue his people from their sinnes. 22 And all this was done that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying, 23 *Behold, a virgine shalbe with childe, and shall beare a sonne, and

and they ſhall call his name Emmanuel, which is
by interpretation, God with vs. 24 Then Ioſeph
being raiſed from ſleepe, did as the Angel of the
Lord had inioyned him, & tooke his wife. 25 But
he knew her not, till ſhe had brought forth her
firſt borne ſonne, & he called his Name IESVS.

CHAP. 2. 1. *The wiſemen worſhip Chriſt.*

WHen * Ieſus the was borne at Beth-leem in Iudea, in the dayes of Herod the king, behold, there came Wiſemen fro the Eaſt to Hieruſalem, ſaying, 2 Where is that king of the Iewes that is borne? for we haue ſeene his ſtarre in the Eaſt & are come to worſhip him. 3 Whe king Herod heard *this*, he was troubled, and all Hieruſalem with him. 4 And gathering together all the chiefe priests, & Scribes of the people, he aſked of them, where Chriſt ſhould be borne. 5 And they ſaid vnto him, At Beth-leem in Iudea: for ſo it is written by the Prophet, 6 And * thou Beth-leem in the land of Iuda, art not the leaſt among the princes of Iuda: for out of thee ſhall come the gouernor that ſhal feede that my people Iſrael. 7 The Herod priuily called ỹ Wiſemen, & diligently enquired of them the time of the ſtarre that appeared, 8 And ſent the to Beth-leem, ſaying, Goe, and ſearch diligently for the babe: & when ye haue ſoũd him, bring me word againe, that I may come alſo, and worſhip him. 9 So when they had heard the king, they departed: and loe, the ſtarre which they had ſeene in the Eaſt, went before them, till it came & ſtood

Luke 2. 6.

Mica. 5. 1. Iohn 7. 42.

ouer *the place* where the babe was. 10 And whē they saw the starre, they reioiced with an exceeding great ioy, 11 And went into the house, and found the babe with Mary his mother, and fell downe, and worshipped him, and opened their treasures, & presented vnto him gifts, *euen* gold, and frankincense, and myrrhe. 12 And after they were warned of God in a dreame, ỹ they should not goe againe to Herod, they returned into their countrey another way. 13 After their departure, behold, the Angel of the Lord appeareth to Ioseph in a dreame, saying, Arise, and take the babe & his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be there til I bring thee word: for Herod wil seeke the babe, to destroy him. 14 So he arose & tooke the babe and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt, 15 And was there vnto the death of Herod, that that might be fulfilled, which is spoken of the Lord by the * Prophet, saying, Out of Egypt haue I called my Sonne. 16 Then Herod, seeing that he was mocked of the Wisemen, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth and slew al the male children that were in Beth-leem, and in all the coastes thereof, from two yere old & vnder, according to the time which he had diligently searched out of the Wisemen. 17 Then was that fulfilled which is spoken by the Prophet Ieremias, saying, 18 In * Rhama was a voice heard, mourning, & weeping, & great howling: Rachel weeping for her children, & would not be comforted, because they were not. 19 And whē

Hosea 11.1.

Jere. 31.15.

Hero

Herod was dead, behold, an Angel of ỹ Lord ap-
peared in a dreame to Ioseph in Egypt, 20 Say-
ing, Arise, & take the babe & his mother, and go
into the land of Israel: for they are dead which
sought the babes life. 21 Then he arose vp, and
tooke the babe & his mother, and came into the
land of Israel. 22 But when he heard that Arche-
laus did reigne in Iudea in stead of his father He-
rod, he was afraid to go thither: yet after he was
warned of God in a dreame, he turned aside into
the parts of Galile, 23 And went and dwelt in a
citie called Nazareth, that it might bee fulfilled
which was spoken by the Prophets, *which was*,
That he should be called a Nazarite.

CHAP. 3. 1. *Iohn Baptists preaching.*

AND * in those daies, Iohn the Baptist came & *Mar.*
preached in the wildernes of Iudea, 2 And 1.4.
said, Repent: for the kingdome of heauen is at *luke*
hand. 3 For this is he of whom it is spoken by 3.3.
the prophet Esaias, saying, * The voice of him ỹ *Esai.*
crieth in the wildernes, Prepare ye the way of 40.3.
the Lord: make his paths straight. 4 And this *mark.*
*Iohn had his garment of camels haire, & a gir- 1.3.
dle of skin about his loines: his meat was also lo- *luke*
custs and wild hony. 5 *Then went out to him 3.4.
Hierusalem & al Iudea, & al the region round a- *Mark*
bout Iordan. 6 And they were baptized of him 1.6.
in Iordan, confessing their sins. 7 Now when he *Mark.*
saw many of the Pharises, & of ỹ Sadduces come 1.5.
to his baptisme, he said vnto them, *O generati- *Chap.*
ons of vipers, who hath forwarned you to flee 12.34.

from the anger to come? 8 Bring forth therfore
fruite worthy amendment of life. 9 And thinke
Iohn. not to say with your selues, * We haue Abrahã
3.9 to our father: for I say vnto you, that God is a-
Luke ble euen of these stones to raise vp children vn-
3.25. to Abraham. 10 And now also is the axe put to
Chap. the roote of the trees: *therfore euery tree which
7.19. bringeth not forth good fruite, is hewen down,
Mar. and cast into the fire. 11 *In deed I baptize you
1.8. with water to amendment of life, but he that cõ-
Luke meth after me, is mightier then I, whose shoes I
3.16. am not worthy to beare: he will baptize you
Iohn. with the holy Ghost, & with fire. 12 Which hath
1.26. his fanne in his hande, and will make cleane his
floore, and gather his wheate into his garner, but
will burne vp the chaffe with vnquenchable
Mar. fire. 13 *Then came Iesus from Galile to Iordan
1.9. vnto Iohn, to be baptized of him. 14 But Iohn
Luke earnestly put him backe, saying, I haue neede to
3.21. be baptized of thee, and comnest thou to mee?
15 Then Iesus answering, said to him, Let be now
for thus it becommeth vs to fulfill all righteous-
nes. So he suffred him. 16 And Iesus when hee
was baptized, came straight out of the water,
And lo, the heauens were opened vnto him, and
Coloss. *Iohn* saw the Spirit of God descending like a
1.13. doue, and lighting vpon him. 17 And loe, a
2.Pet. voice came from heauen, saying, * This is my
1.17. beloued Sonne in whom I am well pleased.

CHAP.

CHAP. 4. 1. *Christ is tempted.*

THen was* Iesus led aside of ỹ Spirit into the wildernes to be tempted of the deuil. 2 And when he had fasted forty daies & forte nights, he was afterward hungry. 3 Then came to him the tempter, & said, If thou be the Sonne of God, cõmand that these stones be made bread. 4 But he answering, said, It is written, *Mã shal not liue by bread only, but by euery worde that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. 5 Then the deuil tooke him vp into the holy citie, & set him on a pinacle of the temple, 6 And said vnto him, If thou be the sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe: for it is written, * that he will giue his angels charge ouer thee, & with their hands they shall lift thee vp, lest at any time thou shouldest dash thy foote against a stone. 7 Iesus said vnto him, It is written againe, * Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. 8 Againe the deuil tooke him vp into an exceeding hie mountaine, & shewed him all the kingdomes of the world, & the glory of them, 9 And said to him, Al these wil I giue thee, if thou wilt fal downe, & worship me. 10 Then said Iesus vnto him, Auoid Satan: for it is writtẽ, *Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, & him only shalt thou serue. 11 *Thẽ the deuil left him: & behold, ỹ angels came, & ministred vnto him. 12 *And whẽ Iesus had heard that Iohn was cõmitted to prison, he returned into Galile, 13 And leauing Nazareth, went & dwelt in Capernaum, which is nere the sea in the borders of Zabulon and

Mat. 1. 12. Luke 4. 1.
Deut. 8. 3.
Psal. 91. 11.
Deut. 6. 16.
Deut. 10. 20.
Mark. 1. 13.
Luke 4. 13.
Mat. 1. 14.

and Nephthalim, 14 That it might be fulfilled which was ſpoken by Eſaias ỹ Prophet, ſaying, 15 *The land of Zabulon, & the land of Nephthalim *by* the way of the ſea, beyond Iordan, Galile of the Gentiles: 16 The people which ſate in darknes, ſaw great light: & to thē which ſate in the region & ſhadow of death, light is riſen vp. 17 ^From that time Ieſus began to preach & to ſay, Amende your liues for the kingdome of heauen is at hand. 18 And Ieſus walking by the ſea of Galile, ſaw two brethren, Simō, which was called Peter, & Andrew his brother, caſting a net into the ſea (for they were fiſhers) 19 *And he ſaid vnto them, Folow me, and I will make you fiſhers of men. 20 And they ſtraightway leauing the nets, folowed him. 21 And when he was gone forth from thence, he ſaw other two brethren, Iames *the ſoune* of Zebedeus, & Iohn his brother in a ſhip with Zebedeus their father, mending their nets, and he called them. 22 And they without tarying, leauing the ſhip, and their father, folowed him. 23 So Ieſus went about all Galile, teaching in their ſynagogues, and preaching the Goſpel of the kingdome, and healing euery ſickenes & euery diſeaſe among the people. 24 And his fame ſpred abroad through all Syria: and they brought vnto him all ſicke people, that were taken with diuers diſeaſes & torments, and them that were poſſeſſed with deuils, and thoſe which were lunatike, & thoſe that had *the* palſie: and he healed them. 25 And there followed him great

Mat. 4.15.
Mar. 1.16.
Luc. 5.27.

great multitudes out of Galile,& Decapolis,and Hierusalem, & Iudea, and from beyond Iordan.

CHAP. 5. 1. *Who are blessed.*

AND when he saw the multitude, he went vp into a mountaine: and when he was set, his disciples came vnto him. 2 And he opened his mouth, & taught them, saying, 3 *Blessed *are* the poore in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heauen. 4 *Blessed *are* they that mourne: for they shalbe comforted. 5 *Blessed *are* the meeke: for they shal inherite the earth. 6 *Blessed *are* they which hunger and thirst for righteousnesse: for they shalbe filled. 7 Blessed *are* the merciful: for they shall obteine mercy. 8 Blessed *are* the *pure in heart: for they shal see God. 9 Blessed *are* the peacemakers: for they shalbe called the children of God. 10 Blessed *are* they *which suffer persecution for righteousnes sake: for theirs is the kingdome of heauen. 11 *Blessed shal ye be when men reuile you, & persecute *you*, and say all maner of euil against you for my sake, falsly. 12 Reioice & be glad, for great is your reward in heauē: for so persecuted they ỹ Prophets which were before you. 13 *Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt haue lost his sauour, wherewith shal it be salted? It is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be troden vnder foot of men. 14 Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill, cannot be hid. 15 * Neither do men light a candle, and put it vnder a bushell, but on a candlestick, and it giueth light vnto all that are in the

Luke 6.20.
Esay 61.2.3.
Psal. 37.11.
Esai. 65.13.
Psal. 24.4.
1.*Cor.* 14.33.
Acts 5.41.
1.*pet.* 4.14.
Mat. 5.13.
luke 14.34.
Mat. 4.21.
luke 8.16.

t. the house. 15 * Let your light so shine before
2. men, ỹ they may see your good workes, & glo-
rifie your Father which is in heauen 17 Thinke
not that I am come to destroy the Lawe, or the
Prophets. I am not come to destroy them, but to
ke fulfill them 18 *For truely I say vnto you, Till
6.17 heauen and earth perish, one iote or one title of
the Law shal not scape, till al things be fulfilled.
m. 19 *Whosoeuer therefore shall breake one of
10. these least commandements, & teache men so,
he shalbe called the least in ỹ kingdome of hea-
uen: but whosoeuer shal obserue & teach them,
the same shalbe called great in ỹ kingdome of
heauen. 20 For I say vnto you, except your
ke righteousnes *exceede the righteousnes of the
.39 Scribes & Pharises, ye shal not enter into ỹ king-
dome of heauen. 21 Ye haue heard that it was
od. said vnto them of the old time, *Thou shalt not
.13 kill: for whosoeuer killeth, shall be culpable of
us. iudgement. 22 But I say vnto you, whosoeuer is
17. angry with his brother vnaduisedly, shalbe cul-
pable of iudgement. And whosoeuer saith vnto
his brother, Raca, shalbe worthy to be punished
by the Councel. And whosoeuer shal say, Foole,
shalbe worthy to be punished w̄ hell fire. 23 If
then thou bring thy gift to the altar, & there re-
membrest ỹ thy brother hath ought against thee,
24 Leaue there thine offering before the altar,
and goe thy way: First be reconciled to thy bro-
he ther, & then come and offer thy gift. 25 *Agree
.58 with thine aduersarie quickly, whiles thou art in

the

the way with him, least thine aduersary deliuer thee to ỹ iudge, & the Iudge deliuer thee to the sergeant, & thou be cast into prison. 26 Verely I say vnto thee, thou shalt not come out thence, til thou hast payed the vtmost farthing. 27 Ye haue heard that it was said to them of old time, *Thou shalt not cõmit adultery. 28 But I say vnto you, that whosoeuer looketh on a womã to lust after her, hath cõmitted adultery ẅ her already in his heart. 29 *Wherfore if thy right eye cause thee to offend, plucke it out, and cast it frõ thee: for better it is for thee, that one of thy members perish, then that thy whole body should be cast into hell. 30 Also if thy right hand make thee to offend, cut it off, and cast it frõ thee: for better it is for thee that one of thy members perish, then that thy whole body should bee cast into hell. 31 It hath bin said also, *Whosoeuer shal put away his wife, let him giue her a bill of diuorcement. 32 But I say vnto you, whosoeuer shal put away his wife, (except it be for fornication) causeth her to cõmit adultery: and whosoeuer shall marry her that is diuorced, cõmitteth adultery. 33 Againe, ye haue heard that it was said to them of old time, *Thou shalt not forsweare thy selfe, but shalt performe thine othes to the Lorde. 34 But I say vnto you, Sweare not at all neither by heauen, for it is the throne of God: 35 Nor yet by the earth: for it is his footstoole: neither by Ierusalem: for it is the citie of the great king. 35 Neither shalt thou sweare by thine head, because

Exo. 20.
Chap. 13.
Chap. 18.
mat. 9.47.
Chap. 19.
deut. 24.1.
mat. 10.4.
Exo. 20.7.
leuit. 19.12.
deut. 5.11.

canse thou canst not make one haire white or
Iam. black. 37 *But let your cõmunicatiõ be yea, yea:
5.12. nay, nay. For whatsoeuer is more then these, com-
meth of euil. 38 Ye haue heard ỹ it hath bin said,
Exod. An *eye for an eye, & a tooth for a tooth. 39 But
21.24 I say vnto you, * Resist not euil: but whosoeuer
Luke shal smite thee on thy right cheeke, turne to him
6.29. the other also. 40 And if any man wil sue thee at
Rom. the law, & take away thy coate, let him haue thy
12.17. cloke also. 41 And whosoeuer wil compel thee
Deut. *to go* a mile, go w̃ him twaine. 42 * Giue to him
15.18. that asketh, and frõ him ỹ would borow of thee,
turne not away. 43 Ye haue heard ỹ it hath bin
Leui. said, * Thou shalt loue thy neighbor, & hate thine
19.18. enemy. 44 But I say vnto you, * Loue your ene-
Luke mies: blesse them ỹ curse you: do good to them
6.27. that hate you, * & pray for them which hurt you
Luke and persecute you, 45 * That ye may be the chil-
23.34. dren of your Father that is in heauen: for he ma-
Luke keth his sunne to arise on the euil, and the good:
6.35. and sendeth raine on the iust & vniust. 46 For
if ye loue them which loue you, what rewarde
shal yee haue? Do not ỹ Publicans eũe the same?
47 And if ye be friendly to your brethren only,
what singular thing do ye? do not euen the Pub-
licanes likewise? 48 Ye shal therefore be perfit,
as your Father which is in heauen, is perfit.

CHAP. 6. 14. *Of forgiuing our brother.*

TAke heed ỹ ye giue not your almes before
men, to be seene of them, or els ye shal haue
no rewarde of your Father which is in heauen.

2 * There-

2 *Therfore when thou giueſt thine almes, thou
ſhalt not make a trumpet to bee blowen before
thee, as the hypocrits do in the Synagogues and
in the ſtreets, to be praiſed of men. Verely I ſay
vnto you, they haue their rewarde. 3 But when
thou doſt thine almes, let not thy left hand know
what thy right hand doeth. 4 That thine almes
may be in ſecret, & thy Father ỹ ſeeth in ſecret,
he wil reward thee openly. 5 And when thou
prayeſt, be not as the hypocrits: for they loue to
ſtand, and pray in the Synagogues, & in the cor-
ners of the ſtreetes becauſe they would be ſeene
of men. Verely I ſay vnto you, they haue their
reward. 6 But when thou prayeſt, enter into thy
chāber: and whē thou haſt ſhut thy doore, pray
vnto thy Father which is in ſecret, and thy father
which ſeeth in ſecret, ſhall reward thee openly.
7 Alſo when ye pray, vſe no vaine repetitions as
the heathen: for they thinke to be heard for their
much babbling. 8 Be ye not like them therfore.
For your Father knoweth wherof ye haue nerd
before ye aſke of him. 9 After this maner there-
fore pray ye, * Our Father which art in heauen,
halowed be thy name. 10 Thy kingdom come.
Thy wil be done euen in earth, as it is in heauen.
11 Giue vs this day our daily bread. 12 And for-
giue vs our dets, as we alſo forgiue our detters.
13 And lead vs not into tentation, but deliuer vs
* frō euil: for thine is the kingdom, & the power,
and the glory for euer, Amen. 14 *For if ye do
forgiue men their treſpaſſes, your heauenly Fa-
ther

R. 12.

Luke 11.2.

Chap. 13.19. Mar. 11, 25.

ther wil also forgiue you. 15 But if ye doe not
forgiue men their trespasses, no more will your
Father forgiue you your trespasses. 16 More-
ouer, when ye fast, looke not sowre as the hypo-
crites: for they disfigure their faces, ỹ they might
seeme vnto men to fast. Verely I say vnto you, that
they haue their reward. 17 But when thou fa-
stest, anoynt thine head, & wash thy face, 18 That
thou seeme not vnto men to fast, but vnto thy
Father which is in secret: and thy Father which
seeth in secret, wil reward thee openly. 19 Lay
not vp treasures for your selues vpon the earth,
where the mothe & canker corrupt, and where
Luke theeues digge through & steale. 20 *But lay vp
12.33. treasures for your selues in heauen, where nei-
1.tim. ther the mothe nor canker corrupteth, & where
6. 19. theeues neither digge through nor steale. 21 For
Luke where your treasure is, there will your heart be
11.34. also. 22 *The light of the body is the eye: if thy
Luke thine eye be single, thy whole body shalbe light
16.13. 23 But if thine eye bee wicked, then all thy body
Psal. shalbe darke. Wherefore if the light ỹ is in thee
55.23. be darknes, how great is ỹ darknes? 24 *No man
luke can serue two masters: for either he shal hate the
12.22. one, & loue the other, or els he shal leane to the
phil. one, & despise the other. Ye cannot serue God &
4. 6. riches. 25 *Therfore I say vnto you, be not care-
1.tim. full for your life, what ye shal eate, or what ye
6. 8. shal drinke: nor yet for your body what ye shal
1. pet. put on. Is not the life more worth then meate? and
3.7. the body then raiment? 26 Behold the foules of
the

be heauen: for they ſow not, neither reape, nor
ary into the barnes: yet your heauenly Father
eedeth them. Are ye not much better then they?
7 Which of you by taking care is able to adde
one cubite vnto his ſtature? 28 And why care ye
ot raiment? Learne how the lilies of the field do
row: they are not wearied, neither ſpin: 29 Yet
ſay vnto you, that euen Salomon in al his glo-
y was not arayed like one of theſe. 30 Where-
ore if God ſo cloth the graſſe of the field which
to day, & to morow is caſt into the ouen, ſhall
ee not *doe* much more vnto you, O ye of little
aith? 31 Therefore take no thought, ſaying,
What ſhall we eate? or what ſhal we drinke? or
wherewith ſhal we be clothed? 32 (For after al
heſe things ſeeke the Gentiles) for your heauen-
y Father knoweth that ye haue need of al theſe
hings. 33 But ſeeke yee firſt the kingdome of
God, & his righteouſnes, & al theſe things ſhalbe
miniſtred vnto you. 34 Care not then for the
morow: for the morowe ſhall care for it ſelfe:
he day hath ynough with his owne greefe.

CHAP. 7. 13 *The broad and ſtrait way.*

1 VDge not, that ye be not iudged. 2 For with
what *iudgment ye iudge, ye ſhalbe iudged, & *Luke*
with what *meaſure ye mete, it ſhalbe meaſured 6. 37.
to you againe. 3 And why ſeeſt thou the mote *Mar.*
that is in thy brothers eye, and perceiueſt not the 4. 24.
beame ẏ is in thine owne eye? 4 *Or how ſayſt *Luke*
thou to thy brother, Suffer mee to caſt out the 6. 41.
mote out of thine eye, and behold, a beame is in

thine owne eye? 5 Hypocrite, first cast out the
beame out of thine owne eye, & then shalt thou
see clearely to cast out the mote out of thy bro-
thers eye. 6 Giue ye not that which is holy, to
dogs, neither cast ye your pearles before swine,
lest they tread them vnder their feete, & turning
Chap. againe al to rent you. 7 *Aske, and it shalbe gi-
21.22 uen you: seeke, and ye shal find: knocke, and it
mar. shalbe opened vnto you. 8 For whosoeuer aske-
11.24. eth, receiueth: and he ỹ seeketh, findeth: and to
Luke him ỹ knocketh, it shalbe opened. 9 For what
11.9. man is there among you, which if his sonne aske
John him bread, would giue him a stone? 10 Or if he
14.13. aske fish, wil he giue him a serpent? 11 If ye then
which are euill, can giue to your children good
gifts, how much more shal your Father which is
in heauen, giue good things to them ỹ aske him?
Luke 12 *Therefore whatsoeuer ye would that men
6.31. should do to you, euen so do ye to them: for this
Luke is the Lawe and the Prophets. 13 *Enter in at
13.24. the straite gate: for it is the wide gate, & broad
way that leadeth to destruction: and many there
be which go in thereat, 14 Because the gate is
straite, & the way narrow that leadeth vnto life,
& few there be that finde it. 15 Beware of false
prophetes, which come to you in sheepes cloth-
ing, but inwardly they are rauening wolues.
Luke 16 Ye shal know them by their fruits. * Do men
6.44 gather grapes of thornes? or figges of thistles?
17 So euery good tree bringeth foorth good
fruit, & a corrupt tree bringeth foorth euil fruit.

17 A good tree cannot bring forth euil fruit: neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruite.
19 *Euery tree ỹ bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen downe,& cast into the fire. 20 Wherefore by their fruits ye shal know them. 21 Not euery one ỹ saith vnto me, Lord, Lord, shal enter into the kingdome of heauen, *but he that doth my Fathers wil which is in heauen. 22 *Many wil say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, haue we not *by thy Name prophecied? and by thy Name cast out deuils? and by thy Name done many great workes? 23 And then will I professe to them, *I neuer knew you: *depart frō me, ye that worke iniquitie. 24 Whosoeuer then heareth of mee these words, *and doth the same, I wil liken him vnto a wise man, which hath builded his house on a rocke: 25 And the raine fel, & the floods came, & the winds blew, & beat vpon ỹ house, & it fell not: for it was grounded on a rocke. 26 But whosoeuer heareth these my words & doth them not, shalbe likened vnto a foolish man, which hath builded his house vpon ỹ sand: 27 And the raine fell, & the floods came, & the winds blew, and beat vpon ỹ house, and it fel, & the fal thereof was great. 28 *And it came to passe, when Iesus had ended these wordes, the people were astonied at his doctrine. 29 For he taught them as one hauing authoritie, and not as the Scribes.

Chap. 3. 10.
Rom. 2. 13. Iam. 1. 22.
Luke 13. 27.
Psal. 6. 8.
Luke 6. 47. 48.
Mat. 7. 22.
luke 4. 32.

CHAP. 8. *The Centurions faith.*

NOwe when he was come downe from the mountaine, great multitudes folowed him.

Mar. 1. 40. Luke 5. 12. 2 *And lo, there came a leper and worshipped him, saying, Master if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane. 3 And Iesus putting forth his hand, touched him, saying, I wil, be thou cleane: and immediatly his leprosie was clensed. 4 Then Iesus said vnto him, See thou tell no man, but goe, and shew thy selfe vnto the Priest, and offer the gift that * Moses commanded, for a witnes to them.

Leui. 14. 3 4.

5 *Whē Iesus was entred into Capernaū, there came vnto him a Centuriō, beseeching him, 6 And said, Master, my seruant lieth sicke at home of the palsie, & is grieuously pained. 7 And Iesus said vnto him, I wil come and heale him. 8 But the Centuriō answered, saying, Master, I am not worthy ỹ thou shouldest come vnder my roofe: but speake the word only, & my seruant shalbe healed. 9 For I am a man also vnder the authoritie of *another*, & haue souldiers vnder me: and I say to one, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he cōmeth: and to my seruant, Do this, & he doth it. 10 When Iesus heard *that*, he marueiled, & said to them ỹ folowed *him*, Verely, I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith, euen in Israel. 11 But I say vnto you, ỹ many shall come from the East and West, and shal sit downe with Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, in the kingdome of heauen. 12 And the children of the kingdom shalbe cast out into vtter *darknes, there shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth. 13 Then Iesus said vnto the Centurion, Go thy way, & as thou hast beleeued, so be it vnto thee. And his seruant

Luke 7. 2.

Chap. 22. 13.

was

was healed the same houre. 14 *And when Iesus came to Peters house, he sawe his wiues mother layd down, & sicke of the feuer. 15 And he touched her hand, & the feuer left her: so she arose and ministred vnto them. 16 *When the euen was come, they broght vnto him many that were possessed with deuils: and hee cast out the spirits with his word, and healed al that were sicke, 17 That it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by *Esaias the Prophet, saying, He tooke our infirmities, & bare our sicknesses. 18 *And when Iesus saw great multituds of people about him, he comanded them to go ouer the water. 19 Then came there a certaine Scribe, and sayd vnto him, Master, I wil folow thee whither soeuer thou goest. 20 But Iesus said vnto him, The foxes haue holes, & the birds of ỹ heauen haue nests, but the Sonne of man hath not wheron to rest his head. 21 And another of his disciples said vnto him, Master, suffer me first to go, & bury my father. 22 But Iesus said vnto him, Follow me, and let the dead bury the dead. 23 *And when he was entred into the ship, his disciples folowed him. 24 And behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, so that the ship was couered w̃ wanes: but he was asleepe. 25 Then his disciples came, & awoke him, saying, Master, saue vs, we perish. 26 And he said vnto them, Why are ye feareful, O ye of litle faith? Then he arose, & rebuked the windes and the sea: and so there was a great calme. 27 And the men marueiled, saying, What manis this,

Mar. 1. 29. Luke 4. 38. Mar. 1. 32. Luke 4. 40. Esai 53. 4. 1. pet. 2. 24. Luke 9. 57. 58. Mar. 4. 38. Luke 8. 23.

this, that both the windes and the sea obey him.
Mar. 26 *And whē he was come to the other side in
5.12. to the countrey of the Gergesenes, there met him
Luke 8. two possessed with deuils, which came out of the
26,27. graues very fierce, so ỹ no man might go by the
way. 29 And behold, they cried out, saying, Le
sus the Sonne of God, what haue we to do wi
thee? Art thou come hither to torment vs before
the time? 30 Now there was afar off frō them a
great heard of swine feeding. 31 And the deuils
besought him, saying, If thou cast vs out, suffer vs
to go into the heard of swine. 32 And he said
vnto them, Go. So they went out & departed in
to ỹ heard of swine: and behold, the whole heard
of swine ran headlong into the sea, & died in the
water. 33 Then the heardmen fled: and whē they
were come into the city, they told all things, and
what was become of them which were possessed
with the deuils. 34 And behold, all the citie
came out to meet Iesus: and when they saw him,
they besought him to depart out of their coasts.

CHAP. 9. *Fiue miracles wrought by Christ.*

THen he entred into a ship, & passed ouer, and
Mar. came into his owne citie. 2 And loe, *they
2.3. brought to him a man sick of the palsie, laid on a
Luke bed. And Iesus seeing their faith, said to the sick
5.18. of the palsie, Sōne, be of good comfort: thy sinnes
are forgiuen thee. 3 And behold, certaine of the
Scribes saide within themselues, This man blas
phemeth. 4 But when Iesus saw their thoughts,
he said, Wherfore thinke ye euil things in your
heart

hearts? 5 For whether is it easier to say, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee, or to say, Arise, & walke? 6 And that ye may know ỹ the Sonne of man hath authority in earth to forgiue sinnes, (then said he vnto the sicke of the palsie,) Arise, take vp thy bed, & go to thine house. 7 And he arose, & departed to his owne house. 8 So when ỹ multitude saw it, they maruelled, and glorified God which had giuen such authority to men 9 *And as Iesus passed forth frō thence, he saw a man sitting at the custome, named Matthew, and said to him, Follow me. And he arose, & followed him. 10 And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at meat in *hr* house, beholde, many Publicanes and sinners, that came *thither*, sate downe at the table ẅ Iesus & his disciples. 11 And when ỹ Pharises saw that, they said to his disciples, Why eateth your master ẅ Publicanes and sinners? 12 Now when Iesus heard it, he said vnto them, The whole need not a Physician, but they that are sicke. 13 But go ye & learne what this is, *I wil haue mercy, & not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but the *sinners to repentance. 14 *Then came the disciples of Iohn to him, saying, Why do we & the Pharises fast oft, and thy disciples fast not? 15 And Iesus said vnto them, Can the children of the marriage chamber mourne as long as the bridegrome is with them? but the daies wil come when the bridegrome shalbe taken from them, & then shall they fast. 16 Moreouer, no man pieceth an olde garment ẅ a piece

Mat. 2.14. Luke 5.27.

Hose. 6.6. 1.Tim. 1.15. Mar. 2.18. Luke 5.33.

of new cloth: for that that ſhould fill it vp, ſ
lleth away from the garment, and the breach
worſe. 17 Neither do they put new wine in
olde veſſels: for then the veſſels would breal
& the wine would be ſpilt, & the veſſels ſhoul
periſh: but they put new wine into new veſſels,
ſo are both preſerued. 18 *While he thus ſpak
vnto them, behold, there came a certeine ruler,
worſhipped him, ſaying, My daughter is now d
ceaſied, but come & lay thine hand on her, & ſh
ſhal liue. 19 And Ieſus aroſe & folowed him
his diſciples. 20 (And beholde, a woman whic
was diſeaſed wᵗ an iſſue of blood twelue yeere
came behind him, & touched the hem of his ga
ment. 21 For ſhe ſaid in her ſelfe, If I may touc
but his garment only, I ſhalbe whole. 22 The
Ieſus turned him about, and ſeeing her, did ſa
Daughter, be of good cõfort, thy faith hath mad
thee whole. And the woman was made whole
the ſame moment.) 23 Now when Ieſus came in
to the rulers houſe, & ſaw ye minſtrels & thẽ mul
titude making noiſe, 24 He ſaid vnto them, Ge
you hẽce: for the maid is not dead, but ſleepeth
And they laughed him to ſcorne. 25 And when
the multitude were put forth, he wẽt in & took
her by the hand, & the maid aroſe. 26 And the
bruit went thorowout all ye land. 27 And as Ie
ſus departed thence, two blind mẽ folowed him,
crying, and ſaying, O ſonne of Dauid haue mer
cy vpon vs. 28 And when he was come into the
houſe, the blinde came to him, & Ieſus ſaid vnto
them,

Mar. 5.22. Luke 8.41.

them, Beleeue ye that I am able to do this? And they ſaid vnto him, Yea Lord. 29 Then touched he their eyes, ſaying, According to your faith be it vnto you. 30 And their eyes were opened, & Ieſus gaue them great charge, ſaying, See that no man knowe it. 31 But when they were departed, they ſpread abroad his fame thorowout all that land. 32 * And as they went out, beholde, they brought him a dumbe man poſſeſſed with a deuill. 33 And when the deuill was caſt out, the dumbe ſpake: then the multitude marueiled, ſaying, The like was neuer ſeene in Iſrael. 34 But ye Phariſes ſaid, *He caſteth out deuils, through the prince of deuils. 35 And *Ieſus went about all cities & townes, teaching in their Synagogues, & preaching ye goſpel of the kingdome, & healing euery ſickneſs & euery diſeaſe among ye people. 36 But *when he ſaw the multitude, he had compaſſion vpon them, becauſe they were diſperſed, and ſcattered abroad as ſheepe hauing no ſhepheard. 37 Then ſaid he to his diſciples, *Surely the haruеſt *is* great, but the laborers *are* few. 38 Wherfore pray the Lord of the haruеſt, ye he would ſend forth laborers into his haruеſt.

Luke 11.14.

Chap 12.22

Mat 6.6.

Mat 6.34

Luke 10.2.

iohn 35.36

CHAP. 10. *Continuance vnto the end.*

AND *he called his twelue diſciples vnto him, & gaue them power againſt vnclean ſpirits to caſt the out, & to heale euery ſickneſs, & euery diſeaſe. 2 Now the names of the twelue Apoſtles are theſe. The firſt is Simon called Peter, & Andrew his brother Iames *the ſon* of Zebedeus,

Mat 3.13. 14.1

luke. 1,2.

and

and Iohn his brother: 3 Philip and Bartlemew
Thomas, and Matthew that Publican: Iames
son of Alpheus, & Lebbeus whose surname
Thaddeus: 4 Simon the Canaanite, & Iudas
cariot, who also betrayed him. 5 These twelue
did Iesus send forth, & commanded them, saying
Go not into the way of the Gentiles, & into
cities of the Samaritans enter ye not: 6 But
Acts rather * to the lost sheepe of the house of Israel.
13.46. 7 *And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom
Luke heauen is at hand. 8 Heale the sicke: cleanse
10.9, pers: raise vp the dead: cast out the deuils. I
11. ly ye haue receiued, freely giue. 9 *Possesse
Mar. golde, nor siluer, nor money in your girdles,
6.8,9. 10 Nor a scrip for the iourny, neither two coats
Luke neither shooes, nor a staffe: *for the workman
9.3. worthy of his meat. 11 And into* whatsoeuer
& 22. ty or town ye shal come, enquire who is worthy
35. in it, & there abide til ye go thence. 12 And
1.*Tim.* ye come into an house, salute the same. 13 And
5.15. the house be worthy, let your peace come vpon
Luke it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return
10.8. to you. 14 * And *whosoeuer shall not receiue
Mar. you, nor heare your words, when ye depart out
6.11. of that house, or that city, * shake off the dust of
luke your feet. 15 Truly I say vnto you, it shalbe
9.5. sier for them of the land of Sodom & Gomorah
Acts in the day of iudgement, then for *y* city. 16 *Be-
13.51. holde, I send you as sheepe in the midst of the
Luke wolues, be ye therfore wise as serpents, & inno-
10.3. cent as doues. 17 But beware of men, for they

will

will deliuer you vp to the Councils, and will
scourge you in their Synagogues. 18 And ye
shalbe brought to the gouernors & kings for my
sake, in witnes to thē, & to the Gentiles. 19 *But Mar
when they deliuer you vp, take no thought how 12.11
or what ye shall speake: for it shalbe giuen you Luke
in ỹ houre what ye shal say. 20 For it is not ye 12.
that speake, but the spirit of your Father which
speaketh in you. 21 And the*brother shal betray Luke
the brother to death, & the father the sonne, and 21.
the children shal rise against their parents, & shal
cause them to die. 22 And ye shalbe hated of all
men for my Name: *but he that endureth to the Mat
end, he shalbe saued. 23 And whē they persecute 13.
you in this city, flie into another: for verely I say
vnto you, ye shal not go ouer all the cities of Is-
rael, til the Sonne of man be come. 24 *The dis- Luke
ciple is not aboue his master, nor the seruant a 6.40
boue his Lord. 25 It is enough for the disciple to Iohn
be as his master is, & the seruant as his Lord. * If 13.
they haue called the master of the house Beelze- &
bub, how much more them of his housholde? 15.20
26 Feare them not therfore: *for there is nothing Luke
couered, that shal not be discloſed: nor hid, that 12.2
shal not be knowen. 27 What I tel you in dark- Mat
nes, that speake ye in light: and what ye heare in 10.27
the eare, that preach ye on the houses. 28 And Luke
feare ye not them which kil the body, but are not 12.4
able to kil the soule: but rather feare him which
is able to destroy both soule and body in hell. 12.
29 Are not two sparrowes sold for a farthing, &

one

one of them shal not fall on the ground without
2.Sam your Father? 30 * Yea, & all the haires of your
14.45 head are numbred. 31 Feare ye not therefore
1.Sam. ye are of more value then many sparrowes.
24.11. 32 * Whosoeuer therefore shall confesse me be-
Act.27 fore men, him will I confesse also before my Fa-
.41. ther which is in heauen. 33 But whosoeuer shal
Mar. denie me before men, him will I also denie be-
8.38. fore my Father which is in heauen. 34 * Thinke
Luke not that I am come to send peace into the earth:
12.51. I came not to send peace, but the sword. 35 For
I am come to set a man at variance against his
father, and the daughter against her mother, and
the daughter in law against her mother in law.
Mica. 36 * And a mans enemies *shall be* they of his
7.6. owne housholde. 37 * He that loueth father
Luke or mother, more then me, is not worthy of me.
14.26. And he that loueth son, or daughter more then
Deut. me, is not worthy of me. 38 * And he that taketh
6.13. not his crosse, & followeth after me, is not wor-
Mark. thy of me. 39 * He that will finde his life, shall
8.34. lose it, and he that loseth his life for my sake, shal
Luk.9. find it. 40 He that receiueth you, receiueth me:
23.& & he that receiueth me, receiueth him that hath
14.27. sent me. 41 * He that receiueth a Prophet in the
John name of a Prophet, shall receiue a Prophets re-
12.25. ward: and he that receiueth a righteous man, in
Luke the name of a righteous man, shal receiue the re-
10.16. ward of a righteous man. 42 * And whosoeuer
Mar. shal giue vnto one of these litle ones to drinke a
9.41. cup of cold water only, in ỹ name of a disciple,

verely

erely I say vnto you, he shal not lose his reward.

CHAP. XI. 25. *The Gospel reuealed to children.*

AND it came to passe that whē Iesus had made an end of commanding his twelue disciples, he departed thence to teach & to preach in their cities. 2 * And when Iohn heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples, 3 & said vnto him, Art thou he ȳ should come, or shall we looke for another? 4 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, Go, & shew Iohn, what things ye heare & see. 5 The blind receiue sight, & the halt do walke: the lepers are clensed, and the deafe heare: the dead are raised vp, *& the poore receiue the Gospel. 6 And blessed is he that shall not be offended in me. 7 And as they departed, Iesus began to speake vnto the multitude, of Iohn. What went ye out into the wildernesse to see? A reed shaken with the winde? 8 But what went ye out to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they ȳ weare soft clothing, are in kings houses. 9 But what went ye out to see? A Prophet? yea, I say vnto you, & more then a Prophet. 10 For this is he of whom it is writtē, *Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shal prepare thy way before thee. 11 Verely I say vnto you, among them which are begotten of women, arose there not a greater then Iohn Baptist, notwithstanding, he that is the least in the kingdome of heauen, is greater then he. 12 And from * the time of Iohn Baptist hitherto the kingdome of heauen suffereth violence & the violent

Luke 7.18.

Esai. 61.1.

Luke 4.18.

Mal. 3.1. Luke 7.28.

Luke 16.16.

violent take it by force. 13 For al the Prophets and the law prophesied vnto Iohn. 14 And if ye will receiue it, this is that * Elias, which was to come. 15 He that hath eares to heare, let him heare. 16 *But whereunto shall I liken this generation? it is like vnto litle childreu which sit in the markets, and call vnto their fellowes, 17 And say, We haue piped vnto you, and ye haue not danced, we haue mourned vnto you, and ye haue not lamented. 18 For Iohn came neither eating nor drinking, & they say, He hath a deuill. 19 The Sonne of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Beholde a glutton and a drinker of wine, a friend vnto Publicanes & sinners: but wisedome is iustified of her children. 20 *Then began he to vpbraid the cities, wherein most of his great works were done, because they repented not. 21 Wo be to thee, Chorazin. Wo be to thee, Bethsaida: for if the great works, which were done in you, had bene done in Tyrus and Sidon, they had repented long agone in sackcloth and ashes. 22 But I say to you, It shalbe easier for Tyrus and Sidon at the day of iudgement, then for you. 23 And thou, Capernaum, which art lifted vp vnto heauen, shalt be brought downe to hel: for if the great works which haue bene done in thee, had bene done among them of Sodom, they had remained to this day. 24 But I say vnto you, that it shall be easier for them of the land of Sodom in the day of iudgement, then for thee. 25 * At that time Iesus.

Mal. 3. Luke 3.

Luke 10.13.

Luke 10.21.

Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid, I giue thee thanks, O Father, Lord of heauen and earth, becauſe thou haſt hid theſe things from the wiſe and men of vnderſtanding, and haſt opened them vnto babes. 26 It is ſo, O Father, becauſe thy good pleaſure was ſuch. 27 * All things are giuen vnto me of my Father: and * no man knoweth the Sonne, but the Father: neither knoweth any man the Father, but the Sonne, and he to whom the Sonne will reueile *him*. 28 Come vnto me, all ye that are weary and laden, and I will eaſe you. 29 Take my yoke on you, and learne of me that I am meeke and lowly in heart: and ye ſhall finde reſt * vnto your ſoules. 30 * For my yoke is eaſie, and my burden light.

Iohn 3.35. Iohn 6.46. Iere. 6.16. 1.Iohn 5.3.

CHAP. 12. 22 *The poſſeſſed is holpen.*

AT * that time Ieſus went on a Sabbath day thorow the corne, and his diſciples were an hungred, and began to plucke the eares of corne & to eate. 2 And when the Phariſes ſaw it, they ſaid vnto him, Behold, thy diſciples do ỹ * which is not lawfull to do vpon the Sabbath. 3 But he ſaid vnto them, * Haue ye not read what Dauid did when he was an hungred, and they that were with him? 4 How he entred into the houſe of God, & did eate the ſhew-bread, which was not lawfull for him to eate, neither for them which were with him, but only for the * Prieſts? 5 Or haue ye not read in the Law, how that on the Sabbath daies the Prieſts in the Temple breake the Sabbath, & are blameleſſe? 6 But I ſay vnto

Mar. 2.23. Luke 6.1. Deut. 23.25. 1.Sam. 21.6. Exod. 29.33. Num. 28.9.

you,

you, that here is one greater then the Temple.
Hose. 7 Wherfore if ye knew what this is, *I will have
6. mercy, & not sacrifice, ye would not haue con-
demned the innocents. 8 For the Sonne of man
Mar. is Lord, euē of the Sabbath. 9 *And he departed
2. thence, & went into their Synagogue: 10 And
Luke behold, there was a man which had *his* hand dri-
6. ed vp. And they asked him, saying, Is it lawfull to
heale vpon a Sabbath day? that they might accuse
him. 11 And he said vnto them, What man shall
there be among you, ỹ hath a sheepe, & if it fall
on a Sabbath day into a pit, doth not take it &
lift it out? 12 How much more then is a man
better then a sheepe? therfore, it is lawfull to do
well on a Sabbath day. 13 Then said he to the
man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it
forth, & it was made whole as the other. 14 Then
the Pharises went out, & consulted against him,
how they might destroy him. 15 But when Iesus
knew it, he departed thence, & great multitudes
folowed him, & he healed thē all, 16 And charged
thē in threatning wise, that they should not
make him knowen, 17 That it might be fulfilled,
which was spokē by Esaias the Prophet, saying,
Esai. 18 * Beholde my seruant whō I haue chosen, my
42.1. beloued in whō my soule delighteth: I will put
my Spirit on him, & he shall shew iudgement to
the Gentiles. 19 He shal not striue, nor crie, nei-
ther shall any man heare his voice in the streets:
20 A bruised reede shall he not breake, and
smoking flaxe shall he not quench, till he bring
forth

orth iudgement vnto victory. 21 And in his
ame shall the Gentiles trust. 22 *Then was Luke
ought to him one possessed with a deuil, both 11.14
ind & dumme, & he healed him, so ỹ he which
as blind & dumme, both spake & saw. 23 And
ỹ people were amased, & said, Is not this that
onne of Dauid? 24 But when ỹ Pharises heard
, they said, *This man casteth ỹ deuils no other Chap.
yse out, but through Beel-zebub the prince of 9.34.
euils. 25 But Iesus knew their thoughts, & said marke
o them, Euery kingdome diuided against it self, 3.22.
s brought to nought: & euery city or house di luke
ided against it selfe, shal not stand. 26 So if Sa- 11.15
an cast out Satan, he is diuided against himself:
ow shal then his kingdome endure? 27 Also if
through Beel-zebub cast out deuils, by who do
your children cast them out? Therefore they shal
be your iudges. 28 But if I cast out deuils by the
Spirit of God, then is ỹ kingdome of God come
nto you. 29 Els howe can a man enter into a
trong mans house & spoile his goods, except he
irst bind ỹ strong man, & then spoile his house?
30 He that is not with me, is against me: and he
hat gathereth not w̄ me, scattereth. 31 *Wher- Mar.
fore I say vnto you, Euery sin & blasphemie shal 3.28,
be forgiuen vnto men, but ỹ blasphemie against 29. lu.
the holy Ghost shall not be forgiuen vnto men. 11.10.
32 And whosoeuer shal speake a word against 1. iohn
the Sonne of man, it shall be forgiuen him: but 5.16.
whosoeuer shall speake against the holy Ghost,
it shal not be forgiue him, neither in this world,

nor in the world to come. 33 Either make
tree good, & his fruite good: or els make ỹ
euil, & his fruit euil: for ỹ tree is knowen by
fruit. 34 O generations of vipers, howe can
speake good things whē ye are euill? For of
Luke * abundance of the heart the mouth speake
6.45. 35 A good man out of the good treasure of
heart bringeth forth good things: & an euil m
out of an euil treasure bringeth forth euil thing
36 But I say vnto you, that of euery idle wo
that men shal speake, they shal giue accoũt th
of at ỹ day of iudgement. 37 For by thy wor
thou shalt be iustified, and by thy wordes th
Chap. shalt be cõdemned. 38 *Then answered certain
16.1. of the Scribes & of the Pharises, saying, Maste
Luke we would see a signe of thee. 39 But he answ
11.29 red & said to them, An euill & adulterous gen
ration seeketh a signe, but no signe shalbe gine
vnto it, saue that signe of the Prophet Ionas.
Ionas 40 *For as Ionas was three daies & three nigh
2.1. in the whales belly: so shall the Sonne of ma
be three dayes & three nights in the heart of th
earth. 41 The men of Ninive shal rise in iudge
Ionas ment with this generation, & condemne it: for
3.5. they *repented at the preaching of Ionas: & be-
1.Kin. holde, a greater then Ionas is here. 42 * The
10.1. Queene of ỹ South shall rise in iudgement with
2.chr. this generation, and shall condemne it: for she
9.1. came from the vtmost partes of ỹ earth to heare
Luke the wisedome of Solomon: and behold, a grea-
11.24. ter then Solomon is here. 43 *Now when the
vncleane

cleane spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh
rough out drie places, seeking rest, and findeth
one. 44 Then he saith, I will returne into mine
ouse from whence I came: and when hee is
ome, hee findeth it emptie, swept and gar-
ished. 45 Then hee goeth and taketh vnto
im seuen other spirites worse then himselfe,
nd they enter in, and dwell there: * and the
nde of that man is worse then the beginning.
euen so shal it be with this wicked generation.
46 * While he yet spake to the multitude, be-
holde, his mother, and his brethren stoode with-
out, desiring to speake with him. 47 Then one
said vnto him, Beholde, thy mother and thy bre-
thren stand without, desiring to speake with
thee. 48 But he answered and said to him that
told him, Who is my mother? and who are my
brethren? 49 And he stretched forth his hand
toward his disciples, & said, Behold my mother
and my brethren. 50 For whosoeuer shall doe
my Fathers will which is in heauen, the same is
my brother and sister, and mother.

Heb. 6.4.

Matt. 3.31. *Luke* 8.20.

CHAP. 13. *1. The parable of the sower.*

THe ✠ same day went Iesus out of ✠ house, and
sate by the sea side. 2 And great multitudes
resorted vnto him, so that he went into a shippe,
and sate downe: and the whole multitude stood
on the shore. 3 Then he spake many things to
them in parables, saying, Beholde, a sower went
forth to sowe. 4 And as he sowed, some fell by
the way side, and the foules came and deuoured

Mar. 4.1. *Luke* 8.4,5.

them vp. 5 And some fell vpon stony grou-
where they had not much earth, and anon th-
sprong vp, because they had not depth of eart-
6 And when the sunne was vp, they were pa-
ched, and for lacke of rooting, withered awa-
7 And some fell among thornes, & the thorn-
sprong vp & choked them. 8 Some againe fel
in good ground, and brought foorth fruit, on-
corne an hundreth fold, some sixtie fold, & ano-
ther thirtie fold 9 He that hath eares to heare,
let him heare. 10 Then the disciples came and
said to him, Why speakest thou to them in para-
bles? 11 And he answered & said vnto them, Be-
cause it is giuen vnto you to knowe ye secrets of
the kingdome of heauen, but to them it is not
Chap. giuen. 12 *For whosoeuer hath, to him shall be
25.29. giuen, & he shall haue abundance: but whosoe-
uer hath not, from him shalbe taken away, euen
that he hath 13 Therefore speake I to them in
parables, because they seeing, do not see: & hea-
ring, they heare not, neither vnderstand. 14 So
in them is fulfilled ye prophecie of Esaias, which
Esai. *prophecie* saith, *By hearing, ye shall heare, and
6.9. shall not vnderstand, and seeing, ye shall see, and
Mark. shall not perceiue. 15 For this people's heart is
4.12. waxed fat, & their eares are dull of hearing, and
Luke their eyes they haue winked, lest they should
8.10. see with their eyes, and heare with their eares,
John and should vnderstand with their hearts, and
12.40 should returne, & I might heale them. 16 But
blessed *are* your eies, for they see; & your eares,

for

for they heare. 17 *For verely I say vnto you, ỹ many Prophets & righteous men haue desired to see those things which ye see, and haue not seene them, and to heare those things which ye heare, & haue not heard them. 18 *Heare ye therefore the parable of the sower. 19 When soeuer any man heareth the word of ỹ kingdome, and vnderstandeth it not, that euill one cõmeth, and catcheth away ỹ which was sowen in his heart: and this is he which hath receiued the seede by the way side. 20 And he that receiued seede in the stony ground, is he which heareth the word, and incontinently with ioy receiueth it. 21 Yet hath he no roote in himselfe, & dureth but a season: for assoone as tribulation or persecution commeth because of the worde, by and by he is offended. 22 And he that receiueth the seede among thornes, is he ỹ heareth the word: but the care of this world, & the deceitfulnes of riches choke the word, & he is made vnfruitful. 23 But he that receiued the seede in ỹ good ground, is he that heareth the worde, and vnderstandeth it, which also beareth fruit, & bringeth forth, some an hundreth fold, some sixtie fold, & some thirtie fold. 24 Another parable put he forth vnto them, saying, The kingdome of heauē is like vnto a man which sowed good seede in his fielde. 25 But while men slept, there came his enemie, & sowed tares among the wheate, & went his way. 26 And when the blade was sprong vp, and brought forth fruit, then appeared ỹ tares also.

*Luke 10.24.

*Mark. 4.15. *Luke 8.12.

27 Then came the ſeruants of the houſholder
ſaid vnto him, Maſter, ſowedſt not thou g
ſeede in thy fielde? from whence then hath
tares? 28 And he ſaid to them, Some enim
man hath done this Then the ſeruants ſaid v
him, Wilt thou then that we go & gather th
vp? 29 But he ſaid, Nay, leaſt while ye go ab
to gather the tares, ye plucke vp alſo with th
the wheate. 30 Let both grow together vnt
the harueſt, & in time of harueſt I will ſay to th
reapers, Gather ye firſt the tares, and bind the
in ſheaues to burne them: but gather the whea
Mar. into my barne. 31 *Another parable he put forth
4.30. vnto them, ſaying, The kingdome of heauen is
Luke like vnto a graine of muſtard ſeede, which a
13.19. man taketh and ſoweth in his field: 32 Which
in deede is the leaſt of all ſeedes: but when it is
growen, it is the greateſt among herbes, and is
a tree, ſo that the birdes of heauen come & build
Luke in the branches thereof. 33 *Another parable
13.21. ſpake he to them, The kingdome of heauen is
like vnto leauen, which a woman taketh and
hideth in three pecks of meale, till all be leaue-
Mark ned. 34 *All theſe things ſpake Ieſus vnto the
4.33, multitude in parables, and without parables
34. ſpake he not vnto them, 35 That it might be
fulfilled, which was ſpoken by the Prophet, ſay-
Pſal. ing, *I wil open my mouth in parables, and wil
78.2. vtter the things which haue bin kept ſecret from
the foundation of the world. 36 Then ſent Ie-
ſus the multitude away, & went into the houſe.

And

said his disciples came vnto him, saying, Declare
vnto vs the parable of the tares of that fielde.
37 Then answered he and said to them, He that
soweth the good seede, is the Sonne of man,
38 And the field is the world, & the good seede
are the children of the kingdome, & the tares are
the children of that wicked one. 39 And the
enemie that soweth them, is the deuill, * and the *Ioel*
harueſt is the ende of the world, and the reapers 3.13.
be the Angels: 40 As then the tares are gathe- *Apocal.*
red and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the 14.15.
ende of this world. 41 The Sonne of man shal
send forth his angels, & they shall gather out of
his kingdome all things ỹ offend, & them which
do iniquitie, 42 And shall cast them into a for-
nace of fire. There shalbe wayling and gnashing
of teeth. 43 * Then shall the iust men shine as *Dan.*
the sunne in the kingdome of their Father. He 12.3.
ỹ hath eares to heare, let him heare. 44 Againe,
the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a treasure
hid in the fielde, which when a man hath found,
he hideth it, and for ioy thereof departeth & sel-
leth all that he hath, & buyeth that field. 45 A-
gaine, the kingdome of heauen is like to a mar-
chant man, ỹ seeketh good pearles, 46 Who
hauing founde a pearle of great price, went and
sold all that he had, & bought it. 47 Againe, the
kingdome of heauen is like vnto a draw net cast
into the sea, that gathereth of al kinds *of things:*
48 Which, when it is ful, men draw to land and
sitte and gather the good into vessels, & cast the

bad away. 49 So shall it be at the ende of the world. The Angels shal go foorth, and seuer bad from among ỹ iust. 50 And shall cast th into a fornace of fire: there shalbe wayling, a gnashing of teeth. 51 Iesus said vnto them, W derstand ye all these things? They said vnto hi Yea, Lord. 52 Then said he vnto them, Then fore euery Scribe which is taught vnto ỹ king dome of heauen, is like vnto an housholder which bringeth foorth out of his treasure thing both new and old. 53 And it came to passe, tha when Iesus had ended these parables, he depar-

Mar. 6.1. Luke 4.16. ted thence, 54 *And came into his owne coun trey, & taught them in their Synagogue, so tha they were astonied, and said, Whence commeth this wisedome and great workes vnto this man? 55 Is not this the carpenters sonne? Is not his

Iohn 6.42. mother called Marie? & his brethren Iames and Ioses, & Simon and Iudas? 56 And are not his sisters all with vs? Whence then hath he all these things? 57 And they were offended with him.

Mar. 6.4. Luke 4.24. Then Iesus said to them, *A Prophet is not without honour saue in his owne countrey, and in his owne house. 58 And hee did not many great workes there, for their vnbeliefes sake.

CHAP. 14. 18 *Of the fiue loaues, &c.*

Mar. 6.14. Luke 9.7. AT * that time Herod the Tetrarch heard of the fame of Iesus, 2 And said vnto his ser nants, This is ỹ Iohn Baptist, he is risen againe from the dead, and therefore great workes are

Mar. 6.17. wrought by him. 3 *For Herod had take Iohn,

and

and bound him, & put him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife. 4 For Iohn said vnto him, It is not *lawfull for thee to haue her. 5 And when he would haue put him to death, hee feared the multitude, because they counted him as a * Propher. 6 But when Herods birth day was kept, the daughter of Herodias daunced before them, and pleased Herod. 7 Wherefore hee promised with an othe, that he would giue her what soeuer the would aske. 8 And she being before instructed of her mother, saide, Giue me here Iohn Baptists head in a platter. 9 And the King was sorie: neuertheless because of the othe, and them that sate with him at ỹ table, he cõmanded it to be giuen her, 10 And sent, and beheaded Iohn in the prison. 11 And his head was brought in a platter, and giuen to the maide, and she brought it vnto her mother. 12 And his disciples came, and tooke vp the body, and buried it, and went and tolde Iesus. 13 *And when Iesus heard it, he departed thence by ship into a desert place apart. And when the multitude had heard it, they followed him on foote out of the cities. 14 And Iesus went foorth and sawe a great multitude, and was moued with compassion toward them, and he healed their sicke. 15 And when euen was come, *his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, & the time is already past: let the multitude depart, that they may goe into the townes, & buy them vitailes. 16 But Iesus said

Leuit. 18.18.

Chap. 21.26.

Mar. 6.32. Luke 9.10.

Mar. 6.35. Luke 9.12. Iohn 6.5.

to

to them, They haue no neede to goe away: giue ye them to eate. 17 Then ſaid they vnto him, We haue here but fiue loaues and two fiſhes. 18 And he ſaid, Bring them hither to me. 19 And he cõmaunded the multitude to ſit downe on the graſſe, and tooke the fiue loaues and two fiſhes, and looked vp to heauen, & bleſſed, and brake, and gaue the loaues to his diſciples, & the diſciples to the multitude. 20 And they did all eate, and were ſufficed, & they tooke vp of the fragments that remained, twelue baſkets full. 21 And they that had eaten, were about fiue thouſand men, beſide women and little children. 22 And ſtraightway Ieſus compelled his diſciples to enter into a ſhippe, and to goe ouer before him, while hee ſent the multitude away. 23 And as ſoone as hee had ſent the multitude away, hee
Mar. went vp into a mountaine alone to pray: * and
6.45, when the euening was come, he was there alone.
46,47. 24 And the ſhip was nowe in the middes of the
John ſea, and was toſſed with waues: for it was a con-
6.18, trary winde. 25 And in the fourth watch of
19,18. the night, Ieſus went vnto them, walking on the ſea. 26 And when his diſciples ſawe him walking on the ſea, they were troubled, ſaying, It is a ſpirit, and cryed out for feare. 27 But ſtraightway Ieſus ſpake vnto them, ſaying, Be of good comfort, it is I: be not afraide. 28 Then Peter anſwered him, and ſaid, Maſter, if it be thou, bid me come vnto thee on the water. 29 And hee ſaide, Come. And when Peter was come downe

out

out of the ſhippe, hee walked on the water, to goe to Ieſus. 30 But when he ſawe a mightie wind, he was afraid: and as he began to ſinke, he cryed, ſaying, Maſter ſaue me. 31 So immediatly Ieſus ſtretched foorth his hand, and caught him, and ſaid to him, O thou of litle faith, wherefore diddeſt thou doubt? 32 And as ſoone as they were come into the ſhippe, the winde ceaſed. 33 Then they that were in the ſhippe, came and worſhipped him, ſaying, Of a trueth thou art the Sonne of God. 34 *And when they were come ouer, they came into the lande of Gennezaret. *Mar. 6.54.
35 And when the men of that place knewe him, they ſent out into al that countrey round about, & brought vnto him al that were ſicke. 36 And beſought him, that they might touch the hemme of his garment onely: and as many as touched it, were made whole.

CHAP. 15. 14. *Blind leading the blind.*

THen came to Ieſus the Scribes & Phariſes, which were at Hieruſalem, ſaying, 2 *Why doe thy diſciples tranſgreſſe the tradition of the Elders? for they waſh not their hands when they eate bread. 3 But he anſwered and ſaide vnto them, Why doe ye alſo tranſgreſſe the commandement of God by your tradition? 4 *For God hath commaunded, ſaying, Honour thy father and mother: *and he that curſeth father or mother, let him die the death. 5 But yee ſay, Whoſoeuer ſhall ſay to father or mother, By *Mar. 7.1.* *Exod. 20.12. deut. 5.16.* *Exod. 21.17.*

the

the gift that is *offered* by mee, thou mayest haue profite, 6 Though he honour not his father, or his mother, *shalbe free*: thus haue yee made the comandement of God of no authority by your traditions. 7 O hypocrites, Esaias propheciel
Esai. well of you, saying, 8 * This people draweth
29.13. neere vnto me with their mouth, and honoureth mee with the lippes, but their heart is farre off from me. 9 But in vaine they worship me teaching *for* doctrines, mens precepts. 10 Then he called the multitude vnto him, and sayd to them,
Mar. Heare and vnderstand. 11 * That which goeth
7.18. into the mouth, defileth not the man, but that which commeth out of the mouth, that defileth the man. 12 Then came his disciples, and sayde vnto him, Perceiuest thou not, that the Pharises are offended in hearing *this* saying? 13 But hee
John answered, and saide, * Euery plant which mine
15. 2. heauenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted vp: 14 Let them alone, they be the * blinde
Luke leaders of the blind: and if the blind leadeth the
6. 39. blind, both shal fal into the ditch. 15 *Then an-
Mar. swered Peter, and saide to him, Declare vnto vs
7. 17. this parable. 16 Then said Iesus, Are ye yet without vnderstanding? 17 Perceiue yee not yet, that whatsoeuer entreth into the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught? 18 But those things which proceede out of the mouth, come from the heart, and they defile the
Gene. man. 19 For out of ỹ heart * come euil thoughts,
6.5. murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false testimonies,

ſtimonies, ſladers. 20 Theſe are the things which defile the man: but to eat with vnwaſhen hands, defileth not the man. 21 * And Ieſus went thence, and departed into the coaſtes of Tyrus and Sidō. 22 And behold, a woman a Canaanite came out of the ſame coaſts, and cried, ſaying vnto him, Haue mercy on me, O Lord, the Sonne of Dauid: my daughter is miſerably vexed with a deuil. 23 But he anſwered her not a word. Then came to him his diſciples, and beſought him, ſaying, Send her away, for ſhe crieth after vs. 24 But he anſwered, and ſaid, I am not ſent, but vnto the * loſt ſheepe of the houſe of Iſrael. 25 Yet ſhe came, & worſhipped him, ſaying, Lord helpe me. 26 And he anſwered, and ſayd, It is not good to take the childrens bread, & to caſt it to whelps. 27 But ſhe ſayd, Trueth, Lorde: yet in deede the whelpes eate of the crummes, which fall from their maſters table. 28 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto her, O woman great is thy faith: be it to thee as thou deſireſt. And her daughter was made whole at that houre. 29 So Ieſus * went away from thence, & came neere vnto the Sea of Galile, and went vp into a mountaine, and ſate down there. 30 And great multitudes came vnto him, * hauing with them, halt, blinde, dumme, maimed and many other, and caſt them down at Ieſus feete, and he healed them, 31 In ſo much that the multitude wondered, to ſee the dumme ſpeake, the maimed whole, the halt to goe, and the blinde to ſee: and they glorified the God of Iſrael.

Mat. 7.24, 27.

Chap. 10. 6.

Mar. 7.31.

Eſay 35.5.

Mar. Israel. 32 *Then Iesus called his disciples vn-
8.1. him, and saide, I haue compassion on this mul-
titude, because they haue continued with mee a-
ready three dayes, and haue nothing to eate: and
I wil not let them depart fasting, least they faint
in the way. 33 And his disciples said vnto him,
Whence should wee get so much bread in the
wilderness, as should suffice so great a multitude?
34 And Iesus said vnto them, How many loaues
haue ye? And they saide, Seuen, and a few litle fi-
shes. 35 Then he commanded the multitude to
sit downe on the ground, 36 And tooke the se-
uen loaues, and the fishes, and gaue thankes, and
brake *them*, and gaue to his disciples, and the
disciples to the multitude. 37 And they did all
eate, and were sufficed, and they tooke vp of the
fragments that remained, seuen baskets full.
38 And they that had eaten, were foure thousand
men, beside women, and litle children. 39 Then
Iesus sent away the multitude, and tooke shippe,
and came into the parts of Magdala.

CHAP. 16. 4. *The signe of Ionas.*

Chap. THen *came the Pharises and Sadduces, and
12.38. did tempt *him*, desiring him to shew them a
Mark. signe from heauen. 2 But he answered, and said
8.11. vnto them, When it is euening ye say, Faire wea-
Luke ther, for the skie is red. 3 *And in the morning
12.54. *ye say*, To day *shall be* a tempest: for the skie is
red and lowring. O hypocrites, ye can discerne
Chap. the face of the skie, and can yee not *discerne* the
12.39. signes of the times? 4 *The wicked generation,

and

and adulterous seeketh a signe, but there shal no signe bee giuen it, but that signe of the Prophet *Ionas: so hee left them, and departed. 5 And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had *forgotten to take bread *with them.* 6 Then Iesus said vnto them, Take heed and beware of the leauen of the Pharises & Sadduces. 7 And they reasoned among themselues, saying, *It is* because we haue brought no bread. 8 But Iesus knowing it, saide vnto them O ye of little faith, why reason ye *thus* among your selues, because ye haue brought no bread? 9 Doe ye not yet perceiue, neither remember the fiue loaues, when there were * fiue thousand *men*, and how many baskets tooke yee vp? 10 Neither the seuen loaues when there were * foure thousande *men*, and howe many baskets tooke yee vp? 11 Why perceiue ye not that I said not vnto you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leauen of the Pharises and Sadduces? 12 Then vnderstood they that hee had not sayd that they should beware of the leauen of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharises & Sadduces. 13 †Now when Iesus came into the coasts of Cæsarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom doe men say that I, the Sonne of man, am? 14 And they sayde, Some *say*, Iohn Baptist: and some, Elias: and others, Ieremias, or one of the Prophets. 15 He sayde vnto them, But whome say ye that I am? 16 Then Simon Peter answered, and sayde, * Thou art that Christ, the Sonne of

Ionas 1.17.
Mar. 8. 14. Luke 12.1.
Chap. 4.17. Iohn 6.9.
Chap. 15 34.
Mar. 8.27. Luke 9.18.
Iohn 6.69.

the

the liuing God. 17 And Iesus answered, and said to him, Blessed art thou, Simon, the sonne of Ionas: for flesh and blood hath not reuealed it vnto thee, but my Father which is in heauen. 18 And I say also vnto thee, that thou art * Peter, and vpon this rocke I wil build my Church and the gates of hell shall not ouercome it. 19 And I * will giue vnto thee the keyes of the kingdome of heauen: and whatsoeuer thou shalt binde vpon earth, shall be bound in heauen: and whatsoeuer thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heauen. 20 Then hee charged his disciples that they should tell no man that hee was Iesus that Christ. 21 From that time foorth Iesus began to shew vnto his disciples, that he must goe vnto Hierusalem, and suffer many things of the Elders, and of the hie Priestes, and Scribes, and be slaine, and be raised againe the third day. 22 Then Peter tooke him aside, and beganne to rebuke him, saying, Master, pity thy self: this shal not be vnto thee. 23 Then he turned backe and sayd vnto Peter, Get thee behinde mee, Satan: thou art an offence vnto mee, because thou vnderstandest not the things that are of God, but the things that are of men. 24 Iesus then sayde to his disciples, * If any man will follow me, let him forsake himself, and take vp his crosse, and follow mee. 25 For * whosoeuer will saue his life shall lose it: and whosoeuer shall lose his life, for my sake, shal find it. 26 * For what shal it profite a man though hee should winne the

John 1.42.
John 20.21.
Chap. 10.38.
Chap. 10.39.
John 12.25.

whole

whole world, if he lose his owne soule? or what shall a man giue for recompence of his soule? 27 For the Sonne of man shal come in the glory of his Father with his Angels, and then shal hee giue to euery man according to his deedes. 28 *Verely I say vnto you, there bee some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they haue seene the Sonne of man come in his kingdome. *Psal. 62.12. Mat. 9.1. luke 9.27.

CHAP. 17. 2. *The transfiguration of Christ.*

AND after sixe dayes, Iesus tooke Peter, and Iames, and Iohn his brother, and brought them vp into an hie mountaine apart, 2 And was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the Sunne, and his clothes were as white as light. 3 And beholde, there appeared vnto them Moses, & Elias talking with him. 4 Then answered Peter, and sayde to Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to be here: if thou wilt, let vs make here three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias. 5 While he yet spake, beholde, a bright cloude shadowed them: and beholde, there came a voyce out of the cloud, saying, *This is that my beloued Sõne, in whom I am well pleased: heare him. 6 And when the disciples heard that, they fell on their faces, and were sore afraide. 7 Then Iesus came and touched them, and sayde, Arise, and be not afraide. 8 And when they lifted vp their eyes, they sawe no man, saue Iesus onely. 9 And as they came downe from the mountaine, Iesus charged them, Mat. 9.2. luke 9.28. Chap. 3.17. 2. pet. 1.17.

saying, Shewe the vision to no man, vntill
Mar. Sonne of man rise againe frō the dead. 10 *
9. 11. his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say
Mat. Scribes that * Elias must first come? 11
9.5. Iesus answered and sayde vnto them, Certain
Elias must first come, and restore all thi
12 But I say vnto you that Elias is come alrea
and they knew him not, but haue done vnto h
whatsoeuer they would: likewise shall also
Sonne of man suffer of them. 13 Then the dis
ples perceined that he spake vnto them of Io
Mar. Baptist. 14 * And when they were come to
9. 14. multitude, there came to him a certaine man,
Luke fell downe at his feete, 15 And sayde, Maste
9.38. haue pitie on my sonne, for hee is lunatike, a
is sore vexed: for oft times hee falleth into th
fire, and oft times into the water. 16 And I
brought him to thy disciples, and they could no
heale him. 17 Then Iesus answered, and sayd, O
generation faithlesse, and crooked, howe lon
now shall I be with you? how long now shall I
suffer you? bring him hither to me. 18 And Iesu
rebuked the deuil: and he went out of him: and
the childe was healed at that houre. 19 Then
came the disciples to Iesus apart, and said, Why
could not we cast him out? 20 And Iesus sayd
Luke vnto them, Because of your vnbeliefe: * for vere-
17. 6. ly I say vnto you, if ye haue faith *as much* as a
graine of mustarde seede, yee shall say vnto thi
mountaine, Remoue hence to yonder place, and
it shall remoue; and nothing shalbe vnpossible
vnto

vnto you. 21 Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting. 22 And they *being in Galile, Iesus said vnto them, The Sonne of man shall bee deliuered into the handes of men, 23 And they shall kill him, but the thirde day shall hee rise againe: and they were very sory. 24 And when they were come to Capernaum, they that receiued polle money, came to Peter, and said, Doeth not your Master pay polle money? 25 He said, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Iesus preuented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? Of whom do the kings of the earth take tribute, or polle money? of their children, or of strangers? 26 Peter saide vnto him, Of strãgers. Then said Iesus vnto him, Then are the children free. 27 Neuertheless, least we should offend them, goe to the sea, and cast in an angle, and take the first fish that commeth vp, and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt finde a piece of twentie pence: that take, and giue it vnto them for me and thee.

Chap. 20.
mar. 9.31
luke 9.44

CHAP. 18. 1. *The greatest in the kingdom of God.*

THe* same time the disciples came vnto Iesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdome of heauen? 2 And Iesus called a litle child vnto him, and set him in the middes of them, 3 And said, Verely I say vnto you, except ye bee* conuerted, and become as litle children, ye shal not enter into the kingdome of heauen. 4 Whosoeuer therefore shall humble himselfe as this litle childe, the same is the greatest in the king-

Mat. 9.34
luke 9.46
(chap. 9. 1.
1. cor. 14.20

dome of heauen. 5 And whosoeuer shall receiue one such litle childe in my Name, receiueth
Mar. me. 6 *But whosoeuer shal offend one of these
9. 42. litle ones which beleeue in mee, it were better
Luke for him that a milstone were hanged about his
17. 2. necke, and that hee were drowned in the depth of the sea. 7 Woe *be* vnto the world because of offences: for it must needes bee that offences shall come, but woe *be* vnto that man, by whom
Chap. the offence commeth. 8 *Wherefore, if thine
5. 29, hand or thy foote cause thee to offend, cut them
30. off, and cast *them* from thee: it is better for thee
Mark. to enter into life, halt, or maimed, then hauing
9. 45. two handes, or two feete, to bee cast into euerlasting fire. 9 And if thine eye cause thee to offend, plucke it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, then hauing two eyes to bee cast into hell fire,
10 See ye despise not one of these litle ones:
Psal. for I say vnto you, that in heauen their *Angels
34. 8. alwayes behold the face of my Father which is
Luke in heauen. 11 For the *Sonne of man is come
19. 10. to saue that which was lost. 12 How thinke ye?
Luke *If a man haue an hundreth sheepe, and one of
15. 4. them be gone astray, doeth he not leaue ninetie and nine, and go into the mountaines, and seeke that which is gone astray? 13 And if so bee that bee finde it, verely I say vnto you, hee reioyceth more of that sheepe, then of the ninetie and nine which went not astray: 14 So it is not the will of your Father which is in heauen, that one of

these

these litle ones should perish. 15 *Moreouer, if thy brother trespasse against thee, goe and tell him his fault betweene thee and him alone: if he heare thee, thou hast wonne thy brother. 16 But if hee heare thee not, take yet with thee one or two, that by the *mouth of two or three witnesses euery word may be confirmed. 17 And if he refuse to heare them, tel it vnto the Church: and if he refuse to heare the Church also, let him be vnto thee as an heathen man, and a Publicane, 18 Verely I say vnto you, *Whatsoeuer ye bind on earth, shalbe bound in heauen: and *whatsoeuer ye loose on earth, shalbe loosed in heauen. 19 Againe, verely I say vnto you, that if two of you shal agree in earth vpon any thing, whatsoeuer they shall desire, it shall be giuen them of my Father which is in heauen. 20 For where two or three are gathered together in my Name, there am I in the mids of them. 21 Then came Peter to him, and sayd, Master, how oft shall my brother sinne against me, and I shal forgiue him? *vnto seuen times? 22 Iesus said vnto him, I say not to thee, vnto seuen times, but vnto seuentie times seuen times. 23 Therefore is the kingdome of heauen likened vnto a certaine King, which would take an account of his seruaunts. 24 And when he had begun to recken, one was brought vnto him, which ought him ten thousand talents. 25 And because hee had nothing to pay, his Lord commaunded him to be sold, and his wife, and *his* children, and all that hee

Leui. 19.17. luke 17. 3. iames 5.19. Deu. 19.15. 1.Cor. 5. 4. Iohn 20.23 Luke 17.4.

had,and *the dette* to be payd. 26 The ſeruant therefore fell downe and worſhipped him, ſaying,Lord,refraine thine anger towarde me, and I will pay thee all. 27 Then that ſeruants Lord had compaſsion, and looſed him, and forgaue him the dette. 28 But when the ſeruant was departed,hee found one of his fellowe ſeruaunts, which ought him an hundred pence,and he layd handes on him,and thratled him, ſaying, Pay me that thou oweſt. 29 Then his felow ſeruant fell downe at his feete, and beſought him, ſaying, Refraine thine anger toward me, and I will pay thee al. 30 Yet he would not,but went and caſt him into priſon, till hee ſhoulde pay the dette. 31 And when his *other* felow ſeruants ſaw what was done,they were very ſorie, and came, and declared vnto their Lorde all that was done. 32 Then his Lorde called him vnto him,and ſaid to him,O euil ſeruant,I forgaue thee al that dette, becauſe thou prayedſt mee. 33 Oughteſt not thou alſo to haue had pitie on thy fellowe ſeruant,euen as I had pitie on thee? 34 So his Lord was wroth, and deliuered him to the tormentors,till hee ſhould pay all that was due to him. 35 So likewiſe ſhall mine heauenly Father doe vnto you,except yee forgiue from your hearts eche one to his brother their treſpaſſes.

CHAP. 19. 27 *To leaue all and followe Chriſt.*

Mar. 10. 1. AND *it came to paſſe,that when Ieſus had finiſhed theſe ſayings,he departed from Gali-*

le,and

le, & came into the coasts of Iudea beyond Ior-
dan. 2 And great multitudes followed him, and
he healed them there. 3 Then came vnto him
the Pharises tempting him, and saying to him, Is
it lawfull for a man to put away his wife vpon
euery occasion? 4 And he answered, and said
vnto them, Haue ye not read, that * he which *Gene.*
made *them* at the beginning, made them male, 1.27.
and female, 5 And said, * For this cause, shall a *Gene.*
man leaue father & mother, and cleaue vnto his 2.24.
wife, & they which were two shall be one flesh? 1.cor.
6 Wherfore they are no more twaine, but one 6.16.
flesh. Let no man therefore put asunder that,
which God hath coupled together. 7 They
said to him, Why did then * Moses command to *Deut.*
giue a bill of diuorcement, & to put her away? 24.1.
8 He said vnto them, Moses because of the hard-
nesse of your heart, suffered you to put away
your wiues: but from the beginning it was not
so. 9 I say therefore vnto you, * that whoso- *Chap.*
euer shall put away his wife, except *it be* for 5.32.
whoredome, and marrie another, committeth a- *mar.*
dulterie: and whosoeuer marrieth her which is 10.11.
diuorced, doth commit adulterie. 10 *Then* said *luke*
his disciples to him, If the matter be so between 16.18.
man and wife, it is not good to marrie. 11 But 1.cor.
he said vnto them, All men can not receiue this 7.1,11.
thing, saue they to whom it is giuen. 12 For
there are some eunuches, which were so borne
of *their* mothers belly: and there be some eunu-
ches, which be gelded by men: & there be some

eunuches, which haue gelded themſelues for the
kingdome of heauen. He that is able to receiue
Mar. this, let him receiue it. 13 *Then were brought
10.13. to him litle childrē, that he ſhould put his hands
Luke on them, & pray: and the diſciples rebuked thē.
18.15. 14 But Ieſus ſaid, Suffer the litle children, & forbid
Chap. them not to come to me: for of ſuch is the
18.3. kingdome of heauen. 15 And when he had put
Mar. his hands on thē, he departed thence. 16 * And
10.17. behold, one came & ſaid vnto him, Good Maſter,
Luke what good thing ſhall I do, that I may haue e-
18.18. ternall life? 17 And he ſaid vnto him, Why cal-
leſt thou me good? there is none good but one,
euen God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keepe
the cōmandements. 18 He ſaid to him, Which?
Exod. And Ieſus ſaid, * Theſe: Thou ſhalt not kill:
20.13. Thou ſhalt not commit adulterie: Thou ſhalt
Deut. not ſteale: Thou ſhalt not beare falſe witneſſe.
5.16. 19 Honour thy father & mother: and thou ſhalt
Lem. loue thy neighbour as thy ſelfe. 20 The yoong
19.9. mā ſaid vnto him, I haue obſerued al theſe things
from my youth, what lacke I yet? 21 Ieſus ſaid
vnto him, If thou wilt be perfect, goe, ſell that
thou haſt, & giue it to the poore, and thou ſhalt
haue treaſure in heauen, and come & follow me.
22 And when the yong man heard that ſaying,
he went away ſorowfull: for he had great poſ-
ſeſſions. 23 Then Ieſus ſaid vnto his diſciples,
Verely, I ſay vnto you, that a rich mā ſhall hard-
ly enter in to the kingdome of heauen. 24 And
againe I ſay vnto you, It is eaſier for a camell to

goe

gote thorow the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. 25 And when his diſciples heard it, they were exceedingly amaſed, ſaying, Who then can be ſaued? 26 And Ieſus beheld them, and ſaid vnto them, With men this is vnpoſsible, but with God all things are poſsible. 27 * Then anſwered Peter, and ſaid to him, Beholde, we haue forſaken all, and followed thee, what therefore ſhal we haue? 28 And Ieſus ſaid vnto them, Verely I ſay to you, that when the Sonne of man ſhall ſit in the throne of his Maieſtie, ye which followed me in the regeneration, * ſhall ſit alſo vpon twelue thrones, and iudge the twelue tribes of Iſrael. 29 And whoſoeuer ſhall forſake houſes, or brethren, or ſiſters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my Names ſake, he ſhall receiue an hundred folde more, and ſhall inherit euerlaſting life. 30 * But many that are firſt, ſhalbe laſt, and the laſt *ſhalbe* firſt.

Mar. 10.28 *luke* 18.28. *Luke* 22.29. *Chap.* 20.16.

CHAP. 20. *Chriſt foretelleth his paſſion.*

FOr the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a certeine houſholder, which went out at the dawning of the day, to hire labourers into his vineyard. 2 And he agreed with the labourers for a peny a day, & ſent them into his vineyard. 3 And he went out about thee third houre, and ſaw other ſtanding idle in the market place, 4 And ſaid vnto them, Go ye alſo into *my* vineyard, and whatſoeuer is right, I will giue you: and they went their way. 5 Againe he went out about

about the fixt and ninth houre, and did likewise.
6 And he went out about the eleuenth houre, and
found other standing idle, and sayd vnto them,
Why stand ye here al the day idle? 7 They sayd
vnto him, Because no man hath hired vs. He sayd
vnto them, Goe ye also into *my* vineyard, and
whatsoeuer is right, that shal ye receiue. 8 And
when euen was come, the master of the vine-
yard sayd vnto his steward, Call the labourers,
& giue them their hire, beginning at the last till
thou come to the first. 9 And they *which were*
hired about the eleuenth houre, came and recei-
ued euery man a peny. 10 Now when the first
came, they supposed that they should receiue
more, but they likewise receiued euery man a
peny. 11 And when they had receiued it, they
murmured against ỹ master of the house, 12 Say-
ing, These last haue wrought but one houre, and
thou hast made them equall vnto vs, which haue
Chap. borne the burden and heat of the day. 13 And
20.50. he answered one of them, saying, Friend, I doe
& 22. thee no wrong: diddest thou not agree with me
14. for a peny? 14 Take that which is thine owne,
mark. & go thy way: I will giue vnto this last, as much
10.31. as to thee. 15 Is it not lawfull for me to do as I
luke will with mine owne? Is thine eye euill because
13.30. I am good? 16 * So the last shalbe first, and the
Mar. first last: for many are called, but few chosen.
10.31. 17 *And Iesus went out to Hierusalem, & tooke
luke the twelue disciples apart in the way, and sayd
18.31. vnto them, 18 Beholde, we goe vp to Hieru-

lem,

lem, and the Sonne of man ſhalbe deliuered vn-
to the chiefe Prieſts, & vnto the Scribes, & they
ſhall condemne him to death, 19 And * ſhall *Iohn*
deliuer him to the Gentiles, to mocke, and to 18.32
ſcourge, & to crucifie *him*, but the third day he
ſhall riſe againe. 20 * Then came to him the *Mar.*
mother of Zebedeus children with her ſonnes, 10.35
worſhipping *him*, and deſiring a certeine thing
of him. 21 And he ſayd vnto her, What wouldeſt thou? She ſayd to him, Grant that theſe my
two ſonnes may ſit, the one at thy right hand,
and the other at thy left hand in thy kingdome.
22 And Ieſus anſwered and ſayd, Ye know not
what ye aſke. Are ye able to drinke of the cup,
that I ſhall drinke of, and to be baptized with
the baptiſme that I ſhalbe baptized with? They
ſayd to him, We are able. 23 And he ſayd vnto
them, Ye ſhall drinke in deed of my cup, and
ſhall be baptized with the baptiſme that I am
baptized with, but to ſit at my right hand, and
at my left hand, is not mine to giue: but *it ſhall*
be giuen to them for whom it is prepared of my
Father. 24 * And when the *other* tenne heard *Ma*
this, they diſdained at the two brethren. 10.
25 Therefore Ieſus called them vnto him, and *Luke*
ſayd, Ye know that the lords of the Gentiles 22.2
haue domination ouer them, and they that are
great, exerciſe authoritie ouer them. 26 But it
ſhall not be ſo among you: but whoſoeuer will
be great among you, let him be your ſeruant.
27 And whoſoeuer will be chiefe among you,
let

Phil. 2.7. Mar. 10.45. Luke 18.35.

let him be your ſeruant. 28 *Euen as the Sonne of man came not to be ſerued, but to ſerue, & to giue his life for the ranſome of many. 29 *And as they departed from Iericho, a great multitude followed him. 30 And beholde, two blinde men ſitting by the way ſide, when they heard that Ieſus paſſed by, cried, ſaying, O Lord, the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on vs. 31 And the multitude rebuked them, becauſe they ſhoulde holde their peace: but they cried the more, ſaying, O Lord, the ſonne of Dauid, haue mercy on vs. 32 Then Ieſus ſtood ſtill, and called them, and ſayd, What will ye that I ſhould do to you? 33 They ſaid to him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened. 34 And Ieſus moued with compaſſion, touched their eyes: and immediatly their eyes receiued ſight, and they followed him.

CHAP. 21. *1 Chriſt rideth to Hieruſalem.*

Mar. 11. Luke 19.29

AND* when they drew neere to Hieruſalem, & were come to Bethphage, vnto the mount of the Oliues, then ſent Ieſus two diſciples, 2 Saying to them, Go into the towne that is ouer againſt you, and anon ye ſhall finde an aſſe bound, and a colt with her: looſe them, and bring them vnto me. 3 And if any man ſay ought vnto you, ſay ye, that the Lord hath need of them, and ſtraightway he will let them goe. 4 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled, which was ſpoken by the Prophet, ſaying, 5 *Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Beholde, thy King commeth vnto thee, meeke, and ſitting

vpon

vpon an asse, and a colt, the foale of an asse vsed to the yoke. 6 So the disciples went, and did as Iesus had commanded them, 7 And brought the asse & the colt, & put on them their clothes, and set him thereon. 8 And a great multitude spred their garments in the way: and other cut downe branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way. 9 Moreouer, the people that went before, and they also that followed cried, saying, Hosanna to the Sonne of Dauid, blessed *be* he that commeth in the Name of the Lord, Hosanna *thou which art* in the highest *heauens*. 10 And when hee was come into Hierusalem, all the citie was moued, saying, Who is this? 11 And the people sayd, This is Iesus that Prophet of Nazareth in Galile. 12 And Iesus went into the Temple of God, and cast out all them * that solde and bought in the Temple, and ouerthrew the tables of the money changers, and the seats of them that solde doues. 13 And said to them. It is written, * My house shall be called the house of prayer: but * ye haue made it a denne of theeues. 14 Then the blinde and the halt came to him into the Temple, and he healed them. 15 But when the chiefe Priests and Scribes saw the marueiles that he did, and the children crying in the Temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Sonne of Dauid, they disdained, 16 And said vnto him, Heareſt thou what these say? And Iesus sayd vnto them, Yea, read ye neuer, * By the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast

Mar. 11.15
Esay 56.7. *Ier.* 7.11. *mar.* 11.17. *luke* 19.46.
Psal. 8.2.

haſt made perfit the praiſe? 17 So he left them
and went out of the citie vnto Bethania, & lo-
Mar. ged there. 18 * And in the morning, as he re-
11.12. ned into the citie, he was hungrie. 19 And be-
ing a fig tree in the way, he came to it, & found
nothing thereon but leaues only, and ſayd vnto it,
Neuer fruit grow on thee henceforwards. And
anon the fig tree withered. 20 And when his
diſciples ſaw it, they marueiled, ſaying, How
ſoone is the fig tree withered! 21 And Ieſus an-
Chap. ſwered and ſaid vnto them, * Verely I ſay vnto
27.20. you, if ye haue faith, and doubt not, ye ſhall not
onely do that, *which I haue done* to the fig tree,
but alſo if ye ſay to this mountaine, Take thy
ſelfe away, & caſt thy ſelfe into the ſea, it ſhall be
Chap. done. 22 * And whatſoeuer ye ſhal aſke in pray-
7.7. er, if ye beleeue, ye ſhall receiue it. 23 * And
Iohn when he was come into the Temple, the chiefe
15.7. Prieſts, and the Elders of the people came vnto
1.Iohn him as he was teaching, & ſaid, By what authori-
5.14. tie doeſt thou theſe things? and who gaue thee
Mar. this authoritie? 24 Then Ieſus anſwered & ſaid
11.27, vnto thē, I alſo wil aſke of you a certeine thing,
28. *luk.* which if ye tell me, I likewiſe will tell you by
20.1,2. what authoritie I do theſe things. 25 The bap-
tiſme of Iohn whence was it? from heauen, or of
men? Then they reaſoned among themſelues,
Chap. ſaying, If we ſhall ſay, From heauen, he will ſay
14.5. vnto vs, Why did ye not then beleeue him?
mar. 26 And if we ſay, Of men, we feare the mul-
6.20. titude, * for all holde Iohn as a Prophet. 27 Then
they

they answered Iesus, and sayd, We cannot tell. And he said vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things. 28 But what thinke ye? A certaine man had two sonnes, and came to the elder, and said, Sonne, go & worke to day in my vineyard. 29 But he answered, & said, I will not: yet afterward he repented himselfe, and went. 30 Then came he to the second, and sayd likewise. And he answered, and said, I will sir: yet he went not. 31 Whether of them twaine did the will of the Father? They said vnto him, The first. Iesus said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that the Publicanes, & the harlots goe before you into the kingdome of God. 32 For Iohn came vnto you in the way of righteousnesse, & ye beleeued him not: but the Publicanes & the harlots beleeued him, & ye, though ye saw it, were not mooued with repentance afterward, that ye might beleeue him. 33 Heare another parable, There was a certaine housholder, * which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and made a wine-presse therin, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a strange country. 34 And when the time of the fruit drew neere, he sent his seruants to the husbandmen to receiue the fruits thereof. 35 And the husbandmen tooke his seruants, and beat one, and killed another, & stoned another. 36 Againe he sent other seruants, moe then the first: and they did the like vnto them. 37 But last of all he sent vnto them his owne Sonne, saying,

*Esai. 5.1.

saying, They will reuerence my Sonne. 38 But when the husbandmen saw the Sonne, they said among themselues, * This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, and let vs take his inheritance. 39 So they tooke him, and cast him out of the vineyard, and slew him. 40 When therefore the Lord of the vineyard shall come, what will he do to those husbandmen? 41 They said vnto him, He will cruelly destroy those wicked men, and wil let out his vineyard vnto other husbandmen, which shall deliuer him the fruits in their seasons. 42 Iesus sayd vnto them, Read ye neuer in the Scriptures, *The stone which the builders refused, the same is made the head of the corner? This was the Lords doing, and it is marueilous in our eyes. 43 Therefore say I vnto you, the kingdome of God shall be taken from you, and shall be giuen to a nation, which shall bring foorth the fruits thereof. 44 * And whosoeuer shall fal on this stone, he shalbe broken: but on whomsoeuer it shal fall, it wil dash him in pieces. 45 And when the chiefe Priests and Pharises had heard his parables, they perceiued that he spake of them. 46 And they seeking to lay hands on him feared the people, because they tooke him as a Prophet.

Chap. 26.34. & 27 2 Iohn 11.53.

Psal. 118. Act. 4.11. Rom. 9.33. Isai. 8.14.

CHAP. 22. 2 *The parable of the mariage.* 9 *The calling of the Gentiles.* 26 *Cesars tribute.*

Luke 14.16 Reuel. 19.9.

THen * Iesus answered, and spake vnto them again in parables, saying, 2 The kingdom

of heauen is like vnto a certaine King, which married his ſonne, 3 And ſent foorth his ſeruants, to call them that were bidde to the wedding, but they would not come. 4 Againe he ſent foorth other ſeruants, ſaying, Tell them which are bidden, Beholde, I haue prepared my dinner: mine oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come vnto the marriage. 5 But they made light of it, and went their wayes, one to his farme, and another about his marchandiſe. 6 And the remnant tooke his ſeruants, and intreated them ſhamefully and ſlewe them. 7 But when the King heard it he was wroth, and ſent foorth his warriers, and deſtroyed thoſe murtherers, and burnt vp their citie. 8 Then ſaid he to his ſeruants, Truely the wedding is prepared: but they which were bidden, were not worthy. 9 Goe ye therefore out into the hie wayes, and as many as ye finde, bidde them to the marriage. 10 So thoſe ſeruants went out into the *hie* wayes, and gathered together all that euer they found, both good & bad: ſo the wedding was furniſhed with gheſtes. 11 Then the King came in, to ſee the gheſtes, and ſawe there a man which had not on a wedding garment. 12 And he ſaid vnto him, Friend, howe cameſt thou in hither, and haſt not on a wedding garmẽt? And he was ſpeechles. 13 Thẽ ſaide the King to the ſeruants, Binde him hand and foote: take him away, and caſt him into vtter darkeneſſe: * there ſhall be weeping and *Chap. 8. 12.*

Chap. gnashing of teeth. 14 *For many are called, but
20.16. few are chosen. 15 *Then went the Pharises &
Mar. tooke counsell howe they might tangle him in
12.13. talke. 16 And they sent vnto him their disciples
with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know
that thou art true, and teachest the way of God
truely, neither carest for any man: for thou con-
siderest not the person of men. 17 Tell vs there-
fore, how thinkest thou? Is it lawfull to giue tri-
bute vnto Cesar, or not? 18 But Iesus perceiued
their wickednesse, and said, Why tempt ye me,
ye hypocrites? 19 Shew me the tribute money.
And they brought him a penie. 20 And he said
vnto them, Whose is this image and superscrip-
tion? 21 They said vnto him, Cesars. Then said
Mar. he vnto them, * Giue therefore to Cesar, the
12.17 things which are Cesars, and giue vnto God,
Luke those things which are Gods. 22 And when
20.25 they heard it, they marueiled and left him, and
Mat. went their way. 23 *The same day the Saddu-
12.18 cees came to him (which say that there is no re-
surrection) and asked him, 24 Saying, Master,
Deu. *Moses said, If a man die, hauing no children, his
25.5. brother shall marry his wife by the right of alli-
ance, & raise vp seede vnto his brother. 25 Now
there were with vs seuen brethren, and the first
married a wife, and deceased: and hauing none
issue, left his wife vnto his brother. 26 Like wise
also the second, and the third, vnto the seuenth,
27 And last of al ỹ woman died also. 28 There-
fore in the resurrection, whose wife shall she be

of

of the seuen? for all had her. 29 Then Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, Ye are deceiued, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God. 30 For in the resurrection they neither marrie wiues, nor wiues are bestowed in marriage, but are as the Angels of God in heauen. 31 And concerning ỹ resurrection of the dead, haue ye not read what is spoken vnto you of God, saying, 32 *I am the God of Abraham, & the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the liuing? 33 And when the multitude heard it, they were astonied at his doctrine. 34 * But when the Pharises had heard, that he had put the Sadduces to silence, they assembled together. 35 And one of them *which was* an expounder of the Lawe, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying, 36 Master, which is the great commandement in the Lawe? 37 Iesus saide to him, * Thou shalt loue the Lord thy God with al thine heart, with all thy soule, and with all thy mind. 38 This is the first and the great commandement. 39 And the second is like vnto this, * Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. 40 On these two commandements hangeth the whole Lawe, and the Prophets. 41 * While the Pharises were gathered together, Iesus asked them, 42 Saying, What thinke ye of Christ? whose sonne is he? They said vnto him, Dauids. 43 He saide vnto them, How then doeth Dauid in spirit call him Lord, saying, 44 *The Lord said to my Lorde,

*Exod. 3.6. mar. 12.27.
*Mar. 12.28.
*Deut. 6.5.
*Mar. 12.35.
*Mar. 12.34.
*Psal. 110.1.

Sit at my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footestoole? 45 If then Dauid call him Lorde, howe is he his Sonne? 46 And none coulde answere him a worde, neither durst any from that day foorth aske him any moe questions.

CHAP. 23 1. *Outward holinesse.*

Nehe. 8.4. THen spake Iesus to the multitude, and to his disciples, 2 Saying, * The Scribes and the Pharises sit in Moses seate. 3 Al therefore whatsoeuer they bid you obserue, that obserue & doe: but after their workes doe not: for they say, and doe not. 4 *For they bind heauie burdens, and grieuous to be borne, and lay them on mens shoulders, but they themselues will not moue them with *one* of their fingers. 5 Al their works they doe for to be seene of men: for they make their phylacteries broade, and make long the * frindges of their garments, 6 *And loue the chiefe place at feastes, and to haue the chiefe seates in the assemblies, 7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi. 8 *But be not ye called, Rabbi: for one is your doctor, *to wit*, Christ, and all ye are brethren. 9 *And call no man your father vpon the earth: for there is but one your Father, which is in heauen. 10 Be not called doctors: for one is your doctor, *to wit* Christ. 11 But he that is greatest among you, let him be your seruant. 12 *For whosoeuer will exalt himselfe, shal be brought lowe: and whosoeuer wil humble himselfe, shall be

Luke 11.46. actes 15.10.

Num. 15.38. Luke 11.43. James 3.1. Mal. 1.6. Luke 14.11. & 18. 14.

be exalted. 13 Wo therfore *be* vnto you Scribes and Phariſes, hypocrites, becauſe ye ſhut vp the kingdome of heauen before men: for ye your ſelues goe not in, neither ſuffer ye them that would enter, to come in. 14 *Wo *be* vnto you, Scribes and Phariſes, hypocrites: for yee deuoure widowes houſes, euen vnder a colour of long prayers: wherefore ye ſhall receiue the greater damnation. 15 Woe *be* vnto you, Scribes & Phariſes, hypocrites; for ye compaſſe ſea & land to make one of your profeſsion: and when he is made, ye make him two folde more the childe of hell, then you your ſelues. 16 Wo *be* vnto you blind guides, which ſay, Whoſoeuer ſweareth by the Temple, it is nothing: but whoſoeuer ſweareth by the golde of the Temple, he offendeth. 17 Ye fooles and blinde, whether is greater, the golde, or the Temple that ſanctifieth the golde? 18 And whoſoeuer ſweareth by the altar, it is nothing: but whoſoeuer ſweareth by the offering that is vpon it, offendeth. 19 Ye fooles and blind, whether is greater, the offring, or the altar which ſanctifieth the offering? 20 Whoſoeuer therefore ſweareth by the altar, ſweareth by it, & by al things thereon. 21 *And whoſoeuer ſweareth by the Temple, ſweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein. 22 *And he that ſweareth by heauen, ſweareth by the throne of God, and by him that ſitteth thereon. 23 *Wo *be* to you, Scribes and Phariſes, hypocrites: for ye tithe mint, and aniſe, and cummin,

Mar. 12.40 *Luke* 30.47.

1. *Kin.* 8.13. *Chap.* 5.34.

Luke 11.42

and leaue the weightier matters of the lawe, e iudgement and mercie, & fidelitie. These ought ye to haue done, and not to haue left the other. 24 Ye blind guides, which straine out a gnat, and swallowe a camel. 25 Wo be to you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye make cleane the outer side of the cuppe, and of the platter: but within they are full of briberie and excesse. 26 Thou blind Pharise, cleanse first the inside of the cup & platter, that the outside of them may be cleane also. 27 Wo be to you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye are like vnto whited tombes, which appeare beautifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all filthinesse. 28 So are ye also: for outwarde ye appeare righteous vnto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisie and iniquitie. 29 Wo be vnto you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye build the tombes of the Prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous, 30 And say, If we had beene in the dayes of our fathers, we would not haue bin partners with them in the blood of the Prophets. 31 So then ye be witnesses vnto your selues, that ye are the children of them that murthered the Prophets. 32 Fulfill ye also the measure of your fathers. 33 O serpents, the generation of vipers, howe should ye escape the damnation of hell? 34 Wherefore behold, I send vnto you Prophets and wise men, and Scribes, and of them ye shall kill and crucifie: and of them shall ye scourge in your Syna-

Luke 11.39

gogues,

gogues,& persecute from citie to citie, 35 That vpon you may come all ỹ righteous blood that was shedde vpon the earth, * from the blood of Abel the righteous, vnto the blood of Zacharias the sonne of Barachias, *whō ye slewe betweene the Temple and the altar. 36 Verely I say vnto you, all these things shall come vpon this generation. 37 *Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest the Prophets, and stonest them which are sent to thee, howe often would I haue gathered thy children together, as the henne gathereth her chickens vnder her wings, & ye would not! 38 Beholde, your habitation shall be left vnto you desolate: 39 For I say vnto you, ye shall not see me hencefoorth till that ye say, Blessed is he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

Gene. 4.8. *2.Chr.* 24.22. *Luke* 13.34.

CHAP. 24. 2. *The signes of Christes comming.*

AND *Iesus went out, and departed from the Temple, and his disciples came to him, to shewe him the building of the Temple. 2 And Iesus said vnto them, See ye not all these things? Verely I say vnto you, *there shall not be here left a stone vpon a stone, that shall not be cast downe. 3 And as he sate vpon the mount of Olines, his disciples came vnto him apart, saying, Tell vs when these things shall be, and what signe *shall be* of thy comming, and of the ende of the world. 4 And Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, * Take heede that no man deceiue you. 5 For many shall come in my name, saying,

Mar. 13.1. *luke* 21.5. *Luke* 19.44. *Eph.* 5.6. *colo.* 2.8.

ing, I am Christ, and shall deceiue many. 6 And ye shall heare of warres, & rumours of warres: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to passe, but the end is not yet. 7 For nation shall rise against nation, & realme against realme, and there shall be famine, and pestilence, and earthquakes in diuers places. 8 All these
Chap. are but the beginning of sorowes. 9 * Then
10.17. shall they deliuer you vp to be afflicted, & shall
Luke kill you, and ye shall be hated of all nations for
21.12 my Names sake. 10 And then shall many be of-
John fended, and shall betray one an other, and shall
15.20. hate one another. 11 And many false prophets
& 16. shall arise, and shall deceiue many. 12 And be-
2. cause iniquitie shall be increased, the loue of ma-
1.Thes. ny shall be cold. 13 * But he that endureth to
5.15. the end, he shall be saued. 14 And this Gospel of
Tim. the kingdome shall be preached through the
4.5. whole world for a witnesse vnto all nations, and
Mar. then shall the end come. 15 When ye * therefore
13.14 shall see the abomination of desolation spoken
Dan. of by * Daniel the Prophet, set in the holy place,
9.27. (let him that readeth consider it) 16 Then let them which be in Iudea, flee into the mountaines. 17 Let him which is on the house toppe, not come downe to fetch any thing out of his house. 18 And he that is in the field, let him not returne backe to fetch his clothes. 19 And wo *shall be* to them that are with childe, & to them that gine sucke in those dayes. 20 But pray that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the

the *Sabbath day. 21 For then shalbe great tri- *Acts.
bulation, such as was not from the beginning of 1.12.
the world to this time, nor shall be. 22 And ex-
cept those dayes should be shortened, there
should no fleih be saued: but for the elects sake
those dayes shalbe shortened. 23 * Then if any *Mark.
shal say vnto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there, be- 13.21
leeue it not. 24 For there shal arise false Christs *luke
and false prophets, & shall shew great signes and 17.23
wonders, so that if it were possible, they should
deceiue the very elect 25 Beholde, I haue tolde
you before. 26 Wherefore if they shall say vn-
to you, Behold, he is in the desert, goe not foorth:
Beholde, he is in the secret places, beleeue it not.
27 For as the lightning commeth out of the
East, & is seene into ỹ West, so shal also ỹ com-
ming of the Sonne of man be 28 * For where- *Luke
soeuer a dead carke is is, thither will the Eagles 17.37
be gather d together. 29 * And immediatly af- *Mar.
ter the tribulation of those dayes, shal ỹ Sunne 13.24
be darkened, and the Moone shall not giue her *luke
light, and the starres shall fall from heauen, and 21.25.
the powers of heauen shalbe shaken. 30 And *isai.
then shall appeare ỹ signe of the Sonne of man 13.10.
in heauen: and then shall all the kinreds of the *Reuel.
earth mourne, * and they shall see the Sonne of 1.17.
man come in the cloudes of heauen with power *dan.7.
and great glory. 31 * And he shall send his An- 13.
gels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they 1.*Cor.*
shall gather together his elect from the foure 15.52.
windes, *and* from the one ende of the heauens 1.*thes.*
vnto 4.16.

vnto the other. 32 Now learne the parable of
the figge tree: when her bough is yet tender,
and it putteth foorth leaues, ye know that sum-
mer *is* neere. 33 So likewise ye, when ye see all
these things, know that *the kingdome of God is*
neere, *euen* at the doores. 34 Verely I say vnto
you, this generation shall not passe, till all these
Mark. things be done. 35 *Heauen and earth shall
13.31. passe away: but my wordes shal not passe away.
36 But of that day and houre knoweth no man,
no not the Angels of heauen, but my Father on-
ly. 37 But as the dayes of Noe *were*, so likewise
shall the comming of the Sonne of man be.
Luke 38 *For as in the dayes *before* the flood, they
17.26. did eate and drinke, marrie, & giue in marriage,
gene. vnto the day that Noe entred into the Arke,
7.5.11. 39 And knewe nothing, till the flood came,
and tooke them all away: so shall also the com-
Luke ming of the Sonne of man be. 40 *Then two
17.36. shall be in the fieldes, the one shall be receiued,
and the other shalbe refused. 41 Two women
Mark. shalbe grinding at the mill: the one shalbe re-
13.35. ceiued, & the other shalbe refused. 42 *Watch
Luke therefore: for ye knowe not what houre your
12.39. master will come. 43 * Of this be sure, that if
1.thes. the good man of the house knew at what watch
5.2. the thiefe would come, he would surely watch,
reuel. and not suffer his house to be digged thorowe.
16.15. 44 Therefore be yee also ready: for in the
Luke houre that ye thinke not, will the Sonne of man
12.42. come. 45 * Who then is a faithfull seruant
and

and wise, whom his master hath made ruler ouer his housholde, to giue them meate in season? 46 Blessed is that seruant, whom his master when he commeth, shall finde so doing. 47 Verely I say vnto you, he shall make him ruler ouer all his goods. 48 But if that euill seruant shall say in his heart, My master doeth deferre his comming, 49 And beginne to smite his fellowes, and to eate, and to drinke with the drunken: 50 That seruants master will come in a day, when he looketh not for him, and in an houre that he is not ware of, 51 And will cut him off, and giue him his portion with hypocrites: *there shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth *Chap. 13.42. and 25.30.

CHAP. 25. 13. *We must watch.*

THen ỹ kingdome of heauen shalbe likened vnto ten virgins, which tooke their lampes, and went forth to meete the bridegrome. 2 And fiue of them were wise, and fiue foolish. 3 The foolish tooke their lampes, but tooke none oile with them. 4 But the wise tooke oyle in their vessels with their lampes. 5 Nowe while the bridegrome taried long, all slumbred and slept. 6 And at midnight there was a crie made, Behold, the bridegrome commeth: goe out to meete him. 7 Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lampes. 8 And the foolish saide to the wise, Giue vs of your oile, for our lampes are out. 9 But the wise answered, saying, *Not so*, lest there will not be ynough for vs, and you

but

but goe yee rather to them that sell, and bye for your selues. 10 And while they went to bye, the bridegrome came: and they that were readie, went in with him to the wedding, and the gate was shut. 11 Afterwardes came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to vs. 12 But he answered, & said, Verely I say vnto you, I know you not. 13 *Watch therefore: for ye knowe neither the day, nor the houre, when the Sonne of man wil come. 14 *For the kingdome of heauen is as a man that going into a strange countrey, called his seruants, and deliuered to them his goods. 15 And vnto one he gaue fiue talents, and to another two, and to another one, to euery man after his owne abilitie, & straightway went from home. 16 Then he that had receiued fiue talents, went and occupied with them, and gained other fiue talents. 17 Likewise also, he that receiued two, he also gained other two. 18 But he that receiued that one, went and digged it in the earth, and hidde his masters money. 19 But after a long season, the master of those seruants came, and reckoned with them. 20 Then came hee that had receiued fiue talents, and brought other fiue talents, saying, Master, thou deliueredst vnto me fiue talents, beholde, I haue gained with them other fiue talents. 21 Then his master said vnto him, It is wel done good seruant and faithfull, Thou hast bene faithfull in litle, I will make thee ruler ouer much: enter into thy masters ioy. 22 Also he that had receiued two talents, came, and

Chap. 24 42 mar. 13. 35. Luke 19. 12, 13.

and saide, Master, thou deliueredst vnto mee two talents: behold, I haue gained two other talents more. 23 His master saide vnto him, It is well done good seruant, and faithfull, Thou hast bene faithfull in litle, I wil make thee ruler ouer much: enter into thy masters ioy. 24 Then he which had receiued the one talent, came, and saide, Master, I knewe that thou wast an hard man, which reapest where thou sowedst not, and gatherest where thou strawedst not. 25 I was therefore afraide, and went and hidde thy talent in the earth: beholde, thou hast thine owne. 26 And his master answered and said vnto him, Thou euill seruant, and slouthfull, thou knewest that I reape where I sowed not, and gather where I strawed not. 27 Thou oughtest therefore to haue put my money to the exchangers, and then at my comming should I haue receiued mine owne with vantage. 28 Take therefore the talent from him, and giue it vnto him which hath tenne talents. 29 *For vnto euery man that hath, it shall be giuen, and he shal haue abundance, and from him that hath not, euen that he hath, shal be taken away. 30 Cast therefore that vnprofitable seruant into vtter* darkenesse: there shall bee weeping and gnashing of teeth. 31 And when the Sonne of man commeth in his glory, and all the holy Angels with him, then shall he sit vpon the throne of his glorie. 32 And before him shall bee gathered all nations, and hee shall separate them one from another,

Gene. 13.12. mar. 4.25. Chap. 8.12. and 22.13.

another, as a shepheard separateth the sheep
from the goates. 33 And he shall set the sheep
on his right hande, and the goates on the left.
34 Then shall the King say to them on his right
hande, Come yee blessed of my Father: take the
inheritance of the kingdome prepared for you
Esay *from* the foundation of the world. 35 * For I
58.7. was an hungred, and ye gaue mee meate: I thir-
sted, and ye gaue mee drinke: I was a stranger,
and yee tooke mee in vnto you: 36 *I was na-*
Eccle. ked, and ye clothed me: I was * sicke, and ye vi-
7.35. sited me: I was in prison, and ye came vnto me.
37 Then shall the righteous answere him, say-
ing, Lorde, when sawe wee thee an hungred, and
fedde thee? or athirst, and gaue thee drinke?
38 And when saw we thee a stranger, and tooke
thee in vnto vs? or naked, and clothed thee?
39 Or when saw we thee sicke, or in prison, and
came vnto thee? 40 And the King shal answere,
and say vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, in as
much as yee haue done it vnto one of the least
of these my brethren, yee haue done it to mee.
41 Then shall hee say vnto them on the left
Psal. hand, * Depart from me ye cursed, into euer-la-
6.8. sting fire which is prepared for the deuil and his
chap. angels. 42 For I was an hungred, and yee gaue
7.23. mee no meate: I thirsted, and yee gaue mee no
Luke drinke: 43 I was a stranger, and ye tooke mee
13.27. not in vnto you: *I was* naked, and ye clothed me
not: sicke, and in prison, and ye visited me not.
44 Then shall they also answere him, saying,
Lord,

Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or a thirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sicke, or in prison, and did not minister vnto thee? 45 Then shall hee answere them, and say, Verely I say vnto you, in as much as yee did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me. 46 *And these shall go into euerlasting paine, and the righteous into life eternall. *Dan. 12.2. *John 5.29.

CHAP. 26. 26. *The institution of the Lords Supper.*

AND *it came to passe, when Iesus had finished al these sayings, he said vnto his disciples, 2 Yee knowe that after two dayes is the Passeouer, and the Sonne of man shall bee deliuered to be crucified. 3 *Then assembled together the chiefe Priestes, and the Scribes and the Elders of the people into the hall of the hie Priest called Caiaphas, 4 And consulted together that they might take Iesus by subtiltie, and kill him. 5 But they sayde, Not on the feast day, least any vproare bee among the people. 6 *And when Iesus was in Bethania, in the house of Simon the leper, 7 There came vnto him a woman, which had a boxe of very costly oyntment, and powred it on his head, as he sate at the table. 8 And when his disciples sawe it, they had indignation, saying, What needed this waste? 9 For this oyntment might haue bene solde for much, and bene giuen to the poore. 10 And Iesus knowing it, sayd vnto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for shee hath wrought a good worke vpon *Mar. 14.1. *John 11.47. *Mar. 14.3. *John 11.2.

Deut. vpon me. 11 *For ye haue the poore alwayes
15.11. with you, but mee shall yee not haue alwayes.
12 For in that shee powred this oyntment on
my body, shee did it to bury mee 13 Verely I
say vnto you whersoeuer this Gospel shall be
preached throughout all the worlde, there shall
also this that shee hath done, be spoken of for a
Mar. memoriall of her. 14 *Then one of the twelue,
14.10. called Iudas Iscariot, went vnto the chiefe Priests,
15 And saide, What will yee giue me, and I will
deliuer him vnto you? and they appointed vn-
to him thirtie *pieces* of siluer. 16 And from
that time he sought oportunitie to betray him.
Mar. 17 *Nowe on the first *day* of the feast of vnlea-
14.11. uened bread, the disciples came to Iesus, saying
Luke vnto him, Where wilt thou that wee prepare
22. 7. for thee to eate the Passeouer? 18 And he sayd,
Goe yee into the citie to such a man, and say to
him, The Master sayeth, My time is at hande: I
wil keepe the Passeouer at thine house with my
disciples. 19 And the disciples did as Iesus had
giuen them charge, and made readie the Passe-
Luke ouer. 20 *So when the euen was come, he sate
22.14. downe with the twelue. 21 And as they did
Mar. eate he sayde, *Verely I say vnto you, that one
14.18 of you shall betray me. 22 And they were ex-
John ceeding sorowful, and began euery one of them
13.21. to say vnto him, Is it I, Master? 23 And hee an-
Psal. swered and saide, *Hee that dippeth his hande
41.9. with mee in the dish, hee shall betray mee.
24 Surely the Sonne of man goeth his way, as it

is written of him: but woe *bee* to that man, by whome the Sonne of man is betrayed: it had bene good for that man, if hee had neuer bene borne. 25 Then Iudas which betrayed him, answered and sayd, Is it I, Master? Hee saide vnto him, Thou hast saide it. 25 * And as they did eate, Iesus tooke the bread, and when hee had blessed, hee brake it, and gaue it to the disciples and said, Take, eate, this is my body. 27 Also he tooke the cup, and when he had giuen thankes, hee gaue it them, saying, Drinke yee all of it. 28 For this is my blood of the Newe Testament, that is shed for many, for the remission of sinnes. 29 I say vnto you, that I wil not drinke hencefoorth of this fruite of the vine, vntill that day, when I shall drinke it newe with you in my Fathers kingdome. 30 And when they had sung a Psalme, they went out into the mount of Olines. 31 * Then saide Iesus vnto them, All ye shall be offended by me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepheard, and the sheepe of the flocke shall be scattered. 32 But * after I am risen again, * I wil goe before you into Galile. 33 But Peter answered, and said vnto him, Though that al men should be offended by thee, yet will I neuer bee offended. 34 * Iesus saide vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, that this night before the cocke crowe, thou shalt denie mee thrise. 35 Peter saide vnto him, Though I should die with thee, I will in no case deny thee. Likewise also saide all the disciples. 36 * Then

1. Cor. 11.24

Mar. 24.27. *Iohn* 16.32 *Zech.* 13.7. *Mar.* 14.28. *Iohn* 13.38. *mark.* 14.30. *Luke* 22.33.

when

went Ieſus with them into a place which is cal-
led Gethſemane, and ſaide vnto his diſciples, Sit
yee here, while I goe, and pray yonder. 37 And
he tooke vnto him Peter, and the two ſonnes of
Zebedeus, and beganne to waxe ſorowfull, and
grieuouſly troubled. 38 Then ſaid Ieſus vnto
them, My ſoule is very heauie, *euen* vnto the
death: tarie ye here, and watch with me. 39 And
hee went a little further, and fell on his face and
prayed, ſaying, O my Father, if it be poſsible, let
this cuppe paſſe from me: neuertheleſſe, not as
I will, but as thou wilt. 40 After, he came vnto
the diſciples, and found them aſleepe, and ſaide
to Peter, What? could ye not watch with me
one houre? 41 Watch, and pray that yee en-
ter not into temptation: the ſpirite in deede is
ready, but the fleſh is weake. 42 Againe hee
went away the ſecond time, and prayed, ſaying,
O my Father, if this cuppe cannot paſſe away
from me, but that I muſt drinke it, thy will bee
done. 43 And he came and found them aſleepe
againe, for their eyes were heauie. 44 So hee
left them and went away againe, and prayed the
thirde time, ſaying the ſame wordes. 45 Then
came hee to his diſciples and ſaide vnto them,
Mar. Sleepe henceforth, and take your reſt: behold,
14.43. the houre is at hand, and the Sonne of man is gi-
Luke uen into the handes of ſinners. 46 Riſe, let
22.47 vs goe: behold, hee is at hande that betrayeth
John me. 47 * And while he yet ſpake, loe, Iudas,
18.3. one of the twelue, came, and with him a great

multitude

multitude with swordes and staues, from the hie Priestes and Elders of the people. 48 Now hee that betrayed him, had giuen them a token, saying, Whomsoeuer I shall kisse, that is hee, lay holde on him. 49 And foorthwith hee came to Iesus, and saide, God saue thee, Master, and kissed him. 50 Then Iesus saide vnto him, Friende, wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and layd handes on Iesus, and tooke him. 51 And beholde, one of them which were with Iesus, stretched out his hande, and drewe his sworde, and stroke a seruaunt of the hie Priest, and smote off his eare. 52 Then said Iesus vnto him, Put vp thy sword into his place: *for all that take the sword, shal perish with the sword. 53 Either thinkest thou, that I cannot now pray to my Father, and hee will giue me more then twelue legions of Angels? 54 Howe then should the * Scriptures bee fulfilled, which say, that it must be so? 55 The same houre said Iesus to the multitude, Ye be come out as it were against a thiefe, with swordes and staues to take me: I sate dayly teaching in the Temple among you, and ye tooke me not. 56 But all this was done, that the Scriptures of the Prophets might be fulfilled. * Then al the disciples forsooke him, and fled. 57 * And they tooke Iesus and led him to Caiaphas the hie Priest, where ỹ Scribes and the Elders were assembled. 58 And Peter followed him afarre off vnto the hie Priests hal, and went in, and sate with the seruants to see the ende.

Gene. 9.6. Reuel. 13.10.

Isay 53.10.

Verse 31. Mar. 14.53. luke 22.54.

Mar. ende. 59 * Nowe the chiefe Priestes and the
14.54 Elders, and al the whole coūcil sought false wit-
nes against Iesus, to put him to death. 60 But
they founde none, and though many false wit-
nesses came, yet found they none: but at the last
came two false witnesses, 61 And said, This
John man saide, * I can destroy the Temple of God,
2.19. and build it in three dayes. 62 Then the chiefe
Priest arose, and said to him, Answerest thou no-
thing? What is the matter that these men wit-
nesse against thee? 63 But Iesus held his peace.
Then the chiefe Priest answered & said to him,
I charge thee sweare vnto vs by the liuing God,
to tell vs, if thou bee that Christ, the Sonne of
Chap. God, *or no.* 64 * Iesus said to him, Thou hast
16.27. saide it: neuertheless I say vnto you, hereafter
rom. shall ye see the Sonne of man sitting at the right
14.10 hand of the power *of God*, & come in the cloudes
1. *thes.* of the heauen. 65 Then the hie Priest rent his
4. 14. clothes, saying, He hath blasphemed, what haue
we any more needs of witnesses? beholde, now
ye haue heard his blasphemie. 66 What thinke
ye? They answered, and saide, He is guiltie of
Isay death. 67 * Then spet they in his face, and buffe-
50. 6. ted him, & other smote him with rods, 68 Say-
Mar. ing, Prophecie to vs, O Christ, Who is he that
14 65. smote thee? 69 * Peter sate without in the hall:
Luke and a mayd came to him, saying, Thou also wast
22.55 with Iesus of Galile: 70 But he denied before
1 John them all, saying, I wote not what thou sayest.
18.29. 71 And when hee went out into the porch, ano-
ther

ther *mayd* saw him, & said vnto them that were there, This man was also with Iesus of Nazareth. 72 And againe hee denied with an othe, saying, I knowe not the man. 73 So after a while, came vnto him they that stood by, and said vnto Peter, Surely thou art also one of them: for euen thy speach bewrayeth thee. 74 Then began he to curse *himselfe*, and to sweare, saying, I knowe not the man. And immediatly the cocke crewe. 75 Then Peter remembred the wordes of Iesus, which had said vnto him, Before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie me thrise. So he went out, and wept bitterly.

CHAP. 27. 34. *Christ is crucified.*

WHen the *morning was come, all the chiefe Priests, & the Elders of the people tooke counsel against Iesus to put him to death. 2 And ledde him away bound, and deliuered him vnto Pontius Pilate the gouernour. 3 Then when Iudas which betrayed him, saw that he was condemned, hee repented himselfe, and brought againe the thirtie *peeces* of siluer to the chiefe Priests, and Elders, 4 Saying, I haue sinned betraying the innocent blood. But they said, What is that to vs? see thou to it. 5 And when he had cast downe the siluer *peeces* in the Temple, he departed, and went *and hanged himselfe. 6 And the chiefe Priests tooke the siluer *peeces*, & said, It is not lawfull for vs to put them into the treasurie, because it is the price of blood. 7 And they tooke counsell, & bought with them a pot-

Mar. 15. 1. *Luke* 22. 66 *John* 18. 28. *Acts.* 1. 18.

ters field, for the buriall of ſtrangers. 8 Wher-
Act. fore that field is called * The field of blood, vn-
1.18. till this day. 9 (Then was fulfilled that which
was ſpoken by Ieremias the Prophet, ſaying,
Zech. * And they tooke thirtie ſiluer *peeces*, the price
11.12. of him that was valued, whom *they* of the chil-
dren of Iſrael valued. 10 And they gaue them
for the potters field, as the Lord appointed me.
Mar. 11 * And Ieſus ſtood before the gouernour, and
15.2. the gouernour asked him, ſaying, Art thou the
Luke king of the Iewes? Ieſus ſayd vnto him, Thou
23.3. ſayeſt it. 12 And when he was accuſed of the
Ioh. chiefe Priests, and Elders, he anſwered nothing.
18.33. 13 Then ſaid Pilate vnto him, Heareſt thou not
how many things they lay againſt thee? 14 But
he anſwered him not one word, in ſo much that
the gouernour marueiled greatly. 15 Now at
the feaſt, the gouernour was woont to deliuer
vnto the people a priſoner, whom they would.
16 And they had then a notable priſoner, called
Barabbas. 17 When they were then gathered
together, Pilate ſaid vnto them, Whether will
ye that I let looſe vnto you Barabbas, or Ieſus
Mar. which is called Chriſt? 18 (For he knew well,
15.11. that for enuie they had deliuered him. 19 Alſo
Luke when he was ſet downe vpon the iudgement
23.18. ſeat, his wife ſent to him, ſaying, Haue thou no-
Ioh. thing to do with that iuſt man: for I haue ſuffe-
18.40 red many things this day in a dreame by reaſon
Acts of him.) 20 * But the chiefe Priests and the El-
3.14. ders had perſuaded the people, that they ſhould

ake

ſke Barabbas,& ſhould deſtroy Ieſus. 21 Then
he gouernour anſwered, and ſayd vnto them,
Whether of the twaine will ye that I let looſe
vnto you? And they ſayd, Barabbas. 22 Pilate
ſayd to them, What ſhall I do then with Ieſus,
which is called Chriſt? They all ſayd to him, Let
him be crucified. 23 Then ſayd the gouernour,
But what euill hath he done? Then they cried
the more, ſaying, Let him be crucified. 24 Whē
Pilate ſaw that he auailed nothing, but that
more tumult was made, he tooke water and waſhed his hands before the multitude, ſaying, I
am innocent of the blood of this iuſt man:
looke ye to it. 25 Then anſwered all the people, and ſaid, His blood be on vs, and on our children. 26 Thus let he Barabbas looſe vnto them,
and ſcourged Ieſus, and deliuered him to be crucified. 27 * Then the ſouldiers of the gouer- *Mar.*
nour tooke Ieſus into the common hall, and ga- 15.16.
thered about him the whole band, 28 And they *iohn*
ſtripped him, and put about him a ſkarlet robe, 19.2.
29 And platted a crowne of thornes, and put it
vpon his head, and a reed in his right hand, and
bowed their knees before him, and mocked
him, ſaying, God ſaue thee, King of the Iewes,
30 And ſpitted vpon him, and tooke a reed, and
ſmote him on the head. 31 Thus when they had
mocked him, they tooke the robe from him, and
put his owne rayment on him, and led him a-
way to crucifie him. 32 * And as they came out, *Mar.*
they found a man of Cyrene, named Simon: 15.21.

Mark. him they compelled to beare his crosse, 33 And
15.22. when they came vnto the place called Golgo-
John tha, (that is to say, the place of dead mens skulls)
19.17. 34 They gaue him vineger to drinke, mingled
with gall: and when he had tasted thereof, he
would not drinke. 35 And when they had cru-
cified him, they parted his garments, and did cast
lots, that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken
Psal. by the Prophet, * They diuided my garments
22.18. among them, and vpon my vesture did cast lots.
mark. 36 And they sate and watched him there.
15.24. 37 They set vp also ouer his head his cause writ-
ten, THIS IS IESVS THE KING
OF THE IEWES. 38 And there were
two theeues crucified with him, one on the right
hand, and another on the left. 39 And they that
passed by, reuiled him, wagging their heads,
John 40 And saying, * Thou that destroyest the
2.19. Temple, and buildest it in three dayes, saue thy
selfe: if thou be the Sonne of God, come down
from the crosse. 41 Likewise also the hie Priests
mocking him, with the Scribes, and Elders, and
Pharises, said, 42 He saued others, but he can-
not saue himselfe: if he be the king of Israel,
let him now come downe from the crosse, and
Psal. wee will beleeue in him. 43 * Hee trusted in
22.9. God, let him deliuer him now, if he will haue
him: for he said, I am the Sonne of God. 44 The
selfe same thing also the theeues which were
crucified with him, cast in his teeth. 45 Now
from the sixth houre was there darkenesse ouer

all

all the land, vnto the ninth houre. 46 And about the ninth houre Iesus cried with a loud voice, saying; * Eli, Eli, lamasabachthani? that is, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? 47 And some of them that stood there, when they heard it, saide, This man calleth Elias. 48 And straightway one of them ran, & tooke a * spundge and filled it with vineger, and put it on a reede, and gaue him to drinke. 49 Other sayd, Let be: let vs see if Elias will come & saue him. 50 Then Iesus cried againe with a lounde voice, and yeelded vp the ghost. 51 And beholde, * the vaile of the Temple was rent in twaine, from the top to the bottom, & the earth did quake, and the stones were clouen. 52 And the graues did open themselues, and many bodies of the Saints, which slept, arose, 53 And came out of the graues after his resurrection, and went into the holy Citie, and appeared vnto manie. 54 When the Centurion, & they that were with him watching Iesus, saw the earthquake, & the things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truely this was the Sonne of God. 55 And many women were there beholding him a farre off, which had followed Iesus from Galile, ministring vnto him. 56 Among whom was Marie Magdalene, and Marie the mother of Iames, and Ioses, and the mother of Zebedeus sonnes. 57 * And when the euen was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea named Ioseph, who had also himselfe bene Iesus disciple.

Psal. 22.1.

Psal. 69.22.

2.*Chr.* 3.14.

Mark. 15.42. *Luke* 23.50. *John* 19.38.

58 He

58 He went to Pilate, and asked the body of Ie-
sus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be de-
liuered. 59 So Ioseph tooke the body, and
wrapped it in a cleane linnen cloth, 60 And
put it in his new tombe, which hee had hewen
out in a rocke, and rolled a great stone to the
doore of the sepulchre, and departed. 61 And
there was Marie Magdalene, and the other Marie
sitting ouer against the sepulchre. 62 Now the
next day that followed the Preparation *of the*
Sabbath, the hie Priests and the Pharises assem-
bled to Pilate, 63 And said, Sir, we remember
that that deceiuer sayd, while hee was yet aliue,
Within three dayes I will rise 64 Command
therefore, that the sepulchre be made sure vntill
the third day, least his disciples come by night,
and steale him away, and say vnto the people,
He is risen from the dead: so shall the last error
be worse then the first 65 Then Pilate said vn-
to them, Ye haue a watch: goe, and make it sure
as ye know. 66 And they went, and made the
sepulchre sure with the watch, and sealed the
stone.

CHAP 28. 18 *The Apostles sent to preach.*

Mk. 16.5. NOw * in the end of the Sabbath, when the
first *day* of the weeke beganne to dawne,
Marie Magdalene, and the other Marie came to
see the sepulchre. 2 And beholde, there was a
great earthquake: for the Angel of the Lord
descended from heauen, & came & rolled backe
the stone from the doore, & sate vpon it. 3 And
his

his countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow. 4 And for feare of him, the keepers were astonied, and became as dead men. 5 But the Angel answered, and said to the women, Feare ye not: for I know that ye seeke Iesus which was crucified: 6 He is not heere, for he is risen, as he said: come, see the place where the Lord was layd, 7 And go quickly, & tell his disciples, that he is risen from the dead: and beholde, he goeth before you into Galile: there ye shall see him: loe, I haue tolde you. 8 So they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with feare and great ioy, and did run to bring his disciples word. 9 And as they went to tell his disciples, beholde, Iesus met them, saying, God saue you. And they came, and tooke him by the feet, and worshipped him. 10 Then said Iesus vnto them, Be not afraid, Go, and tell thy brethren, that they go into Galile, and there shall they see me. 11 Now while they were gone, beholde, some of the watch came into the citie, and shewed vnto the high Priests all the things that were done. 12 And they gathered them together with the Elders, and tooke counsel, & gaue large money vnto the souldiers, 13 Saying, Say, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept. 14 And if this matter come before the Governour to be heard, we will perswade him, and so vse the matter, that you shall not need to care. 15 So they tooke the money, and did as they were taught: and this

saying

saying was noised among the Iewes vnto this day. 16 Then the eleuen disciples went into Galile into a mountaine, where Iesus had appointed them. 17 And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted. 18 And Iesus came, and spake vnto them, saying, * All power is giuen vnto me in heauen, and in earth. 19 * Go therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Sonne, & of the holy Ghost, 20 Teaching them to obserue all things, whatsoeuer I haue commanded you: and loe, * I am with you alway, vntill the end of the world, AMEN.

Chap. 11.27. Mar. 16.15. Iohn 14.16.

THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS CHRIST, according to Marke.

CHAP. 1. 9 *The baptizing of Christ.*

THe beginning of ỹ Gospel of Iesus Christ, the Sonne of God: 2 As it is written in the Prophets, * Beholde, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. 3 * The voice of him that crieth in the wildernesse: Prepare the way of the Lord: make his paths straight. 4 * Iohn did baptize in the wildernesse, and preach the baptisme of amendment of life, for remission of sinnes. 5 And all the country of Iudea, & they of Hierusalem went out vnto him, and were all baptized

Mal. 3.1. Isai. 40.3. Matt. 3.1.

baptized of him in the riuer Iordan, confessing their sinnes. 6 * Now Iohn was clothed with camels haire, and with a girdle of skin about his loines: and he did eate * locusts & wilde hony, 7 * And preached, saying, A stronger then I commeth after me, whose shooes latchet I am not worthy to stoope downe, and vnloose. 8 Truth it is, I haue baptized you with water: but hee will baptize you with the holy Ghost. 9 * And it came to passe in those dayes, that IESVS came from Nazareth, *a citie* of Galile, and was baptized of Iohn in Iordan. 10 And assoone as he was come out of the water, *Iohn* saw the heauens clouen in twaine, and the holy Ghost descending vpon him like a doue. 11 Then there was a voyce from heauen, *saying*, Thou art my beloued Sonne, in whome I am well pleased. 12 * And immediatly the spirit driueth him into the wildernesse. 13 And he was there in the wildernesse fortie dayes, & was tempted of Satan: he was also with the wilde beasts, and the Angels ministred vnto him. 14 * Now after that Iohn was committed *to prison*, Iesus came into Galile, preaching the Gospel of the kingdome of God, 15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, & the kingdome of God is at hand: repent & beleeue the Gospel. 16 * And as hee walked by the sea of Galile, he saw Simon, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea, (for they were fishers.) 17 Then Iesus sayd vnto them, Follow me, and I will make you to be fishers of men. 18 And straightway

Mat. 3.4. *Leuit.* 11.22. *Matt.* 3.11. *Matt.* 3.13. *luke* 3.21. *Mat.* 4.1. *luke* 4.1. *Mat.* 4.12. *luke* 4.14. *Matt.* 4.18. *luke* 5.2.

straightway they forsooke their nets, & followed him. 19 And when he had gone a little further thence, he saw Iames *the sonne* of Zebedeus, & Iohn his brother, as they were in the ship mending their nettes. 20 And anon hee called them: and they left their father Zebedeus in the ship with his hired seruants, and went their way
Mat. after him. 21 *So they entred into Capernaum,
4.13. and straightway on the Sabbath day he entred
into the Synagogue, and taught. 22 And they
Mat. were astonied at his doctrine, * for hee taught
7.28. them as one that had authoritie, and not as the
Luke Scribes. 23 And there was in their Synagogue
4.31. a man in whom was an vncleane spirit, and hee
cried out, 24 Saying, Ah, what haue we to doe
with thee, O Iesus of Nazareth? Art thou come
to destroy vs? I know thee what thou art, *euen*
that holy one of God. 25 And Iesus rebuked
him, saying, Holde thy peace, and come out of
him. 26 And the vncleane spirit tare him, & cried
with a loud voice, and came out of him. 27 And
they were all amazed, so that they demanded
one of another, saying, What thing is this? what
new doctrine is this? for he commandeth euen
the foule spirits with authority, and they obey
him. 28 And immediatly his fame spread abroad
thorowout all the region bordering on Galile.
Matt. 29 * And assoone as they were come out of the
8.14. Synagogue, they entred into the house of Si-
Luke mon and Andrew, with Iames & Iohn, 30 And
4.38. Simons wiues mother lay sicke of a feuer, and

anon

anon they tolde him of her. 31 And he came and tooke her by the hand, and lifted her vp, and the feuer forsooke her by and by, and shee ministred vnto them. 32 And when euen was come, at what time the sun setteth, they brought to him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with deuils. 33 And the whole citie was gathered together at the doore 34 And he healed many that were sicke of diuers diseases: and he cast out many deuils, and suffered not the deuils to say that they knewe him. 35 And in the morning very early before day, *Iesus* arose and went out into a solitarie place, and there prayed. 36 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed carefully after him. 37 And when they had founde him, they sayd vnto him, All men seeke for thee. 38 Then hee sayd vnto them, Let vs go into the next townes, that I may preach there also: for I came out for that purpose. 39 And he preached in their Synagogues thorowout all Galile, and cast the deuils out. 40 * And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeled downe vnto him, and sayd to him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane. 41 And Iesus had compassion, and put foorth his hand, and touched him, and sayd to him, I will, be thou cleane. 42 And as soone as he had spoken, immediatly the leprosie departed from him, and hee was made cleane. 43 And after hee had giuen him a strait commandement, hee sent him away foorthwith,

Mat. 8.2. *Luke* 5.12.

44 And

44 And ſayd vnto him, See thou ſay nothing
any man, but get thee hence, and ſhew thy ſelf
Leuit. to the * Prieſt, and offer for thy cleanſing thoſe
14.4. things which Moſes commanded, for a teſtimo-
niall vnto them. 45 But when he was departed,
Luke * he began to tell many things, and to publiſh
5.15. the matter, ſo that Ieſus could no more openly
enter into the city, but was without in deſert
places: and they came to him frō euery quarter.

CHAP. 2. *Chriſt forgiueth ſinnes.*

AFter a few dayes, hee entred into Capernaum againe, and it was noyſed that he was
in the houſe. 2 And anon, many gathered to-
gether, in ſo much that the places about the
doore could not receiue any more: and he preached the word vnto them. 3 And there came
vnto him, that brought one ſicke of the palſie,
borne of foure men. 4 And becauſe they
could not come neere vnto him for the multi-
tude, they vncouered the roofe of the houſe
where he was: and when they had broken it
open, they let downe the bed, wherein the ſicke
of the palſie lay. 5 Now when Ieſus ſaw their
faith, he ſayd to the ſicke of the palſie, Sonne,
thy ſinnes are forgiuen thee. 6 And there were
certaine of the Scribes, ſitting there, and reaſ-
ning in their hearts, 7 Why doeth this man
Iob. ſpeake ſuch blaſphemies? * who can forgiue
14.4. ſinnes but God only? 8 And immediatly when
Iſa. Ieſus perceiued in his ſpirit, that thus they rea-
43.25. ſoned with themſelues, he ſaid vnto them, Why
reaſ-

reason ye these things in your hearts? 9 Whether is it easier to say to the sicke of the palsie, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee? or to say, Arise, and take vp thy bed, and walke? 10 But that ye may know, that the Sonne of man hath authoritie in earth to forgiue sinnes, (he said vnto the sicke of the palsie) 11 I say vnto thee, Arise, and take vp thy bed, and get thee hence into thine owne house 12 And by and by he arose, and tooke vp his bed, and went foorth before them all, in so much that they were all amased, & glorified God, saying, We neuer sawe such a thing. 13 Then he went forth againe toward the sea, and all the people resorted vnto him, and he taught them. 14 *And as Iesus passed by, he saw Leui *the sonne* of Alpheus sit at ẏ receite of custome, and said vnto him, Followe me. And he arose, and followed him. 15 And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at table in his house, many Publicanes and sinners sate at table also with Iesus, and his disciples: for there were many that followed him. 16 And when the Scribes and Phariſes sawe him eate with the Publicanes and sinners, they said vnto his disciples, Howe is it, that he eateth & drinketh with Publicanes and sinners? 17 Nowe when Iesus heard it, he said vnto them, The whole haue no neede of the Physicion, but the sicke: *I came not to call the righteous, but ẏ sinners to repentance. 18 *And the disciples of Iohn, and the Phariſes did fast, and came and said vnto him, Why doe the disciples

*Mat. 9.9. *luke 5.27.

1. *Tim. 1.13. *Mat. 9.14. *luke 5.33.

ciples of Iohn, and the Phariſes faſt, and thy diſciples faſt not? 19 And Ieſus ſaide vnto them, Can the children of the marriage chamber faſt, whiles the bridegroome is with them? as longe as they haue the bridegrome with them, they can not faſt. 20 But the dayes will come, when the bridegrome ſhall be taken from them, and then ſhall they faſt in thoſe dayes. 21 Alſo no man ſoweth a piece of new cloth in an old garment: for els the newe piece that filled it vp, taketh away *ſomewhat* from the old, and the breach is worſe. 22 Likewiſe, no man putteth new wine into old veſſels: for els the newe wine breaketh the veſſels, and the wine runneth out, and the veſſels are loſt: but newe wine muſt be put into newe veſſels. 23 * And it came to paſſe, as he went through ȳ corne on the Sabbath day, ȳ his diſciples, as they went on their way, beganne to pluck ȳ eares of corne. 24 And ȳ Phariſes ſaid vnto him, Behold, why doe they on the Sabbath day, that which is not lawful? 25 And he ſaid to them, Haue ye not read what *Dauid did, whē he had neede, & was an hungred, *both* he, and they that were with him? 26 How he went into the houſe of God, in the dayes of Abiathar the hie Prieſt, & did eate ȳ ſhewbread, which were not lawfull to eate, but for the *Prieſts, and gaue alſo to them which were with him? 27 And he ſaid to them, The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath. 28 Wherefore the Sonne of man is Lord, euen of the Sabbath.

Mat. 12.1. Luke 6.1.

1. Sam. 21.6.

Exod. 29.33

CHAP.

AND he *entred againe into the Synagogue, *Mat.* 12.19.
and there was a man which had a withered *Luke* 6.6.
hand. 2 And they watched him whether hee
would heale him on the Sabbath day, that they
might accuse him. 3 Then he said vnto the man
which had the withered hand, Arise, *stand forth*
in ỹ middes. 4 And he said to them, Is it lawful
to doe a good deede on the Sabbath day, or to
doe euil? to saue the life or to kil? But they held
their peace. 5 Then he looked round about on
them angerly, mourning also for the hardnes of
their hearts, and said to the man, Stretch foorth
thine hand. And hee stretched it out: And his
hand was restored as whole as the other. 6 And
the Pharises departed, and straightway gathe-
red a councill with the Herodians against him,
that they might destroy him. 7 But Iesus anoy-
ded with his disciples to the sea: and a great
multitude followed him from Galile, and from
Iudea, 8 And from Hierusalem, and from Idu-
mea, and beyond Iordan: and they that dwelled
about Tyrus and Sidon: when they had heard
what great things he did, came vnto him in a
great number. 9 And he commaunded his dis-
ciples, that a little shippe should waite for him,
because of the multitude, least they shoulde
throng him. 10 For he had healed many, in so
much that they preassed vpon him, to touche
him, as many as had plagues. 11 And when
the vncleane spirits sawe him, they fell downe

before him, and cryed, saying, Thou art the Sonne of God. 12 And hee sharpely rebuked them, to the ende they shoulde not vtter him. 13 *Then he went vp into a mountaine, and called vnto him whom he would, & they came vnto him. 14 And he appointed twelue that they shoulde be with him, and that he might send them to preach, 15 And that they might haue power to heale sicknesses, & to cast out deuils. 16 And the first was Simon, and he named Simon, Peter. 17 Then Iames *the sonne* of Zebedeus, & Iohn, Iames brother (and surnamed them Boanerges, which is the sonnes of thunder) 18 And Andrewe, and Philippe, and Bartlemewe, and Matthewe, and Thomas, and Iames, *the sonne* of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Cananite, 19 And Iudas Iscariot, who also betrayed him, and they came home. 20 And the multitude assembled againe, so that they could not so much as eate bread. 21 And when his kinsfolkes heard of it, they went out to lay holde on him: for they said ỹ he was beside himselfe. 22 *And the Scribes which came downe from Hierusalem, saide, He hath Beelzebub, and through the prince of the deuils he casteth out deuils. 23 But he called them vnto him, and saide vnto them in parables, Howe can Satan driue out Satan? 24 For if a kingdome be diuided against it selfe, that kingdome cannot stand. 25 Or if a house be diuided against it selfe, that house cannot continue. 26 So if Satan make insurrection a-

Chap. 6.7. Mat. 10.1. Luke 9.1.

Mat. 9.34.

gainst

gainſt himſelfe, & be diuided, he cannot indure, but is at an ende. 27 No man can enter into a ſtrong mans houſe, and take away his goods, except he firſt bind that ſtrong man, & then ſpoile his houſe. 28 *Verely I ſay vnto you, all ſinnes ſhall be forgiuen vnto the children of men, and blaſphemies wherewith they blaſpheme: 29 But he that blaſphemeth againſt the holy Ghoſt, ſhal neuer haue forgiuenеſſe, but is culpable of eternall damnation. 30 Becauſe they ſaid, He had an vncleane ſpirit. 31 *Then came his brethren and mother, and ſtoode without, and ſent vnto him, and called him. 32 And the people ſate about him, and they ſaide vnto him, Beholde, thy mother, and thy brethren ſeeke for thee without. 33 But he anſwered them, ſaying, Who is my mother and my brethren? 34 And he looked rounde about on them, which ſate in compaſſe about him, and ſaide, Beholde my mother and my brethren. 35 For whoſoeuer doeth the will of God, he is my brother, and my ſiſter, and mother.

Mat. 12.31.

Mat. 12.46. Luke 8.19.

CHAP. 4. 4. *The parable of the ſower.*

AND * he beganne againe to teach by the ſea ſide, & there gathered vnto him a great multitude, ſo that he entred into a ſhip, and ſate in the ſea, and all the people was by the ſea ſide on the land. 2 And he taught them many things in parables, and ſaid vnto them in his doctrine, 3 Hearken: Beholde, there went out a ſower to ſowe. 4 And it came to paſſe as he ſowed, that

Mat. 13.1. Luke 8.4.

some fell by the way side, and the fowles of the
heauen came, and deuoured it vp. 5 And some
fell on stony grounde, where it had not much
earth, and by and by sprang vp, because it had
not deapth of earth. 6 But as soone as the
sunne was vp, it was burnt vp, and because it had
not roote, it withered away. 7 And some fell
among the thornes, and the thornes grewe vp,
and choked it, so that it gaue no fruite. 8 Some
againe fel in good ground, and did yeeld fruite
that sprong vp, and grew, and it brought forth,
some thirtie folde, some sixtie folde, and some an
hundreth folde. 9 Then he said vnto them, He
that hath eares to heare, let him heare. 10 And
when he was alone, they that were about him
with the twelue, asked him of the parable.
11 And he said vnto them, To you it is giuen to
knowe the mysterie of the kingdome of God:
Esai. 6.9. but vnto them that are without, all things are
done in parables, 12 * That they seeing, may
Matt. 13.14. see, and not discerne: and they hearing, may
Luke 8.10. heare, and not vnderstand, least at any time they
should turne, and their sinnes should be forgi-
uen them. 13 Againe he saide vnto them, Per-
John 12.40. ceiue ye not this parable? howe then should ye
Acts 28.26 vnderstand all *other* parables? 14 The sower
Rom. 11.8. soweth the worde. 15 And these are they that
receiue the seede by the way side, in whom the
word is sowen: but when they haue heard it, Sa-
tan commeth immediatly, and taketh away the
worde that was sowen in their hearts. 16 And

likewise

likewise they that receiue the seede in stonie ground are they, which when they haue heard the worde, straightwayes receiue it with gladnesse. 17 Yet haue they no roote in themselues, and endure but a time: for when trouble and persecution ariseth for the worde, immediatly they be offended. 18 Also they that receiue the seede among the thornes, are such as heare the worde: 19 But the cares of this world, and the *deceitfulnesse of richesse, & the lustes of other things enter in, and choke the word, and it is vnfruitfull. 20 But they that haue receiued seede in good ground, are they that heare the worde, and receiue it, and bring foorth fruite: one *corne* thirtie, another sixtie, and some an hundreth. 21 Also he said vnto them, * Commeth the candle in, to be put vnder a bushell, or vnder the bed, and not to be put on a candlestick? 22 * For there is nothing hid, that shall not be opened: neither is there a secrete, but that it shall come to light. 23 If any man haue eares to heare, let him heare. 24 And he saide vnto them, Take heede what ye heare. * With what measure ye mete, it shall be measured vnto you: and vnto you that heare, shall more be giuen. 25 * For vnto him that hath, shall it be giuen, and from him that hath not, shalbe taken away, euen that he hath. 26 Also he said, So is the kingdome of God, as if a man should cast seede in the ground, 27 And should sleepe, and rise vp night and day, and the seede should spring and growe vp,

1. Tim. 6. 17.

Mat. 5. 15.

Mat. 10. 26. Luke 8. 17.

Mat. 7. 2.

Mat. 13. 12.

and 25.

he not knowing howe. 28 For the earth bringeth foorth fruite of it selfe, first the blade, then the eares, after that full corne in the eare. 29 And as soone as the fruite sheweth it selfe, anon he putteth in the sickle, because the harueste
Mat. is come. 30 *He saide moreouer, Wherunto
13.31. shall we liken the kingdome of God? or with
Luke what comparison shall we compare it? 31 It is
13.19 like a graine of mustard seede, which when it is sowen in the earth, is the least of all seedes that be in the earth: 32 But after that it is sowen, it groweth vp, and is greatest of all herbes, and beareth great branches, so that the foules of the ayre may build vnder the shadow of it. 33 And
Mat. * with many such parables hee preached the
13.34 worde vnto them, as they were able to heare it. 34 And without parables spake he nothing vnto them: but he expounded all things to his disciples apart. 35 *Now the same day, when euen
Mat. was come, he said vnto them, Let vs passe ouer
8.23. vnto the other side. 36 And they left the mul-
Luke titude, and tooke him as he was in the shippe, and there were also with him other little shippes. 37 And there arose a great storme of winde, and the waues dashed into the shippe, so that it was nowe full. 38 And hee was in the sterne asleepe on a pillowe: and they awoke him, and said to him, Master, carest thou not that we perish? 39 And he rose vp, & rebuked the winde, and said vnto the sea, Peace, and be still. So the winde ceased, & it was a great calme. 40 Then

he said vnto them, Why are ye so fearefull? howe is it that ye haue no faith? 41 And they feared exceedingly, and saide one to another, Who is this, that both the winde and sea obey him?

CHAP. 5. 7. *The deuill acknowledgeth Christ.*

AND they came ouer to the other side of the sea into the countrey of the Gadarens, 2 And when he was come out of the ship, there met him incontinently out of the graues, a man which had an vncleane spirit: 3 Who had his abiding among the graues, and no man coulde binde him, no not with chaines, 4 Because that when he was often bounde with fetters, and chaines, he plucked the chaines asunder, & brake the fetters in pieces, neither coulde any man tame him. 5 And alwayes both night and day he cryed in the mountaines, and in the graues, and stroke himselfe with stones. 6 And when he sawe Iesus afarre off, he ranne and worshipped him, 7 And cryed with a loude voyce, and saide, What haue I to doe with thee, Iesus the Sonne of the most high God? I will that thou sweare to me by God, that thou torment me not. 8 (For he said vnto him, Come out of the man, thou vncleane spirit.) 9 And he asked him, What is thy name? and he answered, saying, My name is Legion: for wee are many. 10 And he prayed him instantly, that he woulde not sende them away out of the countrey. 11 Nowe there was there in the mountaines a great

Mat. 8.28. *Luke* 8.26.

great herde of ſwine feeding. 12 And al the di
uils beſought him, ſaying, Send vs into y ſwine,
that we may enter into them. 13 And incontinently Ieſus gaue them leaue. Then the vncleane
ſpirits went out, and entred into the ſwine, and
the heard ranne headlong from the high bank
into the ſea, (and they were about two thouſand ſwine) and they were choked vp in y ſea.
14 And the ſwineheards fledde, and tolde it in
the citie, and in the countrey, and they came out
to ſee what it was that was done. 15 And they
came to Ieſus, and ſaw him that had bene poſſeſſed with the deuill and had the Legion, ſitte and
clothed, and in his right minde: and they were
afraide. 16 And they that ſawe it, tolde them
what was done to him that was poſſeſſed with
the deuill, and concerning the ſwine. 17 Then
they began to pray him, that he would depart
from their coaſtes. 18 And when he was come
into the ſhippe, he that had bene poſſeſſed with
the deuill, prayed him that he might be with
him. 19 Howbeit, Ieſus would not ſuffer him,
but ſaide vnto him, Goe thy way home to
thy friendes, and ſhewe them what great
thinges the Lorde had done vnto thee, and
how hee hath had compaſsion on thee. 20 And
he departed, and beganne to publiſh in Decapolis, what great things Ieſus had done vnto
him: and all men did marualle. 21 And when
Ieſus was come ouer againe by ſhippe, vnto the
other ſide, a great multitude gathered to

to him, and he was neere vnto the sea. 22 And beholde, there came one of the rulers of the Synagogue, whose name was Iairus: and when he saw him, he fel downe at his feete, 23 And besought him instantly, saying, My little daughter lyeth at point of death: *I pray thee* that thou wouldest come and lay thine handes on her, that she may be healed, and liue. 24 Then he went with him, and a great multitude followed him, and thronged him. 25 (And there was a certaine woman, which was diseased with an issue of blood twelue yeeres, 26 And had suffered many things of many Physicions, and had spent all that shee had, and it anayled her nothing, but she became much worse. 27 When shee had heard of Iesus, shee came in the preasse behinde, and touched his garment. 28 For shee sayde, If I may but touche his clothes, I shalbe whole. 29 And straightway the course of her blood was dried vp, and she felt in her body, that shee was healed of that plague. 30 And immediatly when Iesus did knowe in himselfe the vertue that went out of him, hee turned him roundeabout in the preasse, and saide, Who hath touched my clothes? 31 And his disciples said vnto him, Thou seest the multitude throng thee, and sayest thou, Who did touch me? 32 And he looked rounde about, to see her that had done that. 33 And the woman feared and trembled: for she knewe what was done in her, and she came and fell downe before him, and tolde him the whole

Matt. 9. 18. Luke 8. 41.

trueth.

truth. 34 And he saide to her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole: goe in peace, and bee whole of thy plague. 35 While he yet spake, there came frō the *same* ruler of the Synagogues house *certaine* which said, Thy daughter is dead: why diseasest thou the Master any further? 36 Assoone as Iesus heard the word spoken, he said vnto the ruler of the Synagogue, Be not afraid: onely beleeue. 37 And he suffered no man to followe him saue Peter and Iames, and Iohn the brother of Iames. 38 And he came vnto the house of the ruler of the Synagogue, and sawe the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly. 39 And hee went in, and said vnto them, Why make ye this trouble, and weepe? the childe is not dead, but sleepeth. 40 And they laught him to scorne: but hee put them all out, and tooke the father, and the mother of the childe, and them that were with him, and entred in where the childe lay, 41 And tooke the childe by the hand, and said vnto her, Talitha cumi, which is by interpretatiō, Maiden, I say vnto thee, Arise. 42 And straightway the mayden arose, and waked: for shee was of the age of twelue yeres, and they were astonied out of measure. 43 And hee charged them straitly that no man should know of it, and commanded to giue her meate.

CHAP. 6. *Iohn imprisoned, & beheaded.*

Mat. 13.54. AND he * departed thence, and came into his owne country, and his disciples follow-

him. 3 And when the Sabbath was come, hee
began to teache in the Synagogue, and many
that heard him, were astonied, and saide, From
whence hath this man these things? and what
wisedome is this that is giuen vnto him, that
euen such great workes are done by his handes?
3 Is not this that carpenter, Maries sonne, the
brother of Iames and Ioses, and of Iuda and Si-
mon? and are not his sisters here with vs? And
they were offended in him. 4 Then Iesus said
vnto them, A * Prophet is not without honour, *Mat.*
but in his owne countrey, and among his owne 13.57.
kindred, & in his owne house. 5 And he could *luke*
there doe no great workes, saue that he layd his 4.24.
hands vpon a few sicke folke, and healed *them.*
6 And hee marueiled at their vnbeliefe, and
*went about by the townes on euery side, tea- *Matt.*
ching. 7 *And he called vnto him the twelue, 4.23.
and gaue them power ouer vncleane spirites, *Chap.*
8 And commaunded them, that they should take 3.14.
nothing for *their* iourney, saue a staffe only: nei-
ther scrippe, neither bread, neither money in
their girdles: 9 But that they should be shod
with * sandales, and that they should not put on *Acts.*
two coats. 10 And he said vnto them, Wher- 12.8.
soeuer yee shall enter into an house, there abide
till ye depart thence. 11 *And whosoeuer shal *Mar.*
not receiue you, nor heare you, when ye depart 10.14.
thence, * shake off the dust that is vnder your *Acts.*
feete for a witnesse vnto them. Verely I say vn- 13.51.
to you, it shall bee easier for Sodome or Go- & 18.
morrha 6.

more at the day of iudgement, then for that
citie. 12 And they went out, and preached
that *men* ſhould amende their liues. 13 And
Luk. they caſt out many deuils: and * they anoynted
5.14. many that were ſicke, with oyle, and healed
Mat. *them.* 14 *Then King Herod heard *of him* (for
14.1. his name was made manifeſt) and ſaide, Iohn
Luke Baptiſt is riſen againe from the dead, and there-
9.7. fore great workes are wrought by him. 15 Other ſaid, It is Elias. and ſome ſaide, It is a Pro-
Luke phet, or as one of thoſe Prophetes. 16 *So
3.19. when Herod heard it, he ſaid, It is Iohn whom I
beheaded: hee is riſen from the dead. 17 For
Herod himſelfe had ſent foorth, and had taken
Iohn, and bounde him in priſon for Herodias
ſake, which was his brother Philips wife, be-
cauſe he had maried her. 18 For Iohn ſaid vn-
Leui. to Herod, * It is not lawfull for thee to haue
18.16. thy brothers wife. 19 Therefore Herodias
& 20. layde waite againſt him, and woulde haue killed
21. him, but ſhe could not: 20 For Herod feared
Iohn, knowing that hee *was* a iuſt man and an
holy, and reuerenced him, and when hee heard
him, hee did many things, and heard him gladly.
21 But the time being conuenient, when Herod
on his birth day made a banket to his Princes
and captaines, and chiefe eſtates of Galilee.
22 And the daughter of the ſame Herodias
came in, and daunced, and pleaſed Herod, and
them that ſate at table together, the King ſaid vn-
to the mayde, Aſke of me what thou wilt, and

will giue it thee. 23 And he ſware vnto her, Whatſoeuer thou ſhalt aſke of mee, I will giue it thee, *euen* vnto the halfe of my kingdome. 24 *So ſhe went foorth, and ſaide to her mother, What ſhall I aſke? And ſhe ſaid, Iohn Baptiſts head. 25 Then ſhee came in ſtraightway with haſte vnto the King, and aſked, ſaying, I would that thou ſhouldeſt giue me euen now in a charger the head of Iohn Baptiſt. 26 Then the King was very ſory: *yet* for his othes ſake, and for their ſakes which ſate at table with him, he would not refuſe her. 27 And immediatly the King ſent the hangman, and gaue charge that his head ſhould be brought in. So hee went and beheaded him in the priſon, 28 And brought his head in a charger, and gaue it to the mayde, and the mayde gaue it to her mother. 29 And when his diſciples heard it, they came & tooke vp his body, & put it in a tombe. 30 *And the Apoſtles gathered themſelues together to Ieſus, and tolde him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught. 31 And hee ſaide vnto them, Come ye apart into the wilderneſs, and reſt a while: for there were many commers and goers, that they had not leaſure to eat. 32 *So they went by ſhip out of the way into a deſert place. 33 But the people ſawe them when they departed, and many knewe him, and ranne afoote thither out of all cities, and came thither before them, and aſſembled vnto him. 34 *Then Ieſus went out, and ſawe a great multitude,

Mat. 14.8.

Luke 9.10.

Matt. 14.13. Luke 9.10.

Matt. 9.36.

titude, and had compassion on them, because they were like sheepe which had no shepherd: *and hee begaune to teach them many things.

Luke 9.12. Mat. 14.15.

35 And when the day was now farre spent, his disciples came vnto him, saying, This is a desert place, and nowe the day is farre passed. 36 Let them depart that they may go into the countrey and townes about, and bye them bread: for they haue nothing to eate. 37 But hee answered, and saide vnto them, Giue yee them to eate. And they said vnto him, Shall wee goe, and bye two hundreth peniworth of bread, and giue them to eate? 38 * Then he said vnto them, Howe many loaues haue ye? go and looke. And when they knewe it, they sayde, Fiue, and two fishes.

Mat. 14.17. Luke 9.13. John 6.9.

39 So he commaunded them to make them all sit down by companies vpon the greene grasse. 40 Then they sate downe by rowes, by hundreds, and by fifties. 41 And he tooke the fiue loaues, and the two fishes, and looked vp to heauen, and gaue thankes, and brake the loaues, and gaue them to his disciples to set before them, and the two fishes hee diuided among them all. 42 So they did all eate, and were satisfied. 43 And they tooke vp twelue baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes. 44 And they that had eaten, were about fiue thousande men. 45 And straightway hee caused his disciples to goe into the shippe, and to goe before vnto the other side vnto Bethsaida, while hee sent away the people. 46 Then assoone as hee had sent

first them away, he departed into a mountaine to
pray. 47 *And when Euen was come, the Matt.
shippe was in the mids of the sea, and he alone 14.23.
vpon the land. 48 And he saw them troubled in
rowing, (for the winde was contrary vnto
them) and about the fourth watch of the night,
hee came vnto them, walking vpon the sea, and
would haue passed by them. 49 And when
they sawe him walking vpon the sea, they sup-
posed it had bene a spirit, and cried out. 50 For
they all sawe him, and were sore afraide: but a-
non he talked with them, and sayde vnto them,
Be ye of good comfort: it is I, bee not afraide.
51 Then hee went vp vnto them into the ship,
and the winde ceased, and they were much
more amased in themselues, and marueiled.
52 For they had not considered *the matter* of
the loaues, because their heartes were hardened.
53 *And they came ouer, and went into the Mat.
land of Gennesaret, and arriued. 54 So when 14.34.
they were come out of the shippe, straightway
they knew him, 55 And ranne about through-
out all that region round about, *and* began to ca-
ry hither and thither in couches all that were
sicke, where they heard that he was. 56 And
whithersoeuer hee entred into townes, or cities,
or villages, they layde their sicke in the streetes,
and prayed him that they might touche at the
least the edge of his garment. And as many as
touched him, were made whole.

CHAP. 7. 8 *Of mens traditions.*

Matt. 15.2. THen * gathered vnto him the Phariſ[ees] certaine of the Scribes which came [from] Hieruſalem. 2 And when they ſawe ſome [of] his diſciples eate meate with common hands (that is to ſay, vnwaſhen) they complained. 3 (For the Phariſes, and all the Iewes, except they waſh their handes oft, eate not, holding the tradition of the Elders. 4 And when they come from the market, except they waſh, they eate not: and many other things there be, which they haue taken vpon them to obſerue, as the waſhing of cuppes, and pottes, and of brasen veſſels, and of beddes.) 5 Then aſked him the Phariſes and Scribes, Why walke not thy diſciples according to the tradition of the Elders, but eat meate with vnwaſhen hands? 6 Then

Iſay 29.14 he anſwered and ſaide vnto them, Surely, *Eſaias* hath prophecied well of you, hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth me with lippes, *Exo.* 20.12. but their heart is farre away from me. 7 In vaine *deut.* 5.16. they worſhip me in vaine, teaching *for* doctrines the commaundements of men. 8 For yee leaue *epheſ.* 6.2. the commaundement of God apart, and obſerue the tradition of men, *as* the waſhing of pottes *Exod.* 21.17. and of cuppes, and many other ſuch like things ye do. 9 And he ſaid vnto them, Well, yee reiect the commandement of God that ye may *leuit.* 22.9. ſerue your owne tradition. 10 For Moſes ſaid *prou.* *Honour thy father and thy mother: and *Who 20.20. ſoeuer ſhall ſpeake euill of father or mother

let him die the death. 11 But ye say, If a man say to father or mother, Corban, *that is*, By the gift that is *offered* by me, thou mayest haue profit, *he shalbe free*. 12 So ye suffer him no more to doe any thing for his father, or his mother, 13 Making the word of God of none authoritie, by your tradition which ye haue ordeined: and ye do many such like things. 14 *Then he called the whole multitude vnto him, and sayde vnto them, Hearken you all vnto me, and vnderstand. 15 There is nothing without a man, that can defile him, when it entreth into him: but the things which proceed out of him, are they which defile the man. 16 If any haue eares to heare, let him heare. 17 And when hee came into an house, *away* from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable. 18 And he sayde vnto them, What? are yee without vnderstanding also? Doe yee not knowe that whatsoeuer thing from without entreth into a man, can not defile him, 19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, which is the purging of all meates? 20 Then he saide, That which commeth out of man, that defileth man. 21 * For from within, *euen* out of the heart of men proceede euill thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murthers, 22 Thefts, couetousnes, wickednes, deceit, vncleannes, a wicked eye, backbiting, pride, foolishnes. 23 Al these euil things come from within, and defile a man. 24 * And from thence he a-

Matt. 15.1

Gen. 6.5. *and* 8. 21.

Mat.

roſe, and went into the borders of Tyrus and Sidon, and entred into an houſe, and would haue no man ſhould haue knowen: but he could not be hid. 25 For a certaine woman, whoſe little daughter had an vncleane ſpirit, heard of him, and came, and fell at his feete, 26 (And the woman was a Greeke, a Syrophenisſian by nation) and ſhee beſought him that he would caſt out the deuil out of her daughter. 27 But Ieſus ſayd vnto her, Let the children firſt be ſedde: for it is not good to take the childrens bread, and to caſt it vnto whelpes. 28 Then ſhe anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, Truth, Lord: yet indeed the whelps eate vnder the table of the childrens crummes. 29 Then he ſaide vnto her, For this ſaying goe thy way: the deuill is gone out of thy daughter. 30 And when ſhee was come home to her houſe, ſhe found the deuil departed, and her daughter lying on the bedde. 31 And he departed againe from the coaſtes of Tyrus and Sidon, and came vnto the ſea of Galile, through the middes of the coaſts of Decapolis. 32 And they brought vnto him one that was deafe, and ſtambred in his ſpeach, and prayed him to put his hand vpon him. 33 Then hee tooke him aſide from the multitude, and put his fingers in his eares, and did ſpit, and touched his tongue. 34 And looking vp to heauen, hee ſighed, and ſayd vnto him, Ephatha, that is, bee opened. 35 And ſtraightway his eares were opened, and the ſtring of his tongue was looſed,

and

and he spake plaine. 36 And he commaunded them, that they shoulde tell no man: but howe much soeuer he forbade them, the more a great deale they published it, 37 And were beyond measure astonied, saying, * He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deafe to heare, and the dumme to speake. *Gene. 1.31. eccle. 39.21.*

CHAP. 8. 1 *The miracle of the seuen loaues.* 5 *The leauen of the Pharisees.* 11 *A signe from heauen.* 14 *The leauen of Herode.* 22 *The blinde man restored to his sight.* 27 *Peter confesseth Christ.* 31 *Christ foretelleth his passion.* 34 *The crosse of Christ.*

IN those * dayes when there was a very great multitude, & had nothing to eate, Iesus called his disciples to him, and said vnto them, 2 I haue compassion on the multitude, because they haue nowe continued with me three dayes and haue nothing to eate. 3 And if I send them away fasting to their owne houses, they would faint by the way: for some of them came from farre. 4 Then his disciples answered him, Whence can a man satisfie these with bread here in the wilderneſſe? 5 And he asked them, Howe many loaues haue yee? And they saide, seuen. 6 Then he commaunded the multitude to sitte downe on the ground: and he tooke the seuen loaues, and gaue thankes, brake *them*, and gaue to his disciples to set before *them*, and they did set *them* before the people. 7 They had also a fewe small fishes: and when hee had giuen thankes, he commaunded them also to be set before *them*. 8 So they did eate, and were suffised: and they tooke vp of the broke meate that was left, seuen baskets full. 9 (And they that had eaten were about foure thousande) so he sent *Mat. 15.32.*

Matt. 15.39. sent them away. 10 * And anon he entred into a ship with his disciples, & came into the parts Matt. 16.1. Dalmanutha. 11 * And the Pharises came forth and began to dispute with him, seeking of him a signe from heauen, and tempting him. 12 Then he sighed deeply in his spirit, and said, Why doth this generation seeke a signe? Verely I say vnto you, a signe shall not be giuen vnto this generation. 13 So he left them, and went into the shippe againe, and departed to the other side. Matt. 16.5. 14 * And they had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the shippe with them, but one loafe. 15 And hee charged them, saying, Take heed and beware of the leauen of the Pharises, and of the leauen of Herod. 16 And they reasoned among themselues, saying, *It is*, because we haue no bread. 17 And when Iesus knew it, he said vnto them, Why reason ye *thus*, because ye haue no bread? perceiue ye not yet, neither vnderstand? haue ye your hearts yet hardened? 18 Haue ye eyes, and see not? and haue ye eares, and heare not? and do ye not remember? John 6.11. 19 * When I brake the fiue loaues among fiue thousand, how many baskets ful of broken meat tooke yee vp? They sayd vnto him, Twelue. 20 And when *I brake* seuen among foure thousand, how many baskets of the leauings of broken meat tooke yee vp? And they sayd, Seuen. 21 Then he said vnto them, How *is it* that ye vnderstand not? 22 And he came to Bethsaida, and they brought a blinde man vnto him, & desired

him to touch him. 23 Then he tooke the blinde by the hand, and led him out of the towne, and spet in his eyes, and put his hands vpon him, and asked him, if he saw ought. 24 And he looked vp, and said, I see men: for I see them walking like trees. 25 After that, he put his hands againe vpon his eyes, and made him looke againe. And he was restored to his sight, and saw euery man a farre off clearely. 26 And he sent him home to his house, saying, Neither goe into the town, nor tell it to any in the town. 27 *And Iesus went out, & his disciples into the townes of Cesarea Philippi. And by the way he asked his disciples, saying vnto them, Whom do men say that I am? 28 And they answered, *Some say*, Iohn Baptist: and some, Elias: and some, One of the Prophets. 29 And he said vnto them, But whom say ye that I am? Then Peter answered, and said vnto him, Thou art that Christ. 30 And he sharply charged them, that concerning him they should tell no man. 31 Then he beganne to teach them, that the Sonne of man must suffer many things, and should be reproued of the Elders, and of the hie Priests, and of the Scribes, and be slaine, & within three dayes rise againe. 32 And he spake that thing boldly. Then Peter tooke him aside, and began to rebuke him. 33 Then he turned backe, and looked on his disciples, and rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behinde me, Satan: for thou vnderstandest not the things that are of God, but the things that are of men.

Matth. 16.13. Luke 9.18.

men. 34 And hee called the people vnto him
Matt. with his disciples, and sayd vnto them,* Who-
10.38. soeuer will follow me, let him forsake himself,
and take vp his crosse and follow me. 35 For
Mat. whosoeuer * will saue his life, shall lose it: but
10.39. whosoeuer shall lose his life for my sake & the
Gospels, he shall saue it. 36 For what shall it
profit a man, though hee should win the whole
world, if hee lose his soule? 37 Or what ex-
Matt. change shall a man giue for his soule? 38 *For
10.33. whosoeuer shall be ashamed of mee, and of my
Luk.9. words among this adulterous and sinfull gene-
26.& ration, of him shall the Sonne of man be asha-
12.9. med also, when he commeth in the glory of his
Father with the holy Angels.

CHAP. 9. 1 *Christes transfiguration.*

Matt. AND he * sayd vnto them, Verely I say vnto
16.28. you, that there be some of them that stand
Luk.9. here, which shal not taste of death, till they haue
27. seene the kingdome of God come with power.
Mat. 2 * And sixe dayes after, Iesus taketh vnto him
17.1. Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and carieth them vp
Luke into an hie mountaine out of the way alone, and
9.28. his shape was changed before them. 3 And his
raiment did shine, *and was* very white, as snow,
so white as no fuller can make vpon the earth.
4 And there appeared vnto them Elias with
Moses, & they were talking with Iesus. 5 Then
Peter answered and sayd to Iesus, Master, It is
good for vs to be heere: let vs make also three
Tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses,
and

and one for Elias. 6 Yet he knew not what he
said: for they were afraid. 7 And there was
a cloud that shadowed them, and a voice came
out of the cloud, saying, *This is my beloued Matt.
Sonne: heare him. 8 And suddenly they loo- 3.17.
ked round about, & saw no more any man saue
Iesus only with them. 9 * And as they came Matt.
downe from the mountaine, hee charged them 17.9.
that they should tell no man what they had
seene, saue when the Sonne of man were risen
from the dead againe. 10 So they kept that
matter to themselues, and demanded one of an-
other, what the rising from the dead againe
should meane. 11 Also they asked him, saying,
Why say the Scribes, that *Elias must first come? Mal.
12 And he answered, and sayd vnto them, Elias 4.5.
verely shall first come, and restore all things:
* and as it is written of the Sonne of man, hee Psal.
must suffer many things, and be set at nought. 53.4.
13 But I say vnto you, that Elias is come (and
they haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they
would) as it is written of him. 14 * And when Matt.
hee came to his disciples, hee saw a great multi- 17.14.
tude about them, and the Scribes disputing with Luke
them. 15 And straightway all the people, when 9.38.
they beheld him, were amased, and ran to him,
and saluted him. 16 Then he asked the Scribes,
What dispute you among your selues? 17 And
one of the companie answered, and sayd, Ma-
ster, I haue brought my sonne vnto thee, which
hath a dumbe spirit: 18 And whereſoeuer he

taketh

taketh him, he teareth him, and he fometh, and gnaſheth his teeth, & pineth away: and I ſpake to thy diſciples that they ſhould caſt him out, and they could not. 19 Then hee anſwered him, and ſayd, O faithleſſe generation, howe long now ſhall I be with you? how long now ſhall I ſuffer you? Bring him vnto me. 20 So they brought him vnto him: and aſſoone as the ſpirit ſaw him, he tare him, and he fell downe on the ground, wallowing & foming. 21 Then he aſked his father, How long time is it, ſince he hath bene thus? And hee ſayd, Of a childe. 22 And oft times hee caſteth him into the fire, and into the water to deſtroy him: but if thou canſt doe any thing, helpe vs, and haue compaſſion vpon vs. 23 And Ieſus ſaid vnto him, If thou canſt beleeue it, all things are poſſible to him that beleeueth. 24 And ſtraightway the father of the childe crying with teares, ſayde, Lorde, I beleeue: helpe mine vnbeliefe. 25 When Ieſus ſaw that the people came running together, he rebuked the vncleane ſpirit, ſaying vnto him, Thou dumme and deafe ſpirit, I charge thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him. 26 Then *the ſpirit* cryed, and rent him ſore, and came out, and he was as one dead, in ſo much that many ſayde, He is dead. 27 But Ieſus tooke his hand and lift him vp, and he aroſe. 28 And when he was come into the houſe his diſciples aſked him ſecretly, Why could not wee caſt him out? 29 And hee ſayd vnto

vnto them, This kinde can by no other meanes come forth, but by prayer, and fasting. 30 *And they departed thence, & went together through Galilee, and he would not that any should haue knowen it. 31 For he taught his disciples, and said vnto them, The Sonne of man shall be deliuered into the handes of men, and they shall kill him, but after that he is killed, hee shall rise againe the third day. 32 But they vnderstood not that saying, and were afrayd to aske him. 33 *After, he came to Capernaum: and when he was in the house, he asked them, What was it that yee disputed among you by the way? 34 And they held their peace: for by the way they reasoned among themselues, who *should be* the chiefest. 35 And he sate downe, and called the twelue, and sayd to them, If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and seruant vnto all. 36 And he tooke a little childe, and set him in the middes of them, and tooke him in his armes, and said vnto them, 37 Whosoeuer shall receiue one of such litle children in my Name, receiueth me: and whosoeuer receiueth me, receiueth not me, but him that sent mee. 38 *Then Iohn answered him, saying, Master, wee saw one casting out deuils by thy Name which followeth not vs and we forbade him, because he followeth vs not. 39 *But Iesus sayd, Forbid him not: for there is no man that can doe a miracle by my Name, that can lightly speake euill of me. 40 For whosoeuer

Matt. 17.22. *Luke* 9.22.

Mat. 18.1. *Luke* 9.46.

Luke 9.49. *Mar.* 9.38. *Luke* 11.23.

is

Matt. is not against vs, is on our part. 41 * And who-
10.42. soeuer shall giue you a cup of water to drinke
for my Names sake, because ye belõg to Christ,
verely I say vnto you, he shall not lose his re-
Matt. ward. 42 * And whosoeuer shall offend one of
18.6. these litle ones, that beleeue in me, it were bet-
Luk.17. ter for him rather, that a milstone were hanged
2. about his necke, and that he were cast into the
Mat. sea. 43 * Wherefore if thine hand cause thee
5.29. to offend, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter
into life, maimed, then hauing two hands to go
into hell, into the fire that neuer shall be quen-
ched, 44 * Where their worme dieth not, and
Esa.66.24. the fire neuer goeth out. 45 Likewise, if thy
foot cause thee to offend, cut it off: it is better
for thee to goe halt into life, then hauing two
feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that neuer
shalbe quenched, 46 Where their worme di-
eth not, and the fire neuer goeth out. 47 And
if thine eye cause thee to offend, plucke it out:
it is better for thee to go into the kingdome of
God with one eye, then hauing two eyes, to be
cast into hell fire, 48 Where their worme di-
eth not, and the fire neuer goeth out. 49 For
euery man shall be salted with fire: * and euery
sacrifice shall be salted with salt. 50 * Salt is
good: but if the salt be vnsauerie, wherewith
shall it be seasoned? haue salt in your selues, and
haue peace one with another,

CHAP. 10. 2 *Of diuorcement.* 17 *To forsake all and follow Christ.* 46 *Blinde Bartemeus.*

And

And he * arose from thence, and went into the Mat.
coasts of Iudea by the farre side of Iordan, 19.1.
and the people resorted vnto him againe, and as
he was woont, he taught them againe. 2 Then
the Pharises came and asked him, if it were law-
full for a man to put away his wife, and temp-
ted him. 3 And hee answered, and sayd vnto
them, * What did Moses command you? 4 And Deut.
they sayd, Moses suffered to write a bill of di- 24.1.
uorcement, and to put her away. 5 Then Iesus
answered, and said vnto them, For the hardnesse
of your heart he wrote this precept vnto you.
6 But at the beginning of the creation, * God Gen.
made them male and female. 7 * For this cause 1.27.
shall man leaue his father & mother, and cleaue Gen.
vnto his wife, 8 And they twaine shall be one 2.24.
flesh: so that they are no more twaine, but one
flesh. 9 * Therefore, what God hath coupled 1. Cor.
together, let no man separate. 10 And in the 7.10.
house his disciples asked him againe of that mat-
ter. 11 And hee said vnto them, * Whosoeuer Matt.
shall put away his wife, & marrie another, com- 5.32.
mitteth adulterie against her. 12 And if a wo-
man put away her husband, and be married to
another, shee committeth adulterie. 13 * Then Mat.
they brought litle children to him, that he should 19.13.
touch them, and his disciples rebuked those that
brought them. 14 But when Iesus saw it, hee
was displeased, and sayd to them, Suffer the litle
children to come vnto me, and forbidde them
not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

15 Verely

15 Verely I ſay vnto you, Whoſoeuer ſhall not receiue the kingdome of God as a little child, hee ſhall not enter therein. 16 And hee tooke them vp in his armes, and put *his* handes vpon them, and bleſſed them. 17 And when hee was
Matt. gone out on the way, there came one running,
19.16. and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good maſter, what ſhall I doe, that I may poſſeſſe eternall life? 18 Ieſus ſayd to him, Why calleſt thou me good? there is none good but one, euen God.
Exod. 19 Thou knoweſt the commandements, Thou
20.13. ſhalt not commit adulterie. Thou ſhalt not kill. Thou ſhalt not ſteale. Thou ſhalt not beare falſe witneſſe. Thou ſhalt hurt no *man*. Honour thy father and mother. 20 Then he anſwered, and ſayd to him, Maſter, all theſe things I haue obſerued from my youth. 21 And Ieſus looked vpon him, and loued him, and ſayd vnto him, One thing is lacking vnto thee. Goe, *and* ſell all that thou haſt, and giue it to the poore, and thou ſhalt haue treaſure in heauen, and come, follow me, and take vp the croſſe. 22 But he was ſadde at that ſaying, and went away ſorowfull: for he had great poſſeſſions. 23 And Ieſus looked round about, and ſayd vnto his diſciples, How hardly doe they that haue riches, enter into the kingdome of God! 24 And his diſciples were afraid at his words. But Ieſus anſwered againe, and ſaid vnto them, Children, how hard is it for them that truſt in riches, to enter into the kingdome of God! 25 It is eaſier for a camell to

go

go thorow the eye of a needle, then for a rich
man to enter into the kingdome of God.
26 And they were much more astonied, saying
with themselues, Who then can bee saued?
27 But Iesus looked vpon them, and said, With
men it is impossible, but not with God: for
with God all things are possible. 28 * Then Mat
Peter began to say vnto him, Loe, we haue for- 19.2
saken all, and haue followed thee. 29 Iesus an- Luke
swered, and said, Verely I say vnto you, there is 18.2
no man that hath forsaken house, or brethren,
or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or chil-
dren, or landes for my sake and the Gospels,
30 But he shall receiue an hundred folde, now
at this present, houses, and brethren, and sisters,
and mothers, and children, and lands with per-
secutions, and in the world to come, eternall
life. 31 * But many *that are* first, shalbe last, and Ma
the last, first. 32 * And they were in the way go- 19.
ing vp to Hierusalem, and Iesus went before Luk
them, and they were troubled, & as they follow- 13.
ed, they were afraid, and Iesus tooke the twelue M
againe, & began to tell them what things should 20.
come vnto him, 33 *Saying*, Beholde, we go vp to Lu
Hierusalem, and the Sonne of man shalbe deli- 18.
uered vnto the hie Priests, and to the Scribes,
and they shall condemne him to death, and shal
deliuer him to the Gentiles. 34 And they shall
mocke him, and scourge him, and spit vpon him,
& kill him: but the third day he shall rise againe. M
35 * Then Iames & Iohn the sonnes of Zebedeus 10.

came

came vnto him, saying, Master, wee would
thou shouldest doe for vs that that wee
35 And hee sayd vnto them, What would ye
should doe for you? 37 And they sayd to him,
Graunt vnto vs, that wee may sit, one at thy
right hand, and another at thy left hand in thy
glorie. 38 But Iesus sayd vnto them, Ye know
not what ye aske: Can yee drinke of the cuppe
that I shall drinke of, and be baptized with
the baptisme that I shall be baptized with?
39 And they sayd vnto him, We can. But Iesus
sayd vnto them, Yee shall drinke in deed of the
cuppe that I shall drinke of, and be baptized
with the baptisme wherewith I shalbe baptized
40 But to sit at my right hand and at my left, is
not mine to giue, but *it shall be giuen* to them
for whom it is prepared. 41 And when the ten
heard that, they began to disdaine at Iames and
Iohn. 42 But Iesus called them vnto him, and
sayd to them, * Yee know that they which are
princes among the Gentiles, haue domination
ouer them, and they that be great among them,
exercise authoritie ouer them. 43 But it shall
not be so among you: but whosoeuer will be
great among you, shalbe your seruant. 44 And
whosoeuer will be chiefe of you, shall be the
seruant of all. 45 For euen the Sonne of man
came not to be serued, but to serue, and to giue
his life for the ransome of many. 46 * Then
they came to Iericho: and as he went out of
Iericho with his disciples, & a great multitude,

Bartimeus

Bartimeus the ſonne of Timeus, a blinde man, ſate by the wayes ſide, begging. 47 And when he heard that it was Ieſus of Nazareth, he began to cry, and to ſay, Ieſus the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on me. 48 And many rebuked him, becauſe he ſhould holde his peace: but he cryed muſch more, O Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on me. 49 Then Ieſus ſtood ſtill and commanded him to be called: and they called the blind, ſaying vnto him, Be of good comfort: ariſe, he calleth thee. 50 So he threw away his cloke, and roſe, and came to Ieſus. 51 And Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, What wilt thou that I doe vnto thee? And the blinde ſaid vnto him, Lorde, that I may receiue ſight. 52 Then Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Goe thy way: thy faith hath ſaued thee. And by and by he receiued *his* ſight, & followed Ieſus in the way.

CHAP. 11. 29. *The force of faith.*

AND when * they came neere to Hieruſalem, *Mat.*
And to Bethphage and Bethania vnto the mount 21.2.
of Olives, he ſent foorth two of his diſciples, *luke*
2 And ſaide vnto them, Goe your wayes into 18.29.
that towne that is ouer against you, & as ſoone as ye ſhall enter into it, ye ſhall finde a colte tyed, whereon neuer man ſate: looſe him, and bring him. 3 And if any man ſay vnto you, Why doe ye this? Say that the Lorde hath neede of him, and ſtraightway he will ſend him hither. 4 And they went their way, and found a colte tyed by the doore without, in a place where

two

two wayes met, and they loosed him. 5 The certaine of them that stoode there, saide vnto them, What doe ye loosing the colte? 6 And they said vnto them, as Iesus had commanded them: So they let them goe. 7 * And they brought the colte to Iesus, and cast their garments on him, and he sate vpon him. 8 And many spred their garments in the way: other cut downe branches of the trees, and strawed them in the way. 9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cryed, saying, Hosanna: Blessed *be* he that commeth in the Name of the Lord. 10 Blessed *be* the kingdome that commeth in the Name of the Lorde of our father Dauid: Hosanna, *O thou which art* in the highest *heauens*. 11 *So Iesus entred into Hierusalem, and into the Temple: and when he had looked about on all things, and nowe it was euening, he went foorth into Bethania with the twelue. 12 * And on the morowe when they were come out from Bethania, he was hungrie. 13 And seeing a figge tree afarre off, that had leaues, he went *to see* if he might finde any thing thereon: but when he came vnto it, he found nothing but leaues: for the time of figges was not yet. 14 Then Iesus answered, & said to it, Neuer man eate fruite of thee hereafter while the world standeth: & his disciples heard it. 15 And they came to Hierusalem, and Iesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that solde and bought in the Temple, and ouerthrewe the tables

John 12.14

Mat. 21.12.

Mat. 21.19.

tables of the money changers, and the seates of them that solde doues. 16 Neither would he suffer that any man should cary a vessel through the Temple 17 And hee taught, saying vnto them, Is it not written, * Mine house shalbe called the house of prayer vnto all nations? * but you haue made it a denne of theeues 18 And the Scribes and hie Priestes heard it, and sought howe to destroy him: for they feared him, because the whole multitude was astonied at his doctrine. 19 But when euen was come, *Iesus* went out of the citie. 20 * And in the morning as they journeyed together, they sawe the figge tree dried vp from the rootes. 21 Then Peter remembred, and said vnto him, Master, beholde, the figge tree which thou cursedst is withered. 22 And Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, Haue the faith of God. 23 For verely I say vnto you, that whosoeuer shal say vnto this mountaine, Be thou taken away, and cast into the sea, and shall not wauer in his heart, but shall beleeue that those things which he saieth, shall come to passe, what soeuer he saith, shall be *done* to him. 24 * Therefore I say vnto you, whatsoeuer ye desire when ye pray, beleeue that ye shal haue it, and it shalbe *done* vnto you. 25 * But when ye shall stand, and pray, forgiue, if ye haue any thing against any man, that your Father also which is in heauen may forgiue you your trespasses. 26 For if you wil not forgiue, your Father which is in heauen, will not pardon you

Isai. 56.7. *Iere.* 7.11. *Mat.* 11.19 *Mat.* 7.7. *Luke* 11.9. *Mat.* 6.14.

Mat. your treſpaſſes. 27 * Then they came againe
21.23 to Hieruſalem: and as he walked in the Temple,
Luke there came to him the hie Prieſts, and ỹ Scribes,
20.1. and the Elders, 28 And ſaid vnto him, by what authoritie doeſt thou theſe things? and who gaue thee this authoritie, that thou ſhouldeſt doe theſe things? 29 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, I will alſo aſke of you a certaine thing, and anſwere ye me, and I will tell you by what authoritie I do theſe things. 30 The Baptiſme of Iohn was it from heauen, or of men? anſwere me. 31 And they thought with themſelues, ſaying, If we ſhall ſay from heauen, he will ſay, Why then did ye not beleeue him? 32 But if we ſay of men, we feare the people: for all men counted Iohn, that he was a Prophet in deede. 33 Then they anſwered, and ſaide vnto Ieſus, We cannot tell. And Ieſus anſwered, and ſaide vnto them, Neither will I tell you by what authoritie I doe theſe things.

CHAP. 12. 11. *Of the vineyard*

AND he began to ſpeake vnto them in parables, * A certaine man planted a vineyard, Iſai. 5.1. and compaſſed it with an hedge, and digged a pit for the winepreſſe, and built a towre in it, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a ſtrange countrey. 2 And at the time, he ſent to the husbandmen a ſeruant, that he might receiue of the husbandmen of the fruite of the vineyard. 3 But they tooke him, and beat him, and and ſent him away emptie. 4 And againe he ſent

sent vnto them another seruant, and at him they cast stones, and brake his head, & sent him away shamefully handled. 5 And againe he sent another, and him they slewe, and many other, beating some, and killing some. 6 Yet had he one sonne, his deare beloued: him also he sent the last vnto them, saying, They will reuerence my sonne. 7 But the husbandmen said among themselues, This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours. 8 So they tooke him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard. 9 What shall then the Lorde of the vineyard doe? He will come and destroy these husbandmen, and giue the vineyarde to others. 10 Haue ye not read so much as this Scripture? * The stone which the builders did refuse, is made the head of the corner. 11 This was done of the Lorde, and it is marueilous in our eyes. 12 Then they went about to take him, but they feared the people: for they perceiued that he spake that parable against them: therefore they left him, and went their way. 13 *And they sent vnto him certaine of the Phariſes, and of the Herodians that they might take him in his talke. 14 And when they came, they saide vnto him, Master, we knowe that thou art true and careſt for no man: for thou considereſt not the person of men, but teacheſt the way of God truely. Is it lawfull to giue tribute to Cesar, or not? 15 Should we giue it, or shoulde we not giue it? But he knewe their hypocrisie,

Psal. 118.22 Isai. 28.16 Mat. 21.42

Mat. 12.15 Luke 20.20

and ſaid vnto them, Why tempt ye me? Bring me a penie, that I may ſee it. 16 So they brought it, and he ſaid vnto them, Whoſe is this image and ſuperſcription? and they ſaid vnto him, Cæſars. 17 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſaide vnto them, * Giue to Ceſar the things that are Ceſars, and to God, thoſe that are Gods, and they marueiled at him. 18 * Then came the Sadduces vnto him, (which ſay there is no reſurrection) and they aſked him, ſaying, 19 Maſter, Moſes wrote vnto vs, If any mans brother die, and leave his wife, and leaue no children, that his brother ſhould take his wife, and raiſe vp ſeede vnto his brother. 20 There were ſeuen brethren, and the firſt tooke a wife, and when he died left no iſſue. 21 Then the ſecond tooke her, and he died, neither did he yet leaue iſſue, and the third likewiſe. 22 So thoſe ſeuen had her, and left no iſſue: laſt of all the wife died alſo. 23 In the reſurrection then, when they ſhall riſe againe, whoſe wife ſhall ſhe be of them? for ſeuen had her to wife. 24 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto them. Are ye not therefore deceiued, becauſe ye knowe not the Scriptures, neither the power of God? 25 For when they ſhall riſe againe from the dead, neither men marrie nor wiues are married, but are as the Angels which are in heauen. 26 And as touching the dead, that they ſhall riſe againe, haue ye not read in the booke of Moſes, howe in the buſh God ſpake vnto him, ſaying, * I am the God of Abraham,

Rom. 13.7.
Mat. 22.23.
Deut 25.5.
Mat. 22.24.
Exod. 3.6.

Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob? 27 God is not the God of the dead, but of the liuing. Ye are therefore greatly deceiued.

28 *Then came one of ỹ Scribes that had heard them disputing together, *and* perceiuing that he had answered them well, he asked him which is the first commandement of all? 29 Iesus answered him, The first of all the commandements is, *Heare, Israel the Lord our God is the onely Lord, 30 Thou shalt therefore loue the Lorde thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy minde, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandement. 31 And the second is like, that is, *Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. There is none other commaundement greater then these. 32 Then the Scribe said vnto him, Well master, thou hast said the trueth, that there is one God, and that there is none but he. 33 And to loue him with all the heart, and with all the vnderstanding, and with all the soule, and with all the strength, and to loue *his* neighbour as himselfe, is more then al whole burnt offerings & sacrifices. 34 Then when Iesus sawe that he answered discreetely, he said vnto him, Thou art not farre from the kingdome of God And no man after that durst aske him any question. 35 *And Iesus answered and said teaching in the Temple, Howe say the Scribes, that Christ is the Sonne of Dauid? 36 For Dauid himselfe saide by the holy Ghost, *The Lord saide to my Lord, Sit at my right

Mat. 22.35
Deu. 6.4.
Leui. 19.18
mat. 22.39
rom. 13.9
gal. 5.14
iam. 2.8.
Mat. 22.41
Pſal. 110.

hand, till I make thine enemies thy footestoole.
37 Then Dauid himselfe calleth him Lorde: whence
what meanes is he then his sonne? And the
Mat. people heard him gladly. 38 * Moreouer he
22.6. said vnto them in his doctrine, Beware of the
Luke Scribes which loue to goe in long robes, & to
11.43 salutations in the markets, 39 And the chiefe
and seates in the Synagogues, and the first roomes at
20.43. feastes. 40 Which deuoure widowes houses,
euen vnder a colour of long prayers. These shall
Mat. receiue the greater damnation. 41 *And as Ie-
23.14 sus sate ouer against the treasurie, he behelde
Luke how the people cast money into the treasurie:
21.1. and many rich men cast in much. 42 And there
came a certaine poore widowe, and she threw
in two mites, which make a quadrin. 43 Then
he called vnto him his disciples, and said vnto
them, Verely I say vnto you, that this poore
widowe hath cast more in, then all they which
haue cast into the treasurie. 44 For they all
did cast in of their superfluitie: but she of her
ponertie did cast in all that she had, *euen* all her
liuing.

CHAP. 13. 5. *Signes of the last day.*

Mat. AND * as he went out of the Temple, one of
24.1. his disciples said vnto him, Master, see what
maner stones, & what maner buildings *are* here!
Luke 2 *Then Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Sa-
19.43 est thou these great buildings? there shall not be
left one stone vpon a stone, that shall not be
throwen downe. 3 And as he sate on the mount

of Olives, ouer against the Temple, Peter, and
Iames, and Iohn, & Andrew asked him secretly,
4 Tell vs, when shall these things be? and what
shall be the signe when all these things shall be
fulfilled? 5 And Iesus answered them, and be-
ganne to say, * Take heede least any man de- *Ephes
ceiue you. 6 For many shal come in my name, 5.6.
saying, I am (Christ), and shall deceiue many. 2.Thes
7 Furthermore when ye shall heare of warres, 2.3.
and rumors of warres, be ye not troubled: for
such thing must needes be: but the end shal not
be yet. 8 For nation shall rise against nation,
and kingdome against kingdome, and there shall
be earthquakes in diuers quarters, and there shal
be famine & troubles: these are the beginnings
of sorowes. 9 But take ye heede to your selues:
for they shall deliuer you vp to the councils,
and to the Synagogues: ye shall be beaten, and
brought before rulers & Kings for my sake, for
a testimoniall vnto them. 10 And the Gospel
must first be published among al nations. 11 *But *Mat
when they leade you, and deliuer you vp, be not 10
careful before hand, neither studie what ye shall Luke
say, but what is giuen you at the same time, that 12.
speake: for it is not ye that speake, but the holy and
Ghost. 12 Yea, and the brother shal deliuer the 21.
brother to death, & the father the sonne, and the
children shall rise against their parents, and shal
cause them to die. 13 And ye shalbe hated of all
men for my Names sake: but whosoeuer shal en- *Mat
dure vnto the end, he shalbe saued. 14 *Moreouer, 24.
when

when ye ſhal ſee the abomination of deſolation
Dan. (ſpoken of by * Daniel the Prophet) ſet where
9 27. it ought not, (let him that readeth conſider)
then let them *that be* in Iudea, flee into ỹ moun-
taines, 15 And let him that is vpon the houſe,
not come downe into the houſe, neither enter
therein, to fetche any thing out of his houſe:
16 And let him that is in the fielde, not turne
backe againe to take his garment. 17 Then wo
ſhalbe to them that are with childe, and to them
that giue ſucke in thoſe dayes. 18 Pray there-
fore that your flight be not in ỹ winter. 19 For
in thoſe dayes ſhall be ſuch tribulations, as was
not from the beginning of the creation which
God created vnto this time, neither ſhall be.
20 And except that the Lord had ſhortned thoſe
dayes, no fleſh ſhould be ſaued: but for ỹ electes
ſake, which he hath choſen, he hath ſhortened
Mat. thoſe dayes. 21 Then * if any man ſay to you,
24. 23. Loe, here is Chriſt, or, Loe, *he is* there, beleeue it
Luke not. 22 For falſe Chriſts ſhall riſe, & falſe pro-
17. 23. phets, & ſhal ſhew ſignes & wonders, to deceiue,
if it were poſſible, the very elect. 23 But take
B. ye heede, behold, I haue ſhewed you all things
before. 24 Moreouer in thoſe dayes after that
a. tribulation, *the ſunne ſhal waxe darke, and the
Mat. 24. 10. moone ſhall not giue her light. 25 And the
Luke ſtarres of heauen ſhall fall: & the powers which
21. 7. are in heauen, ſhal ſhake. 26 And then ſhal they
Mat. ſee the Sonne of man comming in the cloudes
24. 31 with great power and glory. 27 *And he ſhall
then

then ſende his Angels, and ſhall gather together his elect from the foure winds, *and* from the vtmoſt part of the earth, to the vtmoſt part of heauen. 28 Nowe learne a parable of the figtree. When her bough is yet tender, and it bringeth foorth leaues, yee knowe that ſommer *is* neere. 29 So in like maner, when yee ſee theſe things come to paſſe, know that *the kingdom of God* is neere, *euen* at the doores. 30 Verely I ſay vnto you, that this generation ſhall not paſſe, till all theſe things be done. 31 Heauen & earth ſhal paſſe away, but my words ſhall not paſſe away. 32 But of that day and houre knoweth no man, no, not the Angels which are in heauen, neither the Sonne himſelfe, but the Father. 33 * Take heede, watch, & pray: for ye know not when the time is. 34 *For the Sonne of man is* as a man going into a ſtrange countrey, & leaueth his houſe, and giueth authority to his ſeruants, & to euery man his worke, and commandeth the porter to watch. 35 Watch ye therefore, (for ye knowe not when the maſter of the houſe will come, at euen, or at midnight, at the cocke crowing, or in the dawning,) 36 Leſt if he come ſuddenly, he ſhould finde you ſleeping. 37 And thoſe things that I ſay vnto you, I ſay vnto all men, Watch.

Mat 24.1

CHAP. 14. 22 *The Lords Supper.*

AND * two dayes after followed *the feaſt of* the Paſſeouer, & of vnleauened bread: and the hie Prieſts, & Scribes ſought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death. 2 But they

Mat 26.1 Luk 22.1

they said, Not on the feast day, least there be any
Mat. tumult among the people. 3 * And when he
26.6. was in Bethania in the house of Simon the leper,
John as he sate at table, there came a woman having a
12.2. boxe of oyntment of spikenard, very costly, and
shee brake the boxe, and powred it on his head.
4 Therefore some disdained among themselues,
and said, To what end is this waste of oyntment?
5 For it might haue bin sold for more then three
hundreth pence, and bin giuen to the poore. And
they murmured against her. 6 But Iesus said,
Let her alone: why trouble yee her? shee hath
wrought a good worke on me. 7 For ye haue
the poore with you alwayes, and when ye will,
ye may do them good: but me ye shall not haue
alwayes. 8 She hath done that she could: shee
came aforehand to anoynt my body to the bu-
rying. 9 Verely I say vnto you, whersoeuer
this Gospel shall bee preached throughout the
whole world, this also that she hath done shalbe
Matt. spoken of in remembrance of her. 10 *Then Iu-
26.14 das Iscariot, one of the twelue, went away vnto
Luke the hie Priests, to betray him vnto them. 11 And
22.4 when they heard it, they were glad, & promised
that they would giue him money: therefore he
sought how he might conueniently betray him.
Mat. 12 *Now the first day of vnleauened bread, whe
26.17. they sacrificed the Passeouer, his disciples saide
Luke vnto him, Where wilt thou that we go and pre-
22.8. pare, that thou mayst eat the Passeouer? 13 Then
he sent forth two of his disciples, and said vnto
them,

them, Goe ye into the citie, and there shall a man meete you bearing a pitcher of water: followe him. 14 And whithersoeuer he goeth in, say ye to the goodman of the house, The Master saith, Where is ỹ lodging where I shall eat the Passeouer w̄ my disciples? 15 And he wil shew you an vpper chamber *which is* large, trimmed and prepared: there make it ready for vs. 16 So his disciples went forth, & came to the city, & found as he had said vnto them, & made ready the Passeouer. 17 And at Euen he came with the twelue. 18 *And as they sate at table, and did eate, Iesus said, Verely I say vnto you, that one of you shall betray me, which eateth with me. 19 Then they began to be sorowful, and to say to him one by one, Is it I? And another, Is it I? 20 And he answered, & said vnto them, *It is* one of the twelue that dippeth with me in the platter. 21 Truely the Sonne of man goeth his way, as it is written of him: *but wo *be* to that man, by whō the Sonne of man is betraied: it had bin good for that man, if he had neuer bin borne. 22 *And as they did eate, Iesus tooke the bread, and when he had giuen thankes he brake it, and gaue it to them, and said, Take, eat, this is my body. 23 Also he tooke the cup, & when he had giuen thankes, gaue it to them: and they al dranke of it. 24 And he said vnto them, This is my blood of the newe Testament, which is shed for many. 25 Verely I say vnto you, I will drinke no more of the fruite of the vine vntil that day, that I drinke it newe in the

Psal. 41.10. matth. 26.20 23.

Acts 1.16. Matt. 26.26 1.cor. 11.24.

the kingdome of God. 26 And when they had
ſung a Pſalme, they went out to the mount of
Iohn liues. 27 *Then Ieſus ſaid vnto them, All ye ſhall
16.32. be offended by mee this night: for it is written,
Zech. *I wil ſmite the ſhepheard, and the ſheepe ſhall
13.7. be ſcattered, 28 But after that I am riſen, I will
Chap. go into *Galile before you. 29 And Peter ſaid
16.7. vnto him, Although all men ſhould be offended
at thee, yet would not I. 30 Then Ieſus ſaid vnto
him, Verely I ſay vnto thee, this day, even in
this night, before the cocke crowe twiſe, thou
ſhalt denie me thriſe. 31 But he ſaid more ear-
neſtly, If I ſhould die with thee, I will not deny
Matt. thee: likewiſe alſo ſaid they all. 32 *After, they
26.36. came into a place named Gethſemane: and he
Luke ſaid to his diſciples, Sit ye here, till I haue pray-
22.39. ed. 33 And he tooke with him Peter, & Iames,
and Iohn, and he began to be troubled, and to
great heauines, 34 And ſaide vnto them, My
ſoule is very heauie, *euen* vnto the death: tarie
here and watch. 35 So he went forward a little,
and fell downe on the ground, and prayed, that
if it were poſsible, that houre might paſſe from
him 36 And he ſaid, Abba, Father, all things are
poſsible vnto thee: take away this cuppe from
me: neuertheleſſe not that I will, but that thou
wilt, *be done.* 37 Then he came, and found them
ſleeping, and ſaid to Peter, Simon, ſleepeſt thou?
couldeſt not thou watch one houre? 38 Watch
ye, and pray, that yee enter not into tentation:
the ſpirit in deed is ready, but the fleſh is weake.

39 And

39 And againe he went away, and prayed, and spake the same words. 40 And he returned, and found them asleepe againe: for their eyes were heauie, neither knew they what they should answere him. 41 And he came the third time, and said vnto them, Sleepe hencefoorth, and take your rest: it is ynough: the houre is come, beholde, the Sonne of man is deliuered into the hands of sinners. 42 Rise vp, let vs go lo, he that betrayeth mee, is at hand. 43 * And immediatly while he yet spake, came Iudas that was one of the twelue, and with him a great multitude with swords and staues frō the hie Priests, & Scribes, and Elders. 44 And he that betrayed him, had giuen them a token, saying. Whomsoeuer I shall kisse, he it is: take him and leade him away safely. 45 And assoone as hee was come, he went straightway to him, and said, Haile Master, and kissed him. 46 Then they laid their handes on him, and tooke him. 47 And one of them that stood by, drew out a sworde, and smote a seruant of the hie Priest, and cut off his eare. 48 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Yee be come out as against a thiefe with swords and staues, to take me. 49 I was daily with you teaching in the Temple, & ye tooke me not; but *this is done* that the Scriptures should be fulfilled. 50 Then all forsooke him and fled. 51 And there followed him a certaine yong man, clothed in linen vpon his bare *body*, and the yong men caught him. 52 But he left his linnen cloth, and fled

Matt. 26.47

ded from them naked. 53 *So they led Ie-
way to the hie Prieſt, and to him came to-
all the hie Prieſts, and the Elders, and the Scri-
54 And Peter folowed him afarre off, euen
the hall of the hie Prieſt, and ſate with the
nants, and warmed *himſelfe* at the fire. 55
the hie *Prieſts, & al the Councel ſought for
nes againſt Ieſus, to put him to death, but fo-
none, 56 For many bare falſe witneſſe a-
him, but their witneſſe agreed not toge-
57 Then there aroſe certaine, & bare falſe
nes againſt him, ſaying, 58 We heard him
*I wil deſtroy this temple made with hands,
within three dayes I will builde another
without hands. 59 But their witnes yet agre-
not together. 60 *Then the hie Prieſt ſtood
amongſt them, and aſked Ieſus, ſaying, Anſwer
thou nothing? what is the matter why theſe bea-
witnes againſt thee? 61 But he helde his pe-
and anſwered nothing. Againe the hie Pr
aſked him, & ſaid vnto him, Art thou that Chr
the ſonne of the bleſſed? 62 And Ieſus ſaid,
he, *and yee ſhall ſee the Sonne of man ſit a
right hand of the power *of God*, and com
the cloudes of heauen. 63 Then the hie Pr
rent his clothes, and ſaide, What haue wee
more need of witneſſes? 64 Ye haue heard
blaſphemie: what thinke ye? And they all
demned him to bee worthy of death. 65
ſome began to ſpit at him, and to couer his
and to beate him with fiſts, & to ſay vnto

Proph

prophecie. And the ſergeants ſmote him with
rods. 66 * And as Peter was beneath in Matt.
the hall, there came one of the maydes of the hie 66 69
Prieſt, 67 And when ſhe ſawe Peter warming luke
himſelfe, ſhe looked on him, and ſaid, Thou waſt 22.35
alſo with Ieſus of Nazareth. 68 But he denied iohn
it, ſaying, I know him not: neither wote I what 18 25
thou ſayeſt. Then he went out into the porch:
and the cocke crew. 69 * Then a maid ſaw him Matt.
againe, and began to ſay to them that ſtoode by, 26.71.
This is *one* of them. 70 But he denied it againe, luke
and anon after they that ſtood by, ſaid againe to 22.58.
Peter, Surely thou art *one* of them: for thou art
of Galile, and thy ſpeach is like. 71 And he be-
gan to curſe and ſweare, *ſaying*, I knowe not the
man of whom ye ſpeake. 72 *Then the ſecond Matt.
time the cocke crew, and Peter remembred the 26.75.
word that Ieſus had ſaide vnto him, Before the
cocke crow twiſe, thou ſhalt deny me thriſe, and
weying that with himſelfe, he wept.

CHAP. 15. 4. *Chriſt is crucified.*

AND anon in the dawning, the hie Prieſts held Mat.
a Councel with the Elders, and the Scribes, 27. 1.
and the whole Councel, and bound Ieſus, and led luke
him away, and deliuered him to Pilate. 2 Then 22.66.
Pilate aſked him, Art thou the king of the Iewes? iohn
And he anſwered, & ſaid vnto him, Thou ſayeſt 18.19.
it. 3 And the hie Prieſtes accuſed him of many
things. 4 *Wherfore Pilate aſked him againe, Matt.
ſaying, Anſwereſt thou nothing? Beholde howe 27.12.
many things they witnes againſt thee. 5 But luke
Ieſus 23.9.

Ieſus anſwered no more at all, ſo that Pilate
marueiled. 6 Now at the feaſt, Pilate did
uer a priſoner vnto them, whomſoeuer
would deſire. 7 Then there was one named
rabbas, which was bound with his ſelowes,
had made inſurrection, who in the inſurrec
had committed murther. 8 And the people
ed aloud, and began to deſire *that he would*
as he had euer done to them. 9 Then Pilate
ſwered them, and ſaid, Wil ye that I let loose
to you the King of the Iewes? 10 For he knew
that the hie Prieſtes had deliuered him of
11 But the hie Prieſtes had mooued the people
to deſire that he would rather deliuer Barabbas
vnto them. 12 And Pilate anſwered, and ſaid
againe vnto them, What wil ye then that I do
with him, whom ye call the King of the Iewes
13 And they cried againe, Crucifie him. 14 Then
Pilate ſaide vnto them, But what euil hath he
done? And they cried the more fernently, Cru-
fie him. 15 So Pilate willing to cõtent the peo-
ple, looſed them Barabbas, and deliuered Ieſus
when he had ſcourged him, that he might be cru-
cified. 16 Then the ſouldiers led him away
to the hall, which is the common hall, and called
together the whole band, 17 And clad him with
purple, and platted a crowne of thornes, & put
it about *his head*, 18 And began to ſalute him
ſaying, Haile, King of the Iewes. 19 And
ſmote him on the head with a reed, & ſpet on
him, and bowed the knees, *&* did him reuerence

20

30 And when they had mocked him, they tooke
the purple off him, and put his owne clothes on
him, & led him out to crucifie him. 21 *And they *Matth.
compelled one that passed by, *called* Simon of 27.32.
Cyrene (which came out of the countrey, & was *Luke*
father of Alexander & Rufus) to beare his crosse. 23.26.
22 * And they brought him to a place named *Matth.*
Golgotha, which is by interpretation, the place 27.33.
of dead mens skuls. 23 And they gaue him to *Luke*
drinke wine mingled with myrrhe but he recei- 23.33.
ued it not. 24 * And when they had crucified *Luke*
him, they parted his garments, casting lottes for 23.34
them, what euery man should haue. 25 And it
was the thirde houre, when they crucified him.
26 And the title of his cause was written aboue,
THAT KING OF THE IEWES.
27 They crucified also with him two theeues,
the one on the right hand & the other on his left.
28 Thus the Scripture was fulfilled which saith,
*And he was coūted among the wicked. 29 And *Isay*
they that went by, railed on him, wagging their 53.12.
heads, and saying * Hey, thou that destroyest the *Iohn*
temple and buildest it in three dayes, 30 Saue 2.19.
thy selfe & come downe frō the crosse. 31 Like-
wise also euen the hie Priestes mocking, said a-
mong themselues with the Scribes, He saued o-
ther men, himselfe he cannot saue. 32 Let Christ
the King of Israel now come downe from the
crosse, that we may see and beleeue. They also
that were crucified w̄ him, reuiled him. 33 Now
when the sixt houre was come, darkenes arose

ouer all the land vntil the ninth houre. 34 And
at the ninth houre Iesus cried w a loud voyce,
Psal. saying, * Eloi, Eloi, lamma sabachthani? which is
22. 1. by interpretation, My God, my God, why hast
Matt. thou forsaken me? 35 And some of them y stood
27.46. by when they heard it, said, Behold, he calleth E-
Psal. lias. 36 And one ran and filled a * spoundge full
69.22 of vineger, and put it on a reede, and gaue him
to drinke, saying, Let him alone: Let vs see if E-
lias wil come and take him downe. 37 And Ie-
sus cried with a loude voyce, and gaue vp the
ghost. 38 And the vaile of the temple was rent
in twaine frō the top to the bottome. 39 Now
when the Centurion, which stoode ouer against
him, saw that he thus crying gaue vp the ghost,
he said, Truely this man was the Sonne of God.
40 There were also women, which beheld a-
farre off, amōg whom was Mary Magdalene, and
Mary (the mother of Iames the lesse, and of Ioses)
and Salome. 41 Which also when he was in
Luke Galile, * followed him, and ministred vnto him,
8.2. and many other women which came vp with him
Matt. vnto Ierusalem. 42 *And now when night was
25.57. come (because it was the day of the preparation
Luke that is before the Sabbath) 43 * Ioseph of A-
23.50. mathea an honourable counsellour, which also
John looked for the kingdome of God, came, and
19.38. went in boldly vnto Pilate, and asked the body
of Iesus. 44 And Pilate marueiled if hee were
already dead, & called vnto him the Centurion,
and asked of him whether he had bin any while
dead.

dead. 45 And when he knew *the trueth* of the Centurio, he gaue the body to Ioseph: 46 Who bought a linnen cloth, and tooke him downe, and wrapped him in the linen cloth, and layd him in a tombe that was hewen out of a rocke, and rolled a stone vnto the doore of the sepulchre. 47 And Mary Magdalene, and Mary Ioses *mother* beheld where he should be layd.

CHAP. 16. *1 Christes resurrection.*

AND *when the Sabbath day was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the *mother* of Iames, and Salome, bought sweete oyntments, that they might come, and anoynt him. 2 Therefore early in the morning the first day of the weeke, they came vnto the sepulchre, when the sunne was now risen. 3 And they saide one to another, Who shall rolle vs away the stone from the doore of the sepulchre? 4 And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away (for it was a very great one.) 5 *So they went into the sepulchre, and saw a yong man sitting at the right side, clothed in a long white robe: and they were sore troubled. 6 But he saide vnto them, see not so troubled: ye seeke Iesus of Nazareth, which hath bin crucified: he is risen, he is not here: behold the place where they put him. 7 But go your way, and tell his disciples, and Peter, y he wil go before you into Galile: there shall ye see him, *as hee said vnto you. 8 And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepulchre, for they trembled, and were amased: neither

Luke 24.1. John 20.1.

Matt. 28.1. John 20.12

Chap. 14.28 matt. 26.32.

ther ſaide they any thing to any man: for they were afraide. 9 And when Ieſus was riſen a-
gaine, early the firſt day of the weeke he appe-
Iohn red firſt to Mary Magdalene *out of whome he
20.16. had caſt ſeuen deuils. 10 And ſhe went and told
Luke them that had bene with him, which mourned
8.2. and wept. 11 And when they heard that he was
aliue, and had appeared to her, they beleeued
Luke not. 12 *After that, he appeared vnto two of
24.13. them in another forme, as they walked, and went
into the countrey. 13 And they went, & told it
Luke to ỹ remnãt, neither beleeued they them. 14 *Fi-
24.36 nally, he appeared vnto ỹ eleuen as they ſate to-
Iohn gether & reproched them for their vnbeliefe &
23.19. hardnes of heart, becauſe they beleeued not
them which had ſeene him, being riſen vp again.
Matt. 15 And he ſaid vnto them, * Goe ye into all the
28.19 world, and preach the Goſpel to euery creature.
16 He that ſhal beleeue, & be baptized, ſhalbe ſa-
Iohn ued: *but he that wil not beleeue, ſhalbe damned.
12.48 17 And theſe tokens ſhal folow them ỹ beleeue,
Acts. *In my Name they *ſhal caſt out deuils, and ſhal
16.18 ſpeake w̃ new tongues, 18 *And ſhal take away
Acts. ſerpents, & if they ſhal drinke any deadly thing,
2.4. it ſhall not hurt them: they ſhall lay their hands
Acts. on the ſick, & they ſhal recouer. 19 *So after the
28.5. Lord had ſpokẽ vnto them, he was receiued into
Luke heauen, & ſate at the right hand of God. 20 And
24.51 they went forth, and preached euery where. And
Hebr. the *Lorde wrought with them, and confirmed
2.4. the word with ſignes that followed. AMEN.

TH

CHAP. 1. *The Angel foretelleth the birth of Jesus Christ. 46 Maries song.*

FOrasmuch as many haue taken in hand to set foorth the storie of those things, whereof we are fully persuaded, 2 As they haue deliuered them vnto vs, which from the beginning saw them their selues, and were ministers of the word, 3 It seemed good also to me (most noble Theophilus) assoone as I had searched out perfectly all things from the beginning, to write vnto thee thereof, from point to point, 4 That thou mightest acknowledge the certeintie of those things, whereof thou hast bene instructed.

5 IN the time of Herod king of Iudea, there was a certeine Priest named Zacharias,* of the course of Abiaand his wife was of ỹ daughters of Aaron, & her name was Elisabet. 6 Both were iust before God, & walked in all the commandements and ordinances of the Lord, without reproofe. 7 And they had no child, because that Elisabet was barren: and both were well stricken in age. 8 And it came to passe, as hee executed the Priests office before God, as his course came in order, 9 *According to the custome of the Priests office, his lot was to burne incense, when hee went into the Temple of the Lord. 10 And the whole multitude of the peo-

1. Cor. 24. 10.

Exod. 30. 7.

ple were without in prayer, * while the incense
10.7. was burning. 11 Then appeared vnto him an
Angel of the Lord ſtanding at the right ſide of
the altar of incenſe. 12 And when Zacharias
ſaw *him* he was troubled, & feare fell vpon him.
13 But the Angel ſayd vnto him, Feare not, Za-
charias: for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife E-
liſabet ſhall beare thee a ſonne, and thou ſhalt
call his name Iohn. 14 And thou ſhalt haue ioy
and gladneſſe, & many ſhall reioyce at his birth.
15 For he ſhalbe great in the ſight of the Lord,
and ſhall neither drinke wine, nor ſtrong drinke,
and he ſhall be filled with the holy Ghoſt, euen
Mal. frō his mothers wombe. 16 * And many of the
4.5.* children of Iſrael ſhall hee turne to their Lord
Mat. God. 17 *For he ſhall go before him in the ſpi-
11.14. rit and power of Elias, to turne the hearts of the
fathers to the children, & the diſobedient to the
wiſdome of the iuſt men, to make ready a peo-
ple prepared for the Lord. 18 Then Zacharias
ſayd vnto the Angel, Wherby ſhall I know this?
for I am an olde man, and my wife is of a great
age. 19 And the Angel anſwered, and ſayd vnto
him, I am Gabriel that ſtand in the preſence of
God, and am ſent to ſpeake vnto thee, & to ſhew
thee theſe good tidings. 20 And beholde, thou
ſhalt be dumbe, and not be able to ſpeake vntill
the day that theſe things be done, becauſe thou
beleeueſt not my words, which ſhalbe fulfil-
led in their ſeaſon. 21 Now the people waited
for Zacharias, and marueiled that hee taried ſo
long

lyng in the Temple. 22 And when he came out, he could not ſpeake vnto them: then they perceiued that he had ſeene a viſion in the Temple: for he made ſignes vnto thē, & remained dumbe. 23 And it came to paſſe, when the dayes of his office were fulfilled, that hee departed to his owne houſe. 24 And after thoſe dayes, his wife Eliſabet conceiued, and hid her ſelfe fiue moneths, ſaying, 25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me, in the dayes wherein he looked on *me*, to take from me my rebuke among men. 26 And in the ſixt moneth, the Angel Gabriel was ſent from God vnto a citie of Galile, named Nazareth, 27 * To a virgine affianced to a man whoſe name *was* Ioſeph, of the houſe of Dauid, & the virgins name *was* Mary. 28 And the Angel went in vnto her, and ſayd, Haile thou *that art* freely beloued: the Lord *is* with thee: bleſſed *art* thou among women. 29 And when ſhe ſaw *him*, ſhee was troubled at his ſaying, and thoght what maner of ſalutation that ſhould be. 30 Thē the Angel ſayd vnto her, Feare not Mary: for thou haſt found fauour with God. 31 * For lo, thou ſhalt conceiue in thy wombe, and beare a ſonne, * and ſhalt call his Name I E S V S. 32 He ſhalbe great, & ſhalbe called the Sonne of the moſt High, & the Lord God ſhall giue vnto him the throne of his father Dauid. 33 * And he ſhall reigne ouer the houſe of Iacob for euer, & of his kingdome ſhalbe none end. 34 Then ſaid Mary vnto the Angel, How ſhall this be, ſeeing I know

Matt. 1.18.

Iſai. 7.14. Chap. 2.21.

Dan. 14.27. micah 4.7.

know not man? 35 And the Angel answered & sayd vnto her, The holy Ghost shall come vpon thee, & the power of the most High shall ouershadow thee: therfore also ỹ holy thing which shalbe borne of thee, shalbe called the Sonne of God. 36 And beholde, thy cousin Elisabet, she hath also conceiued a sonne in her olde age: and this is her sixt moneth, which was called barren. 37 For with God shall nothing be vnpossible. 38 Then Mary sayd, Beholde the seruant of the Lord, be it vnto me according to thy word. So the Angel departed from her. 39 And Mary arose in those dayes, and went into the hill coun-trey with haste to a city of Iuda, 40 And entred into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabet. 41 And it came to passe, as Elisabet heard ỹ salutation of Mary, the babe sprang in her belly, and Elisabet was filled with the holy ghost. 42 And she cried with a loud voice, and said, Blessed art thou among women, because the fruit of thy wombe is blessed. 43 And whence cõmeth this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come vnto me? 44 For lo, assoone as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine eares, the babe sprang in my belly for ioy. 45 And blessed is she that beleeued: for those things shall be performed, which were tolde her from the Lord. 46 Then Mary said, My soule magnifieth ỹ Lord, 47 And my spirit reioyceth in God my Sauior. 48 For he hath looked on the poore degree of his seruant: for beholde, from henceforth shal all ages

call me blessed. 49 Because he ye is mighty, hath done for me great things, and holy is his Name. 50 And his mercy is from generation to generation on them that feare him. 51 *He hath shewed strength with his arme: he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts. 52 He hath put downe the mighty from their seats, and exalted them of low degree. 53 * He hath filled the hungry with good things, and sent away the rich emptie. 54 * He hath vpholden Israel his seruant to be mindfull of his mercy. 55 * (As he hath spoken to our fathers,) to wit, to Abraham & his seed) for euer. 56 And Mary abode with her about three moneths after, she returned to her owne house. 57 Now Elisabets time was fulfilled, that she should be deliuered, and thee brought foorth a sonne. 58 And her neighbors and cousins heard tell how the Lord had shewed his great mercy vpon her, & they reioyced with her. 59 And it was so, that on the eight day, they came to circumcise the babe, and called him Zacharias after the name of his father. 60 But his mother answered, & said, Not so, but he shall be called Iohn. 61 And they said vnto her, There is none of thy kinred that is named with this name. 62 Then they made signes to his father, how he would haue him called. 63 So he asked for writing tables & wrote, saying, His name is Iohn, & they marueiled all. 64 And his mouth was opened immediatly, and his tongue, and he spake and praised God. 65 Then feare came

Isai. 51.9.
Isai. 29.19.
Psal. 34.10.
Isai. 30.18.
Gen. 17.19. & 21. 17. Psal. 132.11.
Vers. 15.

on

on all them that dwelt neere vnto them, and these words were noised abroad thorowout all the hill *countrey* of Iudea. 66 And all they that heard them, layd *them* vp in their hearts, saying, What maner childe shall this be! and the hand of the Lord was with him. 67 Then his father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying, 68 Blessed *be* the Lord God of Israel, because he hath visited * and redeemed his people, 69 * And hath raised vp the horne of saluation vnto vs, in the house of his seruant Dauid. 70 † As hee spake by the mouth of his holy Prophets, which were since the world began, *saying*, 71 *That he would send vs* deliuerance from our enemies, and from the hands of all that hate vs, 72 That he might shew mercie towards our fathers, and remember his holy couenant. 73 * *And* the othe which he sware to our father Abraham, 74 *Which was*, that hee would grant vnto vs, that wee being deliuered out of the hands of our enemies, should serue him without feare, 75 All the dayes of our life, * in holinesse and righteousnesse before him. 76 And thou babe, shalt be called the Prophet of the most High: for thou shalt goe before the face of the Lord, to prepare his wayes, 77 *And* to giue knowledge of saluatiō vnto his people, by the remission of their sinnes, 78 Through the tender mercy of our God whereby the *day-spring from an high hath visited vs, 79 To giue light to them that sit in darkenesse, and in

hap. 30. *att.* 21. *sal* 32.18 *ere.* 3.6. 30. *ene.* 22.16. *Pet.* 15. *ch.*

the shadow of death, and to guide our feet into the way of peace. 80 And the childe grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the wildernesse, till the day came that hee should shew himselfe vnto Israel.

CHAP. 2. 6 *The birth of Christ.*

AND it came to passe in those dayes, that there came a decree from Augustus Cesar, that all the world should be taxed. 2 (This first taxing was made when Cyrenius was gouernour of Syria) 3 Therefore went all to be taxed, euery one to his owne citie. 4 And Ioseph also went vp from Galile out of a citie called Nazareth, into Iudea vnto the citie * of Dauid, which is called Beth-lehem (because he was of the house and linage of Dauid,) 5 To be taxed with Marie that was giuen him to wife, which was with childe. 6 And so it was, that while they were there, the dayes were accomplished that shee should be deliuered. 7 And she brought foorth her first begotten sonne, and wrapped him in swadling clothes, and layd him in a cratch, because there was no roome for them in the Inne. 8 And there were in the same countrey shepheards, abiding in the field, and keeping watch by night ouer their flocke. 9 And loe, the Angel of the Lord came vpon them, and the glory of the Lord shone about them, and they were sore afraid. 10 Then the Angel sayd vnto them, Be not afraide: for beholde, I bring you glad tidings of great ioy, that

John 7. 42.

that shall be to all the people: 11 *That* vnto you is borne this day in the citie of D. a Sauiour, which is, Christ the Lord. 12 And *this shall be* a signe to you, Yee shall finde the babe swadled, and layd in a cratch. 13 And straightway there was with the Angell a multitude of heauenly souldiers, praysing God, and saying, 14 Glory *be* to God in the high *heauens*, and peace in earth, and towards men good will. 15 And it came to passe when the Angels were gone away from them into heauen, that the shepheards sayd one to another, Let vs goe euen vnto Beth-leem, and see this thing that is come to passe, which the Lord hath shewed vnto vs. 16 So they came with haste, and found both Marie and Ioseph, and the babe layd in the cratch. 17 And when they had seene it, they published abroad the thing, which was tolde them of this childe. 18 And all that heard it, wondred at the things which were tolde thē of the shepheards. 19 But Marie kept all those sayings, & pondred *them* in her heart. 20 And the shepheards returned glorifying and praysing God, for all that they had heard and seene, as it was spoken vnto them. 21 * And when the eight dayes were accomplished, that they should circumcise the childe, his name was then called * IESVS, which was named of the Angel, before he was conceiued in the wombe. 23 * And when the dayes of the purification after the Law of Moses were accomplished, they brought him to Hierusalem,

Gene. 17.12 *Chap.* 2.21. *Leuit.* 12.6.

salem, to present him to the Lord, 23 (As it is written in the Law of the Lord, * Euery man childe that *first* openeth the wombe, shalbe called holy to the Lord) 24 And to giue an oblation, * as it is cõmanded in the Law of the Lord, a paire of turtle doues, or two yoong pigeons. 25 And beholde, there was a man in Hierusalem, whose name was Simeon: this man *was* iust, and feared God, and waited for the consolation of Israel, and the holy Ghost was vpon him. 26 And it was declared to him from God by the holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seene that Anointed of the Lord. 27 And he came by *the motion of* the Spirit into the Temple, and when the parents brought in the babe Iesus, to doe for him after the custome of the Law, 28 Then he tooke him in his armes, and praysed God, and sayd, 29 Lord, now lettest thou thy seruant depart in peace according to thy word. 30 For mine eyes hath seene thy saluation. 31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people, 32 A light to be reuciled to the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel 33 And Ioseph and his mother marueiled at those things, which were spoken touching him 34 And Simeon blessed them, and said vnto Marie his mother, Beholde, this *childe* is appointed * for the fall and rising againe of many in Israel, and for a signe which shalbe spoken against. 35 (Yea, and a sword shall pearce thorow thy soule) that the thoughts of many hearts

Exo. 13.2.

Leui. 12.6.

Esai. 8.14. *rom.* 9.32. *1.pet.* 2.8.

hearts may be opened. 36 And there was one Anna a prophetisse, one Anna the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser, which was of a great age, and she had liued with an husband seuen yeres from her virginitie. 37 And she *was* a widow about foureſcore and foure yeres, and went not out of the Temple, but ſerued *God* with faſting and prayers, night and day. 38 She then comming at the ſame inſtant vpon them, confeſſed likewiſe the Lord, and ſpake of him to all that looked for redemption in Hieruſalem. 39 And when they had performed all things according to the Law of the Lord, they returned into Galile to their owne citie Nazareth. 40 And the child grew, and waxed ſtrong in Spirit, and was filled with wiſdome, and the grace of God was with him. 41 Now his parents went to Hieruſalem euery yere * at the feaſt of the Paſſeouer. 42 And when he was twelue yere olde, and they were come vp to Hieruſalem, after the cuſtome of the feaſt, 43 And had finiſhed the dayes *thereof*, as they returned, the childe Ieſus remained in Hieruſalem, and Ioſeph knew not, nor his mother. 44 But they ſuppoſing that he had bene in the company, went a dayes iourney, and ſought him among *their* kinſfolke, and acquaintance 45 And when they found him not, they turned backe to Hieruſalem, and ſought him. 46 And it came to paſſe three dayes after, that they found him in the Temple, ſitting in the middes of the doctours, both hearing them, and

Deut. 16.1.

asking

asking them questions: 47 And all that heard him, were astonied at his vnderstanding, and answers. 48 So when they sawe him, they were amased, and his mother saide vnto him, Sonne, why hast thou thus dealt with vs? beholde, thy father and I haue sought thee with heauie hearts. 49 Then said he vnto them, How is it that ye sought me? knew ye not that I must goe about my Fathers businesse? 50 But they vnderstood not the worde that hee spake to them. 51 Then he went downe with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subiect to them: and his mother kept all these sayings in her heart. 52 And Iesus increased in wisedome, and stature, and in fauour with God and men.

CHAP 3. 4. *Iohn preacheth.* 21 *Christ baptized.*

NOw in the fifteenth yeere of the reigne of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being Gouernour of Iudea, and Herod being Tetrarch of Galile, & his brother Philip Tetrarch of Iturea, and of the countrey of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the Tetrarch of Abilene, 2 (*When Annas and Caiaphas were the hie Priests) the word of God came vnto Iohn the sonne of Zacharias in the wilderneſſe. 3 And he came into all the coastes about Iordan, preaching the baptisme of repentance for the remission of sinnes. 4 As it is written in ỹ booke of the sayings of Esaias the Prophet, which sayeth, *The voyce of him that cryeth in the wilderneſſe, Prepare ye the way of the Lorde: make his paths straight.

*Acts. 4. 6.
Mat. 3. 2.
Mar. 1. 4.
Isai. 40. 3.
Iohn 1. 23.

5 Euery valley ſhalbe filled,& euery mountaine and hil ſhalbe brought lowe, & crooked things ſhalbe made ſtraight,and the rough wayes *ſhal be made* ſmoothe. 6 And all fleſh ſhall ſee the ſaluation of God. 7 Then ſaid he to the people that were come out to be baptized of him, *Mat.* *O generations of vipers,who hath forewarned 3.7. you to flee from the wrath to come? 8 Bring forth therefore fruites worthie amendment of life,and begin not to ſay with your ſelues, We haue Abraham to *our* father: for I ſay vnto you, that God is able of theſe ſtones to raiſe vp children vnto Abraham. 9 Now is the axe laid vnto the roote of the trees: therefore euery tree which bringeth not forth good fruite, ſhall be hewen downe, and caſt into the fire. 10 Then the people aſked him,ſaying, What ſhal we do then? 11 And he anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, *Iames* *He that hath two coates, let him part with him 2.15. that hath none: and he that hath meate, let him *1.Iohn* doe likewiſe. 12 Then came there Publicanes 3.17. alſo to be baptized, and ſaid vnto him, Maſter, What ſhall we doe? 13 And he ſaid vnto them, Require no more then that which is appointed vnto you. 14 The ſouldiers likewiſe demanded of him,ſaying, And what ſhall we doe? And he ſaid vnto them, Doe violence to no man,neither accuſe any falſely,and be content with your wages. 15 As the people waited,& all men muſed in *Mat.* their hearts of Iohn, if he were not that Chriſt, 3.11. 16 Iohn anſwered and ſaide to them all, *I*

deede
ger t
not w
with
fanne
his fl
garn
fire
then
ched
the T
his b
whic
abou
it can
and t
the h
came
him,
ing,
well
abou
fed th
Eli,
the lo
of Io
of An
the f
ſomm
of Io
Ioan

deede I baptize you with water, but one ſtron-
ger then I, commeth, whoſe ſhoes latchet I am
not worthie to vnlooſe: he will baptize you
with the holy Ghoſt, and with fire. 17 Whoſe
fanne is in his hand, and hee will make cleane
his floore, and will gather the wheate into his
garner, but the chaffe will hee burne vp with
fire that neuer ſhall be quenched. 18 Thus
then exhorting with many other things he preached vnto the people. 19 * But when Herode the Tetrarch was rebuked of him, for Herodias his brother Philips wife, and for all the euils which Herod had done, 20 He added yet this aboue al, ‖ he ſhut vp Iohn in priſon. 21 *Now it came to paſſe, as all the people were baptized, and that Ieſus was baptized, and did pray, that the heauen was opened: 22 And the holy Ghoſt came downe in a bodily ſhape like a doue vpon him, and there was a voyce from heauen, ſaying, Thou art my beloued Sonne: in thee I am well pleaſed. 23 And Ieſus himſelfe began to be about thirtie yeeres of age, being as men ſuppoſed the ſonne of Ioſeph, *which was the ſonne* of Eli, 24 *The ſonne* of Matthat, *the ſonne* of Leui, *the ſonne* of Melchi, *the ſonne* of Ianna, *the ſonne* of Ioſeph, 25 *The ſonne* of Mattathias, *the ſonne* of Amos, *the ſonne* of Naum, *the ſonne* of Eſli, *the ſonne* of Nagge, 26 *The ſonne* of Maath, *the ſonne* of Mattathias, *the ſonne* of Semei, *the ſonne* of Ioſeph, *the ſonne* of Iuda, 27 *The ſonne* of Ioanna, *the ſonne* of Rheſa, *the ſonne* of Zoro-

Mat. 14.3.

Mat. 3.13. *mark.* 1.9. *iohn* 1.32.

babel, *the sonne* of Salathiel, *the sonne* of Neri, 28 *The sonne* of Melchi, *the sonne* of Addi, *the sonne* of Cosam, *the sonne* of Elmodam, *the sonne* of Er, 29 *The sonne* of Iose, *the sonne* of Eliezer, *the sonne* of Iorim, *the sonne* of Matthat, *the sonne* of Leui, 30 *The sonne* of Simeon, *the sonne* of Iuda, *the sonne* of Ioseph, *the sonne* of Ionan, *the sonne* of Eliacim, 31 *The sonne* of Melea, *the sonne* of Mainan, *the sonne* of Mattatha, *the sonne* of Nathan, *the sonne* of Dauid, 32 *The sonne* of Ieſſe, *the sonne* of Obed, *the sonne* of Booz, *the sonne* of Salmon, *the sonne* of Naaſſon, 33 *The sonne* of Aminadab, *the sonne* of Aram, *the sonne* of Efrom, *the sonne* of Phares, *the sonne* of Iuda, 34 *The sonne* of Iacob, *the sonne* of Isaac, *the sonne* of Abraham, *the sonne* of Thara, *the sonne* of Nachor, 35 *The sonne* of Saruch, *the sonne* of Ragau, *the sonne* of Phalec, *the sonne* of Eber, *the sonne* of Sala, 36 *The sonne* of Cainan, *the sonne* of Arphaxad, *the sonne* of Sem, *the sonne* of Noe, *the sonne* of Lamech, 37 *The sonne* of Mathuſala, *the sonne* of Enoch, *the sonne* of Iared, *the sonne* of Maleleel, *the sonne* of Cainan, 38 *The sonne* of Enos, *the sonne* of Seth, *the sonne* of Adam, *the sonne* of God.

CHAP. 4. 1. *Christ is baptized.* 41 *The deuils acknowledge him.*

Mat. 4. 1. *mar.* 1. 12. AND Ieſus full of the holy Ghoſt returned from Iordan, and was led by that Spirit into the wildernesse, 2 * And was *there* fourtie dayes tempted of the deuil: & in those dayes he did

did eate nothing: but when they were ended, he afterward was hungrie. 3 Then the deuill said vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, command this stone that it be made bread. 4 But Iesus answered him, saying, It is written, *That man shall not liue by bread onely, but by euery word of God. 5 Then the deuill tooke him vp into an high mountaine, and shewed him all the kingdomes of the world in the twinckling of an eye. 6 And the deuil said vnto him, All this power will I giue thee, and the glory of those *kingdomes*: for that is deliuered to me: and to whomsoeuer I wil, I giue it. 7 If thou therefore wilt worship me, they shall be all thine. 8 But Iesus answered him, and saide, Hence from me, Satan: for it is written, *Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him alone thou shalt serue. 9 Then he brought him to Hierusalem, and set him on a pinacle of the Temple, and said vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe from hence. 10 For it is written, *That he will giue his Angels charge ouer thee to keepe thee: 11 And with *their* hands they shall lift thee vp, least at any time thou shouldest dash thy foote against a stone. 12 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, It is saide, *Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. 13 And when the deuil had ended all the tentation, he departed from him for a litle season. 14 And Iesus returned by the power of the Spirit into Galile: and there went a fame of him throughout all the

Deut. 8.3. matt. 4.4.

Deut. 6.13. and 10.20.

Psal. 91.12

Deut. 6.16.

region round about. 15 For he taught in their
Synagogues, and was honoured of all men.
Matt. 16 *And he came to Nazareth where he had bin
13.54. brought vp, and (as his custome was) went into
mark. the Synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stoode
6.1. vp to reade. 17 And there was deliuered vnto
Iohn him, the booke of the Prophet Esaias: & when
3.43. he had opened the booke, he found the place
Esai. where it was written, 18 *The Spirit of ỹ Lord
61.1. is vpon me, because he hath anointed me, that I
should preach the Gospel to the poore: he hath
sent me, that I should heale the broken hearted,
that I should preach deliuerance to the captiues,
and recouering of sight to the blinde, that I
should set at liberty them that are bruised.
19 And that I should preach the acceptable
yere of the Lord. 20 And he closed the booke,
and gaue it againe to ỹ minister, & sate downe:
and the eyes of all that were in the Synagoge,
were fastened on him. 21 Then he began to say
vnto them, This day is this Scripture fulfilled in
your eares. 22 And all bare him witnesse, and
wondred at the gratious wordes, which pro-
ceeded out of his mouth, and said, Is not this Ie-
sephs sonne? 23 Then he said vnto them, Ye will
surely say vnto me this prouerbe, Physicion,
heale thy selfe: whatsoeuer we haue heard done
in Capernaum, do it here likewise in thine own
countrey. 24 And he said, Verely I say vnto you,
Iohn *No Prophet is accepted in his owne country.
4.44. 25 But I tell you of a trueth, many widowes

were in Israel in ȳ dayes of *Elias, when heauen was shut three yeeres and sixe moneths, when great famine was throughout all ȳ land: 26 But vnto none of them was Elias sent, saue into Sarepta, a citie of Sidon, vnto a certaine widowe. 27 Also many lepers were in Israel, in the time of *Eliseus the Prophet: yet none of them was made cleane, sauing Naaman ȳ Syrian. 28 Then all *that were* in the Synagogue, when they heard it, were filled with wrath, 29 And rose vp, & thrust him out of the citie, and led him vnto the edge of the hill, whereon their citie was built, to cast him downe headlong. 30 But he passed through the middes of them, and went his way, 31 *And came downe into Capernaum a citie of Galile, and there taught them on the Sabbath dayes. 32 *And they were astonied at his doctrine: for his worde was with authoritie. 33 * And in the Synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an vncleane deuill, which cried with a loud voyce, 34 Saying, Oh, what haue we to doe with thee, thou Iesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy vs? I know who thou art, *euen* the holy one of God. 35 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. Then the deuil throwing him in the middes *of them*, came out of him, & hurt him nothing at all. 36 So feare came on them all, and they spake among themselues, saying, What thing is this? for with authoritie & power he commaundeth the foule spirites, and they

1 *Kin.* 17.9. *Iames* 5.17. 2 *Kin.* 5.14. *Mat.* 4.13. *Mat.* 7.29. *Mar.* 1.23.

conne out. 37 And ỹ fame of him ſpred abroad throughout al the places of the countrey round about. 38 *And he roſe vp, and came out of the Synagogue, and entred into Simons houſe. And Simons wiues mother was taken with a great feuer, and they required him for her. 39 Then he ſtoode ouer her, and rebuked the feuer, and it left her, and immediatly ſhe aroſe, and miniſtred vnto them. 40 Now when the ſunne ſetting, all they that had ſicke folkes of diuers diſeaſes, brought them vnto him, and he laid his hands on euery one of them, and healed them. 41 *And deuils alſo came out of many, crying and ſaying, Thou art that Chriſt that Sonne of God: but he rebuked them, and ſuffered them not to ſay that they knewe him to be that Chriſt. 42 And when it was day, he departed, and went foorth into a deſert place, and the people ſought him, and came to him, & kept him that he ſhould not depart from them. 43 But he ſaide vnto them, Surely I muſt alſo preach the kingdome of God to other cities: for therefore am I ſent. 44 And hee preached in the Synagogue of Galile.

Matt. 8.14. mark. 1.30. Mark. 1.35.

CHAP. 5. *6. The draught of fiſh.*

Matt. 4.18. mark. 1.16.

THen * it came to paſſe as the people preaſſed vpon him to heare the word of God, that he ſtood by the lake of Genneſaret. 2 And ſawe two ſhips ſtand by the lake ſide, but the fiſhermen were gone out of them, and were waſhing their nets. 3 And he entred into one of ỹ ſhips, which

which was Simons, and required him that hee would thrust off a litle from the land: & he sate downe, and taught the people out of the ship. 4 Now when he had left speaking he said vnto Simon, Launch out into the deepe, & let downe your nets to make a draught. 5 Then Simon answered, and saide vnto him, Master, we haue trauailed sore all night, and haue taken nothing: neuertheleſſe at thy worde I will let downe the net. 6 And when they had so done they inclosed a great multitude of fishes, so that their net brake. 7 And they beckened to their partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and helpe them, who came then, and filled both the ships, that they did sinke. 8 Now whē Simon Peter sawe it, he fell downe at Iesus knees, saying, Lord, goe from me: for I am a sinfull man. 9 For he was vtterly astonied, and all that were with him, for the draught of fishes which they tooke. 10 And so was also Iames and Iohn the sonnes of Zebedeus, which were companions with Simon. Then Iesus saide vnto Simon, Feare not: From henceforth thou shalt catch men. 11 And when they had brought the ships to land, they forsooke al & followed him.

12 *Nowe it came to passe, as he was in a certaine citie, behold *there was* a man full of lepro- *Matt.* 8.2. *mark.* 1.40. sie, and when he sawe Iesus, he fell on his face & besought him, saying, Lorde, if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane. 13 So he stretched forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will, be thou cleane.

cleane. And immediatly the leprosie departed from him. 14 And he commanded him that he should tel it no man: but go, *saith he*, and shew thy selfe to the Priest, & offer for thy cleansing, *Leuit. 14.4.* *as Moses hath cõmanded for a witnes vnto the. 15 But so much more went there a fame abroade of him, and great multitudes came together to heare, & to be healed of him of their infirmities. 16 But he kept himselfe apart in the wildernes and prayed. 17 And it came to passe on a certaine day, as he was teaching, that the Pharises and doctors of ℣ Law sate by, which were come out of euery towne of Galile, & Iudea, and Hierusalem & the power of the Lord was *in him* to *Matt. 9.2. mark. 2.3.* heale them. 18 * Then beholde, men brought a man lying in a bed, which was taken with a palsie, & they sought meanes to bring him in, & to lay him before him. 19 And when they could not finde by what way they might bring him in, because of the preasse, they went vp on ℣ house, and let him downe through the tyling, bed and all, in the middes before Iesus. 20 And when he saw their faith, he said vnto him, Man, thy sinnes are forgiuen thee. 21 Then the Scribes and the Pharises beganne to reason, saying, Who is this that speaketh blasphemies? who can forgiue sinnes but God onely? 22 But when Iesus perceiued their reasoning, hee answered and saide vnto them, What reason yee in your hearts? 23 Whether is easier to say, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee, or to say, Rise, & walke? 24 But that

ye

ye may know that ꝯ Sonne of man hath authoritie to forgiue sinnes on earth, (he said vnto the sicke of the palsie) I say to thee, Arise, take vp thy bed, and goe to thine house. 25 And immediatly he rose vp before them, and tooke vp *his bed* whereon he lay, and departed to his owne house, praysing God. 26 And they were all amased, and prayséd God, and were filled with feare, saying, Doubtlesse, we haue seene strange things to day. 27 *And after that, he went forth and sawe a Publicane named Leui, sitting at the receite of custome, and saide vnto him, Followe me. 28 And he left al, rose vp, & followed him. 29 Thē Leui made him a great feast in his owne house, where there was a great cōpany of Publicanes, & of other that sate at table with them. 30 But they that were Scribes and Pharises among them, murmured against his disciples, saying, Why eate ye and drinke ye with Publicanes and sinners? 31 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto them, They that are whole, neede not the Physicion but they that are sicke. 32 *I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance. 33 *Then they said vnto him Why doe the disciples of Iohn fast often, and pray, & the *disciples* of the Pharises also, but thine eate and drinke? 34 And he said vnto them, Can ye make the children of the wedding chamber to fast, as long as ꝯ bridegrome is with them? 35 But the daies will come, euen when the bridegrome shall be taken away from them: then shall they fast

Mat. 9.9. mark. 2.14.

1.Tim. 1.15.

Matt. 9.14. mark. 2.18.

fast in those dayes. 36 Againe he spake also vn-
to them a parable, No man putteth a piece of a
newe garment into an old vesture: for then the
newe renteth it, and the piece *taken* out of the
new, agreeth not with the old. 37 Also no man
powreth newe wine into olde vessels: for then
the new wine wil breake the vessels, and it will
runne out, and the vessels wil perish. 38 But
new wine must be powred into newe vessels, so
both are preserued 39 Also no man that drin-
keth olde wine, straightway desireth newe: for
he saith, The olde is more profitable.

CHAP. 6. 1. *True keeping of the Sabbath.*

Mat. 12.1. *mar.* 2.23. AND * it came to passe on a second solemne Sabbath, that hee went through the corne fields, & his disciples plucked the eares of corne, and did eat, & rub them in *their* hands. 2 And certaine of the Pharises said vnto them, Why do ye that which is not lawfull to doe on the Sabbath dayes? 3 Then Iesus answered them, and said, * Haue ye not read this, that Dauid did whē he himselfe was an hungred, & they which were with him, 4 How he went into the house of God, and tooke, and ate the shewe bread, and gaue also to them which were with him, which was not lawfull to eate, but for the * Priestes only? 5 And he said vnto them, The Sonne of man is Lord also of the Sabbath day. 6 * It came to passe also on another Sabbath, that he entred into the Synagogue, and taught, and there was a man, whose right hande was dried vp. 7 And the

1.Sā. 21.6. *Exod.* 29.33. *Mat.* 12.9. *mark.* 3.1.

the Scribes and Phariſes watched him, whether hee would∂ heale on the Sabbath *day*, that they might finde an accuſation *againſt* him. 8 But he knew their thoughts, & ſaid to the man which had the withered hand, Ariſe, and ſtand vp in the middes. And he aroſe, and ſtood vp. 9 Then ſaide Ieſus vnto them, I wil aſke you a queſtion, Whether is it lawfull on the Sabbath dayes to doe good, or to doe euill? to ſaue life, or to deſtroy it? 10 And he beheld them all in compaſſe, and ſaid vnto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he did ſo, and his hand was reſtored againe as whole as the other. 11 Then they were filled full of madneſſe, and communed one with another, what they might doe to Ieſus. 12 And it came to paſſe in thoſe dayes, that he went into a mountaine to pray, & ſpent the night in prayer to God. 13 And when it was day, *he called* his diſciples, and of them he choſe twelue, which alſo he called Apoſtles. 14 (Simō whom he named alſo Peter, and Andrew his brother, Iames and Iohn, Philip and Bartlemew: 15 Matthew, and Thomas: Iames *the ſonne* of Alpheus, and Simon called Zelous, 16 Iudas Iames *brother*, and Iudas Iſcariot, which alſo was the traitor.) 17 Then he came downe with them, & ſtood in a plaine place, with the cōpany of his diſciples, and a great multitude of people out of al Iudea, and Hieruſalem, & from the ſea coaſt of Tyrus, and Sidon, which came to heare him, and to bee healed of their diſeaſes. 18 And they that were vexed

Chap. 9. 1. matt. 10. 1. mar. 3. 13. and 6. 7.

vexed with foule ſpirits, and they were healed.
19 And the whole multitude ſought to touche
him: for there went vertue out of him, & healed
Matt. them all. 20 *And he lifted vp his eyes vpō his
5.3. diſciples, & ſaid, Bleſſed *be* ye poore: for yours
Iſa. is the kingdom of God. 21 *Bleſſed *are* ye that
65.13. hunger now: for ye ſhalbe ſatisfied. Bleſſed are
Iſa. ye that *weepe now: for ye ſhal laugh. 22 *Bleſ-
61.3. ſed are yee when men hate you: and when they
Mat. ſeparate you, & reuile *you*, & put out your name
5.11. as euil, for the Sonne of mans ſake. 23 Reioyce
ye in that day, and be glad: for behold, your re-
ward *is* great in heauen: for after this manner
Amos their fathers did to the Prophets. 24 *But woe
6.1. *be* to you *that are* rich: for ye haue receiued your
Iſa. conſolation. 25 *Wo *be* to you that are full: for
65.13. ye ſhall hunger. Wo *be* to you that now laugh:
for ye ſhal waile & weepe. 26 Wo *be* to you
when al men ſpeake wel of you: for ſo did their
Matt. fathers to the falſe prophets. 27 *But I ſay vn-
5.44. to you which heare, Loue your enemies: do wel
to them which hate you. 28 Bleſſe them ỹ curſe
Matt. you, & pray for them which hurt you. 29 *And
5.39. vnto him that ſmiteth thee on the *one* cheeke,
1.Cor. offer alſo the other: *and him that taketh away
6.7. thy cloake, forbid not *to take thy* coate alſo.
30 Giue to euery man that aſketh of thee: and of
Matt. him that taketh away the *things that be* thine,
7.12. aſke them not againe. 31 *And as ye would that
Matt. men ſhould do to you, ſo do ye to them likewiſe.
5.46. 32 *For if ye loue them which loue you, what
thanke

thanke shall yee haue? for euen the sinners loue those that loue them. 33 And if ye do good for them which do good for you, what thanke shall ye haue? for euen ỹ sinners do the same. 34 *And if ye lend *to them* of whom ye hope to receiue, what thanke shall ye haue? for euen the sinners lend to sinners, to receiue the like. 35 Wherfore loue ye your enemies, & do good, and lend, looking for nothing againe, & your reward shalbe great, and ye shall bee the children of the *most High: for he is kind vnto the vnkind, and to the euil. 36 Be ye therefore mercifull, as your Father also is merciful. 37 *Iudge not, and ye shal not be iudged: condemne not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgiue, and ye shalbe forgiuen. 38 Giue, and it shalbe giuen vnto you: *a good measure, prest downe, shaken together & running ouer shall men giue into your bosome: for with what measure yee mete, with the same shall men mete to you againe. 39 And he spake a parable vnto them, *Can the blind lead the blind? shal they not both fal into the ditch? 40 *The disciple is not aboue his master: but whosoeuer will be a perfect disciple, shall bee as his master. 41 *And why seest thou a mote in thy brothers eye, and cõsiderest not the beame that is in thine owne eye? 42 Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou seest not the beame that is in thine owne eye? Hypocrite, cast out the beame out of thine owne eye first, and then shalt

Mat. 5. 42. deut. 15. 8.
Mat. 5. 45.
Matt. 7. 1.
Mat. 7. 2. mar. 4 24.
Mat. 15. 14.
Mat. 10. 24.
Mat. 7. 3.

shalt thou see perfectly to pul out the mote that
Mat. is in thy brothers eye. 43 *For it is not a good
7. 17. tree that bringeth foorth euil fruite: neither an
Mat. euil tree that bringeth forth good fruit. 44 *For
12.33. euery tree is knowen by his owne fruite: *for
Matt. neither of thorns gather men figs, nor of bushes
7.16. gather they grapes. 45 A good man out of the
good treasure of his heart bringeth forth good,
and an euill man out of the euill treasure of his
heart bringeth forth euil: for of the abundance
Matt. of the heart his mouth speaketh. 46 *But why
7.21. call ye mee Lord, Lorde, and doe not the things
rom. that I speake? 47 Whosoeuer commeth to me,
2.13. and heareth my words, and doeth the same, I will
Iames shew you to whom he is like: 48 He is like a
1.22. man which built an house, & digged deepe, and
layd the foundation on a rocke: and when the
waters arose, the flood beat vpon that house, and
could not shake it: for it was grounded vpon a
rocke. 49 But he that heareth and doeth not, is
like a man that built an house vpon the earth
without foundation, against which the flood did
beate, and it fell by and by: and the fall of that
house was great.

CHAP. 7. *9. The Centurions faith.*

Matt. WHen *hee had ended all his sayings in the
8.5. audience of the people, he entred into Ca-
pernaum. 2 And a certaine Centurions seruant
was sicke & ready to die, which was deare vnto
him. 3 And when he heard of Iesus, he sent vnto
him the Elders of ỹ Iewes, beseeching him that
he

he would come, and heale his ſeruant. 4 So they came to Ieſus, and beſought him inſtantly, ſaying that he was worthy that he ſhould doe this for him: 5 For he loueth, *and they*, our nation, and he hath built vs a Synagogue. 6 Then Ieſus wēt with them: but when he was now not farre from the houſe, the Centuriō ſent friends to him, ſaying vnto him, Lord, trouble not thy ſelfe: for I am not worthy thou ſhouldeſt enter vnder my roofe: 7 Wherfore I thought not my ſelf worthy to come vnto thee: but ſay the word, & my ſeruant ſhalbe whole: 8 For I likewiſe am a mā ſet vnder authority, & haue vnder me ſouldiers: and I ſay vnto one, Go, and he goeth, and to another, Come, and he commeth, & to my ſeruant, Doe this, and he doeth it. 9 When Ieſus heard theſe things, he marueiled at him, & turned him, and ſaid to the people that followed him, I ſay vnto you, I haue not foūd ſo great faith, no not in Iſrael. 10 And when they that were ſent, turned backe to the houſe, they found the ſeruaant that was ſicke, whole. 11 And it came to paſſe the day after, that he wēt into a city called Nain, and many of his diſciples went with him, and a great multitude. 12 Now when he came neere to the gate of the citie, behold, there was a dead man caried out, *who was* the onely begotten ſonne of his mother, which was a widowe, and much people of the city was with her. 13 And when the Lord ſawe her, he had compaſſion on her, and ſaid vnto her, Weepe not. 14 And he

went and touched the coffin (and they that
him, ſtood ſtil) and he ſaid, Yong man, I ſay
thee, Ariſe. 15 And he that was dead, ſate vp,
began to ſpeake, & he deliuered him to his
ther. 16 Then there came a feare on them all:
they glorified God, ſaying, A great Prophet is
ſen among vs, and God hath viſited his people.
17 And this rumour of him went forth throu
out al Iudea, & throughout all the region rou
about. 18 And ỹ diſciples of Iohn ſhewed him
tl theſe things. 19 So Iohn called vnto him two
certaine men of his diſciples, & ſent them to I
ſus, ſaying, Art thou he that ſhould come, or
wee waite for another? 20 And when the m
were come vnto him, they ſaide, Iohn Bapti
hath ſent vs vnto thee, ſaying, Art thou hee th
ſhould come, or ſhall wee waite for another
21 And at that time he cured many of their ſi
neſſes, & plagues, & of euil ſpirits, & vnto many
blind men he gaue ſight freely. 22 And Ieſus a
ſwered, & ſaid vnto them, Go your waies & ſhe
Iohn, what things ye haue ſeene & heard: th
the blind ſee, the halt go, the lepers are cleanſ
the deafe heare, the dead are raiſed, & the poo
receiue the Goſpel. 23 And bleſſed is he, ỹ ſha
not be offended in me. 24 And when the meſſe
gers of Iohn were departed, he began to ſpeak
vnto the people of Iohn, What went ye out
to the wildernes to ſee? A reede ſhaken with the
winde? 25 But what went ye out to ſee? A man
clothed in ſoft rayment? behold, they which are

gorgeouſly

gorgeously apparelled, and liue delicatly, are in Kings courts. 26 But what went ye forth to see? A Prophet? yea, I say vnto you, and greater then a Prophet. 27 This is he of whom it is written, * Beholde, I sende my messenger before thy face, which shal prepare thy way before thee. 28 For I say vnto you, there is no greater Prophet then Iohn, among them that are begotten of women: neuertheles, he that is the least in the kingdom of God, is greater then he. 29 Then al the people that heard, & the Publicanes iustified God, being baptized with the baptisme of Iohn. 30 But the Pharises and the expounders of the Lawe despised the counsel of God against themselues, and *were* not baptized of him. 31 * And the Lord said, whereunto shall I liken the men of this generation? and what *thing* are they like vnto? 32 They are like vnto litle children sitting in the market place, & crying one to another, and saying, We haue piped vnto you, and ye haue not danced: we haue mourned to you, and ye haue not wept. 33 For Iohn Baptist came, neither eating bread, nor drinking wine: and ye say, Hee hath the deuill. 34 The Sonne of man is come, and eateth & drinketh: and ye say, Behold a man *which is* a glutton, & a drinker of wine, a friend of Publicans & sinners: 35 But wisdome is iustified of all her children. 36 And one of the Pharises desired him that he would eate with him: and he went into the Pharises house & sate down at table, 37 And behold, a woman in the city which

Matth. 3. 1.

Matth. 11. 16.

was a sinner, when she knew that Iesus sate at ta-
ble in the Pharises house, she brought a boxe of
Mar. oyntment. 38 *And she stood at his feet behind
15.42. him weeping, & began to wash his feet with teares,
Iohn and did wipe them with the haires of her head,
20.11. and kissed his feete, & annoynted them with the
oyntment. 39 Now whē the Pharise which bade
him, saw it, he spake within himselfe, saying, If
this man were a Prophet, he would surely haue
knowen who, and what manner of woman this is
which toucheth him: for she is a sinner. 40 And
Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Simon, I haue
somewhat to say vnto thee. And he said, Master,
say on. 41 There was a certaine lender which had
two detters: the one ought fiue hundred pence,
and the other fiftie: 42 When they had nothing
to pay, hee forgaue them both: Which of them
therfore tel *me*, wil loue him most? 43 Simō an-
swered, and said, I suppose that he, to whom he
forgaue most. And he sayd vnto him, Thou hast
truely iudged. 44 Then he turned to the woman,
and sayd vnto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I
entred into thine house, and thou gauest mee no
water to my feete: but she hath washed my feet
with teares, and wiped them with the haires of
her head. 45 Thou gauest me no kisse: but she,
since the time I came in, hath not ceassed to kisse
my feete. 46 Mine head with oyle thou didst not
anoynt: but she hath anoynted my feete with
oyntment. 47 Wherfore I say vnto thee, many
sinnes are forgiuen her: for she loued much. To

whom

whom a litle is forgiuen, hee doeth loue a litle.
48 And he ſaid vnto her, Thy ſinnes are forgiuen thee. 49 And they that ſate at table with him, began to ſay within themſelues, Who is this that euen forgiueth ſinnes? 50 And hee ſaide to the woman, Thy faith hath ſaued thee: goe in peace.

CHAP. 8. 4. *The parable of the ſower.* 16 *The candl.*

AND it came to paſſe afterward, that he himſelfe went through euery city and towne, preaching and publiſhing the kingdom of God, and the twelue *were* with him, 2 And certaine women which were healed of euill ſpirits and infirmities, as * Mary which was called Magdalene, out of whom went ſeuen deuils, 3 And Ioanna the wife of Chuza Herods ſteward, & Suſanna, & many other which miniſtred vnto him of their ſubſtance. 4 * Now when much people were gathered together, and were come vnto him out of al cities, he ſpake by a parable 5 A ſower went out to ſow his ſeed, & as he ſowed, ſome fel by the wayes ſide, and it was troden vnder feet, & the foules of heauen deuoured it vp. 6 And ſome fell on the ſtones, and when it was ſprong vp, it withered away, becauſe it lacked moiſture. 7 And ſome fel among thornes, & the thornes ſprang vp w̄ it, and choked it. 8 And ſome fel on good ground, & ſprang vp and bare fruite, an hundreth folde. And as hee ſaide theſe things, he cried, He y̆ hath eares to heare, let him heare. 9 Then his diſciples aſked him, demanding

Mar. 16.9.

Mat. 13.3. *mar.* 4.1.

what parable that was. 10 And he said, Vnto you it is giuen to know the secrets of the kingdome
Mat. of God, but to other in parables, that whē they
6.9. see, they should not see, and when they heare,
Mat. they should not vnderstand. 11 * The parable
13.18. is this, The seede is the word of God. 12 And
marke they that are beside the way, are they that heare:
4.15. afterward commeth the deuill, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, least they should beleeue, and be saued. 13 But they that are on the stones, *are they* which when they haue heard, receiue the word with ioy: but they haue no roots: which for a while beleeue, but in ỹ time of tentation goe away. 14 And that which fell among thornes, are they which haue heard, and after their departure are choked with cares and with riches, & voluptuous liuing, & bring forth no fruit. 15 But that *which fell* in good ground, are they which with an honest and good heart
Chap. heare the word, and keepe it, and bring foorth
21.33. fruit with patience. 16 * No man when he hath
marke lighted a candle, couereth it vnder a vessell, nei-
4.21. ther putteth it vnder the bed, but setteth it on a
Chap. candlesticke, that they that enter in, may see the
11.2. light. 17 * For nothing is secret, that shall not
Chap. be euident: neither any thing hid, that shall not
19.26. be knowen & come to light. 18 Take heed there-
Matt. fore how ye heare: *for whosoeuer hath, to him
12.4. shalbe giuen: and whosoeuer hath not, frō him
marke shalbe taken euen that which it seemeth that he
3.32. hath. 19 * Then came to him his mother & his brethren,

brethren,& could not come nere to him for the preasse. 20 And it was tolde him *by certeine*, which sayd, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, and would see thee. 21 But he answered and sayd vnto them, My mother, and my brethren are these which heare the word of God,& do it. 22 *And it came to passe on a certeine day, that he went into a ship with his disciples, & he said vnto them, Let vs go ouer to the other side of the lake. And they lanched forth. 23 And as they sailed, he fel asleepe, & there came down a storme of wind on the lake, & they were filled with water,& were in ieopardy. 24 Then they went to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, Master, we perish. And hee arose, and rebuked the winde,& the waues of water: and they ceassed, and it was calme. 25 Then hee sayd vnto them, Where is your faith? and they feared, and wondred among themselues, saying, Who is this that commandeth both the windes & water, and they obey him! 26 *So they sailed vnto the region of the Gadarenes, which is ouer against Galile. 27 And as he went out to land, there met him a certaine man out of the citie, which had deuils long time, and he ware no garment, neither abode in house, but in the graues. 28 And when he saw Iesus, he cried out and fell downe before him, and with a loud voice sayd, What haue I to do with thee, Iesus the Sonne of God the most High? I beseech thee torment me not: 29 For he commanded the foule spirit to come out of

Mat. 8.23. *mark.* 4.36.

Mat. 8.28. *marke* 5.1.

the man: (for oft times he had caught him: therefore he was bound with chaines, and kept in fetters, but he brake the bands, and was caried of the deuill into wildernesses.) 30 Then Iesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? and he said, Legion, because many deuils were entred into him. 31 And they besought him, that he would not command them to goe out into the deepe. 32 And there was there by an heard of many swine, feeding on a hill; and the *deuil* besought him, that he would suffer them to enter into the. So he suffered them. 33 Then went the deuils out of the man, & entred into the swine: and the heard was carried with violence from a steepe down place into ỹ lake, & was choked. 34 Whē the heard-men saw what was done, they fled; and when they were departed, they tolde it in the city & in the countrey. 35 Then they came out to see what was done, and came to Iesus, and found the man out of whom the deuils were departed, sitting at the feet of Iesus clothed, and in his right minde: and they were afraid 36 They also which saw it, tolde them by what meanes he that was possessed with the deuil, was healed. 37 Then the whole multitude of the countrey about ỹ Gadarenes, besought him, that he would depart from them: for they were taken with a great feare: and he went into the ship, & returned. 38 Then the man, out of whom the deuils were departed, besought him that he might be with him: but Iesus sent him away, saying,

39 Returne

39 Returne into thine owne houſe, and ſhew what great things God hath done to thee. So he went his way, and preached throughout all the city, what great things Ieſus had done vnto him. 40 And it came to paſſe, when Ieſus was come againe, that the people receiued him: for they all waited for him. 41 * And beholde, there came a man named Iairus, & he was the ruler of the Synagogue, who fell downe at Ieſus feet, & beſought him that he would come into his houſe: 42 For he had but a daughter onely, about twelue yeres of age, & ſhe lay a dying, (& as he went, the people thronged him. 43 And a woman hauing an iſſue of blood, twelue yeeres long, which had ſpent all her ſubſtance vpō Phyſicians, & could not be healed of any: 44 Whē ſhe came behinde *him*, ſhe touched the hem of his garment, and immediatly her iſſue of blood ſtanched. 45 Then Ieſus ſayd, Who is it that hath touched me? When euery man denied, Peter ſayd & they that were with him, Maſter, the multitude thruſt thee, and tread on thee, & ſayeſt thou who hath touched me? 46 And Ieſus ſaid, Some one hath touched me: for I perceiue that vertue is gone out of me. 47 When the woman ſaw that the was not hid, ſhee came trembling, and fell downe before him, and tolde him before all ỹ people, for what cauſe ſhe had touched him, and how ſhe was healed immediatly. 48 And he ſaid vnto her, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath ſaued thee: go in peace.)

Mat. 9.18. Marke 5.22.

49 While

49 While he yet ſpake, there came one from the ruler of the Synagogues houſe, which ſaid to him, Thy daughter is dead: diſeaſe not the Maſter. 50 When Ieſus heard it, he anſwered him, ſaying, Feare not: beleeue only, & ſhe ſhalbe ſaued. 51 And when he went into the houſe, he ſuffered no man to go in with him, ſaue Peter, & Iames, and Iohn, and the father & mother of the maid. 52 And all wept, and ſorowed for her: but he ſaid, Weepe not: for ſhe is not dead, but ſleepeth. 53 And they laught him to ſcorne, knowing that ſhe was dead. 54 So he thruſt them all out, and tooke her by the hand, & cried, ſaying, Mayd, ariſe 55 And her ſpirit came againe and ſhe roſe ſtraightway: and he cõmanded to giue her meat. 56 Then her parents were aſtonied: but he commanded them that they ſhould tell no man what was done.

CHA. 9. 57 *Of three that would follow Chriſt.*

Mat. 10.1. THen called he his twelue diſciples together,
Mat. 10.7 and gaue them power & authoritie ouer all
Mat. 10.9. deuils, and to heale diſeaſes. 2 * And hee ſent
Marke 6.8. them forth to preach the kingdome of God, and to cure the ſicke. 3 And he ſaid to them, * Take nothing to your iourney, neither ſtaues, nor ſcrip, neither bread, nor ſiluer, neither haue two coats a piece. 4 And whatſoeuer houſe ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart. 5 And how many ſoeuer will not receiue you, when
Chap. 10.11. ye go out of that city, * ſhake off the very duſt from your feet for a teſtimonie againſt them.

6 And

6 And they went out, and went thorow euery
towne, preaching the Gospel, and healing euery
where. 7 *Now Herod the Tetrarch heard of *Mat.
all that was done by him: and he doubted, be- 14.1.
cause that it was sayd of some, that Iohn was ri- marke
sen againe from the dead: 8 And of some, that 6.14.
Elias had appeared: and of some, that one of the
olde Prophets was risen againe. 9 Then He-
rod sayd, Iohn haue I beheaded: who then is
this, of whom I heare such things? and he desi-
red to see him. 10 * And when the Apostles re- *Mar.
turned, they tolde him what great things they 6.30.
had done. *Then hee tooke them to him, and *Matt.
went aside into a solitary place, *neer* to the citie 14.13.
called Bethsaida. 11 But when the people knew marke
it, they folowed him: and he receiued them and 6.32.
spake vnto them of the kindome of God, and
healed them that had need to be healed. 12 *And *Mat.
when the day began to weare away, the twelue 14.15.
came and sayd vnto him, Send the people away, marke
that they may goe into the townes and villages 6.35.
round about and lodge, and get meat: for wee Iohn
are here in a desert place. 13 But he said vnto 6.5.
them, Giue ye them to eate. And they sayd, we
haue no moe but fiue loaues and two fishes, ex-
cept we should go and bye meat for all this peo-
ple. 14 For they were about fiue thousand
men. Then he said to his disciples, Cause them
to sit downe by fifties in a company. 15 And
they did so, and caused al to sit downe. 15 Then
he tooke the fiue loaues, and the two fishes, and

looked vp to heauen,& bleſſed them and brake,
& gaue to the diſciples,to ſet before the people.
17 So they did all eate, and were ſatisfied: and
there was taken vp of that remained to them,
Matt. twelue baſkets full of broken meat 18 * And it
26.13. came to paſſe, as he was alone praying,his diſci-
marke ples were with him: and he aſked them, ſaying,
8.27. Whom ſay the people that I am? 19 They an-
ſwered and ſayd, Iohn Baptiſt: and other ſay,E-
lias: and ſome ſay,that one of the olde Prophets
is riſen againe. 20 And he ſaid vnto them, But
whom ſay ye that I am? Peter anſwered,& ſayd,
That Chriſt of God, 21 And he warned & com-
Matt. manded them, that they ſhould tell that to no
17.22. man, 22 Saying, * The Sonne of man muſt ſuf-
marke fer many things,and be reproued of the Elders,
8.31. and of the hie Prieſts,& Scribes, & be ſlaine,and
the third day riſe againe. 23 And he ſaid to them
all,If any man will come after me,let him denie
himſelfe,& take vp his croſſe dayly & folow me.
Chap. 24 * For whoſoeuer will ſaue his life, ſhall loſe
17.33. it: and whoſoeuer ſhal loſe his life for my ſake,
Matt. the ſame ſhall ſaue it. 25 * For what auantageth
16.26. it a man,if he win the whole world,and deſtroy
Chap. himſelfe, or loſe himſelfe: 26 * For whoſoeuer
12.9. ſhalbe aſhamed of me, and of my words, of him
matt. ſhall the Sonne of man be aſhamed,whē he ſhall
10.33. come in his glory,& *in the glory* of the Father,&
Mat. of the holy Angels. 27 *And I tel you of a ſure-
16.28. tie,there be ſome ſtanding here, which ſhall not
taſte of death till they haue ſeene the kingdome
of

of God. 28 * And it came to passe about an eight dayes after those words, that he tooke Peter & Iohn, and Iames, and went vp into a mountaine to pray. 29 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was changed, & his garment was white & glistred. 30 And behold, two men talked with him, which were Moses and Elias. 31 Which appeared in glory, & tolde of his departing, which he should accomplish at Hierusalem. 32 But Peter & they that were with him, were heauie with sleepe, and when they awoke, they saw his glory, and the two men standing with him. 33 And it came to passe, as they departed from him, Peter sayd vnto Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to be here: let vs therefore make three Tabernacles, one for thee, & one for Moses, and one for Elias, and wist not what he said. 34 While he thus spake, there came a cloud and ouershadowed them, and they feared when they were entring into the cloud. 35 * And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloued Sonne, heare him. 36 And whē the voice was past, Iesus was found alone: and they kept it close, & tolde no man in those dayes any of those things which they had seene. 37 And it came to passe on the next day, as they came downe from the mountaine, much people met him. 38 * And beholde, a man of the company cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee, beholde my sonne: for he is all that I haue. 39 And loe, a spirit taketh him, and suddenly he crieth, & he teareth

Matt. 17.2. *marke* 9.2. *2 Pet.* 1.17.[1] *Mat.* 17.14. *marke* 9.17.

teareth him, that he ſometh & hardly departeth from him, when he hath bruiſed him. 40 Now I haue beſought thy diſciples to caſt him out, but they could not. 41 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſayd, O generation faithleſſe, and crooked, how long now ſhall I be with you and ſuffer you? bring thy ſonne hither. 42 And whiles he was yet comming, the deuill rent him, & tare him: and Ieſus rebuked the vncleane ſpirit, & healed the childe, and deliuered him to his father. 43 And they were all amaſed at the mighty power of God: and while they woondred at all things, which Ieſus did, he ſayd vnto his diſciples,

Mat. 17.22. *marke* 9.31. 44 Marke theſe works diligently: * for it ſhall come to paſſe, that the Sonne of man ſhalbe deliuered into the hands of men. 45 But they vnderſtood not that word: for it was hid from thē, ſo that they could not perceiue it: and they feared to aſke him of that word.

Matt. 18.1. 46 * Then there aroſe a diſputation among them, which of them ſhould be the greateſt. 47 When Ieſus ſaw the thoughts of their hearts, he tooke a litle child, and ſet him by him, 48 And ſaid vnto thē, Whoſoeuer receiueth this little childe in my Name, receiueth me: and whoſoeuer ſhall receiue me, receiueth him that ſent me: for he that

Mark. 9.38. is leaſt among you al, he ſhalbe great. 49 *And Iohn anſwered, and ſaid, Maſter, we ſaw one caſting out deuils in thy Name, and we forbade him, becauſe he followeth *thee* not with vs. 50 Then Ieſus ſayd vnto him, Forbid ye *him*

not:

not: for he that is not againſt vs, is with vs.
51 And it came to paſſe, when the dayes were
accompliſhed, that he ſhould be receiued vp, he
ſetled himſelfe fully to go to Hieruſalē, 52 And
ſent meſſengers before him: and they went &
entred into a towne of the Samaritanes, to pre-
pare him *lodging*. 53 But they would not re-
ceiue him, becauſe his behauiour was, *as* though
he would go to Hieruſalem. 54 And when his
diſciples, Iames and Iohn ſaw it, they ſaid, Lord,
wilt thou that we cōmand, that fire came downe
from heauen, & conſume thē, euen as * Elias did. 2. *Kin.* 1. 10, 12, 13.
55 But Ieſus turned about, and rebuked them, &
ſaid, Ye know not of what ſpirit ye are. 56 For
the Sonne of man is not come to deſtroy mens
liues, but to ſaue them. Then they went to ano-
ther towne. 57 And it came to paſſe that as they
went in the way, a * certaine man ſayd vnto him, *Mat.* 8. 19.
I will follow thee, Lord, whitherſoeuer thou
goeſt. 58 And Ieſus ſaid vnto him, The foxes
haue holes, and the birds of the heauen neſts,
but the Sonne of man hath not whereon to lay
his head. 59 But he ſaid vnto another, Follow
me. And the ſame ſayd, Lord, ſuffer me firſt to go
and bury my father. 60 And Ieſus ſayd vnto
him, Let the dead burie their dead: but go thou,
and preach the kingdome of God. 61 Then
another ſayd, I will follow thee, Lord: but let
me firſt go bid them farewell, which are at mine
houſe. 62 And Ieſus ſaid vnto him, No man
that putteth his hand to the plough, and looketh
backe,

backe, is not apt to the kingdome of God.

CHAP. 10 30 *Who is our neighbour.*

Mat. 10.2. AFter *these things the Lord appointed other seuenty also, and sent them two & two before him into euery city and place, whither he himselfe should come. 2 And said vnto them,

Matt. 9.37 * The harnest is great, but the labourers are few: pray therefore the Lord of the harnest to send

Mat. 10.16. forth labourers into his harnest. 3 * Goe your waves: beholde, I send you foorth as lambes among wolues. 4 Beare no bag, neither scrip, nor

1.*Kin.* 4.29. shoes, and * salute no man by the way. 5 * And into whatsoeuer house ye enter, first say, peace

Mat. 10.62. to this house. 6 And if the sonne of peace be there, your peace shal rest vpō him: if not, it shall

Deut. 24.14. turne to you againe. 7 And in that house tary still, eating and drinking such things as by them *shalbe set before you:* * for the laborer is worthy of his wages. Go not frō house to house. 8 * And

Matt. 10.28. into whatsoeuer city ye shall enter, if they receiue you, eat such things as are set before you. 9 And heale the sicke that are there, and say vnto them, The kingdome of God is come neere vnto you. 10 But into whatsoeuer city ye shall enter, if they will not receiue you, goe your waues out into the streets of the same, and say,

Cha. 5.act. 13.51. *and* 28.6. 11 * Euen the very dust, which cleaueth on vs of your city, we wipe off against you: notwithstanding know this, that the kingdome of God was come neere vnto you. 12 For I say vnto you, that it shalbe easier in that day for them of

Sodom,

Sodom, then for that citie. 13 *Woe be to thee Chorazin: woe be to thee Bethſaida: for if the miracles had beene done in Tyrus and Sidon, which haue beene done in you, they had a great while agoe repented, ſitting in ſackcloth and aſhes. 14 Therefore it ſhall be eaſier for Tyrus and Sidon, at the iudgement, then for you. 15 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted to heauen, ſhalt be thruſt downe to hell. 16 *He that heareth you, heareth me: and he that deſpiſeth you, deſpiſeth me: and he that deſpiſeth me, deſpiſeth him that ſent me. 17 And the ſeuentie turned againe with ioy, ſaying, Lord, euen the deuils are ſubdued vnto vs through thy Name. 18 And he ſaid vnto them, I ſawe Satan, like lightning fall downe from heauen. 19 Beholde, I giue vnto you power to tread on ſerpents, & ſcorpions, & ouer all the power of the enemie, & nothing ſhal hurt you. 20 Neuertheleſſe in this reioyce not, that the ſpirits are ſubdued vnto you: but rather reioyce, becauſe your names are written in heauen. 21 That ſame houre reioyced Ieſus in the Spirit, & ſaid, I confeſſe vnto thee, Father, Lord of heauen & earth, that thou haſt hid theſe things frō the wiſe and vnderſtanding, and haſt reueiled them to babes: euen ſo, Father, becauſe it ſo pleaſed thee. 22 All things are giuen me of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Sonne is, but the Father: neither who the Father is, ſaue the Sonne, & he to whom the Sonne will reueile him. 23 And he

*Matt. 11.21.

*Matth. 10.40. *John 13.20.

Mat. turned to his disciples, & said secretly, "Blessed
13.16. are the eies, which see ỹ ye see. 24 For I tel you,
that many Prophets & kings haue desired to se
those things which ye see, & haue not seene them,
and to heare those things which ye heare, and
Mat. haue not heard *them*. 25 *Then behold, a cer-
22.35. taine Lawyer stood vp, & tempted him, saying,
mark. Master, what shall I doe, to inherite eternall life?
12.28. 26 And he said vnto him, What is written in the
Lawe? how readest thou? And he answered and
Deut. said, *Thou shalt loue ỹ Lord thy God with all
6.5. thine heart, & with all thy soule, & with all thy
Leuit. strength, & with all thy thought, *& thy neigh-
19.18 bour as thy selfe. 28 Then he saide vnto him,
Thou hast answered right: this doe, & thou shalt
liue. 29 But he willing to iustifie himselfe, said
vnto Iesus, Who is then my neighbour? 30 And
Iesus answered, and saide, A certaine man went
downe frō Hierusalem to Iericho, & fell among
thieues, & they robbed him of his raiment, and
wounded him, and departed, leauing him half
dead. 31 Nowe so it fell out, that there came
downe a certaine Priest that same way, & when
he sawe him, he passed by on the other side.
32 And likewise also a Leuite, when he was
come neere to the place, went and looked on
him, and passed by on the other side. 33 Then a
certaine Samaritane, as hee iourneyed, came
neere vnto him, and when he sawe him, he had
compassion on him, 34 And went to him, and
bound vp his wounds, and powred in oyle and
wine,

wine,& put him on his owne beast,and brought him to an Inne, and made prouision for him. 35 And on the morowe when he departed, he tooke out two pence,& gaue them to the hoste, and said vnto him,Take care of him,and whatsoeuer thou spendest more,when I come againe, I will recompense thee. 36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour vnto him that fell among the theeues? 37 And he said, He that shewed mercie on him Then said Iesus vnto him,Goe,& do thou likewise 38 Now it came to passe as they went, that he entred into a certaine towne, & a certaine woman named Martha, receiued him into her house. 39 And she had a sister called Marie,which also sate at Iesus feete,and heard his preaching 40 But Martha was combred about much seruing, and came to him,& said, Master,doest thou not care that my sister hath left me to serue alone? bid her therefore, that she helpe me 41 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Martha, Martha, thou carest, and art troubled about many things: 42 But one thing is needefull, Marie hath chosen the good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

CHAP. 11. 1. *Howe we should pray.*

AND so it was, that as he was praying in a certaine place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said vnto him,Lord,teach vs to pray,as Iohn also taught his disciples. 2 * And he saide vnto them, When ye pray, say, Our Father, which art in heauen,halowed be thy Name: Thy *Mat. 6.9.*

kingdome come: Let thy will be done, euen in earth, as it is in heauen. 3 Our dayly bread giue vs for the day: 4 And forgiue vs our sinnes: for euen we forgiue euery man that is indetted to vs: And lead vs not into temptation; but deliuer vs from euill. 5 Moreouer he said vnto them, Which of you shall haue a friend, and shall go to him at midnight, and say vnto him, Friende, lend me three loaues? 6 For a friend of mine is come out of the way to me, and I haue nothing to set before him: 7 And he within should answere and say, Trouble me not: ỹ doore is now shut, and my children are with me in bed: I can not rise & giue them to thee. 8 I say vnto you, though he would not arise & giue him, because he is his friende, yet doubtles because of his importunitie, he would arise, & giue him as many
Mat. as he needed. 9 *And I say vnto you, Aske, and
7.7. it shalbe giuẽ you: seeke, & ye shal finde: knock,
Matt. and it shall be opened vnto you. 10 For euery
7.8. one that asketh, receiueth: and he that seeketh,
Matt. findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shalbe ope-
7.9. ned. 11 *If a sonne shal aske bread of any of you that is a father, will he giue him a stone? or if he aske a fish, will he for a fish giue him a serpent? 12 Or if he aske an egge, wil he giue him a scorpion? 13 If ye then which are euill, can giue good gifts vnto your children, how much more shall your heauenly Father giue the holy Ghost
Mat. to them that desire him? 14 *Then he cast out a
9.32. deuill which was dumme: and when the deuill

wa
wo
ou
de
hi
th
di
bo
Sa
his
ou
Be
ch
yo
ca
is
ne
fel
he
he
tru
no
ret
cle
the
fin
ho
co
36
giu
ap

was gone out, the dumme ſpake, and the people wondered. 15 But ſome of them ſaid, *He caſteth out deuils through Beelzebub the chiefe of the deuils. 16 And others tempted him, ſeeking of him a ſigne from heauen. 17 But he knew their thoughts & ſaid vnto them, * Euery kingdome diuided againſt it ſelfe, ſhalbe deſolate, and an houſe diuided againſt an houſe, falleth 18 So if Satan alſo be diuided againſt himſelfe, how ſhal his kingdome ſtand, becauſe ye ſay that I caſt out deuils through Beelzebub? 19 If I through Beelzebub caſt out deuils, by whom doe your children caſt them out? Therefore ſhall they be your iudges. 20 But if I by the finger of God caſt out deuils, doubtleſſe the kingdome of God is come vnto you. 21 When a ſtrong man armed, keepeth his palace, the things that he poſſeſſeth, are in peace. 22 But when a ſtronger then he commeth vpon him, and ouercommeth him: he taketh from him all his armour wherein he truſted, and diuideth his ſpoyles. 23 He that is not with me, is againſt me: and he that gathereth not with me, ſcattereth 24 * When the vncleane ſpirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through drie places, ſeeking reſt: and when he findeth none, he ſayth, I will returne vnto mine houſe whence I came out. 25 And when he commeth, he findeth it ſwept and garniſhed. 26 Then goeth he, & taketh to him ſeuen other ſpirits worſe then himſelfe: and they enter in, and dwell there, * ſo the laſt ſtate of that man is

Mat. 9.34. & 12. 24. mark. 3.22. Mat. 12.25. mark. 3.24. Matt. 12.43 Hebr. 6.4.

worse then the first. 27 And it came to passe as he said these things, a certaine woman of the company lifted vp her voyce, and said vnto him, Blessed is the wombe that bare thee, & the paps which thou hast sucked 28 But he said, Yea rather, blessed *are* they that heare ℣ worde of God, and keepe it. 29 * And when the people were gathered thicke together, he began to say, This is a wicked generation: they seeke a signe, and there shall no signe be giuen them, but the signe of * Ionas the Prophet. 30 For as Ionas was a signe to the Niniuites: so shall also the Sonne of man be to this generation 31 * The Queene of the South shall rise in iudgement, with the men of this generation, and shall condemne them: for she came from the vtmost partes of the earth to heare the wisedome of Solomon, and behold, a greater then Solomon is here. 32 The men of Niniue shall rise in iudgement with this generation, and shall condemne it: for they * repented at the preaching of Ionas: and behold, a greater then Ionas is here. 33 * No man when he hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a priuie place, neither vnder a bushell: but on a candlestick, that they which come in, may see ℣ light. 34 * The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, then is thy whole body light: but if thine eye be euill, then thy body is darke. 35 Take heede therefore, that the light which is in thee, be not darkenesse. 36 If thy whole body *shall be* light, hauing

Mat. 12.8, 39.
Ionas 2.12.
2.*Kin.* 10.1.
2.*chr.* 9.1.
Ionas 3.5.
Chap. 8.16.
matt. 5.15.
mark. 4.21.
Matt. 6.22.

part darke, then shall all be light, euen as when a candle doeth light thee with the brightnes.
37 And as he spake, a certaine Pharise besought him to dine with him: and he went in and sate downe at table. 38 And when the Pharise saw it he marueiled that he had not first washed before dinner. 39 *And the Lord said to him, In deede ye Pharises make cleane the outside of the cup, & of the platter: but the inward part is full of rauening and wickednes. 40 Ye fooles, did not he that made ỹ which is without, make that which is within also? 41 Therefore giue alms of those things which you haue, and behold all things shalbe cleane to you. 42 But wo *be* to you, Pharises: for ye tithe the mint, and the rewe, and all maner herbes, and passe ouer iudgement and the loue of God: these ought ye to haue done, and not to haue left the other vndone. 43 *Wo *be* to you Pharises: for ye loue the vppermost seates in the Synagogues, and greetings in the markets. 44 Wo *be* to you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for *ye are as graues which appeare not, and the men ỹ walke ouer them perceiue not. 45 Then answered one of the Lawyers, and said vnto him, Master, thus saying thou puttest vs to rebuke also. 46 And he said, Wo *be* to you also, ye Lawyers: *for ye lade men with burdens grieuous to be borne, & ye your selues touch not the burdens with one of your fingers. 47 Wo *be* to you: *for ye build the sepulchres of the Prophets, and your fathers killed

Matt. 23.25.

Chap. 20.46.

Matt. 23.27.

Mat. 23.4. Acts 15.10.

Matt. 23.29.

killed them. 48 Truely ye beare witnes & allow
the deedes of your fathers: for they killed them,
& ye builde their ſepulchres. 49 Therefore alſo
ȳ wiſedome of God, I will ſend them Prophets
and Apoſtles, & of them they ſhall ſlay, & perſe-
cute away, 50 That the blood of al ȳ Prophets
ſhed from the foundation of the world, may
be required of this generation. 51 From the
Gene. blood of * Abel vnto the blood * of Zacharias
4.8. which was ſlaine betweene ȳ altar & the Tem-
2.Chr. ple, verely I ſay vnto you, it ſhall be required of
24.21. this generation. 52 Wo be to you Lawyers,
ye haue taken away the key of knowledge: ye
entred not in your ſelues, and them that came
in, ye forbade. 53 And as he ſaid theſe things
vnto them, the Scribes & Phariſes began to
vrge him ſore, and to prouoke him to ſpeake of
many things, 54 Laying waite for him, and ſeek-
king to catch ſome thing of his mouth, whereby
they might accuſe him.

CHAP. 12. 17. *The parable of the rich man.*

Mat. IN * the meane time, there gathered together
16.5. an innumerable multitude of people, ſo that
mark. they trode one another: and he began to ſay vn-
8.14. to his diſciples firſt, T * heede to your ſelues
of the leauen of ȳ Phariſes, which is hypocriſie.
Matt. 2 *For there is nothing couered, that ſhall not
10 26. be reueiled: neither hid, ȳ ſhall not be known.
mark. 3 Wherefore whatſoeuer ye haue ſpoken in
4.22. darkeneſſe, it ſhall be heard in the light: & that
which ye haue ſpoken in ȳ eare, in ſecret place
ſhall

shalbe preached on the house. 4 *And I say vn- *Mat.
to you, my friends be not afraide of them that 10.28
kill the body, and after that are not able to doe
any more. 5 But I wil forewarne you whom ye
shall feare: feare him, which after he hath killed,
hath power to cast into hel: yea I say vnto you,
him feare. 6 Are not fiue sparrowes bought for
two farthings, *and* yet not one of them is forgot-
ten before God? 7 * Yea and all the haires of *1.Sa.
your head are numbred: feare not therefore: ye 14.45
are more of value then many sparrowes 8 *Al- (hap.
so I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall confesse me 9 26.
before men, him shal the Sonne of man confesse *matt.
also before the Angels of God 9 But he that 10.32
shall denie me before men, shall be denied be- 2.tim.
fore the Angels of God. 10 * And whosoeuer 2.12.
shall speake a worde against the Sonne of man, *Mat.
it shalbe forgiuen him: but vnto him that shall 12.31.
blaspheme the holy Ghost, it shall not be for- *mark.
giuen. 11 *And when they shall bring you vnto 3.28.
the Synagogues, & vnto the rulers and princes, 1. Iohn
take no thought howe, or what thing ye shall 5 15.
answere, or what ye shall speake. 12 For the *Mat.
holy Ghost shall teach you in the same houre, 10.19
what ye ought to say. 13 And one of the com- *mark.
pany said vnto him, Master, bid my brother di- 13.11
uide the inheritance with me. 14 And he saide
vnto him, Man, who made me a iudge, or a diui-
der ouer you? 15 Wherefore he said vnto them,
Take heede and beware of couetousnesse: for
though a man haue abundance, *yet* his life
standeth

ſtandeth not in his riches. 16 And he put forth a parable vnto them, ſaying, The ground of a certaine rich man brought foorth fruits plentifully. 17 Therefore he thought with himſelfe, ſaying, What ſhall I doe, becauſe I haue no roome, where I may lay vp my fruites? 18 And he ſaide, This will I doe, I will pull downe my barnes, and build greater, and therein will I gather all my fruites, and my goods. 19 And I will ſay to my ſoule, Soule, thou haſt much goods laid vp for many yeres: liue at eaſe, eate, drinke, and take thy paſtime. 20 But God ſaid vnto him, O foole, this night will they fetch away thy ſoule from thee: then whoſe ſhal thoſe things be which thou haſt prouided? 21 So is he that gathereth riches to himſelfe, & is not rich in God. 22 And he ſpake vnto his diſciples, Therefore I ſay vnto you, *Take no thought for your life, what ye ſhall eate: neither for your body, what ye ſhall put on. 23 The life is more then meate: & the body *more* then the raiment. 24 Conſider ye rauens for they neither ſow nor reape: which neither haue ſtorehouſe nor barne, and *yet* God feedeth them: how much more are ye better then foules? 25 And which of you by taking thought, can adde to his ſtature one cubite? 26 If ye then be not able to doe the leaſt thing, why take ye thought for the reſt? 27 Conſider the lilies how they grow: they labour not, neither ſpinne they: yet I ſay vnto you, that Solomon himſelfe in al his royalty was not clothed

Mat. 6.25. 1.pet. 5.7. pſal. 55.22

thed like one of theſe. 28 If then God ſo clothe the graſſe which is to day in the field, and to morrow is caſt into the ouen, how much more *will he clothe* you, O ye of litle faith? 29 Therfore aſke not what ye ſhall eate, or what yee ſhall drinke, neither hang you in ſuſpenſe. 30 For all ſuch things the people of the world ſeeke for: & your Father knoweth that yee haue neede of theſe things. 31 But rather ſeeke ye after the kingdom of God, & all theſe things ſhalbe caſt vpon you. 32 Feare not, litle flocke: for it is your Fathers pleaſure, to giue you the kingdom. 33 *Sel that yee haue, and giue almes: make you bags which waxe not old, a treaſure that can neuer faile in heauen, where no thiefe commeth, neither mothe corrupteth. 34 For where your treaſure is, there wil your hearts be alſo 35 *Let your loynes be girded about, and your lights burning, 36 And ye your ſelues like vnto men that wait for their maſter, when he wil returne from the wedding, that when he commeth and knocketh they may open vnto him immediatly. 37 Bleſſed *are* thoſe ſeruants, whom the Lord when he cõmeth ſhall finde waking: Verely I ſay vnto you, he wil gird himſelfe about, and make them to ſit downe at table, and wil come forth, & ſerue them. 38 And if he come in the ſecond watch, or come in the thirde watch, and ſhall finde them ſo, bleſſed are thoſe ſeruants. 39 *Nowe vnderſtand this, that if the good man of the houſe had knowen at what houre the thiefe would haue come, hee would

Matt. 6. 20.

1. Pet. 1. 13.

Matt. 24. 43. reuel. 16. 15.

and 3. 3.

would haue watched, and would not haue suffered his house to be digged through. 40 Be ye also prepared therefore: for the Sonne of man wil come at an houre whē ye thinke not. 41 Then Peter said vnto him, Master, tellest thou this parable vnto vs, or euen to all? 42 And the Lord said, Who is a faithfull steward, and wise, whom the master shall make ruler ouer his houshold, to giue them their portion of meate in season? 43 Blessed *is* that seruant, whom his master when he commeth, shal finde so doing. 44 Of a truth I say vnto you, that he wil make him ruler ouer all that he hath. 45 But if that seruant say in his heart, My master doth deferre his comming, and shal begin to smite the seruants & maydens, and to eat, & drinke, and to be drunken: 46 The master of that seruant will come in a day when he thinketh not, & at an houre when he is not ware of, and wil cut him off, and giue him his portion with the vnbeleeuers. 47 And that seruant that knew his masters wil, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shalbe beaten with many *stripes*. 48 But he ỹ knew it not, and yet did cōmit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with fewe *stripes*. for vnto whomsoeuer much is giuen, of him shal much be required, and to whom men much cōmit, the more of him wil they aske. 49 I am come to put fire on ỹ earth, and what is my desire, if it be already kindled? 50 Notwithstanding I must be baptized with a baptisme, and how am I grieued, til it be ended?

51 *Think

51 *Thinke ye that I am come to giue peace on *Matt.*
earth? I tel you, nay, but rather debate. 52 For 10.34.
frō hence forth there shalbe fiue in one house di-
uided, three against two, and two against three.
53 The father shalbe diuided against the sonne,
and the sonne against the father: the mother a-
gainst the daughter, & the daughter against the
mother: the mother in law against her daughter
in law, & the daughter in law against her mother
in law. 54 *Then said he to the people, When *Matt.*
ye see a cloud rise out of the West, straightway 16.2.
ye say, A showre cōmeth: and so it is. 55 And
when ye see the Southwind blow, ye say, that it
wil be hote: & it commeth to passe. 56 Hypo-
crites, ye can discerne the face of the earth, and
of the skie: but why discerne yee not this time?
57 Yea & why iudge ye not of your selues what
is right? 58 *While thou goest w̄ thine aduer- *Matt.*
sary to the ruler, as thou art in the way, giue di- 5.25.
ligence in the way, ỹ thou mayest be deliuered
from him, least he draw thee to the iudge, & the
iudge deliuer thee to the iayler, & the iayler cast
thee into prison. 59 I tel thee, thou shalt not de-
part thence, til thou hast payed the vtmost mite.

CHAP. 13. *6. The barren figge tree.*
19 The graine of mustard seede.

THere were certaine men present at the same
season, that shewed him of the Galileans,
whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sa-
crifices. 2 And Iesus answered, and sayde vnto
them, Suppose yee, that these Galileans were

greater

greater sinners then all the *other* Galileans, because they haue suffred such things? 3 I tel you, nay: but except ye amend your liues, ye shall all likewise perish. 4 Or thinke you ỹ those eighteene, vpon whom the towre in Siloam fell and slew them, were sinners aboue all men that dwel in Hierusalem? 5 I tell you, nay: but except ye amend your liues, ye shal al likewise perish. 6 He spake also this parable, A certaine man had a figtree plãted in his vineyard: & he came & sought fruit thereon, & found none. 7 Then said he to the dresser of his vineyarde, Beholde, this three yeres haue I come & sought fruit of this figtree, and find none: cut it downe why keepeth it also the ground barren? 8 And he answered, and said vnto him, Lord, let it alone this yere also, till I dig round about it, and doung it. 9 And if it beare fruit, *well*: if not, then after thou shalt cut it downe. 10 And he taught in one of the Synagogues on the Sabbath day. 11 And beholde, there was a woman, which had a spirite of infirmitie eighteene yeres, & was bowed together, it could not lift vp *herselfe* in any wise. 12 When Iesus sawe her, he called her to him, and saide vnto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thy disease. 13 And he laid his hands on her, and immediatly shee was made straight againe, & glorified God. 14 And the ruler of the Synagogue answered with indignation, because that Iesus had healed on the Sabbath *day*, and saide vnto the people, There are sixe dayes in which men ought to worke

worke: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the Sabbath day. 15 Then answered him the Lord, and said, Hypocrite, doth not eche one of you on the Sabbath *day* loose his oxe or his asse from the stall, and leade him away to the water? 16 And ought not his daughter of Abraham, whō Satan had bound, loe, eighteene yeres, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath day? 17 And when he said these things, all his aduersaries were ashamed: but all the people reioyced at al the excellent things, that were done by him. 18 * Then saide hee, What is the kingdome of God like? or whereto shal I compare it? 19 It is like a graine of mustarde seede, which a man tooke and sowed in his garden, and it grew, and waxed a great tree, and the foules of the heauen made nests in the branches thereof. 20 * And againe he said, Whereunto shal I liken the kingdome of God? 21 It is like leauen which a woman tooke, and hid in three pecks of flowre, till all was leauened. 22 * And he went through al cities and townes, teaching, and iourneying towards Hierusalem. 23 Then said one vnto him, Lord, *are there* few *y* shalbe saued? And he said vnto them, 24 *Striue to enter in at the straite gate: for many, I say vnto you, wil seeke to enter in, and shal not be able. 25 When the good man of the house is risen vp, & hath shut to the doore, & ye begin to stand without, & to knocke at the doore, saying, Lord, Lord, open vnto vs, & he shall answere and say vnto you, I know you

Matt. 13.31. *mark.* 3.31.

Mat. 13.33.

Mat. 9.35. *mar.* 6.6.

Matt. 7.13.

not

not whence ye are, 26 Then shal ye begin to say, Wee haue eaten & drunke in thy presence, and
Mat. thou hast taught in our streets. 27 * But he shal
7.23. say, I tel you, I know ye not whence ye are: de-
and part frō me, al ye workers of iniquitie. 28 There
25.41. shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth when ye
Psal. shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, & al the
6.8. Prophets in the kingdom of God, & your selues thrust out at doores. 29 Then shal come *many* from the East, and from the West, and from the North, and from the South, and shall sit at table
Matt. in the kingdome of God. 30 * And behold, there
19.30. are last, which shalbe first, & there are first, which
and shall be last. 31 The same day there came cer-
20.16. taine Pharises, and said vnto him, Depart, and go hence: for Herod wil kil thee. 32 Then said he vnto them, Goe ye and tel that foxe, Behold, I cast out deuils, and wil heale stil to day, and to morowe, and the thirde day I shalbe perfected. 33 Neuertheless I must walke to day, and to morow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a Prophet should perish out of Hierusa-
Matt lem. 34 *O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which kil-
23.37. lest the Prophets, and stonest them that are sent to thee, howe often would I haue gathered thy children together, as the henne *gathereth* her broode vnder *her* wings, and yee would not! 35 Behold, your house is left vnto you desolate: and verely I tell you, ye shall not see me vntil *the time* come that ye shall say, Blessed *is* he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

CHAP.

AND it came to passe that when hee was entered into the house of one of the chiefe Pharises on the Sabbath day, to eat bread, they watched him. 2 And behold, there was a certaine man before him, which had the dropsie. 3 Then Iesus answering, spake vnto the Lawyers & Pharises, saying, Is it lawful to heale on the Sabbath day? 4 And they held their peace Then he tooke him, and healed him, and let him go, 5 And answered him, saying, Which of you *shall haue* an asse, or an oxe fallen into a pitte, and will not straightway pull him out on the Sabbath day? 6 And they coulde not answere him againe to those things. 7 Hee spake also a parable to the ghestes, when hee marked howe they chose out the chiefe roomes, and said vnto them, 8 When thou shalt be bidden of any man to a wedding, sit not thy selfe downe in the chiefest place, least a more honourable man then thou, bee bidden of him, 9 And he that bade both him and thee, come, and say to thee, Giue this man roome, and thou then begin with shame to take the lowest roome. 10 *But when thou art bidden, go and sit downe in the lowest roome, that when he that bade thee, cõmeth, he may say vnto thee, Friend, sit vp hier: then shalt thou haue worship in the presence of them that sit at table with thee. 11 * For whosoeuer exalteth himselfe, shall be brought lowe, and hee that humbleth himselfe, shall be exalted. 12 Then saide he also to him that had bidden him, *When thou makest a din-

Prou. 25.5.

(hap. 18.14. Prou. 3.27. 16.6.

ner or a ſupper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinſemen, nor the rich neighbours, leaſt they alſo bid thee againe, and a recompenſe be made thee. 13 But when thou makeſt a feaſt, cal the poore, the maimed, the lame, and the blinde, 14 And thou ſhalt bee bleſſed, becauſe they cannot recompenſe thee: for thou ſhalt be recompenſed at the reſurrection of the iuſt. 15 Now when one of them that ſate at table, heard theſe things, he ſaid vnto him, Bleſſed is he that eateth bread in the kingdome of God. *Mat.* 22. 1. *reuel.* 19. 9. 16 Then ſaid he to him, * A certaine man made a great ſupper, and bade many, 17 And ſent his ſeruaunt at ſupper time to ſay to them that were bidden, Come: for all things are nowe ready. 18 But they all with one *mynde* began to make excuſe: The firſt ſaid vnto him, I haue bought a farme, and I muſt needes goe out, and ſee it: I pray thee haue mee excuſed. 19 And another ſaid, I haue bought fiue yoke of oxen, and I goe out to proue them: I pray thee haue mee excuſed. 20 And another ſaid, I haue married a wife, and therefore I cannot come. 21 So that ſeruant returned, & ſhewed his maſter theſe things. Then was the good man of the houſe angrie, and ſaid to his ſeruant, Goe out quickly into the ſtreetes and lanes of the citie, and bring hither the poore, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blinde. 22 And the ſeruant ſayd, Lord, it is done as thou haſt cõmanded, and yet there is roome. 23 Then the maſter ſayd to the ſeruant, Goe out

into the hie wayes, and hedges, and compell them to come in, that mine house may bee filled. 24 For I say vnto you, that none of those men which were bidden, shall taste of my supper. 25 Now there went great multitudes with him, and he turned and saide vnto them, 26 *If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, & children, and brethren, and sisters: yea, and his owne life also, he cannot bee my disciple. 27 *And whosoeuer beareth not his crosse, and commeth after me, cannot be my disciple. 28 For which of you building a towre, sitteth not downe before, and counteth the cost, whether hee haue sufficient to performe it, 29 Least that after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to performe it, al that behold it, begin to mocke him, 30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to make an ende? 31 Or what King going to make warre against another King, sitteth not downe first, and taketh counsell, whether he be able with ten thousand, to meete him that commeth against him with twentie thousand? 32 Or els while hee is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth peace. 33 So likewise, whosoeuer he be of you that forsaketh not al that he hath, he cannot be my disciple. 34 *Salt is good: but if salt haue lost his sauour, wherewith shall it be salted? 35 It is neither meete for the land, nor yet for the dounghill, but men cast it out. Hee that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

Mat. 10.37

Luke 9.23. Mat. 16.24. mar. 8.34.

Mat. 5.13. mar. 9.50.

CHAP. 15. 4. *The Prodigall sonne.*

‖*Or, drewe neere.* THen ‖resorted vnto him al the Publicanes & sinners, to heare him, 2 Therfore the Phariſes and Scribes murmured, ſaying, He receiueth ſinners, and eateth with them. 3 Then ſpake he this parable to them, ſaying, 4 *What man of* *Mat. 18.12.* you hauing an hundred ſheepe, if he loſe one of them, doth not leaue ninetie and nine in the wildernes, and goe after that which is loſt, vntill he find it? 5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his ſhoulders with ioy. 6 And when hee commeth home, he calleth together his friendes and neighbors, ſaying vnto them, Reioyce with me: for I haue found my ſheepe which was loſt. 7 I ſay vnto you, that likewiſe ioy ſhalbe in heauen for one ſinner that cõuerteth, *more* then for ninetie and nine iuſt men, which neede none amendment of life. 8 Either what woman hauing tenne groates, if ſhe loſe one groate, doeth not light a candle, & ſweepe the houſe, & ſeeke diligently till ſhee finde it? 9 And when ſhee hath found it, ſhe calleth her friends, and neighbors, ſaying, Reioyce with me: for I haue found the groate which I had loſt. 10 Likewiſe I ſay vnto you, there is ioy in the preſence of the Angels of God, for one ſinner, that conuerteth. 11 He ſayde moreouer, A certaine man had two ſonnes. 12 And the yonger of them ſayd to his father, Father, giue me the portion of the goods that falleth to mee. So hee diuided vnto them *his* ſubſtance. 13 So not many dayes after, when

when the yonger ſonne had gathered all toge-
ther, he tooke his iourney into a farre countrey,
and there hee waſted his goods with riotous li-
uing. 14 Now when he had ſpent al, there aroſe
a great dearth thorowout that land: and he be-
gan to be in neceſsitie. 15 Then hee went and
clane to a citizen of that countrey, and hee ſent
him to his farme, to feede ſwine. 16 And hee
would faine haue filled his belly with the huſkes,
that the ſwine ate: but no man gaue *them* him.
17 Then he came to himſelfe, and ſaid, How ma-
ny hired ſeruaunts at my fathers haue bread y-
nough, and I die for hunger? 18 I wil riſe and
go to my father, and ſay vnto him, Father, I haue
ſinned againſt heauen, and before thee, 19 And
am no more worthy to bee called thy ſonne:
make me as one of thy hired ſeruants. 20 So he
aroſe and came to his father, and when hee was
yet a great way off, his father ſawe him, and had
compaſsion, and ranne and fell on his necke, and
kiſſed him. 21 And the ſonne ſaide vnto him,
Father I haue ſinned againſt heauen, and before
thee, and am no more worthy to be called thy
ſonne. 22 Then the father ſayd to his ſeruants,
Bring forth the beſt robe, and put it on him and
put a ring on his hand, and ſhoes on his feete,
23 And bring the fat calfe, and kill him, and let
vs eate and be mery: 24 For this my ſonne was
dead and is aliue againe: and he was loſt, but he
is found. And they began to be mery. 25 Now the
elder brother was in the field, & when he came

and drew neere to the houſe, he heard melody & dancing, 26 And called one of his ſeruants, and aſked what theſe things meant. 27 And he ſayd vnto him, Thy brother is come, and thy father hath killed the fatted calfe, becauſe he hath receiued him ſafe and ſound. 28 Then he was angry, and would not goe in: therefore came his father out and intreated him. 29 But he anſwered and ſaid to his father, Loe, theſe many yeres haue I done thee ſeruice, neither brake I at any time thy commandement, and yet thou neuer gaueſt me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends. 30 But when this thy ſonne was come, which hath deuoured thy goods with harlots, thou haſt for his ſake killed the fat calfe. 31 And he ſaid vnto him, Sonne, thou art euer with me, and all that I haue is thine. It was meet that we ſhould make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is aliue againe: and he was loſt, but he is found.

CHAP. 16. 1 *The vniuſt ſteward.* 10 *Of Diues and Lazarus.*

AND he ſaid alſo vnto his diſciples, There was a certaine rich man, which had a ſteward, & he was accuſed vnto him, that he waſted his goods. 2 And he called him, and ſaid vnto him, How is it that I heare this of thee? Giue an account of thy ſtewardſhip: for thou mayeſt be no longer ſteward. 3 Then the ſteward ſayd within himſelfe, What ſhall I do? for my maſter taketh away from me the ſtewardſhip: I can not

not dig, *and* to begge I am ashamed. 4 I know what I will doe, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receiue me into their houses. 5 Then called he vnto him euery one of his masters debters, and sayd vnto the first, How much owest thou vnto my master? 6 And hee sayd, An hundred measures of oyle. And hee sayde to him, Take thy writing, and sit downe quickly, and write fiftie. 7 Then sayd he to another, How much owest thou? And he sayd, An hundred measures of wheat. Then hee sayd to him, Take thy writing, and write foure-score. 8 And the Lord commended the vniust steward because he had done wisely. Wherefore the children of this world are in their generation wiser then the children of light. 9 And I say vnto you, Make you friends with the riches of iniquitie, that when ye shall want, they may receiue you into euerlasting habitations. 10 Hee that is faithfull in the least, he is also faithfull in much: and he that is vniust in the least, is vniust also in much. 11 If then ye haue not bene faithfull in the wicked riches, who will trust you in the true *treasure*? 12 And if ye haue not bene faithfull in another mans *good*, who shall giue you that which is yours? 13 † No seruant can seruе two masters: for either he shall hate the one, and loue the other: or els he shall leane to the one, and despise the other. Ye can not serue God and riches. 14 All these things heard the Pharises also which were couetous, and they

Matt. 6.24.

scoffed at him. 15 Then he sayd vnto them, You are they, which iustifie your selues before men: but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men, is an abomination in the sight of God. 16 * The Law and the Prophets endured vntill Iohn: and since that time the kingdome of God is preached, & euery man preasseth into it. 17 * Now it is more easie that heauen & earth should passe away, then that one title of the Law should fall. 18 * Whosoeuer putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoeuer marrieth her that is put away from her husband, committeth adultery. 19 There was a certaine rich man, which was clothed in purple, & fine linnen, and fared well & delicately euery day. 20 Also there was a certaine begger named Lazarus, which was layd at his gate ful of sores, 21 And desired to be refreshed with the crummes that fell from the rich mans table: yea, & the dogges came and licked his sores. 22 And it was so that the begger died, and was caried by the Angels into Abrahams bosome. The rich man also died, and was buried. 23 And being in hel in torments he lift vp his eyes, and saw Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosome. 24 Then he cried, and sayd, Father Abraham, haue mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and coole my tongue: for I am tormented in this flame. 25 But Abraham sayd, Sonne, remember that thou in thy life time receiuedst

Matt. 11.12.

Matt. 5.18.

Mat. 5.32. and 19.9. 1.cor. 7.11.

receiuedst thy pleasures, and likewise Lazarus paines: now therefore is hee comforted, and thou art tormented. 26 Besides all this, betweene you and vs there is a great gulfe set, so that they which would goe from hence to you, can not: neither can they come from thence to vs. 27 Then he said, I pray thee therefore father, that thou wouldest send him to my fathers house, 28 (For I haue fiue brethren) that he may testifie vnto them, least they also come into this place of torment. 29 Abraham sayd vnto him, They haue Moses and the Prophets: let them heare them. 30 And he sayd, Nay, father Abraham: but if one came vnto them from the dead, they will amend their liues. 31 Then he sayd vnto him. If they heare not Moses and the Prophets, neither will they be perswaded, though one arise from the dead againe.

CHAP. 17 11 *Of the ten lepers.* 35 *The maner of Christes comming.*

THen sayd he to the disciples, * It cannot be auoyded, but that offences will come, but woe be to him by whom they come. 2 It is better for him that a great millstone were hanged about his necke, and that he were cast into the sea, then that he should offend one of these little ones. 3 Take heed to your selues: if thy brother trespasse against thee, rebuke him: and if he repent, forgiue him. 4 * And though he sinne against thee seuen times in a day, & seuen times a day turne againe to thee, saying, It repenteth me,

Matt. 18.7. *marke* 9 42.

Mat. 18,21,

me, thou ſhalt forgiue him. 5 And the Apoſtles ſayd vnto the Lord, Increaſe our faith. 6 And
Mat. 17.20. the Lord ſayd, * If ye had faith *as much as* a graine of muſtard ſeed, and ſhould ſay vnto this mulbery tree, Plucke thy ſelfe vp by the roots, and plant thy ſelfe in the ſea, it ſhould euen obey you. 7 Who is it alſo of you, that hauing a ſeruant plowing, or feeding cattell, would ſay vnto him by & by, when he were come from the field, Go, and ſit downe at table? 8 And would not rather ſay to him, Dreſſe wherewith I may ſuppe, and gird thy ſelfe, and ſerue me, till I haue eaten and drunken, and afterward thou ſhalt eate and drinke? 9 Doeth he thanke that ſeruant, becauſe he did that which was cõmanded vnto him? I trowe not. 10 So likewiſe ye, when ye haue done all thoſe things which are commanded you, ſay, We are vnprofitable ſeruants: we haue done that which was our duety to do. 11 And ſo it was when he went to Hieruſalem, that he paſſed thorow the mids of Samaria, and Galile. 12 And as he entred into a certaine towne, there met him ten men that were lepers, which ſtood afarre off 13 And they lift vp their voices, and ſaid, Ieſus, Maſter, haue mercy on vs. 14 And when he ſaw *them* he ſayd
Leuit. 14.2. vnto them, * Goe ſhew your ſelues vnto the Prieſts. And it came to paſſe, that as they went, they were clenſed. 15 Then one of them, when he ſaw that he was healed, turned backe, & with a loud voice praiſed God, 16 And fell down

on his face at his feet, and gaue him thanks: and
he was a Samaritane. 17 And Ieſus anſwered,
and ſayd, Are there not ten cleanſed? but where
are the nine? 18 There are none found that re-
turned to giue God praiſe, ſaue this ſtranger.
19 And he ſayd vnto him, Ariſe, goe thy way,
thy faith hath ſaued thee. 20 And when he was
demanded of the Phariſées, when the kingdome
of God ſhould come, he anſwered them & ſayd,
The kingdome of God commeth not with ob-
ſeruation. 21 Neither ſhall men ſay, Loe here,
or loe there: for behold, the kingdome of God
is within you. 22 And he ſayd vnto the diſci-
ples, The dayes will come, when ye ſhall deſire
to ſee one of the dayes of the Sonne of man,
and ye ſhall not ſee it. 23 * Then they ſhall ſay *Matt.*
to you, Behold here, or behold there: *but* go 24.23.
not thither, ne ither follow them. 24 For as the *marke*
lightning that lighteth out of the one *part* vn- 13.21.
der heauen, ſhineth vnto the other *part* vnder
heauen, ſo ſhall the Sonne of man be in his day.
25 But firſt muſt he ſuffer many things, and be re-
prooued of this generation. 26 * And as it *Gene.*
was in the dayes of Noe, ſo ſhall it be in the 7.5.
dayes of the Sonne of man. 27 They ate, they *matt.*
dranke, they married wiues, and gaue in matri- 24.38.
age vnto the day that Noe went into the Arke: *1. pet.*
and the flood came and deſtroyed them all. 3.20.
28 * Likewiſe alſo, as it was in the dayes of Lot, *Gene.*
they ate, they dranke, they bought, they ſolde, 19.24.
they planted, they built. 29 But in the day that

Lot

Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and brim-
stone from heauen, & destroyed thē all. 26 Af-
ter these *examples* shall it be in the day when
the Sonne of man is reueiled. 31 At that day he
that is vpon the house, & his stuffe in his house,
let him not come downe to take it out: and he
that is in the field likewise, let him not turne
Gene. backe to that he left behinde. 32 * Remember
19.26. Lots wife. 33 * Whosoeuer will seeke to saue
Chap. his soule, shall lose it: and whosoeuer shall lose
9 24. it, shall get it life. 34 * I tell you, in that night
Matt. there shalbe two in one bed: the one shalbe re-
24.41. ceiued, and the other shalbe left. 35 Two wo-
men shalbe grinding together: the one shalbe
taken, and the other shalbe left. 36 Two shalbe
in the field: one shalbe receiued, and another
shalbe left. 37 And they answered, and sayd to
him, Where, Lord? And he sayd vnto them,
Matt. * Whereseoeuer the body is, thither shall also the
24.28 egles be gathered together.

CHAP. 18. 2 *The vnrighteous Iudge.*
10 *The Pharisee and Publicane.*

AND he spake also a parable vnto them, *to this*
Rom. *end* that they * ought alwayes to pray, and
12.12. not to wax faint, 2 Saying, There was a Iudge
1.Thes. in a certaine city, which feared not God, neither
5.17. reuerenced man. 3 And there was a widow in
that city, which came vnto him, saying, Doe me
iustice against mine aduersary. 4 And he would
not of a long time: but afterward he said with
himselfe, Though I feare not God, nor reue-
rence

reuer man, 5 Yet becauſe this widow troubleth me, I will doe her right, leaſt at the laſt ſhe come and make mee weary. 6 And the Lord ſayd, Heare what the vnrighteous Iudge ſayth. 7 Now ſhall not God auenge his elect, which cry day and night vnto him, yea, though he ſuffer long for them? 8 I tell you he will auenge them quickly: but when the Sonne of man cõmeth, ſhall he finde faith on the earth? 9 Hee ſpake alſo this parable vnto certaine, which truſted in themſelues that they were iuſt, and deſpiſed other: 10 Two men went vp into the Temple to pray: the one a Phariſe, and the other a Publicane. 11 The Phariſe ſtood & prayed thus with himſelfe, O God, I thanke thee, that I am not as other men, extortioners, vniuſt, adulterers, or euen as this Publicane. 12 I faſt twiſe in the weeke: I giue tithe of all that euer I poſſeſſe. 13 But the Publicane ſtanding afarre off, would not lift vp ſo much as his eyes to heauen, but ſmot his breaſt, ſaying, O God be merciful to me a ſinner. 14 I tell you, this man departed to his houſe iuſtified, rather then the other: * for euery man that exalteth himſelfe, ſhalbe brought low, and he that humbleth himſelfe, ſhall be exalted. 15 *They brought vnto him alſo babes that he ſhould touch them. And when his diſciples ſaw it, they rebuked them. 16 But Ieſus called them vnto him, and ſayd, Suffer the babes to come vnto me, and forbid them not: for of ſuch is the kingdome of God. 17 Verely I ſay vnto you, whoſoeuer

Chap. 14. 11.

Mat. 19. 13. marke 10. 13.

whosoeuer receiueth not the kingdome of God
Mat. as a babe, he shall not enter therein. 18 * Then
19.16. a certaine ruler asked him, saying, Good master,
marke what ought I to doe, to inherit eternall life?
10.7. 19 And Iesus said vnto him, Why callest thou
me good? none is good saue one, *euen* God.
Exod. 20 Thou knowest the commandements, * Thou
20.13. shalt not commit adultery: Thou shalt not kill:
Thou shalt not steale: Thou shalt not beare
false witnesse: Honor thy father & thy mother.
21 And he said, All these haue I kept from my
youth. 22 Now when Iesus heard that, he said
vnto him, Yet lackest thou one thing. Sell all that
euer thou hast, & distribute vnto the poore, and
thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, & come & fol-
low me. 23 But when he heard those things, he
was very heauy: for he was marueilous rich.
24 And when Iesus saw him very sorowful, he
sayd, With what difficulty shall they that haue
riches, enter into the kingdome of God?
25 Surely it is easier for a camell to go through
a needles eye, then for a rich man to enter into
the kingdome of God. 26 Then sayd they that
heard it, And who then can be saued? 27 And
he sayd, The things which are vnpossible with
Mat. men, are possible with God. 28 * Then Peter
19.27. sayd, Loe, we haue left all, and followed thee.
marke 29 And he sayd vnto them, Verely I say vnto
10.28. you, there is no man that hath left house, or pa-
rents, or brethren, or wife, or children for the
kingdome of Gods sake, 30 Which shall not
receiue

receiue much more in this world, and in the world to come life euerlasting. 31 * Then Iesus tooke vnto him the twelue, & sayd vnto them, beholde, we go vp to Hierusalem, and all things shall be fulfilled to the Sonne of man, that are written by the Prophets. 32 For he shalbe deliuered vnto the Gentiles, & shalbe mocked, and shalbe spitefully entreated, & shalbe spitted on. 33 And when they haue scourged him, they will put him to death: but the third day he shal rise againe. 34 But they vnderstood none of these things, and this saying was hid from them, neither perceiued they the things which were spoken. 35 * And it came to passe, that as he was come nere vnto Iericho, a certaine blinde man sate by the way side begging. 36 And when he heard y people passe by, he asked what it meant. 37 And they sayd vnto him, that Iesus of Nazareth passed by. 38 Then he cried, saying, Iesus the sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me. 39 And they which went before, rebuked him that he should hold his peace: but he cried much more, O Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me. 40 And Iesus stood still, and commaunded him to be brought vnto him. And when he was come nere, he asked him, 41 Saying, What wilt thou that I do vnto thee? And he sayd, Lord, that I may receiue my sight. 42 And Iesus sayd vnto him, Receiue thy sight: thy faith hath saued thee. 43 Then immediatly he receiued his sight, and followed him, praising God; and all the people,

Matt. 20.17 *marke* 10.32.

Mat. 20.29 *marke* 10.46.

ple, when they saw *this*, gaue prayse to God.

CHAP. 19. 13 *The parable of the ten talents.*

NOw when Iesus entred and passed through Iericho, 2 Beholde, there was a man named Zaccheus, which *was* the chiefe receiuer of the tribute, and he was rich. 3 And he sought to see Iesus, who he should be, and could not for the preasse, because he was of a low stature. 4 Wherefore he ran before, and climed vp into a wilde fig tree, that he might see him: for he should come that *way*. 5 And when Iesus came to the place, he looked vp, and saw him, & said vnto him, Zacchæus, come downe at once: for to day I must abide at thine house. 6 Then he came downe hastily, and receiued him ioyfully. 7 And when all they saw it, they murmured, saying, that he was gone in to lodge with a sinfull man. 8 And Zaccheus stood foorth, and said vnto the Lord, Beholde, Lord, the halfe of my goods I giue to the poore: and if I haue taken from any man by forged cauillation, I restore him foure folde. 9 Then Iesus said vnto him, This day is saluation come vnto this house, forasmuch as he is also become the sonne of Abraham. 10 * For the Sonne of man is come to seeke, and to saue that which was lost. 11 And while they heard these things, he continued and spake a parable, because he was nere to Hierusalem, & because also they thought that the kingdome of God should shortly appeare. 12 He sayd therefore, * A certaine noble man went

Matt. 18.11.

Mat. 25.14.

12 farre countrey, to receiue for himselfe a kingdome, and so to come againe. 13 And he called his ten seruants, and deliuered them ten pieces of money, and said vnto them, Occupie till I come. 14 Now his citizens hated him, and sent an ambassage after him, saying, We will not haue this man to reigne ouer vs. 15 And it came to passe, when he was come againe, and had receiued his kingdome, that he commaunded the seruants to be called to him, to whom he gaue his money, that he might knowe what euery man had gained. 16 Then came the first, saying, Lorde, thy piece hath encreased tenne pieces. 17 And he said vnto him, Well good seruant: because thou hast bene faithfull in a very little thing, take thou authoritie ouer tenne cities. 18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy piece hath encreased fiue pieces. 19 And to the same he said, Be thou also ruler ouer fiue cities. 20 So another came, and said, Lord, behold thy piece, which I haue laid vp in a napkin: 21 For I feared thee, because thou art a straite man: thou takest vp that thou layedst not downe, & reapest that thou diddest not sow. 22 Then he said vnto him, Of thine owne mouth will I iudge thee, O euil seruant. Thou knewest that I am a straite man, taking vp that I laid not downe, and reaping that I did not sowe. 23 Wherefore then gauest not thou my money into the banke, that at my comming I might haue required it with vsurie? 24 And he said to them, that stoode by,

Take from him that piece, and giue it him that hath tenne pieces. 25 (And they said vnto him, Lord, he hath ten pieces) 26 *For I say vnto you, that vnto all them that haue, it shalbe giuen: and from him that hath not, euen that he hath, shall be taken from him. 27 Moreouer, those mine enemies, which would not that I should reigne ouer them, bring hither, and slay them before me. 28 And when he had thus spoken, he went forth before, ascending vp to Hierusalem. 29 * And it came to passe, when he was come neere to Bethphage, and Bethania, besides the mount which is called *the mount* of Olines, he sent two of his disciples, 30 Saying, Go ye to the towne which is before you, wherein, assoone as ye are come, ye shall finde a colte tyed, whereon neuer man sate: loose him, & bring him *hither*. 31 And if any man aske you, why ye loose *him*, thus shall ye say vnto him, Because the Lord hath need of him. 32 So they that were sent, went their way, & found it as he had said vnto them. 33 And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof said vnto them, Why loose ye the colte? 34 And they said, The Lord hath need of him. 35 * So they brought him to Iesus, and they cast their garments on the colte, and set Iesus thereon. 36 And as he went, they spred their clothes in the way. 37 And when he was nowe come neere to the going downe of the mount of Olines, the whole multitude of the disciples began to reioyce, and to praise God with a loude

Chap. 18. matt. 13.12.

Mat. 21.1. mark. 11.1.

Matt. 21.7. John 12.14

voyce,

voyce, for all the great workes that they had seene, 38 Saying, Blessed *be* the King that commeth in the Name of the Lord: peace in heauen, and glory in the highest *places*. 39 Then some of the Pharises of the companie said vnto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples. 40 But he answered, and said vnto them, I tell you, that if these should hold their peace, the stones would crie. 41 * And when he was come neere, he behelde the Citie, and wept for it, 42 Saying, O if thou haddest euen knowen at the least in this thy day those things, which *belong* vnto thy peace! but nowe are they hid from thine eyes. 43 For the dayes shall come vpon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compasse thee rounde, and keepe thee in on euery side, 44 And shall make thee euen with the ground, and thy children which are in thee, and they shall not leaue in thee a stone vpon a stone, because thou knewest not that season of thy visitation. 45 *He went also into the Temple, and beganne to cast out them that solde therein, and them that bought, 46 Saying vnto them, It is written, * Mine house is the house of prayer, *but ye haue made it a denne of thieues. 47 And he taught dayly in the Temple. And the hie Priests and the Scribes, and the chiefe of the people sought to destroy him. 48 But they coulde not finde what they might doe to him: for all the people hanged vpon him, when they heard him.

(Chap. 21.6.)

(Mat. 21.13. Mark. 11.17. Isai. 56.7. Iere. 7.11.)

CHAP. 20. 9. *The vineyard let out to husbandmen.*

Matt. 21.23 Mark. 11.27. AND * it came to passe, that on one of those dayes, as he taught the people in the Temple, and preached the Gospel, the high Priestes and the Scribes came vpon him with ỹ Elders, 2 And spake vnto him, saying, Tell vs by what authoritie thou doest these things, or who is he that hath giuen thee this authoritie? 3 And he answered, and said vnto them, I also will aske you one thing: tell me therefore: 4 The baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men? 5 And they reasoned within thẽselues, saying, If we shal say, From heauen, he wil say, Why then beleeued ye him not? 6 But if we shall say, Of men, all the people will stone vs: for they be perswaded that Iohn was a Prophet. 7 Therefore they answered, that they could not tell whence it *was*. 8 Then Iesus saide vnto them, Neither tell I you, by what authoritie I doe these things.

Matt. 21.33. Mark. 12.1. Esai. 5.1. Ierem. 2.21. 9 *Then began he to speake to the people this parable, A certaine man planted a vineyard, and let it foorth to husbandmen: and went into a strange countrey, for a great time. 10 And at the time cõuenient, he sent a seruant to the husbandmen, that they should giue him of the fruite of the vineyard: but the husbandmen did beate him, and sent him away emptie. 11 Againe he sent yet another seruant: and they did beate him, and foule entreated him, & sent him away emptie. 12 Moreouer he sent the third, and him they

they wounded, and cast out. 15 Then said the Lord of the vineyard, What shall I doe? I will send my beloued Sonne, it may be that they will doe reuerence, when they see him. 14 But when the husbandmen sawe him, they reasoned with themselues, saying, This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, that the inheritance may be ours. 15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What shall the Lord of the vineyard therefore doe vnto them? 16 He will come and destroy these husbandmen, and will giue out his vineyard to others. But when they heard it, they said, God forbid. 17 And he beheld them, & said, What meaneth this then that is written, *The stone that the builders refused, that is made the head of the corner? *Psal. 118.22.

18 Whosoeuer shall fall vpon that stone, shall be broken: and on whomsoeuer it shall fall, it will grinde him to powder. 19 Then the hie Priests & the Scribes the same houre went about to lay hands on him, (but they feared the people) for they perceiued that he had spoken this parable against them. 20 *And they watched him, and sent foorth spies, which should faine themselues iust men, to take him in his talke, and to deliuer him vnto the power and authoritie of the gouernour. *Matt. 22. Mark 12.

21 And they asked him, saying, Master, we knowe that thou sayest and teachest right, neither doest thou accept mans person, but teachest the way of God truely. 22 Is it lawfull for vs to giue Cæsar tribute or no? 23 But he perceiued their craftinesse, and

said vnto them, Why tempt ye me? 24 Shew me a penie: Whose image and superscription hath it? They answered, & said, Cesars. 25 Then
Rom. 13.7. he said vnto them, *Giue then vnto Cesar the things which are Cesars, & to God, those which are Gods. 26 And they could not reprooue his saying before the people: but they marueiled
Matt. 22.23 Mark. 12.18 at his answere, and held their peace. 27 *Then came to him certaine of the Sadducees (which deny that there is any resurrection) and they asked him, 28 Saying, Master, *Moses wrote vnto vs,
Deut. 25.5. If any mans brother die hauing a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise vp seede to his brother. 29 Nowe there were seuen brethren, & the first tooke a wife, and hee died without children. 30 And the second tooke the wife, and he died childlesse. 31 Then the third tooke her: and so likewise the seuen died, and left no children. 32 And last of all the woman died also. 33 Therefore at the resurrection, whose wife of them shall she be? for seuen had her to wife. 34 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto them, The children of this world marrie wiues, and are married. 35 But they which shall be counted worthy to enioy that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marrie wiues, neither are married. 36 For they can die no more, forasmuch as they are equall vnto the Angels, and are the sonnes of God, since they are the children of the resurrection. 37 And that the dead shal rise againe, euen

* Moses

Moses shewed it besides the bush, when he *Exod.*
said, The Lord † the God of Abraham, and the 3.6.
God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob. 38 For he
is not the God of the dead, but of them which
liue: for all liue vnto him. 39 Then certaine
of the Scribes answered, and said, Master, thou
hast well said. 40 And after that, durst they not
aske him any thing at all. 41 *Then said he vnto *Mat.*
them, How say they that Christ is Dauids sonne? 22.42
42 And Dauid himselfe sayth in the booke of *mark.*
the Psalmes, * The Lord said vnto my Lord, Sit 12.35
at my right hand. 43 Til I shall make thine ene- *Psal.*
mies thy footestoole 44 Seeing Dauid calleth 110.1
him Lord, howe is he then his Sonne? 45 Then
in the audience of all the people, he said vnto
his disciples, 46 *Beware of the Scribes, which *Chap.*
willingly goe in long robes, & loue salutations 11.43
in the markets, and the highest seates in the as-
semblies, and the chiefe roomes at feastes:
47 Which deuoure widowes houses, and in
shewe make long prayers: These shall receiue
greater damnation.

CHAP. 21. 1. *The widowes mite.* 5 *The destruction of Ierusalem.*

AND * as he beheld, he saw ‖ rich men, which *Mark*
cast their gifts into the treasurie. 2 And he 12.41
saw also a certaine poore widow which cast in
thither two mites. 3 And he said, Of a trueth I
say vnto you, that this poore widow hath cast in
more then they all. 4 For they all haue of their
superfluitie cast into the offerings of God: but she

of her penurie hath cast in al the liuing that
Chap. had. 5 *Now as some spake of ỹ Temple, how
19.4. was garnished with goodly stones, & with
matt. secrate things, he saide, 6 Are these the thing
24.1. that ye looke vpon? the daies wil come, when
mark. a stone shal not be left vpon a stone, ỹ shall not
13.1. be throwen downe. 7 Then they asked him,
saying, Master, but when shal these things be?
what signe *shal* there *be*, when these things shal
Ephes. come to passe? 8 *And he said, Take heede that
5.6. ye be not deceiued: for many will come in my
2.*thes.* Name, saying, I am *Christ*, and the time draweth
2.3. neere: followe ye not them therefore. 9 And
when ye heare of warres and seditions, be not a-
fraide: for these things must first come, but the
end followeth not by & by. 10 Then said he vn-
to them, Nation shal rise against nation, & king-
Mat. dome against kingdome; 11 * And great earth-
24.7. quakes shalbe in diuers places, and hunger, and
pestilence, & feareful things, & great signes shal
there be from heauen. 12 But before all these,
they shall lay their handes on you, & persecute
you, deliuering you vp to the assemblies, & into
prisons, & bring you before Kings & rulers, for
my Names sake. 13 And this shall turne to you,
Chap. for a testimoniall. 14 * Lay it vp therefore in
12.22 your hearts, that ye cast not before hand what
matt. ye shal answere. 15 For I wil giue you a mouth
10.19. and wisedome, where against all your aduer-
mark. saries shal not be able to speake, nor resist. 16 You
13.11. ye shalbe betrayed also of your parents, and of

you

your brethren, & kinsmen, & friends, and some of
you shal they put to death. 17 And ye shall be
hated of all men for my Names sake. 18 *Yet *Matt.
there shall not one haire of your heads perish. 10.30
19 By your patience possesse your soules. 20 *And *Dan.
when ye see Hierusalem besieged with souldi- 9.27.
ers, then vnderstand that the desolation thereof *matt.
is neere. 21 Then let them which are in Iudea 24.15
flee to the mountaines: and let them which are *mark.
in the middes thereof, depart out: and let not 13.14
them that are in the countrey, enter therein.
22 For these be the dayes of vengeance, to ful-
fill all things that are written. 23 But wo be to
them that be with childe, and to them that giue
sucke in those dayes: for there shall be great di-
strese in this land, and wrath ouer this people.
24 And they shall fall on the edge of the sword,
and shall be led captines into al nations, & Hie-
rusalem shalbe troden vnder foote of the Gen-
tiles, vntill the time of the Gentiles be fulfilled.
25 Then there shalbe signes in the Sunne, & in *Isai.
the moone, & in the starres, and vpon the earth 13.10.
trouble among the nations with perplexitie: the *ezek.
sea & the waters shal roare. 26 And mens hearts 32.7.
shall faile them for feare, and for looking after *matt.
those things which shall come on the worlde: 24.29
for the powers of heauen shalbe shaken. 27 And *mark.
then shall they see the Sonne of man come in a 13.24
cloud, with power & great glory. 28 And when
these things begin to come to passe, then looke *Rom.
vp, and lift vp your heads, *for your redemption 8.23.

draweth

drawe̅th neere. 29 And he spake to them a̅ parable, Behold, the fig tree and all trees, when they nowe shoote forth, ye seeing them, know of your owne selues, that sommer is then nye. 31 So likewise ye, whē ye see these things come to passe, know ye that the kingdome of God is neere. 32 Verely I say vnto you, This age shall not passe, till all *these* things be done. 33 Heauen & earth shal passe away, but my words shal
Rom. 13.13. not passe away. 34 *Take heede to your selues, least at any time your hearts be oppressed with surfetting & drunkennes, & cares of this life, & lest that day come on you at vnwares. 35 For as a snare shall it come on al them that dwell on the face of ỹ whole earth. 36 Watch therefore and pray continually, that ye may be counted worthy to escape all these things that shal come to passe, and that ye may stand before ỹ Sonne of man. 37 Nowe in the day time he taught in the Temple, and at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is called *the mount* of Olives. 38 And all the people came in the morning to him, to heare him in the Temple.

CHAP. 22. 3. *Christ is solde and iudged.*

Mat. 26.1. mark. 14.1. NOw the *feast of vnleauened bread drewe neere, which is called ỹ Passeouer. 2 And ỹ hie Priests & Scribes sought how they might kill him: for they feared the people. 3 *Then
Matt. 26.14 entred Satā into Iudas, who was called Iscariot,
mark. 14.10 and was of the number of the twelue. 4 And he went his way, and communed w̄ the hie Priests and

and captaines, how he might betray him to thē.
5 So they were glad, & agreed to giue him mo-
ney. 6 And he consented, & sought opportunitie
to betray him vnto them, when ỹ people were
away. 7 Thē came ỹ day of vnleauened bread, *Mat.*
when the Passeouer must be sacrificed. 8 And he 26.17.
sent Peter and Iohn, saying, Goe and prepare vs
the Passeouer, that we may eate it. 9 And they
said to him, Where wilt thou, that we prepare
it? 10 Then he said vnto them, Behold, when ye
be entred into the citie, there shall a man meete
you, bearing a pitcher of water: follow him into
the house that he entreth in, 11 And say vnto the
good man of the house, The Master sayeth vnto
thee, Where is the lodging where I shall eate
my Passeouer with my disciples? 12 Then he
shall shewe you a great hie chamber trimmed:
there make it ready. 13 So they went & found
as he had said vnto them, and made ready the
Passeouer. 14 * And when the houre was come, *Matt.*
he sate downe, & the twelue Apostles with him. 26.20
15 Then he said vnto them, I haue earnestly de-
sired to eate this Passeouer with you, before I
suffer. 16 For I say vnto you, Henceforth I will
not eate of it any more, vntill it be fulfilled in
the kingdome of God. 17 And he tooke the *Mat.*
cup, and gaue thankes, and said, Take this, & di- 26.26.
uide it among you. 18 For I say vnto you, I will *mark.*
not drinke of ỹ fruit of the vine, vntil the king- 14.22.
dome of God be come. 19 * And hee tooke *1.cor.*
bread, & when he had giuen thankes, he brake 11.24.

L 4

it, and gaue to them, saying, This is my body
which is giuen for you: do this in y remem-
of me. 20 Likewise also after supper he tooke the
cup, saying, This cup is the newe Testament
Matt. my blood, which is shed for you. 21 *Yet
26.21. hold, the hand of him that betrayeth me, is with
mark. mee at the table. 22 And truely the Sonne of
14.18. man goeth as it is appointed: but woe be to that
psal. man, by whome he is betrayed. 23 Then they
41.9. began to enquire among themselues, which of
Mat. them it should be, that should do that. 24 *And
20.25. there arose also a strife among them, which of
mark. them should seeme to be the greatest. 25 But he
10.42. said vnto them, The kings of the Gentiles reigne
ouer them, and they that beare rule ouer them,
are called bountifull. 26 But ye shal not be
but let the greatest amōg you be as the leaſtest,
the chiefest as he that serueth. 27 For whether is
greater, he that sitteth at table, or he that serueth?
Is not he that sitteth at table? And I am among
you as hee that serueth. 28 And yee are they
Mat. which haue cōtinued with me in my tentations.
19.28. 29 Therefore I appoint vnto you a kingdome,
1.Pet. as my father hath appointed to me. 30 *That ye
5.8. may eate, and drinke at my table in my king-
Mat. dome, and sit on seates, and iudge the twelue
26.34. tribes of Israel. 31 And the Lord said, Simon, Si-
mar. mōn, Behold, *Satan hath desired you, to winnow
14.39. you as wheate. 32 But I haue prayed for thee,
ioh. that thy faith faile not: therefore when thou art
13.38. conuerted, strengthen thy brethren. 33 *And he

said vnto him, Lord, I am ready to goe with thee into prison, and to death. 34 But he said, I tell thee, Peter, the cocke shall not crow this day, before thou hast thrise denied that thou knowest me. 35 And he said vnto them, *When I sent you without bagge and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they sayd, Nothing. 36 Then he said to them, But now hee that hath a bagge, let him take it, and likewise a scrip: and he that hath none, let him sel his coate, and buye a sword. 37 For I say vnto you, that yet the same which is written, must be performed in mee, *Euen with the wicked was hee numbred: for doubtlesse these things which *are written* of mee, haue an end. 38 And they said, Lord, behold, here are two swordes. And he saide vnto them, It is ynough. 39 *And he came out, & went (as he was wont) to the mount of Olines: and his disciples also followed him. 40 * And when he came to the place, he saide to them, Pray, least ye enter into temptation. 41 And he was drawen aside frō them about a stones cast, and kneeled downe, and prayed, 42 Saying, Father, if thou wilt, take away this cup from me: neuertheless, not my will, but thine bee done. 43 And there appeared an Angel vnto him from heauen, comforting him. 44 But being in an agonie, he prayed more earnestly: and his sweate was like drops of blood, falling downe to the ground. 45 And he arose vp from prayer, and came to *his* disciples, & found them sleeping for heauines. 46 And he

Mat. 10. 9.

Isai. 53.12.

Matt. 26.36

Mat. 26.42.

mark. 14.38.

he ſaid vnto them, Why ſleepe ye? riſe & pray,
Mat. 26.47 *mark.* 14.43. *Iohn* 18.3. leaſt ye enter into tentation. 47 *And while he yet ſpake, behold, a company, & he that was cal-led Iudas one of the twelue, went before them, and came neere vnto Ieſus to kiſſe him. 48 And Ieſus ſaide vnto him, Iudas, betrayeſt thou the Sonne of man with a kiſſe? 49 Now when they which were about him, ſaw what would follow, they ſaid vnto him, Lord, ſhal we ſmite w sword? 50 And one of them ſmote a ſeruant of the hie Prieſt, and ſtroke off his right eare. 51 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſaide, Suffer them thus far, and he touched his eare, and healed him. 52 Then Ieſus ſaide vnto the hie Prieſtes, and captaines of the temple, and the Elders which were come to him, Be ye come out as vnto a thiefe w ſwords and ſtaues? 53 When I was dayly with you in the Temple, ye ſtretched not forth the handes a-gainſt me: but this is your very houre, and the
Matt. 26.58. *Matt.* 26.58, 69. *mark.* 14.66 power of darknes. 54 *Then tooke they him, and led him, and brought him to the hie Prieſtes houſe. And Peter followed afarre off. 55 *And when they had kindled a fire in the mids of the hall, and were ſet downe together, Peter alſo ſate downe among them. 56 And a certaine mayd behelde him as he ſate by the fire, and ha-uing well looked on him, ſaid, This man was al-ſo with him. 57 But he denied him, ſaying, Wo-man, I know him not. 58 And after a litle while, another man ſaw him, and ſaid, Thou art alſo of them. But Peter ſaid, Man, I am not. 59 And a-bout

boute the space of an houre after, a certaine other affirmedly saying, Verely euen this man was with him: for hee is also a Galilean. 60 And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediatly, whyle hee yet spake, the cocke crewe. 61 Then the Lord turned backe, and looked vpon Peter: and Peter remembred the worde of the Lord, how he had said vnto him, *Before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie me thrise. 62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly. 63 * And the men that held Iesus, mocked him, and stroke him. 64 And when they had blindfolded him, they smote him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophecie who it is y smote thee. 65 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him. 66 *And assoone as it was day, the Elders of the people, and the hie Priests and the Scribes came together, and ledde him into their councel, 67 Saying, Art thou that Christ? tell vs. And he said vnto them, If I tell you, yee will not beleeue it. 68 And if also I aske you, ye wil not answere me, nor let me goe. 69 Hereafter shal the Sonne of man sit at the right hand of the power of God. 70 Then said they all, Art thou then the Sonne of God? And he said to them, Ye say, that I am. 71 Then said they, What neede we any further witnesse? for we our selues haue heard it of his owne mouth.

Matt. 26. 34.
John 13. 38.
Matt. 26. 67
Matt. 27. 1. *mark.* 15. 1. *john* 18. 28

CHAP. 23. *Christ crucified.*

THen the whole multitude of them arose, and led him vnto Pilate. 2 And they began to accuse

he said vnto them, Why sleepe ye? rise & pray,
Mat. 26.47 *mark.* 14.43. *Iohn* 18.3. least ye enter into tentation. 47 *And while he yet spake, behold, a company, & he that was called Iudas one of the twelue, went before them, and came neere vnto Iesus to kisse him. 48 And Iesus saide vnto him, Iudas, betrayest thou the Sonne of man with a kisse? 49 Now when they which were about him, saw what would follow, they said vnto him, Lord, shal we smite w sword? 50 And one of them smote a seruant of the hie Priest, and stroke off his right eare. 51 Then Iesus answered, and saide, Suffer *them* thus far, and he touched his eare, and healed him. 52 Then Iesus saide vnto the hie Priestes, and captaines of the temple, and the Elders which were come to him, Be ye come out as vnto a thiefe w swords and staues? 53 When I was dayly with you in the Temple, ye stretched not forth the handes against me: but this is your very houre, and the
Matt. 26.58. *Matt.* 26.58, 69. *mark.* 14.66 power of darknes. 54 *Then tooke they him, and led him, and brought him to the hie Priestes house. And Peter followed afarre off. 55 *And when they had kindled a fire in the mids of the hall, and were set downe together, Peter also sate downe among them. 56 And a certaine mayd beheld him as he sate by the fire, and hauing well looked on him, said, This man was also with him. 57 But he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not. 58 And after a litle while, another man saw him, and said, Thou art also of them. But Peter said, Man, I am not. 59 And a bout

bout the space of an houre after, a certaine other affirmed, saying, Verely euen this man was with him: for hee is also a Galilean. 60 And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediatly, while hee yet spake, the cocke crewe. 61 Then the Lord turned backe, and looked vpon Peter: and Peter remembred the worde of the Lord, how he had said vnto him, *Before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie me thrise. 62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly. 63 * And the men that held Iesus, mocked him, and stroke him. 64 And when they had blindfolded him, they smote him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophecie who it is ỹ smote thee. 65 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him. 66 *And assoone as it was day, the Elders of the people, and the hie Priests and the Scribes came together, and ledde him into their council, 67 Saying, Art thou that Christ? tell vs. And he said vnto them, If I tell you, yee will not beleeue it. 68 And if also I aske you, ye wil not answere me, nor let me goe. 69 Hereafter shal the Sonne of man sit at the right hand of the power of God. 70 Then said they all, Art thou then the Sonne of God? And he said to them, Ye say, that I am. 71 Then said they, What neede we any further witnesse? for we our selues haue heard it of his owne mouth.

Matt. 26.34. *John* 13.38. *Matt.* 26.67 *Matt.* 27.1. *mark.* 15.1. *john* 18.28

CHAP. 23. *32. Christ crucified.*

THen the whole multitude of them arose, and led him vnto Pilate. 2 And they began to accuse

accuse him, saying, We haue found this man per-
Matt. uerting the nation, & forbidding to pay tribute
22.21. to Cæsar, saying, That hee is Christ a king.
Matt. 3 *And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the
27.11. King of the Iewes? And he answered him, & said,
mark. Thou sayest it. 4 Then said Pilate to the high
15.2. Priests, and to the people, I finde no fault in this
iohn man. 5 But they were the more fierce, saying,
18.33. He moueth the people, teaching throughout all
Iudea, beginning at Galile, euen to this place.
6 Now when Pilate heard of Galile, he asked
whether the man were a Galilean. 7 And when
he knew that he was of Herods iurisdiction, he
sent him to Herod, which was also at Hierusa-
lem in those dayes. 8 And when Herod saw Ie-
sus, he was exceedingly glad: for hee was desi-
rous to see him of a long season, because he had
heard many things of him, and trusted to haue
seene some signe done by him. 9 Then questio-
ned he with him of many things: but he answered
him nothing. 10 The hie Priests also & Scribes
stoode foorth, and accused him vehemently.
11 And Herod with his men of warre despised
him, and mocked him, & arayed him in white, &
sent him againe to Pilate. 12 And the same day Pi-
late & Herod were made friends together: for be-
fore they were enemies one to another. 13 Then
Pilate called together the hie Priests and the ru-
Mat. lers, and the people, 14 *And said vnto them,
27.23. Ye haue brought this man vnto me, as one that
peruerted the people: and beholde, I haue exa-
mined

ned him before you, and haue found no fault in this man, of those things whereof yee accuse him: 15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him, and lo, nothing worthy of death is done of him. 16 I will therefore chastise him, and let him loose. 17 (For of necessitie he must haue let one loose vnto them at the feast.) 18 Then all the multitude cried at once, saying, Away with this, and deliuer vs Barabbas: 19 Which for a certaine insurrection made in the citie, and murther, was cast in prison: 20 Then Pilate spake againe to them, willing to let Iesus loose. 21 But they cried, saying, Crucifie, crucifie him. 22 And he said vnto them the third time, But what euill hath he done? I finde no cause of death in him: I will therefore chastise him, & let him loose. 23 But they were instant with loud voices, and required that he might be crucified: and ℣ voices of them & of the hie Priests preuailed. 24 So Pilat gaue sentence, ℣ it should be as they required. 25 And he let loose vnto them him, that for insurrection and murther was cast into prison, whom they desired, and deliuered Iesus to doe with him what they would. 26 *And as they led him away, they caught one Simon of Cyrene, coming out of the field, and on him they layd the crosse, to beare it after Iesus. 27 And there followed him a great multitude of people, & of women, which women bewailed and lamented him. 28 But Iesus turned backe vnto them, & said, Daughters of Hierusalem, weepe not for me, but weepe for your selues, &

Matt. 27.32 mark. 15.21.

for your children. 29 For behold, the dayes will come, when men shal say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs, that neuer bare, and the pappes which neuer gaue sucke. 30 Then shal they begin to say to the mountaines, * Fall on vs: and to
Isay 2. 19. the hils, Couer vs. 31 * For if they doe these
1. Pet. 4. 17. things to a greene tree, what shalbe done to the
dry? 32 * And there were two others, which
Matt. 27. 38 *mark.* 15. 27. *iohn* 19. 18. were euil doers, led with him to be slaine. 33 And when they were come to the place, which is called Caluary, there they crucified him, & the euil doers, one at the right hand, and the other at the left. 34 Then said Iesus, Father, forgiue them: for they know not what they do. And they parted his raiment, & cast lots. 35 And ye people stood, and beheld: and the rulers mocked him with them, saying, He saued others: let him saue himselfe, if hee bee that Christ, the Chosen of God. 36 The souldiers also mocked him, & came and offred him vineger, 37 And said, If thou be the King of ye Iewes, saue thy selfe. 38 And a superscription was also written ouer him, in Greeke letters, and in Latine, & in Hebrew, THIS IS THAT KING OF THE IEWES. 39 And one of the euill doers, which were hanged, railed on him, saying, If thou be that Christ, saue thy selfe & vs. 40 But the other answered, and rebuked him, saying, Fearest thou not God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? 41 We are in deed righteously *here*: for we receiue things worthy of that we haue done: but

this man hath done nothing amisse. 42 And he said vnto Iesus, Lord, remember me, when thou comest into thy kingdom. 43 Then Iesus said vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, to day shalt thou be with me in Paradise. 44 And it was about the sixth houre: and there was a darkenes ouer all the land, vntil the ninth houre. 45 And the Sonne was darkened, and the vaile of the Temple was rent through the mids. 46 And Iesus cried with a loud voice, and said, *Father, into thine hands I commend my spirit. And when he thus had said, he gaue vp the ghost. 47 Now when the Centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Of a suretie this man was iust. 48 And al the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breastes, and returned. 49 And all his acquaintance stoode a farre off, and the women that followed him from Galile, beholding these things. 50 *And behold, there was a man named Ioseph, which was a counseller, a good man and a iust. 51 (He did not consent to the counsell, and deede of them (*which was* of Arimathea, a citie of the Iewes: who also himselfe waited for the kingdome of God. 52 He went vnto Pilate, and asked the body of Iesus, 53 And tooke it downe, & wrapped it in a linnen cloth, & laid it in a tombe hewen out of a rocke, wherein was neuer man yet laid. 54 And that day was the preparation, and the Sabbath drew on. 55 And the women also ỳ followed after, which came with

Psal. 31.6.

Matt. 27.57. mark. 15.43. iohn 19.38.

him from Galile, beheld the ſepulchre, & how his body was layd. 56 And they returned, & prepared odours, and oyntments, and reſted the Sabbath *day* according to the commandement.

CHAP. 24. *Chriſtes reſurrection.*

Mar. 16. 1. *Iohn* 20. 1. NOw the firſt *day* of the weeke early in the morning, they came vnto the ſepulchre & brought the odours, which they had prepared, & certaine *women* w̄ them. 2 And they found the ſtone rolled away from the ſepulchre, 3 And went in, but found not the body of the Lord Ieſus. 4 And it came to paſſe, that as they were amaſed thereat, behold, two men ſuddenly ſtood by them in ſhining veſtures. 5 And as they were afraid, & bowed downe their faces to the earth, they ſaid to them, Why ſeeke ye him that liueth, among the dead? 6 He is not here, but is riſen

Chap. 9. 22. *matt.* 17. 23. *mark.* 9. 31. remember * how he ſpake vnto you, when hee was yet in Galile, 7 Saying, that the Sonne of man muſt be deliuered into the hands of ſinfull men, and be crucified, & the third day riſe againe. 8 And they remembred his words, 9 And returned from the ſepulchre, and told al theſe things vnto the eleuen, & to al the remnant. 10 Now it was Mary Magdalene & Ioanna, and Mary the *mother* of Iames, and the other women with them, which told theſe things vnto the Apoſtles. 11 But their words ſeemed vnto them, as a fained

Iohn 20. 6. thing, neither beleeued they them. 12 * Then aroſe Peter, and ranne vnto the ſepulchre, and looked in, and ſawe the linnen clothes layd by them.

themselues, and departed wondring in himselfe at that which was come to passe. 13 * And behold, two of them went that same day to a towne which was from Hierusalem about threescore furlongs, called Emmaus. And they talked together of all these things that were done. 15 And it came to passe, as they communed together, and reasoned, that Iesus himselfe drew neere, & went with them. 16 But their eyes were holden, that they could not know him. 17 And he said vnto them, What maner of communications are these that yee haue one to another as ye walke and are sad? 18 And the one (named Cleopas) answered and saide vnto him, Art thou onely a stranger in Hierusalem, & hast not knowen the things which are come to passe therein in these dayes? 19 And he said vnto them, What things? And they saide vnto him, Of Iesus of Nazareth, which was a Prophet, mighty in deede and in word before God, & al the people, 20 And how the hie Priests, & our rulers deliuered him to be condemned to death, & haue crucified him. 21 But we trusted ỹ it had bin he that should haue deliuered Israel, and as touching all these things, to day is the third day, that they were done. 22 Yea, and certaine women amõg vs made vs astonied, which came early vnto the sepulchre. 23 And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seene a vision of Angels, which said that he was aliue. 24 Therfore certaine of them which were with vs, went to the

Mat. 16.12.

sepulchre,& found it euen so as the women had said, but him they saw not. 25 Then he said vnto them, O fooles, and slow of heart to beleeue all that the Prophets haue spoken. 26 Ought not Christ to haue suffered these things, and to enter into his glory? 27 And he began at Moses, and at all the Prophets, and interpreted vnto them in all the Scriptures the things which were written of him. 28 And they drew neere vnto the towne, which they went to, but he made as though he would haue gone further. 29 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with vs: for it is towards night, and the day is far spent. So he went in to tary with them. 30 And it came to passe as he sate at table with them, he tooke the bread, and blessed, & brake it, and gaue it to them. 31 Then their eyes were opened, & they knew him: and he was no more seene of them. 32 And they said betweene themselues, Did not our hearts burne within vs, while he talked with vs by the way, & when he opened to vs the Scriptures? 33 And they rose vp the same houre, & returned to Hierusalem, and found the Eleuen gathered together, and them that were with them, 34 Which said, The Lord is risen in deed, & hath appeared to Simon. 35 Then they told what things were done in ỹ way, & how he was knowen of them in breaking of bread. 36 * And as they spake these things, Iesus himselfe stoode in the midst of them, & said vnto them, Peace be to you. 37 But they were abashed and afrayde, supposing that they

Mar. 16.14. Iohn 20.19.

they had ſeene a ſpirit. 38 Then ſaid hee vnto them, Why are ye troubled? and wherefore do doubts ariſe in your hearts? 39 Beholde mine hands and my feet: for it is I my ſelfe: handle me, and ſee: for a ſpirit hath no fleſh and bones, as ye ſee me haue. 40 And whē he had thus ſpoken, he ſhewed thē *his* hands & his feet. 41 And while they yet beleeued not for ioy, & woondered, he ſaid vnto them, Haue ye here any meate? 42 And they gaue him a piece of a broyled fiſh, and of an hony combe, 43 And he tooke it, and did eate before them. 44 And he ſaid vnto thē, Theſe are the words, which I ſpake vnto you while I was yet with you, that all muſt be fulfilled which are writtē of me in the Law of Moſes, and in the Prophets, & in the Pſalmes. 45 Then opened he their vnderſtanding, that they might vnderſtand ȳ Scriptures, 46 And ſaid vnto thē, Thus it is written, & thus it behooued Chriſt to ſuffer, and to riſe againe from the dead the third day; 47 And that repentance and remiſsion of ſinnes ſhould be preached in his Name among all nations, beginning at Hieruſalem. 48 Now ye are witneſſes of theſe things. 49 And behold, I do ſend the promiſe of my Father, vpon you: but tary ye in the city of Hieruſalem, vntill ye be endued with power frō on hie. 50 Afterward he led thē out into Bethania, & lift vp his hands & bleſſed them. 51 And it came to paſſe, that as he bleſſed them, * he departed from them, and was caried vp into heauen. 52 And they wor-

Iohn 15.26. act.1.4 Mark. 16.19. actes 1.9.

shipped him, and returned to Hierusalem with great ioy, 53 And were continually in the Temple, praising, and lauding God, AMEN.

THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS Christ, according to Iohn.

CHAP. 1. 1 *Christs eternitie and diuinitie.*

IN the beginning was that Word, and that Word was with God, & that Word was God. 2 This same was in the beginning with God. 3 * All things were made by it, and without it was made nothing that was made. 4 In it was life, & that life was that light of men. 5 And that light shineth in the darkenesse, & the darkenesse comprehended it not. 6 *There was a man sent from God, whose name was Iohn. 7 *This* same came for a witnesse, to beare witnes of that light, that all men through him might beleeue. 8 He was not that light, but *was sent* to beare witnesse of that light. 9 This was that true light, which lighteth euery man that commeth into the world. 10 He was in the world, & the world was * made by him: and the world knew him not. 11 He came vnto his owne, and his owne receiued him not. 12 But as many as receiued him, to them he gaue prerogatiue to be the sonnes of God, *euen* to them that beleeue in his Name, 13 Which are borne not of bloud, nor of ȳ will of the flesh, nor of the wil of man, but of God. 14 * And that Word was made flesh,

Coloss. 1.16. Matt. 3.1. marke 1.4. luke 3.2. Hebr. 1.3. Mat. 1.16.

flesh, & dwelt among vs, (and we saw * the glory thereof, as the glory of the only begottē Sonne of the Father) full of grace and trueth. 15 Iohn bare witnesse of him, and cried, saying, This was he of whom I sayd, He that commeth after me, was before me: for hee is better then I. 16 * And of his fulnesse haue all we receiued, & grace for grace. 17 For the Law was giuen by Moses: but grace & trueth came by Iesus Christ. 18 * No man hath seene God at any time: that only begotten Sonne, which is in the bosome of the Father, he hath declared him. 19 Then this is the record of Iohn, whē the Iewes sent Priests & Iewites from Hierusalem, to aske him, Who art thou? 20 And he confessed and denied not, & sayd plainly, * I am not that Christ. 20 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he sayd, I am not. Art thou that Prophet? And he answered, No. 22 Then sayd they vnto him, Who art thou, that we may giue an answere to them that sent vs? what sayest thou of thy selfe? 23 He sayd, * I am the voyce of him that crieth in the wilderneſſe, Make straight the way of the Lord, as sayd the Prophet Esaias. 24 Now they which were sent, were of the Pharises. 25 And they asked him, and sayd to him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, neither Elias, nor that Prophet? 26 Iohn answered them, saying, I baptize with water: but there is one among you, whom ye know not: 27 * He it is that commeth after me, which was before me,

Matt. 17.2. *2.pet.* 1.17. *Col.* 1.19. *1.Tim.* 6.16. *1.Iohn* 4.12. *Acts* 13.25. *Isay* 30.3. *matt.* 3.3. *luke* 3.4. *Matt.* 3.11. *marke* 1.7.

whose shooe latchet I am not woorthy to vn-
loose. 28 These things were done in Bethabara beyond Iordan, where Iohn did baptize.
29 The next day Iohn seeth Iesus comming vn-
to him, and sayeth, Beholde that lambe of God,
which taketh away the sinne of the world.
30 This is he of whom I sayd, after me com-
meth a man, which was before me: for he was
better then I. 31 And I knew him not: but be-
cause he should be declared to Israel, therefore
am I come, baptizing with water. 32 So Iohn
Mat. bare record, saying, * I beheld that Spirit come
3.16. downe from heauen, like a doue, and it abode
vpon him. 33 And I knew him not: but he that
sent me to baptize with water, hee sayd vnto
me, Vpon whom thou shalt see that Spirit come
downe, and tary still on him, that is he which
baptizeth with the holy Ghost. 34 And I saw,
and bare record that this is that Sonne of God.
35 The next day, Iohn stood againe, and two of
his disciples: 36 And he beheld Iesus walking
by, & said, Beholde the Lambe of God: 37 And
the two disciples heard him speake, and follow-
ed Iesus. 38 Then Iesus turned about, and saw
them follow, and sayd vnto them, What seeke
ye? And they sayd vnto him, Rabbi, (which is to
say by interpretation, Master) where dwellest
thou? 39 He sayd vnto them, Come and see.
They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode
with him that day: for it was about the tenth
houre. 40 Andrew, Simon Peters brother, was
one

one of the two which heard it of Iohn, and that; followed him. 41 The ſame found his brother Simon firſt, and ſayd vnto him, We haue found the Meſſias, which is by interpretation, that Chriſt. 42 And he brought him to Ieſus. And Ieſus beheld him, and ſayd, Thou art Simon the ſonne of Iona: thou ſhalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, a ſtone. 43 The day following, Ieſus would go into Galile, and found Philip, and ſayd vnto him, Follow me. 44 Now Philip was of Bethſaida, the city of Andrew and Peter. 45 Philip found Nathanael, and ſayd vnto him, We haue found him, of whom * Moſes did write in the Law, and the *Prophets, Ieſus that ſonne of Ioſeph, that was of Nazareth. 46 Then Nathanael ſayd vnto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip ſayd to him, Come, and ſee. 47 Ieſus ſaw Nathanael comming to him, and ſayd of him, Beholde, in deed an Iſraelite, in whō is no guile. 48 Nathanael ſayde vnto him, Whence kneweſt thou me? Ieſus anſwered, and ſayd vnto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou waſt vnder the figge tree, I ſaw thee. 49 Nathanael anſwered, and ſayd vnto him, Rabbi, thou art that Sonne of God: thou art that King of Iſrael. 50 Ieſus anſwered, and ſayd vnto him, Becauſe I ſayd vnto thee, I ſaw thee vnder the figge tree, beleeueſt thou? thou ſhalt ſee greater things then theſe. 51 And hee ſayd vnto him, Verely, verely I ſay vnto you,

Gene. 49. 10. deut. 18. 18. Iſay 4. 2. iere. 23. 5. & 33. 14. 15. 34. 2. & 37. 24. dan. 9. 24.

hereafter

hereafter shall ye see heauen open, and the An-
Gene. gels of God * ascending, and descending vpon
28.12. that Sonne of man.

CHAP. 2. 1 *Christes first miracle at the marriage in Cana of Galile.*

AND ỹ third day was there a marriage in Cana, *a towne* in Galile, & the mother of Iesus was there. 2 And Iesus was called also, and his disciples vnto the marriage. 3 Now when the wine failed, the mother of Iesus sayd vnto him, They haue no wine. 4 Iesus said vnto her, Woman, what haue I to do with thee? mine houre is not yet come. 5 His mother sayd vnto the seruants, Whatsoeuer he saith vnto you, doe it. 6 And there were set there, sixe waterpots of stone, after the maner of the purifying of the Iewes, conteining two or three firkins a piece. 7 And Iesus sayd vnto them, Fill the waterpots with water. Then they filled thē vp to the brim. 8 Then he said vnto thē, Draw out now & beare vnto the gouernour of the feast. So they bare it. 9 Now when the gouernour of the feast had tasted ỹ water that was made wine, (for he knew not whence it was: but the seruants, which drew the water knew) the gouernour of the feast called the bridegrome, 10 And said vnto him, All men at the beginning set forth good wine, and when men haue well drunke, then that which is worse: *but* thou hast kept backe the good wine vntill now. 11 This beginning of miracles did Iesus in Cana *a towne* of Galile, & shewed forth

his

his glory: and his disciples beleeued on him.
11 After that, he went downe into Capernaum, he & his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples: but they continued not many dayes there.
13 For the Iewes Passeouer was at hand. Therefore Iesus went vp to Hierusalem. 14 And he found in the Temple those that solde oxen and sheepe, and doues, & changers of money, sitting there. 15 Then hee made a scourge of small cords, & draue them out of the Temple with the sheepe and oxen, and powred out the changers money, and ouerthrew the tables, 16 And said vnto them that solde doues, Take these things hence: make not my fathers house, an house of marchandise. 17 And his disciples remembred, that it was written, * The zeale of thine house hath eaten me vp. 18 Then answered the Iewes, & said vnto him, What signe shewest thou vnto vs, that thou doest these things? 19 Iesus answered & sayd vnto them, * Destroy this Temple, & in three dayes I will raise it vp againe. 20 Then sayd the Iewes, Forty and sixe yeeres was this Temple in building, and wilt thou reare it vp in three dayes? 21 But he spake of the Temple of his body. 22 Also one therefore as he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembred that he thus sayd vnto them: and they beleeued the Scripture, and the word which Iesus had sayd.
23 Now when he was at Hierusalem at ỹ Passeoner in the feast, many beleeued in his Name, when they saw his miracles which he did.

Psal. 69.9.
Mat. 26.61. & 27. 40. *marke* 24.58. & 15. 29.

24 But

24 But Iesus did not commit himselfe vnto them, because he knew them all, 25 And had no need that any should testifie of man: for he knew what was in man.

CHAP. 3. 1 *Of regeneration.* 14 *The serpent in the wildernesse.*

THere was now a mã of the Phatises, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Iewes. 2 This man came to Iesus by night, and sayd vnto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man could doe these miracles that thou doest, except God were with him. 3 Iesus answered, and sayd vnto him, Verely, verely I say vnto thee, except a man be borne againe, hee cannot see the kingdome of God. 4 Nicodemus sayd vnto him, How can a man be borne which is olde? can he enter into his mothers wombe againe, and be borne? 5 Iesus answered, Verely, verely I say vnto thee, except that a man be borne of water and of the Spirit, he can not enter into the kingdome of God. 6 That which is borne of the flesh, is flesh: and that that is borne of the Spirit, is spirit. 7 Marueile not that I sayd to thee, Ye must be borne againe. 8 The winde bloweth where it listeth, & thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it commeth, & whither it goeth: so is euery man that is borne of the Spirit. 9 Nicodemus answered, and sayd vnto him, How can these things be? 10 Iesus answered, and sayd vnto him, Art thou a teacher of

of Israel, and knowest not these things? 11 Verely, verely I say vnto thee, wee speake that wee know, and testifie that we haue seene: but ye receiue not our witnes. 12 If whē I tel you earthly things, ye beleeue not how should ye beleeue, if I shall tel you of heauenly things? 13 For no man ascēdeth vp to heauen, but he that hath descended from heauen, that Sonne of man which is in heauen. 14 * And as Moses lift vp the serpent in the wildernes, so must that Sonne of man bee lifted vp, 15 That whosoeuer beleeueth in him, shoulde not perish, but haue eternall life. 16 *For God so loued the world, that he hath giuen his onely begotten Sonne, that whosoeuer beleeueth in him, should not perish, but haue euerlasting life. 17 *For God sent not his Sōne into the worlde, that hee shoulde condemne the world but that the world through him might be saued. 18 He that beleeueth in him, is not condemned: but hee that beleeueth not, is condemned already, because he hath not beleeued in the Name of that onely begotten Sonne of God. 19 * And this is the condemnation, that that light came into the world and men loued darknes rather then ỹ light, because their deeds were euil. 20 For euery man that euil doth, hateth the light, neither commeth to light, least his deedes should be reproued. 21 But he that doth trueth, commeth to the light, that his deedes might be made manifest, that they are wrought according to God. 22 After these things came Iesus & his

Num. 21. *chap.* 12. 32 *1. Ioh.* 4. 10 *Chap.* 9. 39. & 12. 47. *Chap.* 1. 9.

disciples

disciples into the land of Iudea, and there taried
Chap. with them, *and baptized. 23 And Iohn also bap-
4. 1. tized in Enon beside Salim, because there was
much water there: & they came, and were bap-
tized. 24 For Iohn was not yet cast into prison.
25 Then there arose a question betweene Iohns
disciples, & the Iewes about purifying. 26 And
they came vnto Iohn, and said vnto him, Rabbi,
he that was with thee beyond Iordane, to whō
Chap. thou * barest witnesse, beholde, he baptizeth,
3. 34. and all men come to him. 27 Iohn answered,
and said, A man can receiue nothing, except it be
giuen him from heauen. 28 Ye your selues are
Chap. my witnesses, that * I said, I am not the Christ,
1. 20. but that I am sent before him. 29 He that hath
the bride is the bridegrome: but the friend of
the bridegrome, which standeth & heareth him,
reioyceth greatly, because of the bridegromes
voyce. This my ioy therefore is fulfilled. 30 He
must increase, but I must decrease. 31 He that is
come from on hie, is aboue all: he that is of the
earth, is of the earth, and speaketh of the earth:
he that is from heauen, is aboue all. 32 And
what he hath seene and heard, that he testifieth:
but no man receiueth his testimonie. 33 He that
Rom. hath receiued his testimonie, hath sealed that
3. 4. * God is true. 34 For he, whom God hath sent,
Mat. speaketh the wordes of God: for God giueth
11. 27. him not the spirit by measure. 35 The Father
Aba. loueth the Sonne, and hath * giuen all things
2. 4. into his hand. 36 ¶ He that beleeueth in the

Sonne,

Sonne, hath euerlasting life, and he that obeyeth not the Sonne, shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him.

CHAP. 4. *Christ & the Samaritane woman.*

NOw when the Lord knewe, how the Pharises had heard, that Iesus made *& baptized moe disciples then Iohn, 2 (Though Iesus him selfe baptized not: but his disciples) 3 He left Iudea, & departed againe into Galile. 4 And he must needes go through Samaria. 5 Then came he to a citie of Samaria called Sychar, neere vnto the possession, ỹ * Iacob gaue to his sonne Ioseph. 6 And there was Iacobs wel. Iesus then wearied in the iourney, sate thus on the well: it was about the sixt houre. 7 There came a woman of Samaria to draw water. Iesus said vnto her, Giue me drinke. 8 For his disciples were gone away into the citie to buy meate. 9 Then said the woman of Samaria vnto him, Howe is it that thou being a Iewe, askest drinke of me, which am a woman of Samaria? For the Iewes meddle not with the Samaritanes. 10 Iesus answered, and said vnto her, If thou knewest that gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Giue me drinke, thou wouldest haue asked of him, & he would haue giuen thee water of life. 11 The woman said vnto him, Syr, thou hast nothing to drawe with, and the well is deepe: from whence then hast thou that water of life? 12 Art thou greater then our father Iacob, which gaue vs the well, and he himselfe dranke thereof, and

Chap. 3. 12.

Gen. 33. 19. & 48 22. Iosh. 24. 32

his ſonnes, and his cattell? 13 Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto her, Whoſoeuer drinketh of this water ſhall thirſt againe: 14 But whoſoeuer drinketh of the water that I ſhall giue him, ſhall neuer be more a thirſt: but the water that I ſhal giue him, ſhalbe in him a well of water ſpringing vp into euerlaſting life. 15 The woman ſaid vnto him, Sir, giue me of that water, that I may not thirſt, neither come hither to draw. 16 Ieſus ſaid vnto her, Goe, call thine husband, and come hither. 17 The woman anſwered, and ſaid, I haue no husband. Ieſus ſaid vnto her, Thou haſt well ſaid, I haue no husband. 18 For thou haſt had fiue husbands, and he whom thou now haſt, is not thine husband: that ſaydeſt thou truely. 19 The woman ſaid vnto him, Sir, I ſee that thou art a Prophet. 20 Our fathers worſhipped in this mountaine, & ye ſay, that in *Hieruſalem is the place where men ought to worſhip. 21 Ieſus ſaid vnto her, Woman, beleeue me, the houre commeth, whē ye ſhal neither in this mountaine, nor at Hieruſalem worſhip the Father. 22 Ye worſhip that which * ye knowe not: we worſhip that which we know: for ſaluation is of the Iewes. 23 But the houre commeth, and now is, when the true worſhippers ſhall worſhip the Father in ſpirit and trueth: for the Father requireth euen ſuch to worſhip him. 24 *God is a ſpirit, and they that worſhip him, muſt worſhip him in ſpirit and trueth. 25 The woman ſaid vnto him, I knowe well that Meſsias ſhall come

*Deu. 12.6.

*2. Kin. 17.29

*2. Cor. 3.17.

which is called Christ: when he is come, he will tell vs all things. 26 Iesus said vnto her, I am he, that speake vnto thee. 27 And vpon that came his disciples, and marueiled that he talked with a woman: yet no man said vnto him, What askest thou? or why talkest thou with her? 28 The woman then left her waterpot, & went her way into the citie, and said to the men, 29 Come, see a man which hath tolde me all things that euer I did: is not he that Christ? 30 Then they went out of the citie, and came vnto him. 31 In the meane while, the disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eate. 32 But he said vnto them, I haue meate to eate that ye know not of. 33 Then said the disciples betweene themselues, Hath any man brought him meate? 34 Iesus saide vnto them, My meate is that I may doe the wil of him that sent me, & finish his worke. 35 Say not ye, there are yet foure moneths, and *then* commeth harueſt? Beholde, I say vnto you, Lift vp your eies, and looke on the regions, * for they are white already vnto harueſt. 36 And he that reapeth, receiueth reward, & gathereth fruite vnto life eternall, that both he that soweth, & he that reapeth might reioyce together. 37 For herein is the saying true, that one soweth, and another reapeth. 38 I sent you to reape that, whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entred into their labours. 39 Now many of the Samaritanes of that citie beleeued in him, for the saying of the woman which testified,

Matt. 9.37. luke 10.1.

fisfied, He hath told me all things that euer I did. 40 Then when the Samaritanes were come vnto him, they besought him, that he would tarie with them: & he abode there two dayes 41 And many moe beleeued because of his owne word. 42 And they said vnto the woman, Now we beleeue, not because of thy saying: for we haue heard him our selues, and knowe that this is in deede that Christ the Sauiour of the worlde. 43 So two dayes after he departed thence, and
Matt. 13.57. *Mark.* 6.4. *Luke* 4.24. went into Galile. 44 For Iesus himselfe had *testified, that a Prophet hath none honour in his owne countrey. 45 Then when he was come into Galile, the Galileans receiued him, which had seene all the things that he did at Hierusalem at the feast: for they went also vnto the feast.
Chap. 21.12 46 And Iesus came againe vnto *Cana *a towne* of Galile, where he had made of water, wine. And there was a certaine ruler whose sonne was sicke at Capernaum. 47 When he heard that Iesus was come out of Iudea into Galile, he went vnto him, and besought him that he would goe downe and heale his sonne: for he was euen readie to die. 48 Then said Iesus vnto him, Except ye see signes and wonders, ye will not beleeue. 49 The ruler said vnto him, Sir, goe downe before my sonne die. 50 Iesus said, Goe thy way, thy sonne liueth: and the man beleeued ℣ word that Iesus had spoken vnto him, and went his way. 51 And as he was now going downe, his seruants met him, saying, Thy sonne liueth.

52 Then

52 Then enquired he of them the houre when he began to amend. And they ſaid vnto him, Yeſterday the ſeuenth houre ỹ feuer left him 53 Then the father knewe, that it was the ſame houre in the which Ieſus had ſaid vnto him, Thy ſonne liueth. And he beleeued, and all his houſholde. 54 This ſecond miracle did Ieſus againe, after he was come out of Iudea into Galile.

CHAP. 5. 2. *The ſabbath dayes worke.* 19. 20 *Chriſt prooueth his diuine power.*

AFter *that, there was a feaſt of the Iewes, and Ieſus went to Hieruſalem. 2 And there is at Hieruſalem by the place of ỹ ſheepe, a poole called in Ebrew Bethesda, hauing fiue porches: 3 In the which lay a great multitude of ſicke folke, of blinde, halte and withered, wayting for the mouing of the water. 4 For an Angel went downe at a certaine ſeaſon into the poole, and troubled the water: whoſoeuer then firſt, after the ſtirring of the water, ſtepped in, was made whole of whatſoeuer diſeaſe hee had. 5 And a certaine man was there, which had bin diſeaſed eight and thirtie yeeres. 6 When Ieſus ſawe him lie, & knew that he now long time had bene diſeaſed, he ſaide vnto him, Wilt thou be made whole? 7 The ſicke man anſwered him, Syr, I haue no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the poole: but while I am comming, another ſteppeth downe before me. 8 Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Riſe: take vp thy bed and walke. 9 And immediatly the man was made

Leuit. 23 3. Num. 28.5.

whole, and tooke vp his bed, & walked, and the same day was the Sabbath. 10 The Iewes therefore said to him that was made whole. It is the Sabbath *day*: *It is not lawfull for thee to carie thy bed. 11 He answered them, He that made me whole, he said vnto me, Take vp thy bed, and walke. 12 Then asked they him, What man is that which said vnto thee, Take vp thy bed, and walke? 13 And he that was healed, knewe not who it was: for Iesus had conueyed himselfe away from the multitude that was in that place. 14 And after that Iesus found him in the temple, & said vnto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sinne no more, least a worse thing come vnto thee. 15 The man departed & told the Iewes that it was Iesus, which had made him whole 15 And therefore ỹ Iewes did persecute Iesus, & sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the Sabbath *day*. 17 But Iesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I worke. 18 *Therefore the Iewes sought the more to kil him: not onely because he had broken the Sabbath: but said also that God was his Father, and made himselfe equall with God. 19 Then answered Iesus, & said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, The Sonne can doe nothing of himselfe, saue that he seeth the Father doe: for whatsoeuer things he doth, the same things doth the Sonne in like maner. 20 For the Father loueth the Sonne, & sheweth him al things, whatsoeuer he himselfe doeth, and he will shewe him greater

Ierem. 17.21.

Chap. 7.15.

greater workes then theſe, that ye ſhould marueile. 21 For likewiſe as ỹ Father raiſeth vp the dead, and quickeneth them, ſo the Sonne quickeneth whom he will. 22 For the Father iudgeth no man, but hath committed al iudgement vnto the Sonne, 23 Becauſe ỹ all men ſhould honour the Sonne, as they honour the Father: he that honoureth not the Sonne, the ſame honoureth not the Father, which hath ſent him. 24 Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, he that heareth my word and beleeueth in him ỹ ſent me, hath euerlaſting life, and ſhall not come into condemnation, but hath paſſed from death vnto life. 25 Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, the houre ſhal come, & now is, when the dead ſhall heare the voyce of the Sonne of God: and they that heare it, ſhall liue. 26 For as ỹ Father hath life in himſelfe, ſo likewiſe hath he giuen to the Sonne to haue life in himſelfe, 27 And hath giuen him power alſo to execute iudgement, in that he is the Sonne of man. 28 Marueile not at this: for the houre ſhall come, in the which al that are in the graues ſhall heare his voyce. 29 And they ſhall come forth, *that haue done good, vnto the reſurrection of life: but they that haue done euill, vnto the reſurrection of condemnation. 30 I can doe nothing of mine owne ſelfe: as I heare, I iudge: and my iudgement is iuſt, becauſe I ſeeke not mine owne will, but the will of the Father, who hath ſent me. 31 If I *ſhould beare witneſſe of my ſelfe, my witneſſe were not true. 32 *There is another

Mat. 25.46

Chap. 8.14.

Mar. 3.11.

another that beareth witneſſe of me, & I know that the witneſſe which he beareth of me, is true.
Chap. 33 *Ye ſent vnto Iohn, and he bare witneſſe vn-
1.27. to the truth. 34 But I receiue not the record of man: neuertheleſſe theſe things I ſay, that ye might be ſaued. 35 He was a burning and a ſhining candle: and ye would for a ſeaſon haue reioyced in his light. 36 But I haue greater witneſſe then the witneſſe of Iohn: for the workes which the Father hath giuen me to finiſh, the ſame workes that I doe, beare witneſſe of me,
Matt. that the Father ſent me 37 And the *Father him
3.17. ſelfe which hath ſent me, beareth witneſſe of me.
and Ye haue not heard his voyce at any time, *nei-
17.5. ther haue ye ſeene his ſhape. 38 And his worde
Deut. haue ye not abiding in you: for whom he hath
4.12. ſent, him ye beleeue not. 39 *Search the Scrip-
Acts tures: for in them ye thinke to haue eternall life,
17.11. and they are they which teſtifie of me. 40 But you will not come to me, that ye might haue life. 41 I receiue not praiſe of men. 42 But I knowe you, that ye haue not the loue of God in you. 43 I am come in my Fathers name, and ye receiue me not: if another ſhall come in his owne name, him will ye receiue. 44 Howe
Chap. can ye beleeue, which receiue *honour one
12.43. of another, and ſeeke not the honour that commeth of God alone? 45 Doe not thinke that I will accuſe you to my Father: there is one that accuſeth you, *euen* Moſes, in whom ye truſt.
46 For had ye beleeued Moſes, ye would haue

beleeued

beleeued me: * for he wrote of me. 47 But if ye beleeue not his writings, howe shall ye beleeue my wordes. *Gene. 3.15.*

CHAP. 6. 5. *The fiue loaues and two fishes.*

AFter these things, Iesus went his way ouer the sea of Galile, which is Tiberias. 2 And a great multitude followed him, because they sawe his miracles, which he did on them which were diseased. 3 Then Iesus went vp into a mountaine, and there he sate with his disciples. 4 Now the passeouer, *a feast of the Iewes was neere. 5 *Then Iesus lift vp *his* eyes, and seeing that a great multitude came vnto him, he said vnto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread, that these might eate? 6 (And this he said to prooue him: for he himselfe knew what he would doe.) 7 Philip answered him, Two hundreth peniworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that euery one of them may take a litle. 8 Then said vnto him one of his disciples, Andrewe, Simon Peters brother, 9 There is a litle boy here, which hath fiue barley loaues, & two fishes: but what are they among so many? 10 And Iesus said, Make the people sit downe. (Nowe there was much grasse in that place.) Then the men sate downe, in number about fiue thousand. 11 And Iesus tooke the bread, & gaue thankes, & gaue to ỹ disciples, & the disciples to them that were set downe: & likewise of ỹ fishes as much as they would. 12 And whē they were satisfied, he said vnto his disciples, Gather vp the broken

Leuit. 23.7. deut. 16.1. Mat. 14.16. mark. 6.37. luke 9.13.

meate

meate which remaineth, that nothing be loſt. 13 Then they gathered it together, and filled twelue baſkets ẅ the broken meate of the fiue barley loaues, which remained vnto them ẏ had eaten. 14 Then the men, when they had ſeene the miracle ẏ Ieſus did, ſaid, This is of a trueth that Prophet that ſhould come into the world. 15 Whē Ieſus therfore perceiued ẏ they would come, and take him to make him a King, he departed againe into a mountaine himſelfe alone. 16 When euen was nowe come, his diſciples
Matt. went downe vnto the ſea, 17 And entred into
14.25. a ſhip, & went ouer the ſea towards Capernaū:
mark. and now it was darke, & Ieſus was not come to
6.47. them. 18 And the ſea aroſe ẅ a great wind that bleẅ. 19 And when they had rowed about fiue and twentie or thirtie furlongs, they ſaw Ieſus walking on the ſea, and drawing neere vnto the ſhip: ſo they were afraide. 20 But he ſaid vnto them, It is I: be not afraide. 21 Then willingly they receiued him into the ſhip, & the ſhip was by & by at the land, whither they went. 22 The day following, the people which ſtood on the other ſide of the ſea, ſawe that there was none other ſhip there, ſaue that one, whereinto his diſciples were entred and that Ieſus went not with his diſciples in the ſhippe, but that his diſciples were gone alone, 23 And that there came other ſhippes from Tiberias, neere vnto the place where they ate the bread, after the Lord had giuen thankes. 24 Now when the people ſawe

that

that Ieſus was not there, neither his diſciples, they alſo tooke ſhipping, & came to Capernaum, ſeeking for Ieſus. 25 And when they had found him on the other ſide of the ſea, they ſaid vnto him, Rabbi, when cameſt thou hither? 26 Ieſus anſwered them, & ſaid, Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, ye ſeeke me, not becauſe ye ſaw the miracles, but becauſe ye ate of the loaues, & were filled. 27 Labour not for the meat which periſheth, but for the meat that endureth vnto euerlaſting life, which the Sonne of man ſhal giue vnto you: for him hath * God the Father ſealed. 28 Then ſaid they vnto him, What ſhall we doe that we might worke the works of God? 29 Ieſus anſwered, and ſayd vnto them, * This is the worke of God, ỹ ye beleeue in him, whom he hath ſent. 30 They ſayd therefore vnto him, What ſigne ſheweſt thou then, that we may ſee it, and beleeue thee? what doeſt thou worke? 31 Our fathers did eate Manna in the deſert, as it * is written, He gaue them bread from heauen to eate. 32 Then Ieſus ſayd vnto them, Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, Moſes gaue you not that bread from heauen, but my Father giueth you that true bread from heauen. 33 For the bread of God is he which commeth downe from heauen, and giueth life vnto the world. 34 Then they ſayd vnto him, Lord, euermore giue vs this bread. 35 And Ieſus ſayd vnto them, I am that bread of life: he that commeth to me, ſhall not hunger, and he that beleeueth in me, ſhall neuer

(*Chap.* 1.32. *matt.* 3.17. 1. *Ioh.* 3.23. *Exod.* 16.14. *num.* 11.17. *pſalm.* 78.25.

ner thirſt. 36 But I ſayd vnto you, that ye alſo haue ſeene me, and beleeue not. 37 All that the Father giueth me, ſhall come to me: and him that commeth to me, I caſt not away. 38 For I came downe from heauen, not to do mine owne will, but his will which hath ſent me, 39 And this is the Fathers will which hath ſent me, that of all which hee hath giuen me, I ſhould loſe nothing, but ſhould raiſe it vp againe at the laſt day. 40 And this is the will of him that ſent me, that euery man which ſeeth the Sonne, and beleeueth in him, ſhould haue euerlaſting life: and I will raiſe him vp at the laſt day. 41 The Iewes then murmured at him, becauſe he ſayd, I am that bread, which is come downe
Mat. 13.5^c. from heauen. 42 And they ſayd, * Is not this Ieſus that Sonne of Ioſeph, whoſe father & mother we know? how then ſaith he, I came downe from heauen? 43 Ieſus then anſwered, and ſayd vnto them, Murmure not among your ſelues. 44 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath ſent me, draw him: and I will raiſe
Iſai 54.13. him vp at the laſt day. 45 It is written in * the Prophets, And they ſhall be all taught of God.
Ierem. 31.33. Euery man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cōmeth vnto me. 46 *Not
Matt. 11.27. that any man hath ſeene the Father, ſaue hee which is of God: hee hath ſeene the Father.
Exod. 16.15. 47 Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, He that beleeueth in me, hath euerlaſting life. 48 I am that bread of life. 49 *Your Fathers did eat Manna

in the wildernes, and are dead. 50 This is that bread which cõmeth downe from heauen, that hee which eateth of it, ſhould not die. 51 I am that liuing bread, which came downe from heauen: If any man eate of this bread, he ſhall liue for euer: and the bread that I will giue, is my fleſh, which I wil giue for the life of the world. 52 Then the Iewes ſtroue among themſelues, ſaying, Howe can this man giue vs *his* fleſh to eate? 53 Then Ieſus ſaide vnto them, Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, Except yee eate the fleſh of the Sonne of man, and drinke his blood, yee haue no life in you. 54 Whoſoeuer * eateth my fleſh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternall life, and I wil raiſe him vp at the laſt day. 55 For my fleſh is meate in deede, and my blood is drinke in deede. 56 Hee that eateth my fleſh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him. 57 As that liuing Father hath ſent mee, ſo liue I by the Father, and hee that eateth me, euen he ſhall liue by me. 58 This is the bread which came downe from heauen: not as your Fathers haue eaten Manna, and are dead. He that eateth of this bread, ſhall liue for euer. 59 Theſe things ſpake he in the Synagogue, as hee taught in Capernaum. 60 Many therefore of his diſciples (when they heard this) ſayd, This is an hard ſaying: who can heare it? 61 But Ieſus knowing in himſelfe, that his diſciples murmured at this, ſaid vnto them, Doth this offend you? 62 *What* *1.Cor.* *11.27.*

then if ye ſhould ſee that Sonne of man aſcend

vp

Chap. 3. 13. vp * where hee was before? 63 It is the Spirit that quickeneth: the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speake vnto you, are spirit and life. 64 But there are some of you that beleeue not: for Iesus knew from the beginning, which they were that beleeued not, and who should betray him. 65 And he said, Therefore said I vnto you, that no man can come vnto me, except it be giuen vnto him of my Father. 66 From that time many of his disciples went backe, and walked no more with him. 67 Then said Iesus to the twelue, Will ye also goe away? 68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Master, to whome shall we goe? thou hast the wordes of eternall life: 69 And we beleeue and knowe that thou art that Christ that Sonne of the liuing God.

Matt. 26. 16. 70 Iesus answered them, Haue not I * chosen you twelue, and one of you is a deuil? 71 Now he spake it of Iudas Iscariot the *sonne* of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, though he was one of the twelue.

CHAP. 7. 2. *Christ goeth vp to the feast.*

AFter these things, Iesus walked in Galile, and woulde not walke in Iudea: for the Iewes

Leuit. 23. 34. sought to kil him. 2 Now the Iewes feast of the Tabernacles was at hand. 3 His brethren therefore saide vnto him, Depart hence, and goe into Iudea, that thy disciples may see the works that thou doest. 4 For there is no man that doth any thing secretly, and hee himselfe seeketh to be famous. If thou doest these things, shewe thy

to

to the worlde. 5 For as yet his brethren beleeued not in him. 6 Then Ieſus ſaid vnto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway readie. 7 The worlde cannot hate you, but me it hateth, becauſe I teſtifie of it, that the workes thereof are euill. 8 Goe ye vp vnto this feaſt: I will not go vp yet vnto this feaſt: * for my time is not yet fulfilled. 9 Theſe things he ſaid vnto them, and abode ſtil in Galile. 10 But aſſoone as his brethren were gone vp, then went he alſo vp vnto the feaſt, not openly, but as *it were* priuily. 11 Then the Iewes ſought him at the feaſt, and ſaid, Where is hee? 12 And much murmuring was there of him among the people. Some ſayd, He is a good man: other ſaid, Nay, but he deceiueth the people. 13 Howbeit no man ſpake openly of him, for feare of the Iewes. 14 Nowe when halfe the feaſt was done, Ieſus went vp into the Temple, and taught. 15 And the Iewes marueiled, ſaying, Howe knoweth this man the Scriptures, ſeeing that he neuer learned? 16 Ieſus anſwered them, and ſaid, My doctrine is not mine, but his that ſent me. 17 If any man wil do his will, he ſhall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I ſpeake of my ſelfe. 18 Hee that ſpeaketh of himſelfe, ſeeketh his owne glory: but hee that ſeeketh his glory that ſent him, the ſame is true, and no vnrighteouſneſſe is in him. 19 * Did not Moſes giue you a Lawe, and *yet* none of you keepeth the Lawe? why goe ye about to kill me? 20 The people anſwered,

Chap. 8. 20.

Exod. 24. 3. *Chap.* 5. 18.

answered, and said, Thou hast a deuil: who goeth about to kil thee? 21 Iesus answered, and saide to them, I haue done one worke, and ye al mar-
Leui. ueile. 22 * Moses therefore gaue vnto you cir-
12.3. cumcision, (not because it is of Moses, but of the
Gene. * fathers,) and ye on the Sabbath *day* circumcise
17.10. a man. 23 If a man on the Sabbath receiue circumcision, that the Lawe of Moses should not be broken, be ye angry with mee, because I haue made a man euery whit whole on the Sabbath
Deut. day? 24 * Iudge not according to the appea-
1.16. rance, but iudge righteous iudgement. 25 Then saide some of them of Ierusalem, Is not this hee, whom they goe about to kil? 26 And behold, hee speaketh openly, and they say nothing to him: doe the rulers knowe in deede that this is in deede that Christ? 27 Howbeit wee knowe this man whence hee is: but when that Christ commeth, no man shall knowe whence hee is. 28 Then cried Iesus in the Tempie as hee taught, saying, Ye both know me, and know whence I am: yet am I not come of my selfe, but hee that sent me is true, whom yee know not. 29 But I know him: for I am of him, and hee hath sent mee. 30 Then they sought to take him, but no man layde hands on him, because his houre was not yet come. 33 Now many of the people beleeued in him, and saide, When that Christ commeth, will hee doe moe miracles then this man hath done? 32 The Pharises heard that the people murmured these things of him: and the Pharises,

riſes, and hie Prieſtes ſent officers to take him.
33 Then ſayde Ieſus vnto them, Yet am I a little
while with you, and then go I vnto him that ſent
me. 34 * Ye ſhall ſeeke me, and ſhall not finde *Chap.*
me, and where I am, can ye not come. 35 Then 13.34.
ſaid the Iewes among themſelues, Whither will
he go, *that* we ſhall not finde him? Will he goe
vnto them that are diſperſed among the Grecians, and teach the Grecians? 36 What ſaying is
this that he ſayd, Ye ſhall ſeeke me, and ſhal not
finde *me*? and where I am, can yee not come?
37 Now in the laſt * *and* great day of the feaſt, *Leui.*
Ieſus ſtoode and cried, ſaying, If any man thirſt, 13. 36.
let him come vnto me and drinke. 38 Hee that
beleeueth in me. * as ſaith the Scripture, out of *Deut.*
his belly ſhall flowe riuers of water of life. 18.15.
39 *(This ſpake he of the Spirit which they that *Ioel*
beleeued in him, ſhoulde receiue: for the holy 2.28.
Ghoſt was not yet *giuen*, becauſe that Ieſus was
not yet glorified.) 40 So many of the people,
when they heard this ſaying, ſaid, * Of a trueth *Deut.*
this is that Prophet. 41 Other ſayd, This is that 18.15.
Chriſt: and ſome ſaid, But ſhall that Chriſt come
out of Galile? 42 * Sayeth not the Scripture, *Mich.*
that that Chriſt ſhal come of the ſeede of Dauid, 5 2.
and out of the towne of Bethleem, where Dauid *matt.*
was? 43 So was there diſſenſion among the 2.5.
people for him. 44 And ſome of them would
haue taken him, but no man layd hands on him.
45 Then came the officers to the hie Prieſtes
and Phariſes, and they ſayde vnto them, Why

haue ye not brought him? 46 The officers answered, Neuer man spake like this man. 47 Then answered them the Pharises, Are ye also deceiued? 48 Doeth any of the rulers, or of the Pharises beleeue in him? 49 But this people which know not the Law, are cursed. 50 Nicodemus
Chap. 3.2. said vnto them, (*he that came to Iesus by night, and was one of them) 51 Doth our Law iudge
Deut. 17.8. *and* 19.5. a man before it heare him, *and know what he hath done? 52 They answered, and saide vnto him, Art thou also of Galile? Search and looke: for out of Galile ariseth no Prophet. 53 And euery man went vnto his owne house.

CHAP. 8. *3 The woman taken in adulterie.*

AND Iesus went vnto the mount of Olives, 2 And early in the morning came againe into the Temple, & all the people came vnto him, and he sate downe, and taught them. 3 Then the Scribes and the Pharises brought vnto him a woman taken in adulterie, and set her in the middes, 4 And said vnto him, Master, we found this woman committing adulterie, euen in the
Leui. 20.10. very acte. 5 *Nowe Moses in our Lawe commanded, that such should be stoned: what sayest thou therefore? 6 And this they saide to tempt him, that they might haue whereof to accuse him. But Iesus stouped downe, and with his finger wrote on the ground. 7 And while they continued asking him, hee lift himselfe vp, and
Deu. 17.7. said vnto them, * Let him that is among you without sinne, cast the first stone at her. 8 And

again

gaine hee stouped downe, and wrote on the
ground. 9 And when they heard it being accu-
sed by their owne cõscience, they went out one
by one, beginning at the eldest euen to the last:
so Iesus was left alone, and the woman standing
in the midst. 10 When Iesus had lift vp himselfe
againe, and saw no man, but the woman, he saide
vnto her, Woman, where are those thine accu-
sers? hath no man condemned thee? 11 She said,
No man, Lord. And Iesus said, Neither do I con-
demne thee: goe and sinne no more. 12 Then
spake Iesus againe vnto them, saying, I * am that Chap.
light of the worlde: he that followeth me, shall 1.5
not walke in darkenes, but shall haue that light and
of life. 13 The Pharises therfore said vnto him, 9.5.
Thou bearest record of thy selfe: thy record is
not true. 14 * Iesus answered and saide vnto Chap.
them, Though I beare record of my selfe, yet my 5.31.
recorde is true: for I know whence I came, and
whither I go: but ye cannot tel whence I come,
and whither I go. 15 Ye iudge after the flesh: I
iudge no man. 16 And if I also iudge, my iudge-
ment is true: for I am not alone, but I, & the Fa- Deut.
ther, that sent mee. 17 And it is also written in 17.6.
your Lawe, * that the testimonie of two men is & 13.
true. 18 I am one that beare witnes of my selfe, 15.
and the Father † y sent me, beareth witnes of me matt.
19 Then said they vnto him, Where is that Fa- 18.16.
ther of thine? Iesus answered, Ye neither knowe 2. Cor.
me, nor that I ather of mine. If ye had knowen me, 13.1.
ye should haue knowen that Father of mine al- Hebr.
so. 10.28.

so. 20 These wordes spake Iesus in the treasurie, as he taught in the Temple, and no man layd hands on him: for his houre was not yet come. 21 Then saide Iesus againe vnto them, I goe my way, and ye shal seeke me, and shall die in your sinnes. Whither I go, can ye not come. 22 Then said the Iewes, Wil he kil himselfe, because he saith, Whither I go, can ye not come? 23 And he said vnto them, Ye are from beneath: I am from aboue: ye are of this worlde: I am not of this world. 24 I said therefore vnto you, That ye shal die in your sinnes: for except ye beleeue that I am he, ye shall die in your sinnes. 25 Then said they vnto him, Who art thou? And Iesus saide vnto them, Euen the same thing, that I said vnto you from the beginning. 26 I haue many things to say, and to iudge of you: but he that sent mee, is true, and the things that I haue heard of him, those speake I to the world. 27 They vnderstood not that he spake to them of the Father. 28 Then said Iesus vnto them, When ye haue lift vp the Sonne of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I doe nothing of my selfe, but as my Father hath taught me, so I speake these things. 29 For he that sent me, is with mee: the Father hath not left me alone, because I do alwaies those things that please him. 30 As hee spake these things, many beleeued in him. 31 Then said Iesus to the Iewes which beleeued in him, If ye cõtinue in my word, ye are verely my disciples. 32 And shall knowe the trueth, and the truth

shall

shal make you free. 33 They answered him, We be Abrahams seed, and were neuer bond to any man: why sayest thou then, Ye shalbe made free? 34 Iesus answered them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, that whosoeuer committeth sinne, is the ser- *Rom.* uant of sinne. 35 And the seruant abideth not in *6.20.* the house for euer: but the Sonne abideth for *2.pet.* euer. 36 If that Sonne therefore shal make you *2.19.* free, ye shalbe free in deede. 37 I know that ye are Abrahās seed, but ye seeke to kil me, because my word hath no place in you. 38 I speake that which I haue seene w̄ my Father, and ye do that which ye haue seene with your father. 39 They answered, & said vnto him, Abraham is our Father. Iesus said vnto them, If ye were Abrahams childrens, ye would do the works of Abraham. 40 But now ye goe about to kill me, a man that hath tolde you the trueth, which I haue heard of God: this did not Abraham. 41 Ye do the works of your father. Then said they to him, Wee are not borne of fornication: wee haue one father, which is God. 42 Therefore Iesus saide vnto them, If God were your Father, then would yee loue me: for I proceeded forth, and came from God, neither came I of my selfe, but he sent me. 43 Why do ye not vnderstand my talke? because ye cannot heare my word. 44 * Ye are of your *1.Ioh.* father the deuil, & the lusts of your father ye wil *3.8.* do: he hath bin a murtherer from the beginning, and abode not in the trueth, because there is no trueth in him: Whē he speaketh a lie, then speaketh

leeth he of his owne: for he is a liar, and the father thereof. 45 And because I tell you the trueth, ye beleeue me not. 46 Which of you can rebuke me of sinne? and if I say the trueth, why do ye not beleeue me? 47 *He that is of God heareth Gods words: ye therefore heare them not, because ye are not of God. 48 Then answered the Iewes, and said vnto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritane, and hast a deuill? 49 Iesus answered, I haue not a deuill, but I honor my father, & ye haue dishonored me. 50 And I seeke not mine owne praise: but there is one that seeketh it, & iudgeth. 51 Verely, verely I say vnto you, If a man keepe my word, he shall neuer see death. 52 Then said the Iewes to him, Now know we that thou hast a deuill. Abraham is dead, and the Prophets, and thou sayest, If a man keepe my word, he shall neuer taste of death. 53 Art thou greater then our father Abraham, which is dead? and the Prophets are dead: whom makest thou thy selfe? 54 Iesus answered, If I honor my selfe, mine honor is nothing worth: it is my father that honoureth me, whom ye say that he is your God. 55 Yet ye haue not knowen him: but I know him, and if I should say, I know him not, I should be a liar like vnto you: but I know him, and keepe his word. 56 Your father Abraham reioyced to see my day, & he saw it, and was glad. 57 Then said the Iewes vnto him, Thou art not yet fifty yeres olde, & hast thou seene Abraham? 58 Iesus

2. Ioh. 4. 6.

vnto

vnto him, Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, before Abraham was, I am. 59 Then tooke they vp ſtones, to caſt at him, but Ieſus hid himſelfe, and went out of the Temple: And he paſſed thorow the mids of them, and ſo went his way.

CHAP. 9. 1 *The man borne blinde, healed.*

AND as Ieſus paſſed by, he ſaw a man which was blind frō his birth. 2 And his diſciples aſked him, ſaying, Maſter, who did ſin, this man, or his parents, that he was borne blind? 3 Ieſus anſwered, Neither hath this man ſinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God ſhould be ſhewed on him. 4 I muſt worke the works of him ẏ ſent me, while it is day: the night cōmeth whe no man can worke. 5 As long as I am in ẏ world, I am the light of the world. 6 Aſſoone as he had thus ſpoken, he ſpat on the ground, & made clay of the ſpittle, & anointed the eyes of the blinde with the clay, 7 And ſaid vnto him, Go waſh in the poole of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent) He went his way therfore, & waſhed, & came againe ſeeing. 8 Now ẏ neighbors & they that had ſeene him before, when he was blind, ſaid, Is not this he that ſate & begged? 9 Some ſaid, This is he: and other ſaid, He is like him: but he himſelfe ſaid, I am he. 10 Therfore they ſaid vnto him, How were thine eyes opened? 11 He anſwered, & ſaid, The man that is called Ieſus, made clay, & anointed mine eyes, & ſaid vnto me, Go to the poole of Siloam, and waſh. So I went, & waſhed, and receiued ſight.

Cha. 1. 9. & 8 12. & 12, 35.

12 Then they ſaid vnto him, Where is he? He ſaid, I can not tell. 13 They brought to ỹ Phariſes him that was once blinde, 14 And it was the Sabbath *day*, when Ieſus made the clay, and opened his eyes. 15 Then againe the Phariſes alſo aſked him, how he had receiued ſight. And he ſaid vnto them, He laid clay vpon mine eyes, and I waſhed, & do ſee. 16 Then ſaid ſome of the Phariſes, This man is not of God, becauſe he keepeth not the Sabbath *day*. Others ſaid, How can a man ỹ is a ſinner, do ſuch miracles? & there was a diſſenſion among them. 17 Then ſpake they vnto the blinde againe, What ſayſt thou of him, becauſe he hath opened thine eyes? And he ſayd, He is a Prophet. 18 Thē the Iewes did not beleeue him, (that he had bin blinde, & receiued his ſight) vntill they had called the parents of him that had receiued ſight. 19 And they aſked them, ſaying, Is this your ſonne, whom ye ſay was borne blinde? How doth he now ſee then? 20 His parents anſwered thē, & ſaid, We know that this is our ſonne, & that he was borne blinde: 21 But by what meanes he now ſeeth, we know not: or who hath opened his eyes, can we not tell: he is olde enough, aſke him: he ſhall anſwere for himſelfe. 22 Theſe words ſpake his parents, becauſe they feared the Iewes: for the Iewes had ordained already, that if any man did confeſſe that he was Chriſt, he ſhould be *excommunicate* out of the Synagogue. 23 Therefore ſaid his parents, He is olde enough, aſke him.

24 Then

24 Then againe called they the man that had bin blind: and ſaid vnto him, Giue glory vnto God: we know that this man is a ſinner. 25 Then he anſwered, and ſaid, Whether he be a ſinner, or no, I cannot tell: one thing I know, that I was blinde, & now I ſee. 26 Then ſaid they to him againe, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes? 27 He anſwered them, I haue tolde you already, & ye haue not heard it: wherefore would ye heare it againe? will ye be alſo his diſciples? 28 Then reuciled they him, & ſaid, Thou art his diſciple, we be Moſes diſciples. 29 We know that God ſpake with Moſes: but this man we know not from whence he is. 30 The man anſwered, & ſaid vnto them, Doubtleſſe, this is a marueilous thing, that ye know not whence he is, & yet he hath opened mine eyes. 31 Now we know, that God heareth not ſinners: but if any man be a worſhipper of God, and doth his will, him heareth he. 32 Since the world began was it not heard, that any mā opened the eyes of one that was borne blinde. 33 If this man were not of God, he could haue done nothing. 34 They anſwered, & ſaid vnto him, Thou art altogether borne in ſinnes, and doeſt thou teach vs? ſo they caſt him out. 38 Ieſus heard that they had caſt him out, & when he had found him, he ſaid vnto him, Doeſt thou beleeue in the Sonne of God? 35 He anſwered, and ſaid, Who is he, Lord, that I might beleeue in him? 37 And Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Both thou haſt ſeene him, and he it is that

talketh

talketh with thee. 38 Then he ſaid, Lord, I be-
leeue, and worſhipped him. 39 And Ieſus ſaid,
I am come vnto iudgement into this world, that
Chap. they * which ſee not, might ſee: and that they
3. 17. which ſee, might be made blinde. 40 And ſome
& 12. of the Phariſes which were with him, heard
47. theſe things, & ſaid vnto him, Are we blind alſo?
41 Ieſus ſayd vnto them, If ye were blinde, ye
ſhould not haue ſinne: but now ye ſay, We ſee:
therefore your ſinne remaineth.

CHAP. 10. 1 *Chriſt the good ſhepheard.*

VErely, verely I ſay vnto you, He y entreth
not in by the doore into the ſheepfolde, but
climeth vp another way, he is a thiefe & a rob-
ber. 2 But he that goeth in by the doore, is the
ſhepheard of the ſheepe. 3 To him the porter
openeth, & the ſheepe heare his voice, & he cal-
leth his owne ſheepe by name, & leadeth them
out. 4 And when he hath ſent foorth his owne
ſheepe, he goeth before them, & the ſheepe fol-
low him: for they know his voice. 5 And they
will not follow a ſtranger, but they flee from
him: for they know not the voice of ſtrangers.
6 This parable ſpake Ieſus vnto them: but they
vnderſtood not what things they were, which
he ſpake vnto them. 7 Then ſaid Ieſus vnto the
againe, Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, I am the
doore of the ſheepe. 8 All that euer came before
me, are theeues and robbers: but the ſheepe did
not heare them. 9 I am the doore: by me if any
man enter in, he ſhalbe ſaued, & ſhall go in, & go

out,

out, and finde pasture. 10 The thiefe commeth
not, but for to steale, & to kill, and to destroy: I
am come that they might haue life, & haue it in
abundance. 11 * I am that good shepheard: *Isay*
ỹ good shepheard giueth his life for his sheepe. 40.11.
12 But an hireling, & he which is not the shep- *Ezek.*
heard, neither the sheepe are his owne, seeth the 34.23.
wolfe comming, & he leaueth the sheep, & fleeth,
and the wolfe catcheth them, and scattereth the
sheepe. 13 So the hireling fleeth, because he is
an hireling, and careth not for the sheepe. 14 I
am that good shepheard, & know mine, and am
knowen of mine. 15 As the Father knoweth
me, so know I the Father, & I lay downe my life
for my sheepe. 16 Other sheepe I haue also,
which are not of this folde: them also must I
bring, & they shall heare my voice, * & there shal *Ezek.*
be one sheepfold, *&* one shepheard. 17 There- 37.22.
fore doeth my Father loue mee, because I * lay *Isay*
downe my life, *ỹ* I might take it againe. 18 No 53.7.
man taketh it from me: but I lay it downe of my
selfe: I haue power to lay it downe, & haue po-
wer to take it againe: this * cõmandement haue *Acts*
I receiued of my Father. 19 Then there was a 2.24.
diuision among the Iewes for these sayings,
20 And many of them said, He hath a deuill, & is
mad: why heare ye him? 21 Others said, These
are not the words of him that hath a deuill: can
the deuill open the eyes of the blinde? 22 And
it was at Hierusalem the *feast of the* Dedication,
and it was winter. 23 And Iesus walked in the

Temple,

Temple,in Salomons porch. 24 Then came the Iewes round about him,& said vnto him, How long doest thou make vs doubt? If thou be that Christ,tell vs plainly. 25 Iesus answered them, I tolde you, & ye beleeue not: the works that I do in my Fathers Name, they beare witnesse of me. 26 But ye beleeue not: for ye are not of my sheepe, as I said vnto you. 27 My sheepe heare my voice, & I know them, & they follow me. 28 And I giue vnto thē eternall life,& they shall neuer perish,neither shal any plucke them out of mine hand. 29 My Father which gaue *thē* me,is greater then all,& none is able to take them out of my Fathers hand. 30 I & my Father
Chap. are one. 31 * Then the Iewes againe tooke vp
8.59. stones,to stone him. 32 Iesus answered them, Many good works haue I shewed you from my Father: for which of these works doe ye stone me? 33 The Iewes answered him,saying,For the good worke we stone thee not,but for blasphemy, and that thou being a man, makest thy selfe God. 34 Iesus answered thē, Is it not written
Psal. in your Law,I*said ye are Gods? 35 If he called
82.6. thē gods,vnto whō the word of God was giuen, & the Scripture cannot be broken, 36 Say ye of him,whō the Father hath sanctified,& sent into the world, Thou blasphemest,because I said I am the Sonne of God? 37 If I do not the works of my Father,beleeue me not. 38 But if I do,tho thogh ye beleeue not me,*yet* beleeue ȳ works, that ye may know & beleeue, that the Father is

in

in me, and I in him. 39 Againe they went about to take him: but he escaped out of their hands, 40 And went againe beyond Iordan, into the place where Iohn first baptized, & there abode. 41 And many resorted vnto him, & said, Iohn did no miracle: but all things ỹ Iohn spake of this man, were true. 42 And many beleeued in him there.

CHAP. 11. *Christ raiseth Lazarus.*

A Nd a certaine man was sicke, named Lazarus of Bethania, the towne of Mary, and her sister Martha. 2 (And it was that * Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, & wiped his feet with her haire, whose brother Lazarus was sicke.) 3 Therefore *hu* sisters sent vnto him, saying, Lord, behold he whom thou louest is sicke. 4 When Iesus heard it, he said, This sickenesse is not vnto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby. 5 Now Iesus loued Martha and her sister, and Lazarus. 6 And after he had heard that he was sicke, yet abode he two dayes still in ỹ same place where he was. 7 Then after that, sayd he to his disciples, Let vs go into Iudea againe. 8 The disciples saith vnto him, Master, ỹ Iewes lately sought to stone thee, and doest thou go thither againe? 9 Iesus answered, Are there not twelue houres in the day? If a man walke in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world. 10 But if a man walke in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him. 11 These things spake he, and after he said vnto them, Our friend

Chap. 12 3. matt. 26.7.

Chap. 7.30. and 8. 59. & 10.33.

Lazarus sleepeth: but I goe to wake him vp.
12 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleepe, he
shall be safe. 13 Howbeit, Iesus spake of his
death: but they thought that he had spoken of
the naturall sleepe. 14 Then said Iesus vnto them
plainly, Lazarus is dead. 15 And I am glad for
your sakes, that I was not there, that ye may be-
leeue: but let vs go vnto him. 16 Then said Tho-
mas (which is called Didymus) vnto his fellow
disciples, Let vs also go, that we may die with him.
17 Then came Iesus, & found that he had lien in
y graue foure dayes already. 18 (Now Bethe-
nia was nere vnto Hierusalem, about fifteen fur-
longs off) 19 And many of the Iewes were
come to Martha & Mary to comfort the for their
brother. 20 Then Martha, when she heard that
Iesus was comming, went to meet him: but Ma-
ry sate stil in the house. 21 Then said Martha vn-
to Iesus, Lord, if thou hadst bene here, my bro-
ther had not bin dead. 22 But now I know also,
y whatsoeuer thou askest of God, God will giue
it thee. 23 Iesus said vnto her, Thy brother shall
rise againe. 24 Martha said vnto him, I know y
Chap. 5.29. Luke 14.14. Chap. 6.35. he shall rise againe in the resurrection at the last
day. 25 Iesus said vnto her, I am the resurrection
and the life: he that beleeueth in me, though he
were dead, yet shal he liue. 26 And whosoeuer
liueth, & beleeueth in me, shall neuer die: bele-
ueth thou this? 27 She said vnto him, Yea, Lord,
I beleeue that thou art that Christ that Sonne of
God, which should come into the world. 28 And

when

when she had so said, she went her way, & called Mary her sister secretly, saying; The Master is come, and calleth for thee. 29 And when she heard it, she arose quickly, and came vnto him. 30 For Iesus was not yet come into the towne, but was in the place where Martha met him. 31 The Iewes then which were with her in the house, & cõforted her, when they saw Mary, that she arose vp hastily and went out, followed her, Saying, She goeth vnto ỹ graue, to weepe there. 32 Then when Mary was come where Iesus was, & saw him, she fel downe at his feet, saying vnto him, Lord, if thou hadst bene here, my brother had not bene dead. 33 When Iesus therfore saw her weepe, & the Iewes *also* weepe which came with her, he groned in the spirit, & was troubled in himselfe, 34 And said, Where haue ye layd him? They said vnto him, Lord, come and see. 35 *And* Iesus wept. 36 Then said the Iewes, Behold, how he loued him. 37 And some of thẽ said, Could not he, which opened the eyes of ỹ blind haue made also, that this man should not haue died? 38 Iesus therefore againe groned in himselfe, and came to the graue. And it was in a caue, & a stone was layd vpon it. 39 Iesus sayd, Take ye away the stone Martha the sister of him ỹ was dead, said vnto him, Lord, he stinketh already: for he hath bin *dead* foure dayes. 40 Iesus sayd vnto her, Sayd I not vnto thee, that if thou didst beleeue, thou shouldest see the glory of God? 41 Then they tooke away the stone

Chap. 9 6.

from

from the place where the dead was layd. And Ie-
sus lift vp his eyes, & sayd, Father, I thanke thee,
because thou hast heard me. 42 I know ỹ thou
hearest me alwayes, but because of the people ỹ
stand by, I said it, that they may beleeue, that thou
hast sent me. 43 As he had spoken these things,
he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.
44 Then he that was dead, came foorth, bound
hand & foot with bands, and his face was bound
with a napkin. Iesus said vnto them, Loose him,
& let him go. 45 Then many of ỹ Iewes, which
came to Mary, & had seene the things which Ie-
sus did, beleeued in him. 46 But some of them
went their way to the Pharises, & told thẽ what
things Iesus had done. 47 Then gathered ỹ high
Priests, & the Pharises a councill, & said, What
shall we do? for this man doth many miracles.
48 If we let him thus alone, all men will beleeue
in him, and the Romans will come & take away
both our place, & the nation. 49 Then one of
thẽ *named* Caiphas, which was the hie priest ỹ
yere, said vnto them, Ye perceiue nothing at all,
Chap. 50 *Nor yet do you consider that it is expedient
18.14. for vs, that one man die for the people, and that
the whole nation perish not. 51 This spake he
not of himselfe: but being hie priest that ỹ
yere, he prophesied that Iesus should die for that
nation: 52 And not for that nation onely, but
that he should gather together in one, the chil-
dren of God, which were scattered. 53 Then
from that day forth they consulted together, to

put

put him to death. 54 Iesus therefore walked no more openly among ye Iewes, but went thence vnto a countrey neere to the wilderneſſe, into a citie called Ephraim, and there continued with his diſciples. 55 And the Iewes Paſſeouer was at hand, and many went out of the countrey vp to Hieruſalem before the Paſſeouer, to puriſie themſelues. 56 Then ſought they for Ieſus, and ſpake among themſelues, as they ſtoode in the Temple, What thinke ye, that he commeth not to the feaſt? 57 Nowe both the hie Prieſts and the Phariſes had giuen a commandement, that if any man knew where he were, he ſhould ſhewe it, that they might take him.

CHAP. 12. 2. *Mary anoynteth Chriſts feete.*

THen *Ieſus ſixe dayes before the Paſſeouer, came to Bethania, where Lazarus was, who died, whom he had raiſed frō the dead. 2 There they made him a ſupper, and Martha ſerued but Lazarus was one of them that ſate at the table with him. 3 Then tooke Mary a pound of ointment of Spikenard very coſtly, & anoynted Ieſus feete, and wiped his feete with her haire, and the houſe was filled with the ſauour of the ointment. 4 Then ſaid one of his diſciples, *euen* Iudas Iſcariot Simons *ſonne*, which ſhould betray him, 5 Why was not this ointment ſolde for three hundreth pence, and giuen to the poore? 6 Nowe he ſaid this, not that he cared for the poore, but becauſe he was a thiefe * and had the bagge, and bare that which was giuen. 7 Then ſaid

Mat. 26.7. mark 14.3.

Chap. 13.29

said Iesus, Let her alone: against the day of my burying the kept it. 8 For the poore alwayes ye haue with you, but me ye shall not haue alwayes. 9 Then much people of the Iewes knew that he was there: and they came, not for Iesus sake onely, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead. 10 The hie Priests therefore consulted, that they might put Lazarus to death also, 11 Because that for his sake many of the Iewes went away, & beleeued
Mat. in Iesus. 12 *On the morowe a great multitude
21.8. that were come to the feast, when they heard
mark. that Iesus should come to Hierusalē, 13 Tooke
11.8. branches of palme trees, & went forth to meete
luke him, & cryed, Hosanna, Blessed is the King of Is-
19.39 rael that commeth in the Name of the Lorde.
14 And Iesus found a yong asse, & sate thereon, as
Zech. it is written, 15 *Feare not, daughter of Sion
9.5. behold, thy King cōmeth sitting on an asses colt.
16 But his disciples vnderstood not those things at the first: but when Iesus was glorified, then remembred they, that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things vnto him. 17 The people therefore that was with him, bare witnesse that he called Lazarus out of the graue, & raised him from the dead. 18 Therefore met him ỹ people also, because they heard that he had done this miracle. 19 And the Pharises said among thēselues, Perceiue ye how ye preuaile nothing? Beholde the world goeth after him. 20 ¶ Nowe there were certaine Greekes among

among them that came vp to worship at the feast 21 And they came to Philip, which was of Bethsaida in Galile, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see that Iesus. 22 Philip came & told Andrew: and againe Andrew & Philip tolde Iesus. 23 And Iesus answered them, saying, The houre is come, that the Sonne of man must be glorified. 24 Verely, verely I say vnto you, Except the wheate corne fall into the ground and dye, it bideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth foorth much fruit. 25 *He that loueth his life, shall lose it, and he that hateth his life in this world, shall keepe it vnto life eternall 26 *If any man serue me let him followe me: for where I am, there shall also my seruant be: and if any man serue me, him will my Father honour. 27 Now is my soule troubled: and what shall I say? Father, saue me from this houre: but therefore came I vnto this houre. 28 Father, glorifie thy Name. Then came there a voyce from heauen, saying, I haue both glorified it, and wil glorifie it againe. 29 Then said the people ỹ stoode by, and heard, that it was a thunder: other said, An Angel spake to him. 30 Iesus answered, and said, This voyce came not because of me, but for your sakes. 31 Nowe is the iudgement of this world: nowe shall the prince of this world be cast out. 32 *And I, if I were lift vp from ỹ earth, will draw all men vnto me. 33 Nowe this said he signifying what death he should die. 34 The people answered him, We haue heard out of

Mat. 10.39.

I haue. 17.24.

Chap. 3.14.

Psal. 89.36 the * Law, that that Christ bideth for euer: and how sayest thou, that that Sonne of man must be lift vp? Who is that Sonne of man? 35 Then Iesus said vnto them, Yet a litle while * is the light with you: walke while ye haue that light, least the darkenesse come vpon you: for he that walketh in the darke, knoweth not whither he goeth. 36 While ye haue that light, beleeue in that light, that ye may be the children of the light. These things spake Iesus, and departed, and hid himselfe from them 37 And though he had done so many miracles before them, yet beleeued they not on him, 38 That the saying of Esaias the Prophet might be fulfilled, that he said, * Lord, who beleeued our report? and to whom is the arme of the Lord reuealed? 39 Therefore coulde they not beleeue, because that Esaias saith againe. 40 *He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart, that they should not see with *their* eyes, nor vnderstand with *their* heart, and should be conuerted, and I should heale them. 41 These things said Esaias when he sawe his glory, and spake of him. 42 Neuertheless, euen among the chiefe rulers, many beleeued in him but because of the Pharises they did not confesse him, least they should be *cast* out of the Synagogue. 43 *For they loued the praise of men, more then the prayse of God. 44 And Iesus cryed, and said, He that beleeueth in me, beleeueth not in me, but in him that sent me. 45 And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent me. 46 *I am

Chap. 8.9.

Isai. 53.1.

Isai. 6.9.

Chap. 5.44.

Chap. 9.17. & 9. 39

come

come a light into the world, that whosoeuer beleeueth in me, should not abide in darkenesse. 47 *And if any man heare my words, & beleeue not, I iudge him not: for I came not to iudge the world, but to saue the world. 48 He that refuseth me, and receiueth not my wordes, hath one that iudgeth him: *the word ỹ I haue spoken, it shall iudge him in the last day. 49 For I haue not spoken of my selfe: but the Father, which sent me, he gaue me a commaundement what I should say, and what I should speake. 50 And I knowe that his commandement is life euerlasting: the things therefore that I speake, I speake *them* so as the Father said vnto me.

Chap. 3.17.

Matt. 16.19

CHAP. 13. 4. *Christ washeth his disciples feete.*

NOwe * before the feast of the Passeouer, whē Iesus knew that his houre was come, that he should depart out of this world vnto the Father, forasmuch as he loued his owne which were in the world, vnto the end he loued them. 2 And when supper was done (and that the deuil had nowe put in the heart of Iudas Iscariot, Simons *sonne*, to betray him) 3 Iesus knowing that the Father had giuen all things into his hands, and that he was come foorth from God and went to God, 4 He riseth from supper, & layeth aside *his vpper* garments: and tooke a towel, & girded himselfe. 5 After that, he powred water into a basin, & began to wash the disciples feete, and to wipe them with the

Matt. 26.2.

towel, wherewith he was girded. 6 Then came he to Simon Peter, who ſaid to him, Lord doeſt thou waſh my feete? 7 Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, What I doe, thou knoweſt not nowe, but thou ſhalt knowe it hereafter. 8 Peter ſaid vnto him, Thou ſhalt neuer waſh my feete. Ieſus anſwered him, If I waſh thee not, thou ſhalt haue no part with me. 9 Simon Peter ſaid vnto him, Lord, not my feete onely, but alſo the hands and the head. 10 Ieſus ſaid to him, He that is waſhed, needeth not, ſaue to waſh *his* feete, but
Chap. is cleane euery whit: * and ye are cleane, but
15.3. not all: 11 For he knew who ſhould betray him: therefore ſaid he, Ye are not all cleane. 12 Soafter he had waſhed their feete, and had taken his garments, and was ſet downe againe, he ſaid vnto them, Knowe ye what I haue done to you? 13 Ye call me Maſter, and Lord, and ye ſay well: for ſo am I. 14 If I then your Lord, and Maſter, haue waſhed your feete, ye alſo ought to waſh one an others feete. 15 For I haue giuen you an example, that ye ſhould doe, euen as I haue done
Chap. to you. 16 Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, * The
15.20. ſeruant is not greater then his maſter, neither
matt. the ambaſſadour greater then he that ſent him.
10.24. 17 If ye knowe theſe things, bleſſed are ye, if ye
luke doe them. 18 I ſpeake not of you all: I knowe
6.40. whom I haue choſen: but *it is* that the Scripture might be fulfilled, * He that eateth bread
Pſal. with me hath lift vp his heele againſt me. 19 Fo
41.9. henceforth tell I you before it come, that when

it is come to passe, ye might beleeue that I am
he. 20 *Verely, verely I say vnto you, If I send *Mat.
any, he that receiueth him, receiueth me, and he 10.40
that receiueth me, receiueth him that sent me. *luke*
21 When Iesus had said these things, he was 10.16
troubled in the Spirit, & testified & said, Verely,
verely I say vnto you, that one of you shall be-
tray me. 22 Then *the disciples looked one on *Mat.
another, doubting of whom he spake. 23 Now 26.21.
there was one of his disciples, which leaned on *marke*
Iesus bosome, whom Iesus loued. 24 To him 14.18
therefore beckened Simon Peter, that he should *luke*
aske who it was of whom he spake. 25 He then 22.21
as he leaned on Iesus brest, said vnto him, Lord,
who is it? 26 Iesus answered, He it is, to whom
I shall giue a sop, when I haue dipt it: and he
wet a sop, and gaue it to Iudas Iscariot, Simons
sonne. 27 And after the sop, Satan entred into
him. Then said Iesus vnto him, That thou doest,
doe quickly. 28 But none of them that were at
table, knew for what cause he spake it vnto him.
29 For some of them thought because Iudas
had the bagge, that Iesus had said vnto him, Buy
those things that we haue neede of against the
feast: or that he should giue some thing to the
poore. 30 Assoone then as he had receiued the
sop, he went immediatly out, and it was night.
31 When he was gone out, Iesus said, Now is the
Sonne of man glorified, and God is glorified in
him. 32 If God be glorified in him, God shall
also glorifie him in himselfe, & shal straightway

glorifie him. 33 Litle children, yet a litle while am I with you: ye shall seeke me, but as I said
Chap. vnto *ye Iewes, Whither I go, can ye not come:
7.34. also to you say I now, 34 *A newe commande-
Chap. ment giue I vnto you, that ye loue one another:
15.12. as I haue loued you, that ye also loue one ano-
Iesuit. ther. 35 By this shall all men know that ye are
19.18 my disciples, if ye haue loue one to another.
matt. 36 Simon Peter said vnto him, Lord, whither
22.39 goest thou? Iesus answered him, Whither I goe,
1.iohn thou canst not followe me nowe: but thou shalt
4.21. followe me afterward. 37 Peter said vnto him,
Lord, why can I not followe thee now? *I will
Mat. lay downe my life for thy sake. 38 Iesus answe-
26.33 red him, Wilt thou lay downe thy life for my
sake? Verely, verely I say vnto thee, The cocke
shall not crowe, till thou haue denied me thrise.

CHAP. 14. *16. The comforter promised.*

LEt not your heart be troubled: ye beleeue in God, beleeue also in me. 2 In my Fathers house are many dwelling places: if it were not so, I would haue tolde you: I goe to prepare a place for you, 3 And if I goe to prepare a place for you, I wil come againe, & receiue you vnto my selfe, that where I am, there may ye be also. 4 And whither I goe, ye knowe, and the way ye know. 5 Thomas said vnto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest: how can we then know the way? 6 Iesus said vnto him, I am that Way, and that Trueth, and that Life. No man commeth vnto the Father, but by me. 7 If ye had knowen

me,

me,ye ſhould haue knowē my Father alſo: and from henceforth ye know him, and haue ſeene him. 8 Philip ſaid vnto him, Lord,ſhewe vs *thy* Father,& it ſufficeth vs. 9 Ieſus ſaid vnto him, I haue bin ſo long time with you, and haſt thou not knowen me, Philip? he that hath ſeene me, hath ſeene my Father: howe then ſayeſt thou, Shew vs *thy* Father? 10 Beleeueſt thou not, that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? The wordes that I ſpeake vnto you, I ſpeake not of my ſelfe: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the workes. 11 Beleeue me, that I *am* in the Father, and the Father *is* in me: at the leaſt beleeue me for the very workes ſake. 12 Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, he that beleeueth in me, the workes that I doe, he ſhall doe alſo, & greater then theſe ſhal he doe: for I go vnto my Father. 13 *And whatſoeuer ye aſke in my Name, that will I doe, that the Father may be glorified in the Sonne. 14 If ye ſhall aſke any thing in my Name, I wil doe it. 15 If ye loue me, keepe my commandements, 16 And I will pray the Father, & he ſhall giue you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for euer, 17 *Euen* the Spirit of trueth, whom the world cannot receiue, becauſe it ſeeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye knowe him: for he dwelleth with you, and ſhall be in you. 18 I will not leaue you fatherleſſe: *but* I will come to you. 19 Yet a litle *while*, and the world ſhall ſee me no more, but ye ſhall ſee me: becauſe I liue, ye ſhall liue

Chap. 16.23 matt. 7.7. mark. 11.24 iames 1.5.

line also. 20 At that day shall ye knowe that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you. 21 He that hath my commandements, & keepeth them, is he that loueth me: & he that loueth me, shalbe loued of my Father: and I will loue him, and will shewe mine owne selfe to him. 22 Iudas said vnto him (not Iscariot) Lord, what is the cause that thou wilt shew thy selfe vnto vs, and not vnto the world? 23 Iesus answered and said vnto him, If any man loue me, he wil keepe my word, and my Father will loue him, and we will come vnto him, and will dwell with him. 24 He that loueth me not, keepeth not my words, and the word which ye heare, is not mine, but the Fathers which sent me 25 These things haue I spoken vnto you, being present with you. 26 But the Comforter which is the holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my Name, he shal teache you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance which I haue tolde you. 26 Peace I leaue with you: my peace I giue vnto you: not as the world giueth, giue I vnto you. Let not your heart be troubled, nor feare. 28 Ye haue heard howe I said vnto you, I goe away, and will come vnto you If ye loued me, ye would verely reioyce, because I said, I goe vnto the Father: for the Father is greater then I. 29 And nowe haue I spoken vnto you, before it come, that when it is come to passe, ye might beleeue. 30 Hereafter will I not speake many things vnto you: for the prince of this world

Chap. 15. 26

comm

commeth, and hath nought in mee. 31 But *it is* that the worlde may knowe that I loue my Father: and as the Father hath commanded me, so I doe. Arise, let vs goe hence.

CHAP. 15. 1. *The parable of the vine.*

I Am that true vine, and my Father is that husbandman. 2 *Euery branch that beareth not fruite in me, he taketh away: and euery one that beareth fruite, hee purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruite. 3 *Now are ye cleane thorow the word, which I haue spoken vnto you. 4 Abide in me, and I in you: as the branch can not beare fruite of it selfe, except it abide in the vine, no more can ye, except ye abide in me. 5 I am that vine: ye *are* the branches: he that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruite: for without me can ye do nothing. 6 *If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, & withereth: and men gather them, and cast *them* into the fire, & they burne. 7 *If ye abide in me, & my words abide in you, aske what ye will, & it shalbe done vnto you. 8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye beare much fruit, and be made my disciples. 9 As the Father hath loued me, so haue I loued you: cõtinue in that my loue. 10 If ye shall keepe my commandements, ye shal abide in my loue, as I haue kept my Fathers commaundements, and abide in his loue. 11 These things haue I spoken vnto you, that my ioy might remaine in you, and that your ioy might be full. 12 *This is my commandement, that

Matt. 15.13. *Chap.* 13.10. *Colos.* 1.23. *1.Ioh.* 3.22. *Chap.* 13.34. *1.Thes.* 4.9. *1.Iohn* 3.11. *and* 4.21.

that ye loue one another, as I haue loued you.
13 Greater loue then this hath no man, when
any man beſtoweth his life for his friendes:
14 Yee are my friends, if ye doe whatſoeuer I
command you. 15 Hencefoorth call I not you
ſeruants: for the ſeruant knoweth not what his
maſter doeth: but I haue called you friends: for
all things that I haue heard of my Father, haue I
made knowen to you. 16 Ye haue not choſen
mee, but I haue choſen you, and ordeined you
Mat. *that ye goe and bring forth fruit, and that your
28.19. fruite remaine, that whatſoeuer ye ſhall aſke of
the Father in my Name, hee may giue it you.
17 Theſe things commaund I you, that ye loue
one another. 18 If the world hate you, ye know
that it hated me before you. 19 If ye were of
the world, the world would loue his owne: but
becauſe ye are not of the world, but I haue cho-
ſen you out of the world, therefore the world
hateth you. 20 Remember the worde that I
Chap. ſayd vnto you, * The ſeruant is not greater then
13.16. his maſter. * If they haue perſecuted mee, they
Matt. will perſecute you alſo: if they haue kept my
24 9. worde, they will alſo keepe yours. 21 *But all
Chap. theſe things will they doe vnto you for my
16 4. Names ſake, becauſe they haue not knowen him
that ſent me. 22 If I had not come and ſpoken
vnto them, they ſhould not haue had ſinne: but
now haue they no cloke for their ſinne. 23 He
that hateth me, hateth my Father alſo. 24 If I
had not done workes among them which none

other

other man did, they had not had ſinne: but now haue they both ſeene & haue hated both me, and my Father. 25 But *it is* that the word might be fulfilled, that is written in their Lawe, * They hated me without a cauſe. 26 But when the Comforter ſhall come, * whom I will ſend vnto you from the Father, *euen* the Spirit of trueth, which proceedeth of the Father, he ſhall teſtifie of me. 27 And ye ſhall witnes alſo, becauſe yee haue bene with me from the beginning. *Pſal. 35 19. Chap. 14.26. Luke 24.49*

CHAP. 16. 1 *Of perſecutions.*

THeſe things haue I ſayd vnto you, that yee ſhould not be offended. 2 They ſhal excommunicate you: yea, the time ſhall come, that whoſoeuer killeth you, will thinke that he doth God ſeruice. 3 And theſe things will they doe vnto you, becauſe they haue not knowen the Father, nor me. 4 * But theſe things haue I tolde you, that when the houre ſhal come, ye might remember, that I tolde you them. And theſe things ſaid I not vnto you from the beginning, becauſe I was with you. 5 But nowe I goe my way, to him that ſent me, & none of you aſketh me, whither goeſt thou? 6 But becauſe I haue ſayde theſe things vnto you, your hearts are full of ſorow. 7 Yet I tel you the trueth, it is expediente for you that I goe away: for if I goe not away, that Comforter wil not come vnto you: but if I depart, I wil ſend him vnto you. 8 And when he is come, he wil reproue the world of ſinne, and of righteouſneſſe, and of iudgement; 9 Of *Chap. 15.21*

ſinne,

ſinne, becauſe they beleeue not in mee: 10 Of righteouſneſſe, becauſe I goe to my Father, and ye ſhall ſee me no more: 11 Of iudgement, becauſe the Prince of this world is iudged. 12 I haue yet many things to ſay vnto you, but ye cannot beare them now. 13 Howbeit, when he is come which is the Spirit of trueth, he will lead you into all trueth: for hee ſhall not ſpeake of himſelfe, but whatſoeuer he ſhall heare, ſhall he ſpeake, and he will ſhew you the things to come. 14 He ſhall glorifie me: for he ſhall receiue of mine, and ſhall ſhew it vnto you. 15 All things that the Father hath, are mine: therefore ſaide I that he ſhall take of mine, and ſhew it vnto you. 16 A litle *while*, and ye ſhal not ſee me: and againe a litle *while*, & ye ſhal ſee me: for I goe to the Father. 17 Then ſaid *ſome* of his diſciples among themſelues, What is this that he ſaith vnto vs, A litle *while*, & ye ſhal not ſee me, & againe, A litle *while*, and ye ſhal ſee me, and, For I goe to the Father? 18 They ſaid therfore, What is this that he ſaith, A litle *while*? we know not what he ſaith. 19 Now Ieſus knew ỹ they would aſke him, and ſaid vnto them, Doe ye enquire among yonr ſelues, of that I ſaid, A litle *while*, and ye ſhal not ſee me: and againe, A litle *while*, and ye ſhal ſee me? 20 Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, that ye ſhall weepe and lament, and the world ſhal reioyce: and ye ſhal ſorow, but your ſorow ſhalbe turned to ioy. 21 A woman when ſhe trauaileth, hath ſorowe, becauſe her houre is come:

come: but assoone as she is deliuered of ỹ child, she remembreth no more the anguish, for ioy that a man is borne into the world. 22 And ye now therfore are in sorow: but I wil see you againe, and your hearts shal reioyce, and your ioy shal no man take from you. 23 And in that day shal ye aske me nothing. Verely, verely I say vnto you, Whatsoeuer ye shall aske the Father in my Name, he wil giue it you. 24 Hitherto haue ye asked nothing in my Name: aske, and ye shal receiue, ỹ your ioy may be ful. 25 These things haue I spoken vnto you in parables: but the time will come, when I shall no more speake to you in parables: but I shal shew you plainly of the Father. 26 At that day shall ye aske in my Name, & I say not vnto you, that I wil pray vnto the Father for you: 27 For the Father himselfe loueth you, because ye haue loued me, and haue beleeued that I came out from God. 28 I am come out from the Father, and came into the world: again I leaue the world, and go to the Father. 29 His disciples said vnto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainely, & thou speakest no parable. 30 Now knowe we that thou knowest all things, & needest not that any man should aske thee. By this we beleeue, that thou art come out from God. 31 Iesus answered them, Do you beleeue now? 32 Behold, the houre cõmeth, and is already come, that ye shall be scattered euery man into his owne, & shal leaue me alone: but I am not alone: for the father is with me. 33 These things

Chap. 14.13 matt. 7.7. & 21. 22. mar. 11.24 luke 11. 9.

Chap. 17. 8.

Matt. 26.31 mark. 14.27

things haue I ſpoken vnto you, that in me ye might haue peace: in the world ye ſhal haue affliction, but be of good comfort: I haue ouercome the world.

CHAP. 17. *9. Chriſts prayer for al beleeuers.*

THeſe things ſpake Ieſus, and lift vp his eyes to heauen, and ſaid, Father, ỹ houre is come: glorifie thy Sonne, that thy Sonne alſo may glorifie thee. 2 *As thou haſt giuen him power ouer all fleſh, that he ſhould giue eternall life to all them that thou haſt giuen him. 3 And this is life eternall, that they know thee *to be* the only very God, and whom thou haſt ſent Ieſus Chriſt. 4 I haue glorified thee on the earth: I haue finiſhed the worke which thou gaueſt mee to doo. 5 And now glorifie me, thou Father, with thine owne ſelf, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was. 6 I haue declared thy Name vnto the men which thou gaueſt me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gaueſt them me, & they haue kept thy word. 7 *Now they know that all things whatſoeuer thou haſt giuen me, are of thee. 8 For I haue giuen vnto them the wordes, which thou gaueſt me, and they haue receiued *them*, & haue knowen ſurely that I came out from thee, and haue beleeued that thou haſt ſent mee. 9 I pray for them: I pray not for the worlde, but for them which thou haſt giuen me: for they are thine. 10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine, and I am glorified in them. 11 And nowe am I no more

Mat. 11. 18

Chap. 16. 27.

in the worlde, but these are in the world, and I come to thee: Holy Father, keepe them in thy Name, *euen* them whome thou hast giuen mee, that they may be one, as we *are*. 12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy Name: those that thou gauest mee, haue I kept, and none of them is lost, but the child of perdition, that the Scripture might be fulfilled. 13 And now come I to thee, and these things speake I in the world, that they might haue my ioy fulfilled in themselues. 14 I haue giuen them thy worde, and the worlde hath hated them, because they are not of the worlde, as I am not of the world. 15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou keepe them from euil. 16 They are not of the world, as I am not of the world. 17 Sanctifie them with thy truth: thy word is trueth. 18 As thou diddest send me into the world, so haue I sent them into the world. 19 And for their sakes sanctifie I my selfe, that they also may be sanctified through the truth. 20 I pray not for these alone, but for them also which shall beleeue in mee through their word, 21 That they al may be one, as thou, O Father, *art* in me, and I in thee: *euen* that they may be also one in vs, ỹ the world may beleeue that thou hast sent mee. 22 And the glory that thou gauest me, I haue giuẽ them, that they may be one, as we are one, 23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one, & that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and

Psal. 109.7.

Chap. haſt loued them, as thou haſt loued me. 24 Fa-
32.26. ther, I wil that they which thou haſt giuen me, be with me, euen where I am, that they may behold that my glory, which thou haſt giuen me: for thou louedſt mee before the foundation of the worlde. 25 O righteous Father, the world alſo hath not knowen thee, but I haue knowen thee, and theſe haue knowen that thou haſt ſent mee. 26 And I haue declared vnto them thy Name, and wil declare it, that the loue wherewith thou haſt loued me, may be in them, and I in them.

CHAP. 18. 4. *Chriſt apprehended and iudged.*

WHen Ieſus had ſpoken theſe things, he went
Matt. forth with his diſciples ouer the brooke
26.36. *Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he
mark. entred, and his diſciples. 2 And Iudas which be-
14.32. trayed him, knewe alſo the place: for Ieſus oft-
Mat. times reſorted thither with his diſciples. 3 Iu-
26.47 das then after he had receiued a band of men,
mark. and officers of the hie Prieſtes and of the Phariſes,
14.43 came thither with lanternes, and torches, and
luke weapons. 4 Then Ieſus, knowing all things that
22.47 ſhould come vnto him, went forth and ſaid vnto
them, Whom ſeeke ye? 5 They anſwered him,
Ieſus of Nazareth. Ieſus ſaid vnto them, I am he.
Now Iudas alſo which betraied him, ſtood with
them. 6 Aſſoone then as he had ſaid vnto them,
I am he, they went away backward, & fell to the
ground. 7 Then he aſked them againe, Whom
ſeeke ye? And they ſaid, Ieſus of Nazareth. Ie-
ſus anſwered, I ſaid vnto you, that I am he:

sent. If ye seeke me, let these go their way. 9 *This
was that the word might be fulfilled which he
spake, 9 *Of them which thou gauest me, haue Chap.
I lost none. 10 Then Simon Peter hauing a 17.12.
sword, drew it, & smote the hie Priests seruant, &
cut off his right eare. Now the seruãts name was
Malchus. 11 Then said Iesus vnto Peter, Put vp
thy sword into thy sheath: shal I not drinke of
the cup which *my* Father hath giuẽ me? 12 Then
the band, and the captaine and the officers of the
Iewes tooke Iesus & bound him, 13 And led him
away to *Annas first (for he was father in law to Luke
Caiaphas, which was the hie Priest ỹ same yere) 3.2.
14 *And Caiaphas was he, that gaue counsel to Chap.
the Iewes, that it was expedient that one man 11.15.
should die for the people. 15 *Now Simon Pe- Mat.
ter folowed Iesus, & another disciple, & that dis- 26.38.
ciple was knowen of the hie Priest: therfore he mark.
went in with Iesus into the hal of the hie Priest: 14.54.
16 But Peter stood at the doore without. Then luke
went out the other disciple which was knowen 22.54.
vnto the hie Priest, & spake to her that kept the
doore, & brought in Peter. 17 Then said the maid
that kept the doore, vnto Peter, Art not thou al-
so one of this mans disciples? He said, I am not.
18 And the seruãts & officers stood there, which
had made a fire of coles: for it was cold, & they
warmed themselues. And Peter also stood amõg
them, & warmed himselfe. 19 The hie Priest then
asked Iesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.
20 Iesus answered him, I spake openly to the

world: I euer taught in the Synagogue & in the
Temple, whither the Iewes resort cõtinually, and
in secret haue I said nothing. 21 Why asketh thou
me? aske them which heard me what I said vnto
them: behold, they know what I said. 22 When
hee had spoken these things, one of the officers
which stood by, smote Iesus with his rod, saying,
Answerest thou the hie Priest so? 23 Iesus answe-
red him, If I haue euil spokẽ, beare witnes of the
euil: but if I haue well spoken, why smitest thou
Matt. me? 24 (*Now Annas had sent him bound to Ca-
26.57 iaphas the hie priest.) 25 * And Simon Peter
Mar. stood & warmed himselfe, & they said vnto him,
26.69 Art not thou also of his disciples? He denied it, &
mark. said, I am not. 26 One of the seruants of the hie
14 56 priest, his cousin whose eare Peter smote off, said,
luke Did not I see thee in the garden with him? 27 Pe-
22 55 ter then denied againe, & immediatly the cocke
Mat. crew. 28 *Then led they Iesus from Caiaphas
27.2. into the common hall. Now it was morning, and
they themselues went not into the common hall,
Act. least they should be *defiled, but that they might
10 28 eat the Passeouer. 29 Pilate then went out vn-
and to them, and said, What accusation bring yee a-
11. 3. gainst this man? 30 They answered and said vn-
to him, If he were not an euil doer, wee would
not haue deliuered him vnto thee. 31 Then said
Pilate vnto them, Take ye him, and iudge him
after your owne Law. Then the Iewes said vnto
Mat. him, It is not lawfull for vs to put any man to
20.19 death. 32 *It was* that the word of Iesus *might*

be fulfilled which hee ſpake, ſignifying what death he ſhould die. 33 * So Pilate entred into the cõmon hall againe, and called Ieſus, and ſaid vnto him, Art thou the King of the Iewes? 34 Ieſus anſwered him, Sayeſt thou that of thy ſelfe, or did other tell it thee of me? Pilate anſwered, Am I a Iew? Thine owne nation, and the hie Prieſts haue delinered thee vnto mee. What haſt thou done? 36 Ieſus anſwered, My kingdome is not of this worlde: if my kingdome were of this worlde, my ſeruants would ſurely fight, that I ſhould not be deliuered to the Iewes: but now is my kingdome not from hence. 37 Pilate then ſaid vnto him, Art thou a King then? Ieſus anſwered, Thou ſayeſt that I am a King: for this cauſe am I borne, and for this cauſe came I into the worlde, that I ſhoulde beare witneſſe vnto the trueth: euery one that is of the trueth, heareth my voyce. 38 Pilate ſaide vnto him, What is trueth? And when he had ſaid that, he went out againe vnto the Iewes, and ſaid vnto them, I find in him no cauſe at all. 39 * But you haue a cuſtome, that I ſhould deliuer you one looſe at the Paſſeouer: will ye then that I let looſe vnto you the King of the Iewes? 40 * Then cried they all againe, ſaying, Not him, but Barabbas: nowe this Barabbas was a murtherer.

Mat. 27. 11. *mark.* 15. 2. *luke* 23. 3. *Mat.* 27. 15. *Act.* 3. 14.

CHAP. 19. 1. *Chriſt ſcourged, condemned, and crucified.*

1 THen * Pilate tooke Ieſus, and ſcourged him. 2 And the ſouldiers platted a crowne of thornes,

Matt. 27. 27. *mark.* 15. 16.

thornes,& put it on his head,& they put on him a purple garment, 3 And ſaid, Haile King of the Iewes. And they ſmote him with their rods. 4 Then Pilate went forth againe, and ſaid vnto them, Beholde,I bring him forth to you,that ye may know, that I finde no fault in him at all. 5 Then came Ieſus foorth,wearing a crowne of thornes,& a purple garment. And *Pilate* ſaid vnto them,Behold the man. 6 Then when the hie Prieſts and officers ſaw him,they cried, ſaying, Crucifie,crucifie him. *Pilate* ſaid vnto thē, Take ye him, and crucifie *him*: for I finde no fault in him. 7 The Iewes anſwered him, We haue a Law,and by our law he ought to die, becauſe he made himſelfe the Sonne of God. 8 When Pilate then heard ỹ word,he was the more afraid, 9 And went againe into the common hall, and ſaid vnto Ieſus, Whence art thou? But Ieſus gaue him none anſwere. 10 Then ſaid Pilate vnto him, Speakeſt thou not vnto me? Knoweſt thou not that I haue power to crucifie thee,and haue power to looſe thee? 11 Ieſus anſwered, Thou couldeſt haue no power at all againſt me, except it were giuen thee frō aboue: therefore he ỹ deliuered me vnto thee,hath the greater ſin. 12 From thenceforth Pilate ſought to looſe him, but the Iewes cried, ſaying, If thou deliuer him, thou art not Ceſars friend? *for* whoſoeuer maketh himſelfe a King, ſpeaketh againſt Ceſar. 13 When Pilate heard this word,he brought Ieſus forth,& ſate downe in the iudgement ſeat in

a place called the panement, & in Hebrew, Gabbatha. 14 And it was ỹ preparation of the Passeouer, and about the sixt houre: and he said vnto the Iewes, Behold your King. 15 But they cried, Away with him, away with him, crucifie him. Pilate said vnto thē, Shall I crucifie your King? The hie Priests answered, We haue no king but Cesar. 16 Then deliuered he him vnto them, to be crucified. *And they tooke Iesus, and led him a- *Mat. way. 17 And he bare his owne crosse, and came 27.31. into a place named *of dead men* skulles, which *marke* is called in Hebrew, Golgotha: 18 Where they 15.25. crucified him, & two other with him, on either side one, and Iesus in the middes. 19 And Pilate wrote also a title, and put it on the crosse, and it was written, IESVS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE IEWES. 20 This title then read many of the Iewes: for the place where Iesus was crucified, was nere to the city: and it was written in Hebrew, Greeke, and Latine. 21 Then said the hie Priests of the Iewes to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Iewes, but that he sayd, I am King of the Iewes. 22 Pilate answered, What I haue written, I haue written. 23 Then *the souldiers, when they *Mat. had crucified Iesus, tooke his garments (& made 27.35. foure parts, to euery souldier a part) and *his marke* coat: and the coat was without seame wouen 15.24. from the top thorowout. 24 Therefore they said one to another, Let vs not diuide it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be. *This was* that the

Pſal. 22.18. Scripture might be fulfilled, which ſaith, * They parted my garments among them, & on my coat did caſt lots. So the ſouldiers did theſe things in deed. 25 Then ſtood by the croſſe of Ieſus, his mother, and his mothers ſiſter, Mary *the wife* of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalen. 26 And when Ieſus ſaw his mother, & the diſciple ſtanding by, whom he loued, he ſayd vnto his mother, Woman, behold thy ſonne. 27 Then ſaid he to the diſciple, Behold thy mother: and frō that houre the diſciple tooke her home vnto him. 28 After, when Ieſus knew that all things were perfor-

Pſal. 69.22 med, that the * Scripture might be fulfilled, he ſaid, I thirſt. 29 And there was ſet a veſſell full of vineger, & they filled a ſponge with vineger, & put it about an hyſſope *ſtalke*, & put it to his mouth. 30 Now when Ieſus had receiued of the vineger, he ſaid, It is finiſhed, & bowed his head, and gaue vp the ghoſt. 31 The Iewes then (becauſe it was the Preparation, ỹ the bodies ſhould not remaine vpon the croſſe on ỹ Sabbath *day*: for that Sabbath was an hie day) beſought Pilate that their legs might be broken, & that they might be taken downe. 32 Then came the ſouldiers & brake the legs of the firſt, & of the other, which was crucified with *Ieſus*. 33 But when they came to Ieſus, and ſaw that he was deadalready, they brake not his legs. 34 But one of the ſouldiers with a ſpeare pearced his ſide, and foorthwith came there out blood and water. 35 And he that ſaw it, bare record, & his record

is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye
might beleeue it: 36 For these things were
done ỹ the Scripture should be fulfilled, * Not a *Exod.*
bone of him shalbe broken. 37 And againe ano- 12.46
ther Scripture saith, * They shall see him whom *Zech.*
they haue thrust thorow. 38 * And after these 12.10
things Ioseph of Arimathea (who was a disci- *Matt.*
ple of Iesus, but secretly for feare of the Iewes) 27.57
besought Pilate that he might take downe the *marke*
body of Iesus. And Pilate gaue him licence. He 15.42
came then and tooke Iesus body. 39 And there
came * also Nicodemus (which first came to Ie- *Chap.*
sus by night) and brought of myrrhe and aloee, 3.2.
mingled together about an hundred pound.
40 Then tooke they the body of Iesus, & wrap-
ped it in linnen clothes with the odours, as the
maner of the Iewes is to bury. 41 And in that
place where Iesus was crucified, was a garden,
and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was
neuer man yet layed. 42 There then layed they
Iesus, because of the Iewes Preparation *day*, for
the sepulchre was nere.

CHAP. 20. 1 *Christes resurrection.*

NOw the first * day of the weeke came Mary *Mar.*
Magdalene, earely when it was yet darke, 16.1.
vnto the sepulchre, & saw the stone taken away *luke*
from the tombe. 2 Then she ran, and came to 24.1.
Simon Peter, & to the other disciple whom Ie-
sus loued, & said vnto them, They haue taken a-
way the Lord out of the sepulchre, & we know
not where they haue laid him. 3 Peter therfore

went

went forth, & the other disciple and they came vnto the sepulchre. 4 So they ran both together, but the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the sepulchre. 5 And he stouped downe, & saw the linnen clothes lying: yet went he not in. 6 Then came Simon Peter following him, & went into the sepulchre, and saw the linnen clothes lie, 7 And the kerchief that was vpon his head, not lying with the linnen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it selfe. 8 Then went in also the other disciple, which came first to the sepulchre, & he saw it, & beleeued. 9 For as yet they knew not the Scripture, That he must rise againe from the dead. 10 And the disciples went away againe vnto their owne
Mat. 28.1. marke 16.5. home. 11 * But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept, she bowed her selfe into the sepulchre, 12 And saw two Angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, & the other at the feet, where the body of Iesus had lien. 13 And they said vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She said vnto them, They haue taken away my Lord, and I know not where they haue layed him. 14 When she had thus sayd, she turned her selfe backe, & saw Iesus standing, & knew not that it was Iesus. 15 Iesus said vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? Whom seekest thou? She supposing that he had bene the gardiner, said vnto him, Sir, if thou hast borne him hence, tell me where thou hast layd him, and I will take him away. 16 Iesus saith vnto her,

Mary,

Mary. She turned her ſelfe,& ſaid vnto him, Rabboni,which is to ſay, Maſter. 17 Ieſus ſaith vnto her, Touch me not: for I am not yet aſcended to my Father: but go to my brethren,& ſay vnto them,I aſcend vnto my Father, & to your Father, and to my God, and your God. 18 Mary Magdalene came and tolde the diſciples that ſhe had ſeene the Lord, & that he had ſpoken theſe things vnto her. 19 * The ſame day then at night, which was the firſt *day* of the weeke, and when the doores were ſhut where the diſciples were aſſembled for feare of the Iewes, came Ieſus & ſtood in the mids, and ſaid to them, Peace *be* vnto you. 20 And when he had ſo ſaid, he ſhewed vnto them *his* hands,and his ſide. Then were the diſciples glad when they had ſeene the Lord. 21 * Then ſaid Ieſus vnto them againe, Peace *be* vnto you: as my Father ſent me, ſo ſend I you. 22 And when had ſayd that, he breathed on them, and ſayd vnto them, Receiue the holy Ghoſt. 23 Whoſoeuers ſinnes ye remit, they are remitted vnto them: *and* whoſoeuers ſinnes ye reteine,they are reteined. 24 But Thomas one of the twelue,called Didymus,was not with them when Ieſus came. 25 The other diſciples therefore ſaid vnto him, We haue ſeene the Lord: but he ſaid vnto them, Except I ſee in his hands the print of the nailes,& put my finger into the print of the nailes, & put my hand into his ſide,I will not beleeue it. 26 And eight dayes after againe his diſciples were within, and Thomas

Mar. 16.14. *luke* 24.36. 1. *cor.* 15.5.

Mat. 28.19.

mas with thē. *Then* came Iesus, when the doores were shut, and stood in the mids, and said, Peace *be* vnto you. 27 After, said he to Thomas, Put thy finger here, and see mine hands, and put forth thine hand, and put it into my side, and be not faithlesse, but faithful. 28 Then Thomas answered, and said vnto him, *Thou art* my Lord, & my God. 29 Iesus said vnto him, Thomas, because thou hast seene me, thou beleeuest: blessed *are* they that haue not seene, and haue beleeued.

hap. 30 * And many other signes also did Iesus in the 25. presence of his disciples, which are not written in this booke. 31 But these things are written that ye might beleeue, that Iesus is that Christ that Sonne of God, and that in beleeuing ye might haue life through his Name.

CHA. 21. 1 *The charge of Ministers.*

AFter these things, Iesus shewed himselfe a-gaine to his disciples at the sea of Tiberias, and thus shewed he *himselfe*. 2 There were together Simon Peter, & Thomas, which is called Didymus, & Nathanael of Cana in Galile, & the *sonnes* of Zebedeus, and two other of his disciples. 3 Simon Peter said vnto them, I go a fishing. They said vnto him, We also will go with thee. Then they went their way & entred into a ship straightway, and that night caught they nothing. 4 But when the morning was come, Iesus stood on the shoare: neuertheless the disciples knew not that it was Iesus. 5 Iesus then sayd vnto them, Sirs, haue ye any meat? They answered

swered him, No. 6 Then he said vnto thē, Cast out the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall finde. So they cast out, and they were not able at all to draw it, for the multitude of fishes. 7 Therefore said the disciple whom Iesus loued, vnto Peter, It is the Lord. When Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girded his coat to him (for he was naked) & cast himselfe into the sea. 8 But the other disciples came by ship (for they were not farre from land, but about two hundred cubits) and they drew the net with fishes. 9 Assoone then as they were come to land, they saw hoat coales, and fish layd thereon, and bread. 10 Iesus said vnto them, Bring of the fishes, which ye haue now caught. 11 Simon Peter stepped foorth and drew the net to land, full of great fishes, an hundred fiftie and three: and albeit there were so many, yet was not the net broken. 12 Iesus said vnto them, Come *and* dine. And none of the disciples durst aske him, Who art thou? seeing they knew that he was the Lord. 13 Iesus then came and tooke bread, and gaue them, and fish likewise. 14 This is now the third time that Iesus shewed himselfe to his disciples, after that he was risen againe from the dead. 25 So when they had dined, Iesus sayd to Simon Peter, Simon *the sonne* of Iona, louest thou me more then these? He said vnto him, Yea Lord, thou knowest that I loue thee. He said vnto him, Feed my lambs. 16 He said to him againe the second time, Simon *the sonne* of Iona,

louest

loueſt thou me? He ſaid vnto him, Yea Lord, thou knoweſt that I loue thee. He ſaid vnto him, Feed my ſheepe. 17 He ſaid vnto him the third time, Simon *the ſonne* of Iona, loueſt thou me? Peter was ſory becauſe he had ſaid to him the third time, Loueſt thou me? and ſayd vnto him, Lord, thou knoweſt all things, thou knoweſt that I loue thee. Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Feed my ſheepe. 18 Verely, verely I ſay vnto thee, When thou waſt yong, thou girdedſt thy ſelfe and walkedſt whither thou wouldeſt: but when thou ſhalt be olde, thou ſhalt ſtretch foorth thine hands, and another ſhall gird thee, & leade thee whither thou wouldeſt not. 19 And this ſpake he ſignifying by what death he ſhould glorifie God. And when he had ſayd this, he ſaid to him, Follow me. 20 Then Peter turned about, and ſaw the diſciple whom Ieſus loued, following, *Chap.* which had alſo * leaned on his breaſt at ſupper, 13.23. and had ſaid, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee? 21 When Peter therefore ſaw him, he ſaid to Ieſus, Lord, what ſhall this man *do*? 22 Ieſus ſayd vnto him, If I will that he tary till I come, what is it to thee? follow thou me. 23 Then went this word abroad among the brethren, that this diſciple ſhould not die. Yet Ieſus ſaid not vnto him, he ſhall not die: but if I will that he tary till I come, what is it to thee? 24 This is that diſciple which teſtifieth of theſe things, *Chap.* and wrote theſe things, and we know that his te- 20.30. ſtimony is true. 25 * Now there are alſo many

other

other things which Iesus did, the which if they should be writtē euery one, I suppose the whole world could not contain the books that should be written, AMEN.

THE ACTS OF THE HOLY Apostles, written by Luke the Euangelist.

CHAP. 1. 9 *Christs ascension.* 15 *Matthias chosen.*

THE former treatise, O Theophilus, of all that Iesus began to do and teach, 2 Vntill the day, that he was taken vp, after ỹ he through the holy Ghost, had giuen commandements vnto the Apostles whom he had chosen: 3 To whom also he presented himselfe aliue after that he had suffered, by many infallible tokens, being seene of them by the *space* of forty dayes, & speaking of those things which *appertein* to the kingdome of God. Luke 4 * And when he had gathered *them* together, he commanded them, that they should not depart from Hierusalem, but to wait for the promise of the Father, * which, *said he*, ye haue heard of me: 5 * For Iohn in deed baptized with water, but ye shalbe baptized with the holy Ghost within these fewe dayes. 6 Whē they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore the kingdome to Israel? 7 And he sayd vnto

24.49. Iohn 14.25. Chap. 2.2. & 11. 16. & 19.4. mat. 3.11.

them,

them, It is not for you to know the times, or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his
Chap. 2. owne power. 8 *But ye shall receiue power of the holy Ghost, when he shall come on you: and ye shalbe witnesses vnto me both in Hierusalem and in all Iudea, and in Samaria, and vnto
Luke 24. 51. the vttermost part of the earth. 9 * And when he had spoke these things, while they beheld, he was taken vp: for a cloud tooke him vp out of their sight. 10 And while they looked stedfastly toward heauen, as he went, beholde, two men stood by them in white apparell, 11 Which also said, Ye men of Galile, why stand ye gasing into heauen? This Iesus which is taken vp from you into heauen, shall so come, as ye haue seene him go into heauen. 12 Then returned they vnto Hierusalem, from the mount that is called the *mount* of Oliues, which is nere to Hierusalem, being from it a Sabbath *dayes* iourney. 13 And when they were come in, they went vp into an vpper chamber, where abode both Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartlemew, & Matthew, Iames *the sonne* of Alpheus, and Simon Zelotes, and Iudas Iames *brother*. 14 These all continued with one accord in prayer & supplication with the women, & Mary the mother of Iesus, & with his brethren. 15 And in those dayes Peter stood vp in the mids of the disciples, and said (now the number of names that were in one place were about an hundred & twenty.) 16 Ye men *and* brethren,

this

this Scripture muſt needes haue beene fulfilled, which the holy ᵡ Ghoſt by the mouth of Dauid ſpake before of Iudas, which was * guide to them that tooke Ieſus. 17 For he was numbred with vs, & had obtained ſelowſhip in this miniſtration. 18 He therefore hath purchaſed a field with the reward of iniquitie: and when he ᵛhad throwne downe himſelf headlong, he braſt aſunder in the middes, & all his bowels guſhed out. 19 And it is knowen vnto all the inhabitants of Hieruſalem, in ſo much that that fielde is called in their owne language, Aceldema, that is, The fielde of blood. 20 For it is written in ỹ booke of Pſalmes, ᵛLet his habitation be voide, and let no man dwell therein: * alſo, Let another take his charge. 21 Wherefore, of theſe men which haue companied with vs, al the time ỹ the Lord Ieſus was conuerſant among vs, 22 Beginning from the baptiſme of Iohn vnto the day that he was taken vp frō vs, muſt one of them be made a witnes w̄ vs of his reſurrection. 23 And they preſented two, Ioſeph, called Barſabas, whoſe ſurname was Iuſtus, and Matthias. 24 And they prayed, ſaying, Thou Lord, which knoweſt the hearts of all men, ſhewe whether of theſe two thou haſt choſen, 25 That he may take ỹ roome of this miniſtration & Apoſtleſhip, from which Iudas hath gone aſtray, to go to his owne place. 26 Then they gaue forth their lots: and the lot fell on Matthias, and he was by a common conſent counted with the eleuen Apoſtles.

Pſal. 41.9. *Iohn 13.27* *Mat. 27.5.* *Pſal. 69.26.* *Pſal. 109.7.*

CHAP. 2. 2. *The cloven tongues like fire.*

AND when the day of Pentecoſt was come, they were al with one accord in one place. 2 And ſuddenly there came a ſound frō heauen, as of a ruſhing *and* mightie winde, & it filled al the houſe where they ſate. 3 And there appeared vnto them clouen tongues, like fire, and it ſate vpon eche of them. 4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghoſt, and began to ſpeake with other tongues, as ỹ Spirit gaue them vtterance. 5 And there were dwelling at Hieruſalē Iewes, men that feared God, of euery nation vnder heauen. 6 Now when this was noyſed, the multitude came together and were aſtonied, becauſe that euery man heard them ſpeake his owne language. 7 And they wondred all, and marueiled, ſaying among themſelues, Beholde, are not all theſe which ſpeake, of Galile? 8 How then heare we euery man our owne lāguage wherein we were borne? 9 Parthians, & Medes, & Elamites, and the inhabitants of Meſopotamia, and of Iudea, and of Cappadocia, of Pontus, & Aſia 10 And of Phrygia, & Pamphylia, of Egypt, and of the partes of Libya, which is beſide Cyrene, and ſtrangers of Rome, and Iewes, & Proſelytes, 11 Cretes, and Arabians: we heard them ſpeake in our owne tongues the wonderfull *workes* of God. 12 They were all then amazed, and doubted, ſaying one to another, What may this be? 13 And others mocked, & ſaid, They are full of new wine. 17 But Peter ſtanding with ỹ eleuen

lift vp his voyce, and ſaid vnto them, Ye men of Iudea, & ye al that inhabite Hieruſalem be this knowen vnto you, & hearken vnto my wordes. 15 For theſe are not drunken as ye ſuppoſe ſince it is but the third houre of the day 16 But this is that, which was ſpoken by the prophet *Ioel, 17 And it ſhalbe in the laſt dayes, ſaith God, I wil powre out of my Spirit vpon all fleſh, and your ſonnes, & your daughters ſhall prophecie, and your yong men ſhal ſee viſions, & your old men ſhal dreame dreames. 18 And on my ſeruants, & on mine handmaids I wil powre out of my Spirit in thoſe dayes, & they ſhal prophecie 19 And I will ſhew wonders in heauen aboue, & tokens in the earth beneath, blood, & fire, & the vapour of ſmoke. 20 The Sunne ſhall be turned into darkenes, & the Moone into blood, before that great & notable day of the Lord come. 21 And it ſhall be, that whoſoeuer ſhall call on the Name of the Lord, ſhalbe ſaued. 22 Ye men of Iſrael, heare theſe words, IESVS of Nazareth, a man approoued of God among you w great workes, & wonders, and ſignes, which God did by him in the mids of you, as ye your ſelues alſo know: 23 Him, *this*, being deliuered by the determinate coũſel & foreknowledge of God, after you had taken, with wicked handes you had crucified and ſlaine. 24 Whom God hath raiſed vp, and looſed the ſorowes of death, becauſe it was vnpoſsible that he ſhould be holden of it. 25 For Dauid ſaith concerning him; *I be-

Ioel 2.28.

Iſai. 24.3.

Pſal. 16.9.

belde the Lord alwayes before me: for he is g
my right hand, that I ſhould not be ſhaken.
26 Therefore did mine heart reioyce, and my
tongue was glad, & moreouer alſo my fleſh ſhall
reſt in hope, 27 Becauſe thou wilt not leaue my
ſoule in graue, neither wilt ſuffer thine Holy
one to ſee corruption. 28 Thou haſt ſhewed
me the wayes of life, and ſhalt make me full of
ioy with thy countenance. 29 Men & brethren,
I may boldly ſpeake vnto you of the patriarch
Chap. Dauid, * that he is both dead and buried, and his
13.36. ſepulchre remaineth with vs vnto this day.
1.King. 30 Therefore, ſeeing he was a Prophet, & knewe
2.10. that God had * ſworne with an oth to him, that
Pſal. of the fruite of his loynes he would raiſe vp
132.11 Chriſt concerning the fleſh, to ſet him vpon his
throne, 31 He knowing this before, ſpake of the
Chap. reſurrection of Chriſt, that * his ſoule ſhould
13.35. not be left in graue, neither his fleſh ſhould ſee
Pſal. corruption. 32 This Ieſus hath God raiſed vp,
16.10 whereof we all are witneſſes. 33 Since then that
he by the right hand of God hath beene exalted,
and hath receiued of his Father the promiſe of
the holy Ghoſt, he hath ſhed foorth this which
ye nowe ſee and heare. 34 For Dauid is not aſ-
Pſal. cended into heauen, but he ſaith, * The Lord ſaid
110.1. to my Lord, Sit at my right hand, 35 Vntill I
make thine enemies thy footeſtoole. 36 There-
fore, let all ỹ houſe of Iſrael know for a ſurety,
ỹ God hath made him both Lord, & Chriſt, this
Ieſus, *Ye ſay*, whom ye haue crucified. 37 Nowe
whē

when they heard it, they were pricked in their hearts, and ſaid vnto Peter and the other Apoſtles, Men, *and* brethren, what ſhall we doe? 38 Then Peter ſaid vnto them, Amend your liues, and be baptized euery one of you in the Name of Ieſus Chriſt for the remiſsion of ſinnes: and ye ſhall receiue the gift of the holy Ghoſt. 39 For the promiſe *is made* vnto you, and to your children, and to all that are afarre off, *euen* as many as the Lord our God ſhall call. 40 And with many other wordes he beſought and exhorted *them*, ſaying, Saue your ſelues from this froward generation. 41 Then they that gladly receiued his word, were baptized: and the ſame day there were added *to the Church* about three thouſand ſoules. 42 And they continued in the Apoſtles doctrine, and ſelowſhip, and breaking of bread, and prayers. 43 And feare came vpon euery ſoule: and many wonders and ſignes were done by the Apoſtles. 44 And all that beleeued were in one place, and had all things common. 45 And they ſolde their poſſeſsions and goods, and parted them to all men, as euery one had neede. 46 And they continued dayly with one accord in the Temple, and breaking bread at home, did eate their meate together with gladneſſe and ſingleneſſe of heart, 47 Praiſing God, and had fauour with all the people: and the Lord added to the Church from day to day ſuch as ſhould be ſaued.

CHAP. 3. 2. *Peter & Iohn heale the creeple.*

NOw Peter and Iohn went vp together into the Temple, at ye ninth houre of prayer. 2 And a certaine man which was a creeple from his mothers wombe, was caried, whom they laid dayly at the gate of the Temple called Beautiful, to aske almes of them that entred into the Temple. 3 Who seeing Peter and Iohn, that they would enter into the Temple, desired to receiue an almes. 4 And Peter earnestly beholding him with Iohn, said, Looke on vs. 5 And he gaue heede vnto them, trusting to receiue some thing of them. 6 Then said Peter, Siluer & gold haue I none, but such as I haue, that giue I thee: In the Name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth rise vp and walke. 7 And he tooke him by the right hand, & lift *him* vp, & immediatly his feete and ankle bones receiued strength. 8 And he leaped vp, stoode, & walked, and entred with them into the Temple, walking and leaping, and praysing God. 9 And all the people sawe him walke, and praysing God. 10 And they knewe him, that it was he which sate for the almes at the Beautifull gate of the Temple: and they were amased, and sore astonied at that, which was come vnto him. 11 And at the creeple which was healed, holde Peter and Iohn, all the people ran amased vnto them in the porch which is called Solomons. 12 So when Peter sawe it, he answered vnto the people, Ye men of Israel, why marueile ye at this? or why looke ye so stedfastly on vs, as though

though by our owne power or godlineſſe we had made this man goe? 13 The God of Abraham, and Iſaac, and Iacob, the * God of our fathers hath glorified his Sonne Ieſus, whō ye betrayed, & denied in the preſence of Pilate, when he had iudged him to be deliuered. 14 But ye denied the Holy one and the Iuſt, and deſired a murtherer to be giuen you, 15 And killed the Lord of life, whom God hath raiſed from the dead, whereof we are witneſſes 16 And his Name hath made this man ſound, whom ye ſee, and knowe, through faith in his Name: and the faith, which is by him, hath giuē to him this perfite health of his whole body in the preſence of you all. 17 And nowe brethren, I knowe that through ignorance ye did it, as *do* alſo your gouernours. 18 But thoſe things which God before had ſhewed by the mouth of all his Prophets, that Chriſt ſhould ſuffer, he hath thus fulfilled. 19 Amend your liues therefore, & turne, that your ſinnes may be put away, when the time of refreſhing ſhall come from the preſence of the Lord. 20 And he ſhall ſend Ieſus Chriſt, which before was preached vnto you 21 Whō the heauen muſt conteine, vntill the time that al things be reſtored which God had ſpoken by the mouth of all his holy Prophets ſince the world began. 22 * For Moſes ſaid vnto the Fathers, The Lorde your God ſhall raiſe vp vnto you a Prophet, *euen* of your brethren like vnto me: him ſhal heare in al things whatſoeuer he ſhall

Chap. 5.30.

Chap. 7.37. deut. 18.15.

ſhall ſay vnto you. 23 For it ſhall be, that euery perſon which ſhall not heare that Prophet, ſhall be deſtroyed out of the people. 24 Alſo all the Prophets from Samuel, and thenceforth as many as haue ſpoken, haue likewiſe foretolde of theſe dayes. 25 Ye are the children of the Prophets, & of the couenant, which God hath made vnto our fathers, ſaying to Abraham, * Euen in thy ſeede ſhall all the kinreds of the earth be bleſſed. 26 Firſt vnto you hath God raiſed vp his Sonne Ieſus, & him he hath ſent to bleſſe you, in turning euery one of you frō your iniquities.

Gene. 12 3. galat. 3.8.

CHAP. 4. *Peter and Iohn brought before the Councill.*

AND as they ſpake vnto the people, ỹ Prieſts and the captaine of the Temple, & the Sadduces came vnto them, 2 Taking it grieuouſly that they taught the people, and preached in Ieſus *Name* the reſurrection from the dead. 3 And they laid hands on them, and put them in holde, vntill the next day: for it was nowe euentide. 4 Howbeit, many of them which heard the word, beleeued, and the number of the men was about fiue thouſand. 5 And it came to paſſe on the morowe, that their rulers, and Elders, and Scribes, were gathered together at Hieruſalem, 6 And Annas the chiefe Prieſt, & Caiaphas, and Iohn, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kinred of ỹ high Prieſts. 7 And when they had ſet them before them, they aſked, by what power, or in what Name haue ye done this? 8 Then

Peter

Peter full of the holy Ghoſt, ſaid vnto them, Ye
rulers of the people, & Elders of Iſrael, 9 For
as much as we this day are examined of ỹ good
deede *done* to the impotent man, *to wit*, by what
meanes he is made whole, 10 Be it knowen vn-
to you all, and to all the people of Iſrael, that by
the Name of IESVS CHRIST of Naza-
reth, whom ye haue crucified, whom God raiſed
againe from the dead, *euen* by him doeth this
man ſtand here before you whole. 11 *This is *Pſal.*
the ſtone caſt aſide of you builders, which is be- 118.22
come the head of the corner. 12 Neither is there
ſaluation in any other: for among men there is
giuen none other Name vnder heauē, whereby
we muſt be ſaued 13 Now when they ſawe the
boldneſſe of Peter & Iohn, and vnderſtood that
they were vnlearned men and without know-
ledge, they marueiled, and knew them, that they
had bene with Ieſus: 14 And beholding alſo the
man which was healed ſtanding with them, they
had nothing to ſay againſt it. 15 Then they com-
manded them to go aſide out of the Councill, &
conferred among themſelues, 16 Saying, What
ſhall we doe to theſe men? for ſurely a manifeſt
ſigne is done by them, *and it is* openly knowen
to all them that dwel in Hieruſalem: and we can
not denie it. 17 But that it be noyſed no farther
among the people, let vs threaten and charge
them, that they ſpeake henceforth to no man in
this Name. 18 So they called them, & comman-
ded them, that in no wiſe they ſhould ſpeake or

teache

teache in the Name of Ieſus. 19 But Peter and Iohn anſwered vnto them, and ſaid, Whether it be right in the ſight of God, to obey you rather then God, iudge ye. 20 For we cannot but ſpeake the things which we haue ſeene & heard. 21 So they threatened them, and let them goe, and found nothing howe to punish them, becauſe of the people: for all men prayſed God for that which was done. 22 For y man was about fourtie yeres old, on whom this miracle of healing was ſhewed. 23 Then aſſoone as they were let go, they came to their felowes, and ſhewed all that the hie Prieſtes and Elders had ſaid vnto them. 24 And when they heard it, they lift vp their voyces to God with one accord, and ſaid, O Lorde, thou art the God which haſt made the heauen, and the earth, the ſea, and all things that are in them, 25 Which by the mouth of thy ſeruant Dauid had ſaid, *Why did ỹ Gentiles rage, and the people imagine vaine things? 26 The kings of the earth aſſembled, & the rulers came together againſt the Lord, and againſt his Chriſt. 27 For doubtleſſe, againſt thine holy Sonne Ieſus, whom thou haddeſt anointed, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Iſrael gathered themſelues together, 28 To doe whaſoeuer thine hand, and thy counſell had determined before to be done. 29 And now, O Lord, behold their threatnings, & graunt vnto thy ſeruants with all boldenes to ſpeake thy word, 30 So that thou ſtretch foorth thine hand,

*Pſal. 2.1.

hand, that healing, and ſignes and wonders may be done by the name of thine holy Sonne Ieſus. 31 And when as they had prayed, the place was ſhaken where they were aſſembled together, and they were all filled with the holy Ghoſt, and they ſpake the worde of God boldly. 32 And the multitude of them that beleeued, were of one heart, and of one ſoule: neither any of thē ſaid, that any thing of ỹ which he poſſeſſed, was his owne, but they had al things *common. *Chap. 2.44.
33 And with great power gaue the Apoſtles witneſſe of the reſurrection of the Lord Ieſus: and great grace was vpon them all. 34 Neither was there any among them, that lacked: for as many as were poſſeſſours of landes or houſes, ſolde them, and brought the price of the things that were ſolde, 35 And laid it downe at the Apoſtles feete, and it was diſtributed vnto euery man according as he had neede. 36 Alſo Ioſes, which was called of the Apoſtles Barnabas, (that is by interpretation, the ſonne of conſolation) being a Leuite, *and* of the countrey of Cyprus, 37 Whereas he had land, ſolde it, and brought the money, and laide it downe at the Apoſtles feete.

CHAP. 5. 1. *Ananias and Sapphira.*

BVt a certaine man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, ſolde a poſſeſsion, 2 And kept away *part* of the price, his wife alſo being of counſel, & brought a certaine part, & laide it downe at the Apoſtles feete. 3 Then ſaid Peter,

Ananias,

Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart, that thou shouldest lie vnto the holy Ghost, & keepe away *part* of the price of this possession? 4 Whiles it remained, appertained it not vnto thee? and after it was sold, was it not in thine owne power? how is it that thou hast conceiued this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied vnto men, but vnto God. 5 Now when Ananias heard these words, he fell downe, & gaue vp the ghost. Then great feare came on all them that heard these things. 6 And the yong men rose vp, and tooke him vp, & caried *him* out, and buried *him*. 7 And it came to passe about the space of three houres after, ỹ his wife came in, ignorant of that which was done. 8 And Peter said vnto her, Tell me, solde ye the land for so much? And she said, Yea for so much. 9 Then Peter said vnto her, Why haue ye agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feete of them which haue buried thine husband *are* at the doore, and shal cary thee out. 10 Then she fel down straight way at his feete, & yeelded vp the ghost: and the yong men came in and found her dead, & caried her out, and buried her by her husband. 11 And great feare came on al the Church, & on as many as heard these things. 12 Thus by the hãds of the Apostles were many signes & wonders shewed among the people (and they were al ẅ one accord in Solomons porch. 13 And of the other durst no mã ioyne himselfe to them: neuertheles the people magnified them. 14 Also the nũber

of them that beleeued in the Lord, both of men and women, grew more & more) 15 In so much that they brought the sicke into the streets, and layd them on beds and couches, that at the least way the shadow of Peter, whē he came by, might shadow some of them. 16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about vnto Hierusalem, bringing sicke folkes, & them which were vexed with vncleane spirits, who were al healed. 17 Then the chiefe Priest rose vp, & al they that were with him (which was the sect of the Sadducees) and were full of indignation, 18 And layd hands on the Apostles, and put them in the common prison. 19 But the Angel of the Lorde by night opened the prison doores, and brought them forth, & said, 20 Go your way, & stand in the Temple, & speake to the people al the words of this life. 21 So whē they heard it, they entred into the Temple early in the morning, & taught. And the chiefe Priest came, and they that were with him, and called the Councel together, and al the Elders of the children of *Israel*, and sent to the prison, to cause them to be brought. 22 But when the officers came, & found them not in the prison, they returned and tolde it, 23 Saying, Certainely wee found the prison shut as sure as was possible, and the keepers standing without, before the doores: but when we had opened, we found no man within. 24 Then when the *chiefe* Priest, and the captaine of the Temple, and the other Priestes heard these things, they doubted of them,

them, whereunto this would growe. 25 Then came one and shewed them, saying, Beholde, the men that yee put in prison are standing in the Temple, and teach the people. 26 Then went the captaine with the officers, and brought them without violence (for they feared the people, lest they should haue bin stoned) 27 And when they had brought them, they set them before the Councel, & the chiefe Priest asked them, 28 Saying, Did not we straitly commaund you, that ye should not teach in this Name? and beholde, ye haue filled Hierusalem with your doctrine, and yee woulde bring this mans blood vpon vs. 29 Then Peter & the Apostles answered, & said, We ought rather to obey God then men. 30 The *God of our fathers hath raised vp Iesus, whom ye slew, and hanged on a tree. 31 Him hath God lift vp with his right hande, *to be* a Prince and a Sauiour, to giue repentance to Israel, & forgiuenes of sinnes. 32 And we are his witnesses concerning these things which we say: yea, and the holy Ghost, whom God hath giuen to them that obey him. 33 Now whē they heard it, they brast for anger, and consulted to slay them. 34 Then stood there vp in the Councel a certaine Pharise named Gamaliel, a doctour of the Lawe, honoured of all the people, and commanded to put the Apostles foorth a litle space, 35 And saide vnto them, Men of Israel, take heede to your selues, what ye intend to do touching these mē. 36 For before these times rose vp Theudas boasting himselfe,

Chap. 3. 13.

himselfe, to whom resorted a number of men, about a foure hundreth, who was slaine: and they al which obeyed him, were scattered, & brought to nought. 37 After this man, rose vp Iudas of Galile in the dayes of the tribute, & drew away much people after him: he also perished, and all that obeyed him were scattered abroad. 38 And nowe I say vnto you, Refraine your selues from these men, and let them alone: for if this cõsell, or this worke be of men, it wil come to nought: 39 But if it be of God, ye cannot destroy it, least ye be found euen fighters against God. 40 And to him they agreed, and called the Apostles: and when they had beaten them, they commaunded that they should not speake in the Name of Iesus and let them go. 41 So they departed frõ the Councell, reioycing that they were cõted worthy to suffer rebuke for his Name. 42 And dayly in the Temple, and from house to house they ceased not to teach, and preach Iesus Christ.

CHAP. 6. 3 *Deacons appointed in the Church.*

AND in those dayes as the number of the disciples grew, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians towardes the Hebrewes, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministring. 2 Then the twelue called the multitude of the disciples together, and sayd, It is not meete that we should leaue the worde of God to serue the tables. 3 Wherefore brethren, looke ye out among you seuen men of honest report, and full

of

of the holy Ghoſt, and of wiſdome, which wee may appoint to this buſineſſe. 4 And wee will giue our ſelues continually to prayer, and to the miniſtratiõ of the word. 5 And the ſaying pleaſed the whole multitude: and they choſe Steuen
Chap. 2.28. a man ful of faith, & of the holy Ghoſt, & * Philip, & Prochorus, & Nicanor, & Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a Proſelyte of Antiochia. 6 Which they ſet before the Apoſtles: and they prayed, & layd their handes on them. 7 And the worde of God increaſed, and the number of the diſciples was multiplied in Hieruſalem greatly, and a great company of the Prieſts were obedient to the faith. 8 Now Steuen ful of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people. 9 Then there aroſe certaine of the Synagogue, which are called Libertines & Cyrenians and of Alexandria, and of them of Cilicia and of Aſia, and diſputed with Steuen. 10 But they were not able to reſiſt the wiſdome and the Spirit by the which he ſpake. 11 Then they ſuborned men, which ſaide, Wee haue heard him ſpeake blaſphemous wordes againſt Moſes, and God. 12 Thus they moued the people and the Elders, and the Scribes: and running vpon him, caught him, and brought him to the Counſel, 13 And ſet forth falſe witneſſes, which ſaid, This man ceaſeth not to ſpeake blaſphemous wordes againſt this holy place, and the Law. 14 For wee haue heard him ſay, that this Ieſus of Nazareth ſhall deſtroy this place, and ſhall change the ordinances

dinances which Moses gaue vs. 15 And as all that sate in the Councill, looked stedfastly on him, they sawe his face as *it had bene* the face of an Angel.

CHAP. 7 1. *Steuens martyrdome.*

THen said the hie Priest, Are these things so? 2 And he said, Ye men, Brethren, and fathers, hearken. * That God of glory appeared vnto our father Abraham, while he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran, 3 And saide vnto him, Come out of thy countrey, and from thy kinred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee. 4 Then came he out of the land of the Caldeans, and dwelt in Charran. And after that his father was dead, *God* brought him from thence, into this land, wherein yee now dwell, 5 And hee gaue him none inheritance in it, no not the breadth of a foote: yet he promised that he would giue it to him for a possession, and to his seede after him, when as yet he had no child. 6 But God spake thus, that his * seed should be a sojourner in a strange land, & that they should keepe it in bondage, and intreate it euill fourehundreth yeeres. 7 But the nation to whome they shall be in bondage, wil I iudge, saith God: and so after that, they shall come foorth, and serue me in this place. 8 *He gaue him also the couenant of circumcision: and so *Abraham* begate *Isaac*, and circumcised him the eight day: and *Isaac* begat *Iacob, and Iacob the twelue * Patriarches. 9 And the Patriarches moued with enuie

Gene. 12. 4.

Gene. 15. 13.

Gene. 17. 9.

Gene. 21. 3.

Gene. 25. 24

Gene.

Gene. 37.28. fold *Ioseph into Egypt, but God was with him,
10 And deliuered him out of all his afflictions,
Gene. 41.37. and *gaue him fauour and wisdome in the sight
of Pharao king of Egypt, who made him gouernour ouer Egypt, and *ouer* his whole house.
11 Then came there a famine ouer al the land of Egypt and Canaan, & great affliction, that our
Gene. 42.1. fathers found no sustenance. 12 But when *Iacob heard that there was corne in Egypt, he sent
Gene. 45.4. our fathers first: 13 *And at the second time, Ioseph was knowen of his brethren, & Iosephs kinred was made knowen vnto Pharao. 14 Then
sent Ioseph and caused his father to be brought, and all his kinred, euen threescore and fifteene
Gene. 46.5. soules. 15 *So Iacob went downe into Egypt, and he *died, & our fathers, 16 And were remo-
Gene. 49.33 ued into Sichem, & were put in the sepulchre,
Gene. 23.16 that Abraham had bought * for money of the
Exod. 1.7. sonnes of Emor, *sonne* of Sichem. 17 But when
the time of the promes drew neere, which God had sworne to Abraham, the people *grew and
multiplied in Egypt. 18 Til another king arose which knew not Ioseph, 19 The same dealt subtilly with our kinred, and euil intreated our fathers, and made them to cast out their yong chil-
Exod. 2.1. dren, that they should not remaine aliue. 20 *The same time was Moses borne, and was acceptable vnto God, which was nourished vp in his fathers house three moneths. 21 And when he was cast out, Pharaos daughter tooke him vp, and nourished him for her owne sonne. 22 And Moses was learned

learned in al the wisdome of the Egyptians, and was mighty in words & in deeds. 23 Now when he was full fourtie yeere olde, it came into his hart to visit his brethren, the children of Israel. 24 *And when he saw one of them suffer wrong, he defended him, & auenged his quarel that had the harme done to him, and smote the Egyptian. 25 For he supposed his brethrē would haue vnderstood, that God by his hand should giue them deliuerāce: but they vnderstood it not. 26 *And the next day, he shewed himselfe vnto them as they stroue, and would haue set them at one againe, saying, Sirs, ye are brethren: why doe ye wrong one to another? 27 But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a prince, & a iudge ouer vs? 28 Wilt thou kil mee, as thou didst the Egyptian yesterday? 29 Then fled Moses at that saying, & was as a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sonnes. 30 And when fourtie yeeres were expired, there appeared to him in the * wilderness of mount Sion, an Angel of ỹ Lord in a flame of fire, in a bush. 31 And when Moses saw it, he wondred at the sight: and as he drew neere to cōsider it, the voice of the Lord came vnto him, saying, 32 I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob. Then Moses trembled, & durst not beholde it. 33 Then the Lord said to him, Put off thy shoes from thy feete: for the place where thou standest, is holy ground. 34 I haue seene, I haue

Exod. 2. 11.

Exod. 2. 13.

Exod. 3. 2.

seene the affliction of my people which is in E-
gypt, and I haue heard their groning, and am
come down to deliuer them: and now come, and
I will send thee into Egypt. 35 This Moses whō
they forsooke, saying, Who made thee a prince
and a iudge? the same God sent for a prince, and
a deliuerer by the hand of the Angel, which ap-
Exod. 7.8,9, 10,11, 14. peared to him in ỹ buth. 36 *He brought them
out, doing wonders, and miracles in the land of
Egypt, and in the red sea, and in the wildernes
fourtie yeres. 37 This is that Moses, which said
Deut. 18. 15. vnto the children of Israel, A* Prophet shall the
Exod. 16. 1. Lord God raise vp vnto you, euen of your bre-
thren, like vnto me: him shal ye heare. 38 *This
Chap. 3. 22. is he that was in the Congregation, in the wil-
dernes with the Angel, which spake to him in
Exod. 19. 2. mount Sina, and with our fathers, who receiued
the liuely oracles to giue vnto vs. 39 To whom
our Fathers would not obey, but refused, and
in their hearts turned backe againe into Egypt:
Exod. 32. 1. 40 Saying vnto Aaron, *Make vs gods that
may go before vs: for we know not what is be-
come of this Moses ỹ brought vs out of the land
of Egypt? 41 And they made a calfe in those
dayes, & offred sacrifice vnto the idole, & reioy-
ced in the works of their owne hands. 42 Then
God turned himselfe away, and gaue them vp to
serue the hoste of heauen, as it is written in the
Amos 5. 22. bookes of the Prophets, *O house of Israel, haue
ye offered to mee slaine beastes and sacrifices by
the space of fourtie yeeres in the wildernesse?

43 And

43 And ye tooke vp the tabernacle of Moloch,
and the starre of your God Remphan, figures,
which ye made to worship them: therfore I wil
cary you away beyond Babylon. 44 Our fathers
had the tabernacle of witnesse in the wildernes,
as he had appointed, speaking vnto * Moses, that Exod.
he should make it according to the fashion that 25.40.
he had seene: 45 * Which tabernacle also our Iosh.
fathers receiued, and brought in with Iesus into 3.14.
the possession of the Gentiles, which God draue
out before our fathers, vnto the dayes of Dauid:
46 * Who found fauour before God, & desired 2.Sa.
that he might finde a tabernacle for the God of 7.2.
Iacob. 47 * But Solomon built him an house. 1.Chr.
48 * Howbeit the most High * dwelleth not in 17.12.
Temples made with hands, as saith the Prophet, Chap.
49 * Heauen is my throne, and earth is my foot- 17 24
stoole: what house wil ye build for me, saith the Isay
Lorde? or what place is it that I should rest in? 66. 1.
50 Hath not mine hande made all these things? Ier.
51 * Ye stifnecked and of vncircumcised hearts 9. 26.
& eares, ye haue alwayes resisted the holy ghost: Ezek.
as your fathers *did* so *do* you. 52 Which of the 44. 9.
Prophets haue not your fathers persecuted? and
they haue slaine them, which shewed before of
the comming of that Iust, of whom ye are nowe
the betrayers and murtherers, 53 * Which haue Exod.
receiued the Law by the ordinance of Angels, & 19.16
haue not kept it. 54 But when they heard these galat.
things, their heartes brast for anger, and they 3. 19
gnashed at him with *their* teeth. 55 But he be-

ing full of the holy Ghost, looked stedfastly into heauen, and sawe the glory of God, and Iesus standing at the right hande of God, 56 And sayde, Beholde, I see the heauens open, and the Sonne of man standing at the right hande of God. 57 Then they gaue a shoute with a loud voyce, and stopped their eares, and ranne vpon him violently all at once, 58 And cast him out of the citie, and stoned him: and the witnesses layde downe their clothes at a young mans feete, named Saul. 59 And they stoned Steuen, who called on God, and sayde, Lorde Iesus, receiue my spirit. 60 And he kneeled downe, and cryed with a loude voyce, Lorde, lay not this sinne to their charge. And when hee had thus spoken, he slept.

CHAP. 8. *3. Saul a persecutour. 9 Simon Magus.*

AND Saul consented to his death, and at that time, there was a great persecution against the Church which was at Hierusalem, and they were all scattered abroade through the regions of Iudea & Samaria except the Apostles. 2 Then *certaine* men fearing God caried Steuen among them, *to bee buried*, and made great lamentation for him. 3 But Saul made hauocke of the Church, and entred into euery house, and drewe out both men and women, and put them into prison. 4 Therefore they ỹ were scattered abroade, went to and fro preaching the word. 5 Then came Philip into the citie of Samaria, and

preach-

preached Christ vnto them. 6 And the people gaue heed vnto those things which Philippe spake, with one accord, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did. 7 For vncleane spirits crying with a loud voice came out of many that were possessed *of them:* and many taken with palsies, & that halted, were healed. 8 And there was great ioy in that city. 9 And there was before in the city a certaine man called Simon, which vsed witchcraft, and bewitched the people of Samaria, saying that he himselfe was some great man. 10 To whom they gaue heed from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is that great power of God. 11 And they gaue heed vnto him, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries. 12 But assoone as they beleeued Philip, which preached the things that concerned the kingdome of God, and the Name of Iesus Christ, they were baptized both men & women. 13 Then Simon himselfe beleeued also, and was baptized, and continued with Philip, and wondred, when he saw the signes & great miracles which were done. 14 Now whē the Apostles, which were at Hierusalem, heard say, that Samaria had receiued the word of God, they sent vnto them Peter and Iohn. 15 Which when they were come downe, prayed for them, that they might receiue the holy Ghost. 16 (For as yet, he was fallen downe on none of them, but they were baptized onely in the Name of the Lord Iesus.) 17 Then layd they their hands

on them, and they receiued the holy Ghoſt. 18 And when Simon ſaw, that through laying on of the Apoſtles hands the holy Goſt was giuen, he offered them money, 19 Saying, Giue me alſo this power, that on whomſoeuer I lay the hands, he may receiue the holy Ghoſt. 20 Then ſaid Peter vnto him, Thy money periſh with thee, becauſe thou thinkeſt that the gift of God may be obteined with money. 21 Thou haſt neither part nor felowſhip in this buſineſſe, for thine heart is not right in the ſight of God. 22 Repent therefore of this thy wickednes, and pray God, that if it be poſſible, the thought of thine heart may be forgiuen thee. 23 For I ſee that thou art in the gall of bitternes, and in the bond of iniquity. 24 Then anſwered Simon and ſaid, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of theſe things which ye haue ſpoken, come vpon me. 25 So they, when they had teſtified, & preached the word of the Lord, returned to Hieruſalem, and preached the Goſpel in many townes of the Samaritanes. 26 Then the Angel of the Lord ſpake vnto Philip, ſaying, Ariſe, & go toward the South vnto the way that goeth downe frō Hieruſalem vnto Gaza, which is waſte. 27 And he aroſe and went on, and beholde a certaine Eunuch of Ethiopia, Candaces the Queene of the Ethiopians chiefe gouernor, who had the rule of all her treaſure, and came to Hieruſalem to worſhip: 28 And as he returned ſitting in his charet, he read Eſaias the prophet.

29 Then

29 Then the Spirit ſaid vnto Philip, Go nere & ioyne thy ſelfe to yonder charet. 30 And Philip ran thither, and heard him reade the Prophet Eſaias, & ſaid, But vnderſtandeſt thou what thou readeſt? 31 And he ſaid, How can I, except I had a guide? And he deſired Philip, that he would come vp & ſit with him. 32 Now the place of the Scripture which he read was this, * He was led as a ſhepe to the ſlaughter: & like a lambe dumbe before his ſhearer, ſo opened he not his mouth. 33 In his humility his iudgement hath bene exalted: but who ſhall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth. 34 Then the Eunuch anſwered Philip & ſaid, I pray thee of whom ſpeaketh the Prophet this? of himſelfe, or of ſome other man? 35 Then Philip opened his mouth, & began at the ſame Scripture, & preached vnto him Ieſus. 36 And as they went on their way, they came vnto a certaine water, & the Eunuch ſaid, See, here is water: what doth let me to be baptized? 37 And Philip ſaid vnto him, If thou beleeueſt with all thine heart, thou mayeſt. Then he anſwered and ſaid, I beleeue that Ieſus Chriſt is that Sonne of God. 38 Then he commanded the charet to ſtand ſtill: and they went downe both into the water, both Philip and the Eunuch, and he baptized him. 39 And aſſoone as they were come vp out of the water, the ſpirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that ỹ Eunuch ſaw him no more: ſo he went on his way reioycing. 40 But Philip was found

*Iſai. 53.7.

at

at Azotus, and he walked to and fro preaching in all the cities, till he came to Cesarea.

CHAP. 9 *Saul conuerted.*

Rom. 9. 5. Galat. 1. 13. AND * Saul yet breathing out threatnings & slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went vnto the hie Priest, 2 And desired of him letters to Damascus to the Synagogues, that if he found any that were of that way (either men or women) he might bring them bound vnto Hierusalem, 3 Now as he iourneyed, it came to passe that as he was come neere to Damascus, chap. 22. 6. 1 cor. 15. 8. * suddenly there shined round about him a light from heauen. 4 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice, saying to him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? 5 And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Iesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kicke against pricks. 6 He *then* both trembling and astonied, said, Lord, what wilt thou that I doe? And the Lord said vnto him, Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be tolde thee what thou shalt doe. 7 The men also which iourneyed with him, stood amased, hearing *his* voice, but seeing no man. 8 And Saul arose from the ground, and opened his eies, *but* saw no man. Then led they him by the hand, & brought him into Damascus, 9 Where he was three dayes without sight, & neither ate nor dranke. 10 And there was a certaine disciple at Damascus named Ananias. And to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I am *here*, Lord. 11 Then the Lord said

said vnto him, Arise, & go into the street which is called Straight, & seeke in the house of Iudas after one called Saul of Tarsus: for beholde, he prayeth. 12 (And he saw in a vision a man named Ananias comming in *to him*, & putting his hand on him, that he might receiue his sight) 13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I haue heard by many of this man, how much euill he hath done to thy Saints at Hierusalem. 14 Moreouer, here he hath authority of ỹ hie Priests, to binde all that call on thy Name. 15 Then the Lord said vnto him, Goe thy way: for he is a chosen vessell vnto me, to beare my Name before the Gentiles, and Kings, and the children of Israel. 16 For I will shew him, how many things he must suffer for my Names sake. 17 Then Ananias went his way, & entred into that house, and put his hands on him, and said, Brother Saul, the Lord hath sent me (*ie* Iesus that appeared vnto thee in the way as thou camest) that thou mightest receiue thy sight, and be filled with the holy Ghost. 18 And immediatly there fell from his eyes, as *it had bene* scales, & suddenly he receiued sight, & arose, & was baptized, 19 And receiued meat, and was strengthened. So was Saul certaine dayes with the disciples which were at Damascus. 20 And straightway he preached Christ in the Synagogues, that he was that Sonne of God. 21 So all that heard him, were amased, & said, Is not this he, that made hauocke of them which called on this Name in Hierusalem, and

came

came hither for that intent, that he (should bring
them bound vnto the hie Priests?) 22 But he
encreased the more in strength, and confounded
the Iewes which dwelt at Damascus, confirming
that this was that Christ. 23 And after that ma-
ny dayes were fulfilled, the Iewes tooke counsell
together, to kill him. 24 But their laying awaite
2. Cor. was knowen of Saul: now they * watched the
11.32. gates day and night, that they might kill him.
25 Then the disciples tooke him by night, and
put him thorow the wall, and let him downe by
a rope in a basket. 26 And when Saul was come
to Hierusalem, he assayed to ioyne himselfe with
the disciples: but they were all afraid of him, &
beleeued not that he was a disciple. 27 But
Barnabas tooke him, and brought him to the A-
postles, & declared to them how he had seene the
Lord in the way, & that he had spoken vnto him,
and how he had spoken boldly at Damascus in
the Name of Iesus. 28 And he was conuersant
with them at Hierusalem, 29 And spake bold-
ly in the Name of the Lord Iesus, and spake and
disputed against the Grecians: but they went
about to slay him. 30 But when the brethren
knew it they brought him to Cesarea, and sent
him forth to Tarsus. 31 Then had the Churches
rest through all Iudea, and Galile, and Samaria,
and were edified and walked in the feare of the
Lord, & were multiplied by the comfort of the
holy Ghost. 32 And it came to passe, as Peter
walked thorowout all *quarters*, he came also to
the

the Saints which dwelt at Lydda. 33 And there he found a certaine man, named Aeneas, which had kept his couch eight yeeres, and was sicke of the palsie. 34 Then sayd Peter vnto him, Aeneas, Iesus Christ maketh thee whole: arise and make thy couch together. And he arose immediately. 35 And all that dwelt at Lydda and Saron, saw him, and turned to the Lord. 36 There was also at Ioppa a certaine *woman*, a disciple named Tabitha (which by interpretation is called Dorcas) she was full of good works and almes which she did. 37 And it came to passe in those dayes, that she was sicke and died: and when they had washed her, they layd her in an vpper chamber. 38 Now forasmuch as Lydda was nere to Ioppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent vnto him two men, desiring that he would not delay to come vnto them. 39 Then Peter arose & came with them: and when he was come, they brought him into the vpper chamber, where all the widowes stood by him weeping, and shewing the coates & garments which Dorcas made, while she was with them. 40 But Peter put them al forth, and kneeled downe, and prayed, & turned him to the body, and said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes, and when she saw Peter, sate vp. 41 Then he gaue her the hand and lift her vp, and called the Saints and widowes, & restored her aline. 42 And it was knowen throrow-out all Ioppa, and many beleeued in the Lord.

43 And

43 And it came to passe that he taried many dayes in Ioppa with one Simon a Tanner.

CHAP. 10. 4 *Cornelius the Captaine sendeth for Peter:* 47 *He is baptized.*

FVrthermore there was a certaine man in Cesarea called Cornelius, a captaine of the band called the Italian *band*, 2 A deuout man, & one that feared God with all his housholde, which gaue much almes to the people, & prayed God continually. 3 He saw in a vision euidently (about the ninth houre of the day) an Angel of God comming in to him, & saying vnto him, Cornelius. 4 But when he looked on him, he was afraid, & said, What is it, Lord? And he said vnto him, Thy prayers & thine almes are come vp into remembrance before God. 5 Now therefore send men to Ioppa, & call for Simon, whose surname is Peter. 6 He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea side: he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do. 7 And when the Angel which spake vnto Cornelius, was departed, he called two of his seruants, and a soldier that feared God, one of thē that waited on him, 8 And told them all things, and sent them to Ioppa. 9 On the morow as they went on their iourney, & drew nere vnto the city, Peter went vp vpon the house to pray, about the sixt houre. 10 Then waxed he an hungred, & would haue eaten: but while they made *some thing* ready, he fell into a trance. 11 And he saw heauen opened, and a certaine vessell come downe

vnto

vnto him, as *it had bene* a great sheet, knit at the foure corners, and was let downe to the earth: 12 Wherein were all maner of foure footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, & creeping things, & foules of ye heauen. 13 And there came a voice to him, Arise, Peter: kill and eat. 14 But Peter said, Not so, Lord: for I haue neuer eaten any thing that is polluted, or vncleane. 15 And the voice *spake* vnto him again the second time, The things that God hath purified, pollute thou not. 16 This was so done thrise: and the vessell was drawen vp againe into heauen. 17 Now while Peter doubted in himselfe what this vision which he had seene meant, beholde, the men which were sent from Cornelius, had enquired for Simons house, & stood at the gate, 18 And called & asked, whether Simon, which was surnamed Peter, were lodged there. 19 And while Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit said vnto him, Behold, three men seeke thee. 20 Arise therfore, and get thee downe, and go with them, and doubt nothing: for I haue sent them. 21 Then Peter went downe to the men, which were sent vnto him from Cornelius and said, Beholde, I am he whom ye seeke: what is the cause wherfore ye are come? 22 And they said, Cornelius the captaine, a iust man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Iewes, was warned from heauen by an holy Angel, to send for thee into his house, & to heare thy words. 23 Then he called them in, & lod-

ged

ged them, and the next day Peter went foorth with them,& certaine brethren from Ioppa accompanied him. 24 And the day after, they entred into Cesarea. Now Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen, and speciall friends. 25 And it came to passe,as Peter came in,that Cornelius met him,& fell down at his feet, and worthipped him. 26 But Peter tooke him vp, saying, Stand vp: for euen I my selfe am a man. 27 And as he talked with him, he came in,& found many that were come together. 28 And he said vnto them,Ye know that it is an vnlawfull thing for a man that is a Iew, to company or come vnto one of another nation: but God hath shewed me, that I should not call any man polluted, or vncleane: 29 Therefore came I vnto you without saying nay, when I was sent for. I aske therefore, for what intent haue ye sent for me? 30 Then Cornelius sayd, Foure dayes ago, about this houre I fasted, and at the ninth houre I prayed in mine house: and beholde, a man stood before me in bright clothing, 31 And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine almes are had in remembrance in the sight of God. 32 Send therefore to Ioppa, and call for Simon whose surname is Peter: (he is lodged in the house of Simō a tanner by the sea side) who when he commeth,shall speake vnto thee. 33 Then sent I for thee immediatly, and thou hast well done to come. Now therefore are we all here present before God, to

hear

heare all things that are commaunded thee of
God. 34 Then Peter opened his mouth, & ſaid,
Of a treth I perceiue, that *God is no accepter *Deut.
of perſons 35 But in euery nation he that feareth 10 17.
him, and worketh righteouſneſſe, is accepted 2.chr.
with him 36 Ye knowe the worde which God 19.7.
hath ſent to the children of Iſrael, preaching iob.34.
peace by Ieſus Chriſt, which is lord of all. 19.
37 *Euen* the word which came through all *rom.*
Iudea, *beginning in Galile, after the baptiſme 2.11.
which Iohn preached, 38 *To wit*, howe God *gal.2.
anoynted Ieſus of Nazareth with ȳ holy Ghoſt, *6 eph.*
and with power: who went about doing good, 6.9.
and healing al that were oppreſſed of the deuil: *col.3.*
for God was with him 39 And we are witneſſes 25.
of all things which he did both in the land of 1 *pet.*
the Iewes, and in Hieruſalem, whom they ſlew, 1.17.
hanging him on a tree. 40 Him God raiſed vp *Luke*
the third day, and cauſed that he was ſhewed 4.14.
openly: 41 Not to al ȳ people, but vnto the wit-
neſſes choſen before of God, *euen* to vs which
did eate and drinke with him, after he roſe from
the dead. 42 And he commanded vs to preach
vnto the people, & to teſtifie, that it is he that is
ordeined of God a iudge of quicke and dead.
43 To him alſo, giue all the *Prophets witneſſe, *Chap.*
that through his Name all that beleeue in him 14.9.
ſhal receiue remiſsion of ſinnes. 44 While Pe- *iere.*
ter yet ſpake theſe wordes, the holy Ghoſt fell 31.34.
on all them which heard the word. 45 So they *mich.*
of the circumciſion which beleeued, were aſto- 7.18.

nied, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was powred out the gift of the holy Ghost. 46 For they heard them speake with tongues, & magnifie God. Then answered Peter, 47 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which haue receiued ỹ holy Ghost, as well as we? 48 So he commanded them to be baptized in the Name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tary certaine dayes.

CHAP. 11. 26 *Disciples first called Christians.*

NOw ỹ Apostles & the brethren that were in Iudea, heard, ỹ the Gentiles had also receiued the worde of God. 2 And whē Peter was come vp to Hierusalem, they of the circūcision contended against him, 3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men vncircumcised, and hast eaten with them. 4 Then Peter began, and expounded *the thing* in order to them, saying, 5 I was in the citie of Ioppa praying, and in a trance I sawe *this* vision, A certaine vessel cōming downe, as *it had beene* a great sheete let downe from heauen by the foure corners, & it came to me. 6 Toward the which when I had fastened mine eies, I considered, & saw foure footed beastes of the earth, and wilde beastes, & creeping things, and foules of the heauē. 7 Also I heard a voyce, saying vnto me, Arise, Peter: slay & eate. 8 And I said, God forbid, Lorde: for nothing pollated or vncleane hath at any time entred into my mouth. 9 But the voyce answered me the second time from heauen, The things that God hath purified, pol-

lete thou not. 10 And this was done three times, and all were taken vp againe into heauen. 11 Then beholde, immediatly there were three men already come vnto the house, where I was, sent from Cesarea vnto me. 12 And the Spirite said vnto me, that I should goe with them, without doubting: moreouer these sixe brethē came with me, and we entred into the mans house. 13 And he shewed vs, howe he had seene an Angel in his house, which stood & said to him, Send men to Ioppa, & call for Simon, whose surname is Peter. 14 He shall speake wordes vnto thee, whereby both thou & all thine house shalbe saued. 15 And as I began to speake, ℣ holy Ghost fell on them, *euen as vpon vs at the beginning. 16 Then I remembred the worde of the Lord, how he said, *Iohn baptized with water: but ye shalbe baptized with the holy Ghost. 17 Forasmuch then as God gaue them a like gift, as *he did* vnto vs, whē we beleeued in the Lord Iesus Christ, who was I, that I could let God? 18 Whē they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles graunted repentance vnto life. 19 And they which * were scattered abroad because of the affliction that arose about Stēen, went throughout till they came vnto Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antiochia, preaching ℣ worde to no man, but vnto the Iewes onely. 20 Now some of them were men of Cyprus & of Cyrene, which when they were come into Antiochia,

Chap. 2.4.
Cha. 1. 5. & 15.4.
matt. 3.11. mark. 1.8. luke 3.16. iohn 1.26.
Chap. 8.1.

spake vnto the Grecians, and preached the Lord Iesus. 21 And the hand of the Lord was with them, so that a great number beleeued & turned vnto the Lord. 22 Then tidings of those things came vnto the eares of the Churches which was in Hierusalem, and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should goe vnto Antiochia. 23 Who when he was come and had seene the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted all, that with purpose of heart they would continue in the Lord. 24 For he was a good man, and full of the holy Ghost, and faith, and much people ioyned themselues vnto the Lord. 25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus to seeke Saul: 26 And when he had found him, he brought him vnto Antiochia: & it came to passe that a whole yeere they were conuersant with the Church, & taught much people, insomuch that the disciples were first called Christians in Antiochia. 27 In those dayes also came Prophets from Hierusalem vnto Antiochia. 28 And there stoode vp one of them named Agabus, & signified by ỹ Spirit, that there should be great famine throughout al the world, which also came to passe vnder Claudius Cesar. 29 Thẽ the disciples, euery man according to his habilitie, purposed to send succour vnto the brethren which dwelt in Iudea. 30 Which things they also did, and sent it to the Elders, by the hand of Barnabas and Saul.

CHAP.

CHAP 12. 2 *Iames martyred.* 23 *Herods death.*

NOw about ỹ time, Herod the king ſtretched forth his hands to vexe certaine of ỹ Church. 2 And he killed Iames the brother of Iohn with ỹ ſword. 3 And when he ſawe that it pleaſed the Iewes, he proceeded further, to take Peter alſo: then were the dayes of vnleauened bread) 4 And when he had caught him, he put him in priſon, & deliuered him to foure quaternions of ſouldiers to be kept, intending after ỹ Paſſeouer to bring him forth to the people. 5 So Peter was kept in priſon, but earneſt prayer was made of the Church vnto God for him. 6 And when Herod would haue brought him out vnto the people, ỹ ſame night ſlept Peter betweene two ſouldiers bound with two chaines, & the keepers before ỹ doore, kept the priſon. 7 *And beholde, the Angel of the Lord came vpō them, and a light ſhined in ỹ houſe, & he ſmote Peter on ỹ ſide, & raiſed him vp, ſaying, Ariſe quickly. And his chaines fell off from his hands. 8 And the Angel ſaid vnto him, Gird thy ſelfe, & binde on thy ſādales. And ſo he did. Then he ſaid vnto him, Caſt thy garment about thee, & follow me. 9 So Peter came out and followed him, and knew not that it was true, which was done by the Angel, but thought he had ſeene a viſion. 10 Now whē they were paſt the firſt & ſecond watch, they came vnto the yron gāte ỹ leadeth vnto the citie, which opened to them by it owne accord, & they went out, & paſſed thorowe one ſtreete, & by and by the Angel departed frō him.

Chap. 5. 19.

11 And when Peter was come to himselfe, he
said, Now I know for a trueth, ỹ the Lord hath
sent his Angel, and hath deliuered me out of the
hand of Herod, & from all ỹ wayting for of the
people of the Iewes. 12 And as he considered
the thing, he came to the houte of Mary ỹ mo-
ther of Iohn, whose surname was Marke where
many were gathered together, and prayed.
13 And whē Peter knocked at the entrie doore,
a maide came foorth to hearken, named Rhode.
14 But when she knew Peters voice, she opened
not the entrie *doore* for gladnes, but ran in, and
told, how Peter stood before the entrie. 15 But
they said vnto her, Thou art mad. Yet she af-
firmed it constantly ỹ it was so. Then said they, It
is his Angel. 16 But Peter continued knocking,
and when they had opened it, & saw him, they
were astonied. 17 And he beckened vnto them
with the hand, to hold their peace, & tolde them
how the Lord had brought him out of ỹ prison.
And he said, Goe shew these things vnto Iames
and to the brethren: & he departed & went into
another place. 18 Now assoone as it was day,
there was no smal trouble among the souldiers,
what was become of Peter. 19 And when He-
rod had sought for him, & found him not, he ex-
amined the keepers, and cōmaunded them to be
led to be punished. And he went downe from
Iudea to Cesarea, & *there* abode. 20 Then He-
rod was angry with them of Tyrus and Sidon,
but they came all with one accord vnto him, and
perswaded

perſwaded Blaſtus the kings chamberlaine, and they deſired peace, becauſe their countrey was nouriſhed by the Kings *land*. 21 And vpon a day appointed, Herod arayed himſelfe in royal apparell, & ſate on the iudgement ſeate, & made an oration vnto them. 22 And the people gaue a ſhoute, *ſaying*, The voyce of God, & not of man. 23 But immediatly the Angel of the Lord ſmote him, becauſe he gaue not glory vnto God, ſo y he was eaten of wormes, and gaue vp the ghoſt. 24 And the word of God grew, and multiplied. 25 So Barnabas & Saul returned from Hieruſalem, when they had fulfilled their office, & tooke with them Iohn, whoſe ſurname was Marke.

CHAP. 13. 8. *Elymas the ſorcerer.*

THere were alſo in the Church that was at Antiochia, certaine Prophets & teachers, as Barnabas, & Simeon called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, & Manahen (which had bin brought vp with Herod the Tetrarch) and Saul. 2 Now as they miniſtred to the Lord, and faſted, the holy Ghoſt ſaid, Separate me Barnabas & Saul, for the worke whereunto I haue called them. 3 Then faſted they and prayed, and laid their hands on them, and let them goe. 4 And they, after they were ſent forth of the holy Ghoſt, came downe vnto Seleucia, & from thence they ſailed to Cyprus 5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the worde of God in the Synagogues of the Iewes: and they had alſo Iohn to *their* miniſter. 6 So when they had gone throughout

the yle vnto Paphus, they found a certaine sorcerer, a false prophet, being a Iewe, named Barjesus, 7 Which was with the Deputie Sergius Paulus, a prudent man. He called vnto him Barnabas & Saul, and desired to heare the word of God. 8 But Elymas, the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, and sought to turne away the Deputie from the faith. 9 Then Saul (which also is *called* Paul) being full of the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him, 10 And said, O full of all subtiltie & al mischiefe, the childe of the deuil, and enemie of all righteousnes, wilt thou not cease to peruert ỹ straight waves of the Lord? 11 Now therefore, behold, the hand of the Lord is vpon thee, & thou shalt be blind, and not see the sunne for a season. And immediatly there fell on him a mist and a darkenesse, and he went about, seeking some to leade him by the hand. 12 Then the Deputie when he sawe what was done, beleeued, & was astonied at the doctrine of the Lord. 13 Now when Paul and they that were with him, were departed by ship from Paphus, they came to Perga *a citie* of Pamphylia: then Iohn departed from them, and returned to Hierusalem 14 But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antiochia *citie* of Pisidia, and went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day, and sate downe. 15 And after the lecture of the Lawe and Prophets, the rulers of the Synagogue sent vnto them, saying, Ye men and brethren, if ye haue any worde of exhortation

hortation for the people, say on. 16 Then Paul stood vp, and beckened with the hand, and said, Men of Israel, and ye that feare God, hearken. 17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt in the land of *Egypt, and with an *high arme brought them out thereof 18 And about ỹ time *of fourtie yeeres suffered he their manners in the wildernes. 19 And he destroyed seuen nations in the land of Chanaan, *and diuided their land to them by lot. 20 Then afterward he gaue vnto them *Iudges, about foure hundreth and fiftie yeeres, vnto *the time of* Samuel the Prophet. 21 So after that they desired a *King, and God gaue vnto them *Saul, the sonne of Cis, a man of the tribe of Beniamin *by the space of* fourtie yeeres. 22 And after he had taken him away, he rayſed vp *Dauid to be their King, of whom he witnessed, saying, I haue found Dauid *the sonne* of Iesse, a man after mine owne heart, which wil doe all things that I wil 23 Of this mans seede hath *God according to *his* promise raised vp to Israel, the Sauiour Iesus: 24 When *Iohn had first preached before his coming the baptisme of repentance to all ỹ people of Israel. 25 And whē Iohn had fulfilled *his* course, he said, *Whom ye thinke that I am, I am not he: but behold there commeth one after me, whose shoe of *his* feete I am not worthy to loose. 26 Ye men and brethren, children of the generation of Abraham, and whosoeuer among

Exod. 13. 17.
Exod. 16. 1.
Iosh. 14. 1.
Iudg. 3. 9.
1. *Sam.* 8. 5.
1. *Sam.* 9. 15.
1. *Sam.* 16. 13.
Psal. 89. 21.
Mal. 3. 1.
Mat. 3. 11.

you

you feareth God, to you is the word of this ſal-
uation ſent. 27 For ỹ inhabitants of Hieruſalem,
and their rulers, becauſe they knew him not, nor
yet the wordes of the Prophets, which are read
euery Sabbath *day*, they haue fulfilled them in
condemning him. 28 And though they found
Mat. no cauſe of death *in him*, *yet* deſired they Pilate
27.22 to kill him. 29 And when they had fulfilled all
things that were written of him, they tooke him
downe from the tree, and put him in a ſepulchre.
Matt. 30 But God *raiſed him vp frō the dead. 31 And
28.2. he was ſeene many dayes of them, which came
vp with him from Galile to Hieruſalem, which
are his witneſſes vnto the people. 32 And we de-
clare vnto you, that touching the promiſe made
vnto the fathers, 33 God hath fulfilled it vnto vs
their children, in that he rayſed vp Ieſus, euen
Pſal. as it is written in the ſecond Pſalme, * Thou
2.7. art my Sonne: this day haue I begotten thee.
34 Nowe as concerning that he raiſed him vp
from the dead, no more to returne to corrup-
Iſai. tion, he hath ſaid thus, *I will giue you the holy
55.3. things of Dauid, which are faithfull. 35 Where-
Chap. fore he ſaith alſo in another place, * Thou wilt
2.31. not ſuffer thine holy one to ſee corruption.
36 Howbeit, Dauid after he had ſerued his time
Chap. by the counſell of God, *he* ſlept, and was laide
2.29. with his fathers, and ſaw corruption. 37 But he
whom God raiſed vp, ſawe no corruption. 38 Be
it knowen vnto you therfore, men & brethren,
that through this man is preached vnto you for-

giuenes

giuenes of ſinnes. 39 And from all things, from which ye could not be iuſtified by the Lawe of Moſes, by him euery one that beleeueth, is iuſtified. 40 Beware therefore leſt that come vpon you, which is ſpoken of in the Prophets, 41 *Behold, ye deſpiſers, and wonder, & vaniſh away: for I worke a worke in your dayes, a worke which ye ſhall not beleeue, if a man would declare it you. *Habak. 1.5.

42 And when they were come out of the Synagogue of the Iewes, the Gentiles beſought, that they would preach theſe wordes to them the next Sabbath *day*. 43 Now when the congregation was diſſolued, many of ỹ Iewes, & Proſelytes ỹ feared God, followed Paul and Barnabas, which ſpake to them, and exhorted them to continue in the grace of God. 44 And the next Sabbath *day* came almoſt the whole citie together to heare the word of God. 45 But when the Iewes ſawe the people, they were full of enuie, and ſpake againſt thoſe things, which were ſpoken of Paul, contrarying *them*, and raying on *them*. 46 Then Paul and Barnabas ſpake boldly, and ſaid, It was neceſſarie that the word of God ſhould firſt haue bene ſpoken vnto you: but ſeeing ye put it from you and iudge your ſelues vnworthy of euerlaſting life, loe, we turne to the Gentiles. 47 For ſo hath the Lord commaunded vs, *ſaying*, *I haue made thee a light of the Gentiles, that thou ſhouldeſt be the ſaluation vnto the ende of the worlde. *Iſai. 49.6.

48 And when the Gentiles heard it, they were glad,

glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordeined vnto eternall life, beleeued. 49 Thus the word of the Lord was published throughout the whole countrey. 50 But the Iewes stirred *certaine* deuoute and honourable women, & the chiefe men of the citie, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coastes. 51 But they *shooke off the dust of their feete against them, and came vnto Iconium. 52 And the disciples were filled with ioy, and with the holy Ghost.

Chap. 18. 6.

CHAP. 14. 5. *Paul persecuted, 19 and stoned.*

AND it came to passe in Iconium, that they went both together into the Synagogue of the Iewes, and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Iewes and the Grecians beleeued. 2 And the vnbeleeuing Iewes stirred vp, and corrupted the mindes of the Gentiles against the brethren. 3 So therefore they abode there a long time, and spake boldly in the Lorde, which gaue testimonie vnto the word of his grace, and caused signes and wonders to be done by their hands. 4 But the multitude of the citie was diuided: and some were with the Iewes, and some with the Apostles. 5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and of the Iewes with their rulers, to do them violence, & to stone them, 6 They were ware of it, & fled vnto Lystra, & Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, & vnto the region round about, 7 And there preached the Gospel. 8 Now there sate a certaine man at

Lystra,

Lystra, impotent in his feet, which was a creeple from his mothers wombe, who had neuer walked. 9 He heard Paul speake: who beholding him and perceiuing that he had faith to be healed, 10 Said with a loude voyce, Stand vpright on thy feet. And he leaped vp, & walked. 11 Then when the people saw what Paul had done, they lift vp their voyces, saying in the speache of Lycaonia, Gods are come downe to vs in the likenesse of men. 12 And they called Barnabas, Iupiter: & Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chiefe speaker. 13 Then Iupiters Priest, which was before their city, brought bulles with garlands vnto the gates, & would haue sacrificed with the people. 14 But when the Apostles, Barnabas & Paul heard it, they rent their clothes, & ran in among the people, crying, 15 And saying, O men, why do ye these things? We are euen men subiect to the like passions that ye be, & preach vnto you, that yee should turne from these vaine things vnto the liuing God, *which made heauen and earth, and the sea, and all things that in them are: 16 Who in times past *suffred al the Gentiles to walke in their owne waves. 17 Neuertheless, he left not himselfe without witnes, in that he did good *and* gaue vs raine frō heauen, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food, and gladnesse. 18 And speaking these things, scarse appeased they the multitude, that they had not sacrificed vnto them. 19 Then there came certaine Iewes from Antiochia, and Iconium,

Gen. 1.4, Psal. 81.13.

nium, which when they had perſwaded the
2.Cor. people,*ſtoned Paul,and drewe him out of the
11.25. citie,ſuppoſing he had bene dead. 20 Howbeit,as the diſciples ſtoode round about him,he aroſe vp, and came into the citie, and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe. 21 And after they had preached the glad tidings of the Goſpel to that citie, and had taught many, they returned to Lyſtra, and to Iconium, and to Antiochia, 22 Confirming the diſciples hearts, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, *affirming* that wee muſt through many afflictions enter into the kingdome of God. 23 And when they had ordained them Elders by election in euery Church,and prayed,and faſted, they commended them to the Lorde in whom they beleeued. 24 Thus they went throughout Piſidia, and came to Pamphylia. 25 And when they had preached the word in Perga,they came downe to Attalia, 26 And thence ſailed to Antiochia,
Chap. *from whence they had bene commended vnto
13.3. the grace of God, to the worke which they had fulfilled. 27 And when they were come and had gathered the Church together,they rehearſed all the things that God had done by them, and how he had opened the doore of faith vnto the Gentiles. 28 So there they abode a long time with the diſciples.

CHAP. 15. 1. *Of Circumciſion.*

THen came downe certaine from Iudea, and taught the brethren, *ſaying*, Except ye be
circumci-

circumcised after the maner of Moses, ye cannot be saued. 2 And when there was a great dissension and disputation by Paul & Barnabas, against them, they ordained that Paul and Barnabas, and certaine other of them, should go vp to Hierusalem vnto the Apostles & Elders about this question. 3 Thus being brought foorth by the Church, they passed through Phenice and Samaria, declaring the cõuersion of the Gentiles, and they brought great ioye vnto all the brethren. 4 And whe they were come to Hierusalem, they were receiued of the Church, & of the Apostles and Elders, and they declared what things God had done by them. 5 But *sayd ther*, certaine of the sect of the Pharises, which did beleeue, rose vp, saying, that it was needefull to circumcise them, and to command *them* to keepe the Lawe of Moses. 6 Then the Apostles & Elders came together to looke to this matter. 7 And when there had bene great disputation, Peter rose vp, and saide vnto them, * Ye men *and* brethren, yee knowe that a good while agoe among vs, God chose out *me* that the Gentiles by my mouth should heare the word of the Gospel, & beleeue. 8 And God which knoweth the hearts bare them witnes, in giuing vnto them the holy Ghost, euen as *he did* vnto vs. 9 And he put no difference betweene vs and them, after that * by faith he had purified their hearts. 10 Nowe therefore why tempt yee God, to * lay a yoke on the disciples neckes, which neither our fathers, nor wee were able

Chap. 10.20. *and* 11.13.

Chap. 10 43.

1.*cor.* 1.2.

Mat. 23.4.

able to beare? 11 But wee beleeue through the grace of the Lord Iesus Christ to be saued, euen as they *doe*. 12 Then all the multitude kept silence, and heard Barnabas and Paul, which told what signes and wonders God had done among the Gentiles by them. 13 And when they helde their peace, Iames answered, saying, Men, *and* brethren, hearken vnto me. 14 Simon hath declared, howe God first did visite the Gentiles to take *of them* a people vnto his Name. 15 And to this agree the words of the Prophets, as it is
Amos 9.11. written, 16 *After this I will returne, and will* builde againe the tabernacle of Dauid, which is fallen downe, and the ruines thereof wil I build againe, and I wil set it vp, 17 That the residue of men might seeke after the Lorde, and all the Gentiles vpon whome my Name is called, saith the Lord, which doeth all these things. 18 From the beginning of the world, God knoweth al his works. 19 Wherefore my sentence is, that we trouble not them of the Gentiles that are turned to God, 20 But that wee send vnto them, that they abstaine themselues from filthines of idols, and fornication, and that that is strangled, and from blood. 21 For Moses of olde time hath in euery citie them that preach him, seeing hee is read in the Synagogue euery Sabbath *day*. 22 Then it seemed good to the Apostles and Elders with the whole Church, to sende chosen men of their owne companie, to Antiochia with Paul and Barnabas: *to wit*, Iudas whose surname

name was Barſabas, and Silas, which were chiefe men among the brethren, 23 And wrote letters by them after this maner, THE APOSTLES, and the Elders, and the brethren, vnto the brethren which are of the Gentiles in Antiochia, and in Syria, and in Cilicia, ſende greeting. 24 Forasmuch as wee haue heard, that certaine which went out from vs, haue troubled you with words, and cumbred your mindes, ſaying, Ye muſt bee circumciſed, and keepe the Lawe, to whom we gaue no ſuch commandement: 25 It ſeemed therefore good to vs, when wee were come together with one accord, to ſend choſen men vnto you, with our beloued Barnabas and Paul, 26 Men that haue giuen vp their liues for the Name of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt. 27 We haue therfore ſent Iudas and Silas, which ſhal alſo tel you the ſame things by mouth. 28 For it ſeemed good to the holy Ghoſt, and to vs, to lay no more burden vpon you, then theſe neceſſary things, 29 *That is*, that ye abſtaine from things offered to idoles, and blood, and that which is ſtrangled, and from fornication: fro which if ye keepe your ſelues, ye ſhal do wel. Fare ye well. 30 Now when they were departed, they came to Antiochia, and after they had aſſembled the multitude, they deliuered the Epiſtle. 31 And when they had read it, they reioyced for the conſolation. 32 And Iudas and Silas being Prophets, exhorted the brethren with many words, and ſtrengthened them. 33 And after they had

taried there a ſpace, they were let goe in peace
of the brethren vnto the Apoſtles. 34 Notwith-
ſtanding Silas thought good to abide there ſtil.
35 Paul alſo and Barnabas continued in Anti-
chia, teaching, and preaching with many other,
the worde of the Lorde. 36 But after certaine
daies, Paul ſaid vnto Barnabas, Let vs returne, and
viſite our brethren in euery citie, where we haue
preached the word of the Iorde, *and ſee* howe
they doe. 37 And Barnabas counſelled to take
with them Iohn, called Marke. 38 But Paul
thought it not meet to take him vnto their com-
pany, which departed from them from Pam-
phylia, and went not with them to the worke.
39 Then were they ſo ſtirred, that they depar-
ted aſunder one from the other, ſo that Bar-
nabas tooke Marke, and ſayled vnto Cyprus.
40 And Paul choſe Silas and departed, being cõ-
mended of the brethren vnto the grace of God.
41 And hee went through Syria and Cilicia, ſta-
bliſhing the Churches.

CHAP. 16. 1. *Lidia & the iayler cõuerted.*

THen came he to Derbe and to Lyſtra: and be-
holde a certaine diſciple was there named
Rom. 16.21. *Timotheus, a womans ſonne, which was a Iew-
phil 2. 19. eſſe and beleeued, but his father was a Grecian,
1. theſ. 3.2. 2 Of whom the brethren which were at Lyſtra
and Iconium, reported well. 3 Therefore Paul
would that he ſhould goe foorth with him, and
tooke & circumciſed him, becauſe of the Iewes,
which were in thoſe quarters: for they knew all,
that

that his father was a Grecian. 4 And as they went through the cities, they deliuered them the decrees to keepe, ordeined of the Apostles and Elders, which were at Hierusalem. 5 And so were the Churches stablished in the faith, and increased in number daily. 6 Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, they were forbidden of the holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia. 7 Then came they to Mysia, and sought to goe into Bythinia: but the Spirite suffered them not. 8 Therefore they passed through Mysia, and came downe to Troas, 9 Where a vision appeared to Paul in the night. There stoode a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come into Macedonia, and helpe vs. 10 And after he had seene the vision, immediatly wee prepared to goe into Macedonia, being assured that the Lord had called vs to preach the Gospel vnto them. 11 Then went we forth from Troas, and with a straight course came to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis, 12 And from thence to Philippi, which is the chiefe citie in the partes of Macedonia, and whose inhabitantes came from Rome to dwell there, and we were in that citie abiding certaine dayes. 13 And on the Sabbath day, we went out of the citie, besides a River, where they were wont to pray: and we sate downe, and spake vnto the women which were come together. 14 And a certaine woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the citie of the Thyatirians,

nians, which worshipped God, heard *vs*: whose heart the Lorde opened, that she attended vnto the things, which Paul spake. 15 And when shee was baptized, and her housholde, shee besought vs, saying, If yee haue iudged me to be faithfull to the Lorde, come into mine house, & abide *there*: and she constrained vs. 16 And it came to passe ỹ as we went to praier, a certaine maid hauing a spirit of diuination, met vs, which gate her masters much vantage with diuining. 17 She followed Paul and vs, and cryed, saying, These men are the seruantes of the most high God, which shewe vnto you the way of saluation. 18 And this did she many dayes: but Paul being grieued, turned about and saide to the spirite, I commaund thee in the name of Iesus Christ, that thou come out of her. And he came out the same houre. 19 Nowe when her masters sawe that the hope of their gaine was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drewe them into the market place vnto the magistrates, 20 And brought them to the gouernours, saying, These men which are Iewes, trouble our citie, 21 And preach ordinances which are not lawfull for vs to receiue, neither to obserue, seeing we are Romanes. 22 The people also rose vp together against them, and the gouernours rent their clothes, and commaunded *them* to be beaten with rods. 23 And when they had beaten thē sore, they cast *them* into prison, commanding the jayler to keep them surely.

24 Who

24 Who hauing receiued ſuch commaundement, caſt them into the inner priſon, and made their feete faſt in the ſtockes. 25 Now at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, *and* ſung Pſalmes vnto God: and the priſoners heard them. 26 And ſuddenly there was a great earthquake, ſo that the foundation of the priſon was ſhaken: and by and by al the doores opened, and euery mans bands were looſed. 27 Then the keeper of the priſon waked out of his ſleepe, and when hee ſawe the priſon doores open, hee drewe out his ſworde and would haue killed himſelfe, ſuppoſing the priſoners had bin fled. 28 But Paul cried with a loud voyce, ſaying, Doe thy ſelfe no harme: for we are all here. 29 Then hee called for a light, and leaped in, & came trembling, and fel downe before Paul & Silas, 30 And brought them out, & ſaid, Syrs, what muſt I doe to be ſaued? 31 And they ſaid, Beleeue in the Lord Ieſus Chriſt, & thou ſhalt be ſaued, & thine houſhold. 32 And they preached vnto him the worde of the Lord, and to all that were in his houſe. 33 Afterwarde hee tooke them the ſame houre of the night, & waſhed *their* ſtripes, and was baptized with all that belonged vnto him, ſtraightway. 34 And when hee had brought them into his houſe, he ſet meat before them, & reioyced ỹ he with all his houſhold beleeued in God. 35 And when it was day, the gouernours ſent the ſergeants, ſaying, Let thoſe men goe. 36 Then the keeper of the priſō told theſe words vnto Paul,

ferime. The gouernours haue sent to loose you: now therefore get you hence, and goe in peace. 37 Then said Paul vnto them, After that they haue beaten vs openly vncondemned, which are Romanes, they haue cast vs into prison, & now would they put vs out priuily? nay verely: but let them come and bring vs out. 38 And the sergeants tolde these words vnto the gouernours, who feared when they heard that they were Romans. 39 Then came they & prayed them, and brought them out, and desired them to depart out of the city. 40 And they went out of the prison, and entred into *one* house of Lydia: and when they had seene the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

CHAP. 17. 1 *Paul preacheth at Athens.*

NOw as they passed thorow Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a Synagogue of the Iewes. 2 And Paul, as his maner was, went in vnto them, and three Sabbath *dayes* disputed with them by the Scriptures, 3 Opening, & alleging that Christ must haue suffered and risen againe from the dead: and this is Iesus Christ, whom, *saith he*, I preach to you. 4 And some of them beleeued, and ioyned in company with Paul & Silas: also of the Grecians that feared God a great multitude, and of the chiefe women not a few. 5 But the Iewes which beleeued not, mooued with enuy, tooke vnto them certaine vagabonds *and* wicked fellowes, and when they had assem-

bled

bled the multitude, they made a tumult in the city, and made assault against the house of Iason, and sought to bring them out to the people. 6 But when they found them not, they drew Iason and certaine brethren vnto the heads of the city, crying, These are they which haue subuerted the state of the world, and here they are, 7 Whom Iason hath receiued, and these all do against the decrees of Cæsar, saying, that there is another king, one Iesus. 8 Then they troubled the people and the heads of the city when they heard these things. 9 Notwithstanding when they had receiued sufficient assurance of Iason and of the other, they let them go. 10 And the brethren immediatly sent away Paul and Silas by night vnto Berea, which when they were come thither, entred into the Synagogue of the Iewes. 11 These were also more noble men then they which were at Thessalonica, which receiued the word with all readinesse, and searched the Scriptures dayly, whether those things were so. 12 Therefore many of them beleeued, and of honest women, which were Grecians, and men not a few. 13 But when the Iewes of Thessalonica knew, that the word of God was also preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also, and mooued the people. 14 But by and by the brethren sent away Paul to go as it were to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still. 15 And they that did conduct Paul, brought him vnto Athens: and when they had

had receiued a commandement vnto Silas and Timotheus that they ſhould come to him at once, they departed. 16 Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his ſpirit was ſtirred in him, when he ſaw the city ſubiect to idolatry. 17 Therefore he diſputed in the Synagogue with the Iewes, and with them that were religious, and in the market dayly with whom ſoeuer he met. 18 Then certaine Philoſophers of the Epicures, and of the Stoiks, diſputed with him, and ſome ſaid, What will this babbler ſay? Others ſaid, He ſeemeth to be a ſetter foorth of ſtrange gods (becauſe he preached vnto them Ieſus, and the reſurrection) 19 And they tooke him and brought him into Mars ſtreet, ſaying, May we not know, what this new doctrine, whereof thou ſpeakeſt, is? 20 For thou bringeſt certaine ſtrange things vnto our eares: wee would know therfore, what theſe things meane. 21 For all the Athenians, and ſtrangers which dwelt there, gaue themſelues to nothing els, but either to tell, or to heare ſome newes. 22 Then Paul ſtood in the mids of Mars ſtreet, and ſaid, Ye men of Athens, I perceiue that in all things ye are too ſuperſtitious. 23 For as I paſſed by, and beheld your deuotions, I found an altar wherein was written, VNTO THE VNKNOWEN GOD. Whom ye then ignorantly worſhip, him ſhew I vnto you. 24 God that made the world, and all things that are therin, ſeeing that he is the Lord of heauen

men and earth, *dwelleth not in temples made with hands, 25 *Neither is worshipped with mens hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giueth to all life & breath, and all things, 26 And hath made of one blood all mankinde, to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath assigned the seasons which were ordained before, & the bounds of their habitation, 27 That they should seeke the Lord, if so be they might haue groped after him, and found *him*, though doubtlesse he be not farre from euery one of vs. 28 (For in him we liue and moue, & haue our being, as also certaine of your owne Poets haue said, For we are also his generation.) 29 *Forasmuch then, as we are the generation of God, we ought not to thinke that the Godhead is like vnto golde, or siluer, or stone grauen by arte and the inuention of man. 30 And the time of this ignorance God regarded not: but now he admonisheth all men euery where to repent, 31 Because he hath appointed a day in the which he will iudge the world in righteousnesse, by that man whom he hath appointed, *wherof* he hath giuen an assurance to all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead. 32 Now when they heard of the resurrection from the dead, some mocked: and other said, We will heare thee againe of this thing. 33 And so Paul departed from among them. 34 Howbeit certaine men claue vnto Paul, and beleeued: among whom was also Denis Areopagita, and a woman

Chap. 7.48. Psal. 50.8.

Isai. 40.18.

man named Damaris, and other with them.

CHAP. 18. 24 *Apollos instructed by Aquila.*

AFter these things, Paul departed from Athens, & came to Corinthus, 2 And founde
Rom. 16.3. certaine Iew named * Aquila, borne in Pontus, lately come from Italie, & his wife Priscilla, (because that Claudius had commanded all Iewes to depart from Rome) and he came vnto them. 3 And because he was of the same craft, he abode with them, & wrought (for their craft was to make tents.) 4 And he disputed in the Synagogue euery Sabbath *day*, and exhorted the Iewes, and the Grecians. 5 Now when Silas & Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul forced in Spirit, testified to the Iewes that Iesus was the Christ. 6 And when they resisted and
Chap. 13.51. Matt. 10.14. blasphemed, he * shooke his raiment, & said vnto thē, Your blood *be* vpon your owne head: I am cleane: from henceforth wil I go vnto the Gentiles. 7 So he departed thence, & entred into a certaine mans house named Iustus, a worshipper of God, whose house ioyned hard to the Syna-
1. Cor. 1.14. gogue. 8 * And Crispus the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, beleeued in the Lord with all his houshold: and many of the Corinthians hearing it, beleeued and were baptized. 9 Then said the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, Feare not, but speake, and holde not thy peace. 10 For I am with thee, & no man shall lay *hands* on thee to hurt thee: for I haue much people in this city. 11 So he continued there a yere & fixe

fixe moneths, and taught the word among them.
12 Now when Gallio was Deputy of Achaia, the Iewes aroſe with one accord againſt Paul, & brought him to the iudgement ſeat, 13 Saying, This fellow perſuadeth men to worſhip GOD otherwiſe then the Law appointeth. 14 And as Paul was about to open his mouth, Gallio ſaid vnto the Iewes, If it were a matter of wrong, or an euill deed, O ye Iewes, I would according to reaſon maintaine you. 15 But if it be a queſtion of words, and names, and of your Law, looke ye to it your ſelues: for I will be no iudge of thoſe things. 16 And he draue them from the iudgement ſeat. 17 Then tooke all the Grecians Soſthenes the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, & beat him before the iudgement ſeat: but Gallio cared nothing for thoſe things. 18 But when Paul had taried there yet a good while, he tooke leaue of the brethren, and ſailed into Syria (and with him Priſcilla and Aquila) after that he had ſhorne his head in Cenchrea: for he had a * vow. 19 Then he came to Epheſus, and left them there: but he entred into the Synagogue & diſputed with ỹ Iewes. 20 Who deſired him to tary a longer time with them: but he would not conſent, 21 But bade them farewell, ſaying, I muſt needs keepe this feaſt that commeth, in Hieruſalem: but I will returne againe vnto you, * if God will. So he ſailed frõ Epheſus. 22 And when he came downe to Ceſarea, he went vp *to Hieruſalem*: and when he had

Chap. 21. 24. numb. 6. 18. 1. Cor. 4. 15. Iames 4. 15.

had saluted the Church, he went downe vnto Antiochia. 23 Now when he had taried *there* a while, he departed, and went thorow the countrey of Galatia and Phrygia by order, strengthening all the disciples. 24 And a certaine Iew named * Apollos, borne at Alexandria, came to Ephesus, an eloquent man, and mighty in the Scriptures. 25 The same was instructed in the way of the Lord, and he spake fervently in the spirit, and taught diligently the things of the Lord, and knew but the Baptisme of Iohn only. 26 And he beganne to speake boldly in the Synagogue. Whom * when Aquila & Priscilla had heard, they tooke him vnto them, and expounded vnto him the way of God more perfectly. 27 And when he was minded to go into Achaia, the brethren exhorting him, wrote to the disciples to receiue him: and after he was come thither, he holpe them much which had beleeued through grace. 28 For mightily he confuted publikely the Iewes, with great vehemencie, shewing by the Scriptures, that Iesus was that Christ.

1 Cor. 1, 12.

Rom. 16, 3.

CHAP. 19. *13 The Iewish Exorcists. 19 Coniuring bookes are burnt.*

AND it came to passe, while Apollos was at Corinthus, that Paul when he passed thorow the vpper coasts, came to Ephesus, & found certaine disciples, 2 And said vnto them, Haue ye receiued the holy Ghost since ye beleeued? And they said vnto him, We haue not so much

heard whether there be an holy Ghoſt.
3 And he ſaid vnto them, Vnto what were ye
then baptized? And they ſaid, Vnto Iohns bap-
tiſme. 4 Then ſaid Paul, * Iohn verely bapti-
zed with the baptiſme of repentance, ſaying vn-
to the people, that they ſhould beleeue in him,
which ſhould come after him, that is, in Chriſt
Ieſus. 5 And when they heard it, they were
baptized in the Name of the Lord Ieſus. 6 So
Paul layd his hands vpō them, & the holy Ghoſt
came on them, and they ſpake the tongues, and
propheſied. 7 And all the men were about
twelue. 8 Moreouer he went into the Syna-
gogue, and ſpake boldly for the ſpace of three
monethſ, diſputing and exhorting to the things
that *appertaine* to ỹ kingdome of God. 9 But
when certaine were hardened, and diſobeyed,
ſpeaking euil of the way *of God* before the mul-
titude, he departed from them, and ſeparated the
diſciples, and diſputed dayly in the ſchoole of
one Tyrannus. 10 And this was done by the
ſpace of two yeres, ſo that all they which dwelt
in Aſia, heard the word of the Lord Ieſus, both
Iewes and Grecians. 11 And God wrought no
ſmall miracles by the hands of Paul. 12 So that
from his body were brought vnto the ſicke,
kerchiefs or handkerchiefs, and the diſeaſes de-
parted from them, and the euill ſpirits went out
of them. 13 Then certaine of the vagabond
Iewes, exorciſts, tooke in hand to name ouer
them, which had euill ſpirits, the Name of the

Lord

* Chap. 1.5. and 2. 2. and 11.16. matt. 3.11. mark. 1.8. luke 3.16. iohn 1.26.

Lord Ieſus, ſaying, We adiure you by Ieſus whom Paul preacheth. 14 (And there were certaine ſonnes of Sceua a Iew, the Prieſt, *and* ſeuen, which did this) 15 And the euill ſpirit anſwered, and ſaid, Ieſus I acknowledge, and Paul I know: but who are ye? 16 And the man in whom the euill ſpirit was, ran on them, & ouercame them, and preuailed againſt them, ſo that they fled out of that houſe, naked, & wounded. 17 And this was knowen to all the Iewes and Grecians alſo, which dwelt at Epheſus, & feare came on them all, and the Name of the Lord Ieſus was magnified. 18 And many that beleeued, came and confeſſed, and ſhewed their works. 19 Many alſo of them which vſed curious arts, brought their bookes, and burned them before all men, and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thouſand *pieces* of ſiluer. 20 So the word of God grew mightily, and preuailed. 21 Now when theſe things were accompliſhed, Paul purpoſed by the Spirit to paſſe thorow Macedonia & Achaia, and to go to Hieruſalem, ſaying, After I haue bene there, I muſt alſo ſee Rome. 22 So ſent he into Macedonia two of them that miniſtred vnto him, Timotheus and Eraſtus, *but* he remained in Aſia for a ſeaſon. 23 And the ſame time there aroſe no ſmall trouble about that way. 24 For a certaine man named Demetrius a ſiluer ſmith, which made ſiluer temples of Diana, brought great gaines vnto the craftſmen. 25 Whom he called together, with

the workemen of like things, and said, Sirs, ye
know that by this craft we haue our goods.
26 Moreouer ye see and heare, that not alone
at Ephesus, but almost thorow out all Asia this
Paul hath persuaded,& turned away much peo-
ple, saying, That they be not gods which are
made with hands. 27 So that not onely this
thing is dangerous vnto vs, that this our portiō
shalbe reproued,but also that the Temple of the
great goddesse Diana should be nothing esteem-
ed, and that it would come to passe that her
magnificence,which all Asia and the world wor-
shippeth, should be destroyed. 28 Now when
they heard it,they were full of wrath,and cried
out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.
29 And the whole city was full of confusion,&
they rushed into the common place with one as-
sent,and caught * Gaius, and * Aristarchus,men *Rom.
of Macedonia, & Pauls companions of his iour- 16.21.
ney. 30 And when Paul would haue entred in 1.cor.
vnto the people, the disciples suffered him not. 1.14.
31 Certaine also of the chiefe of Asia,which were Col.4.
his friends, sent vnto him, desiring him that he 10.
would not present himselfe in the cōmon place.
32 Some therefore cried one thing,and some an-
other: for the assembly was out of order, & the
more part knew not wherefore they were come
together. 33 And *some* of the company drew
foorth Alexander, the Iewes thrusting him for-
wards. Alexander then beckened with ye hand,
& would haue excused the matter to the people.

34 But

34 But when they knew that he was a Iew, they
arose a shout almost for the space of two houres,
of all men, crying, Great is Diana of the Ephesi-
ans. 35 Then the towne clarke when he had
stayed the people, sayd, Ye men of Ephesus, what
man is it, that knoweth not how that the city of
the Ephesians is a worshipper of the great god-
desse Diana, & of *the image* which came downe
from Iupiter? 36 Seeing then that no man can
speake against these things, ye ought to be ap-
peased, and to doe nothing rashly. 37 For ye
haue brought hither these men, which haue nei-
ther committed sacrilege, neither do blaspheme
your goddesse. 38 Wherefore, if Demetrius &
the craftsmen which are with him, haue a matter
against any man, the law is open, and there are
Deputies: let them accuse one another. 39 But
if ye inquire any thing concerning other mat-
ters, it may be determined in a lawfull assembly.
40 For we are euen in ieopardy to be accused
of this dayes sedition, forasmuch as there is no
cause, wherby we may giue a reason of this con-
course of people. 41 And when he had thus
spoken, he let the assembly depart.

CHAP. 20. 9 *Paul raiseth deád Eutychus.*

NOw after the tumult was appeased, Paul
called the disciples vnto him, & embraced
them, & departed to go into Macedonia. 2 And
when he had gone thorow those parts, and had
exhorted them with many words, he came into
Grecia. 3 And hauing taried *three* three mo-
neths,

neth, because the Iewes laid waite for him, as he was about to saile into Syria, he purposed to returne through Macedonia. 4 And there accompanied him into Asia Sopater of Berea, and of them of Thessalonica, Aristarchus, & Secundus, and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus, & of them of Asia, Tychicus, and Trophimus. 5 These went before, and taried vs at Troas. 6 And we sayled forth from Philippi, after the dayes of vnleauened bread, and came vnto them to Troas in fiue dayes, where we abode seuen dayes. 7 And the first day of the weeke, the disciples being come together to breake bread, Paul preached vnto them, ready to depart on the morowe, and continued the preaching vnto midnight. 8 And there were many lightes in an vpper chamber, where they were gathered together. 9 And there sate in a windowe a certaine yong man, named Eutychos, fallen into a deepe sleepe: and as Paul was long preaching, he ouercome with sleepe, fell downe from the third loft, & was taken vp dead. 10 But Paul went downe, & laide himselfe vpon him, and embraced him, saying, Trouble not your selues: for his life is in him. 11 Then when *Paul* was come vp againe, and had broken bread, and eaten, hauing spoken a long while till the dawning of the day, he so departed. 12 And they brought the boy aliue, and they were not a litle comforted. 13 Then we went before to shippe, & sailed vnto the citie Assos, there we might receiue Paul there: for so

had he appointed, & would himselfe goe afoote.
14 Nowe when he was come vnto vs to Assos,
& we had receiued him, we came to Mitylene.
15 And we sailed thence, and came the next day
ouer against Chios, and the next day we arriued
at Samos, & taried at Trogyllium: the next day
we came to Miletum. 16 For Paul had determi-
ned to saile by Ephesus, because he would not
spend the time in Asia: for he hasted to be (if he
could possible) at Hierusalem, at the day of
Pentecost. 17 Wherefore from Mytelum, he
sent to Ephesus, and called the Elders of the
Church. 18 Who when they were come to
him, he said vnto them, Ye knowe from the first
day that I came into Asia, after what maner I
haue bene with you at all seasons, 19 Serving
the Lord with all modestie, & with many teares,
and tentatiõs, which came to me by the layings
awaite of the Iewes, 20 And how I kept backe
nothing that was profitable, but haue shewed
you, and taught you openly and throughout
euery house, 21 Witnessing both to the Iewes,
and to the Grecians the repentance toward
God, and faith toward our Lord Iesus Christ.
22 And nowe behold, I goe bound in the Spirit
vnto Hierusalem, & know not what things shall
come vnto me there, 23 Saue that the holy Ghost
witnesseth in euery citie, saying, that bondes and
afflictions abide me. 24 But I passe not at all, nei-
ther is my life deare vnto my selfe, so that I may
fulfill my course with ioy, and the ministrie

which I haue receiued of ỹ Lord Ieſus, to teſtifie the Goſpel of the grace of God. 25 And nowe behold, I know that hencefoorth ye all, through whom I haue gone preaching the kingdome of God, ſhall ſee my face no more. 26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men. 27 For I haue kept nothing backe, but haue ſhewed you all the counſell of God. 28 Take heede therefore vnto your ſelues, and to all the flocke, whereof the holy Ghoſt hath made you ouerſeers, to feede the Church of God, which he hath purchaſed with that his owne blood. 29 For I knowe this, that after my departing, ſhall grieuous wolues enter in among you, not ſparing the flocke. 30 Moreouer of your owne ſelues ſhal men ariſe, ſpeaking peruerſe things, to drawe diſciples after them. 31 Therefore watch, and remember, that by *the ſpace* of three yeeres I ceaſed not to warne euery one, both night & day with teares. 32 And now brethren I commend you to God, and to the worde of his grace, which is able to builde further, and to giue you an inheritance, among all them which are ſanctified. 33 I haue coueted no mans ſiluer, nor gold, nor apparell. 34 Yea, ye know, that theſe hands haue miniſtred vnto my neceſsities, & to them that were with me. 35 I haue ſhewed you all things, how that ſo labouring, ye ought to ſupport the weake, and to remember the wordes of the Lord Ieſus, how he ſaid, It is ableſſed thing to giue, rather then

1. Cor. 4 12. 1. theſ. 2. 9. 2. theſ. 3 8.

then to receiue. 36 And whē he had thus spoke, he kneeled downe, & praied w̄ them al. 37 Then they wept al abundantly, & fell on Pauls necke, & kissed him. 38 Being chiefly sory for ȳ words which he spake, That they should see his face no more. And they accōpanied him vnto ȳ ship.

CHAP. 21. 1. *Paul goeth toward Hierusalem.* 27. *And is apprehended by the Iewes.*

AND as we lanched foorth, and were departed from them, we came with a straight course vnto Coos, & the day following vnto the Rhodes, & from thence vnto Patara. 2 And we found a shippe that went ouer vnto Phenice, and went aboard, & set foorth 3 And when we had discouered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, & sailed toward Syria, and arriued at Tyrus: for there the shippe vnladed the burden. 4 And when we had found disciples, we taried there seuen dayes And they tolde Paul through the Spirit, ȳ he should not go vp to Hierusalē. 5 But whē the dayes were ended, we departed, and went our way: and they all accompanied vs with their wiues and children, euen out of the citie: and we kneeling downe on the shore, prayed. 6 Then whē we had embraced one another, we tooke shippe, & they returned home. 7 And when we had ended the course from Tyrus, we arriued at Ptolemais, and saluted ȳ brethren, & abode with them one day. 8 And the next day, Paul & we that were with him, departed, and came vnto Cesarea: and we entred

the house of Philip the Euangelist, which was (*Chap.*
one of the seuen *Deacons*, and abode with him. 6.5.
9 Nowe he had foure daughters virgins, which
did prophecie. 10 And as we taried there many
dayes, there came a certaine Prophet from Iu-
dea, named Agabus. 11 And when he was come
vnto vs, he tooke Pauls girdle, and bound his
owne handes and feete, and said, Thus saith the
holy Ghost, So shall the Iewes at Hierusalem
binde the man that oweth this girdle, and shall
deliuer him into the handes of the Gentiles.
12 And whē he had heard these things, both we
and other of the same place besought him that
he would not goe vp to Hierusalem. 13 Then
Paul answered and said, What do ye weeping,
and breaking mine heart? for I am ready not to
be bound onely, but also to die at Hierusalem
for the Name of the Lord Iesus. 14 So when he
would not be perswaded, he ceased, saying, The
will of the Lord be done. 15 And after those
dayes we trussed vp our fardels, and went vp to
Hierusalem. 16 There went with vs also *certaine*
of the disciples of Cesarea, and brought
with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an olde disci-
ple, with whō we should lodge. 17 And when
we were come to Hierusalem, the brethren re-
ceiued vs gladly. 18 And the next day Paul went
in with vs vnto Iames: and all the Elders were
there assembled. 19 And when he had embra-
ced them, he tolde by order all things, that God
had wrought among the Gentiles by his minis-

34 But when they knew that he was a Iew, there aroſe a ſhout almoſt for the ſpace of two houres, of all men, crying, Great is Diana of the Epheſians. 35 Then the towne clarke when he had ſtayed the people, ſayd, Ye men of Epheſus, what man is it, that knoweth not how that the city of the Epheſians is a worſhipper of the great goddeſſe Diana, & of *the image* which came downe from Iupiter? 36 Seeing then that no man can ſpeake againſt theſe things, ye ought to be appeaſed, and to doe nothing raſhly. 37 For ye haue brought hither theſe men, which haue neither committed ſacrilege, neither do blaſpheme your goddeſſe. 38 Wherefore, if Demetrius & the craftſmen which are with him, haue a matter againſt any man, the law is open, and there are Deputies: let them accuſe one another. 39 But if ye inquire any thing concerning other matters, it may be determined in a lawfull aſſembly. 40 For we are euen in ieopardy to be accuſed of this dayes ſedition, foraſmuch as there is no cauſe, wherby we may giue a reaſon of this concourſe of people. 41 And when he had thus ſpoken, he let the aſſembly depart.

CHAP. 20. *9 Paul raiſeth dead Eutychus.*

NOw after the tumult was appeaſed, Paul called the diſciples vnto him, & embraced them, & departed to go into Macedonia. 2 And when he had gone thorow thoſe parts, and had exhorted them with many words, he came into Grecia. 3 And hauing tarried *three* three mo-

neths

neths, because the Iewes laid waite for him, as he was about to saile into Syria, he purposed to returne through Macedonia. 4 And there accompanied him into Asia Sopater of Berea, and of them of Thessalonica, Aristarchus, & Secundus, and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus, & of them of Asia, Tychicus, and Trophimus. 5 These went before, and taried vs at Troas. 6 And we sayled forth from Philippi, after the dayes of vnleauened bread, and came vnto them to Troas in fiue dayes, where we abode seuen dayes. 7 And the first day of the weeke, the disciples being come together to breake bread, Paul preached vnto them, ready to depart on the morowe, and continued the preaching vnto midnight. 8 And there were many lightes in an vpper chamber, where they were gathered together. 9 And there sate in a windowe a certaine yong man, named Eutychus, fallen into a deepe sleepe: and as Paul was long preaching, he ouercome with sleepe, fell downe from the third loft, & was taken vp dead. 10 But Paul went downe, & laide himselfe vpon him, and embraced him, saying, Trouble not your selues: for his life is in him. 11 Then when *Paul* was come vp againe, and had broken bread, and eaten, hauing spoken a long while till the dawning of the day, he so departed. 12 And they brought the boy aliue, and they were not a litle comforted. 13 Then we went before to shippe, & sailed vnto *the citie* Assos, there we might receiue Paul there: for so

had he appointed, & would himselfe goe afoote.
14 Nowe when he was come vnto vs to Assos,
& we had receiued him, we came to Mitylene.
15 And we sailed thence, and came the next day
ouer against Chios, and the next day we arriued
at Samos, & taried at Trogyllium: the next day
we came to Miletum. 16 For Paul had determi-
ned to saile by Ephesus, because he would not
spend the time in Asia: for he hasted to be (if he
could possible) at Hierusalem, at the day of
Pentecost. 17 Wherefore from Miletum, he
sent to Ephesus, and called the Elders of the
Church. 18 Who when they were come to
him, he said vnto them, Ye knowe from the first
day that I came into Asia, after what maner I
haue bene with you at all seasons, 19 Serui-
the Lord with all modestie, & with many teares
and tentatiõs, which came to me by the laying
awaite of the Iewes, 20 And how I kept back
nothing that was profitable, but haue shewed
you, and taught you openly and throughout
euery house, 21 Witnessing both to the Iewes
and to the Grecians the repentance toward
God, and faith toward our Lord Iesus Christ.
22 And nowe behold, I goe bound in the Spirit
vnto Hierusalem, & know not what things shall
come vnto me there, 23 Saue that the holy Ghost
witnesseth in euery citie, saying, that bondes and
afflictions abide me. 24 But I passe not at all,
ther is my life deare vnto my selfe, so that I
fulfill my course with ioy, and the minister-

which I haue receiued of ỹ Lord Ieſus, to teſtifie the Goſpel of the grace of God. 25 And nowe behold, I know that hencefoorth ye all, through whom I haue gone preachiug the kingdome of God, ſhall ſee my face no more. 26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men. 27 For I haue kept nothing backe, but haue ſhewed you all the counſell of God. 28 Take heede therefore vnto your ſelues, and to all the flocke, whereof the holy Ghoſt hath made you ouerſeers, to feede the Church of God, which he hath purchaſed with that his owne blood. 29 For I knowe this, that after my departiug, ſhall grieuous wolues enter in among you, not ſparing the flocke. 30 Moreouer of your owne ſelues ſhal men ariſe, ſpeaking peruerſe things, to drawe diſciples after them. 31 Therefore watch, and remember, that by *the ſpace* of three yeeres I ceaſed not to warne euery one, both night & day with teares. 32 And now brethren I commend you to God, and to the worde of his grace, which is able to builde further, and to giue you an inheritance, among all them which are ſanctified. 33 I haue coueted no mans ſiluer, nor gold, nor apparell. 34 Yea, ye know, that these hands haue miniſtred vnto my neceſsities, & to them that were with me. 35 I haue ſhewed you all things, how that ſo labouring, ye ought to ſupport the weake, and to remember the wordes of the Lord Ieſus, how ỹ he ſaid, It is ableſſed thing to giue, rather then

1. Cor. 4 12.
1. thes. 2. 9.
2. thes. 3 8.

then to receiue. 36 And whē he had thus spokē, he kneeled downe, & praied w̄ them al. 37 Then they wept al abundantly, & fell on Pauls necke, & kissed him, 38 Being chiefly sory for ȳ words which he spake, That they should see his face no more. And they accōpanied him vnto ȳ ship.

CHAP. 21. 1. *Paul goeth toward Hierusalem,* 27. *And is apprehended by the Iewes.*

AND as we lanched foorth, and were departed from them, we came with a straight course vnto Coos, & the day following vnto the Rhodes, & from thence vnto Patara. 2 And we found a shippe that went ouer vnto Phenice, and went aboard, & set foorth 3 And when we had discouered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, & sailed toward Syria, and arriued at Tyrus: for there the shippe vnladed the burden. 4 And when we had found disciples, we taried there seuen dayes And they tolde Paul through the Spirit, ȳ he should not go vp to Hierusalē. 5 But whē the dayes were ended, we departed, and went our way: and they all accompanied vs with *their* wiues and children, euen out of the citie: and we kneeling downe on the shoare, prayed. 6 Then whē we had embraced one another, we tooke shippe, & they returned home. 7 And when we had ended the course from Tyrus, we arriued at Ptolemais, and saluted ȳ brethren, & abode with them one day. 8 And the next day, Paul & we that were with him, departed, and came vnto Cesarea: and we entred into the

the house * of Philip the Euangelist, which was one of the seuen *deacons*, and abode with him. 6.5.
9 Nowe he had foure daughters virgins, which did prophecie. 10 And as we taried there many dayes, there came a certaine Prophet from Iudea, named Agabus. 11 And when he was come vnto vs, he tooke Pauls girdle, and bound his owne handes and feete, and said, Thus saith the holy Ghost, So shall the Iewes at Hierusalem binde the man that oweth this girdle, and shall deliuer him into the handes of the Gentiles. 12 And whē he had heard these things, both we and other of the same place besought him that he would not goe vp to Hierusalem. 13 Then Paul answered and said, What do ye weeping, and breaking mine heart? For I am ready not to be bound onely, but also to die at Hierusalem for the Name of the Lord Iesus. 14 So when he would not be perswaded, he ceased, saying, The will of the Lord be done. 15 And after those dayes we trussed vp our fardels, and went vp to Hierusalem. 16 There went with vs also *certaine* of the disciples of Cesarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an olde disciple, with whō we should lodge. 17 And when we were come to Hierusalem, the brethren receiued vs gladly. 18 And ȳ next day Paul went in with vs vnto Iames: and all the Elders were there assembled. 19 And when he had embraced them, he told by order all things, that God had wrought among the Gentiles by his minis-

stration. 20 So when they heard it they glo-
rified God, & said vnto him, Thou seest, brother,
how many thousand Iewes there are which be-
leeue, & they are all zealous of ỹ Law: 21 Now
they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all
the Iewes, which are among the Gentiles, to for-
sake Moses, & sayest, that they ought not to cir-
cumcise their sonnes, neither to liue after ỹ cu-
stomes. 22 What is then *to be done?* the multi-
tude must needes come together: for they shall
heare that thou art come. 23 Doe therefore this
that we say to thee. We haue foure men which
haue made a vow, 24 Them take, and purifie
thy selfe with them, and contribute with them,
Chap. that they may * shaue their heads: and all shall
28.18 know, that those things, whereof they haue bin
numb. informed concerning thee, are nothing, but that
6.18. thou thy selfe also walkest and keepest the Law.
25 For as touching the Gentiles, which beleeue,
we haue written and determined, that they ob-
serue no such thing, but that they keepe them-
selues from things offered to idoles, and from
blood, and from that that is strangled, and from
fornication 26 Then Paul tooke the men, and
the next day was purified with them, and entred
into the Temple, declaring the accomplishment
of the dayes of the purification, vntill that an of-
fering should be offered for euery one of them.
27 And when the seuen dayes were almost en-
ded, the Iewes which were of Asia, (when they
saw him in the Temple) mooued al the people, &
laide

laide handes on him, 28 Crying, Men of Israel, helpe: this is ỹ man that teacheth all men euery where against the people, & the Lawe, and this place: moreouer, he hath brought Grecians into the Temple, and hath polluted this holy place. 29 For they had seene before Trophimus an Ephesian with him in the citie, whom they supposed that Paul had brought into the Temple. 30 Then all the citie was mooued, & the people ranne together: & they tooke Paul & drew him out of the Temple, & forthwith the doores were shut. 31 But as they went about to kill him, tidings came vnto the chiefe captaine of ỹ band, that al Hierusalem was on an vproare. 32 Who immediatly tooke souldiers and Centurions, and ran downe vnto them: and when they sawe the chiefe Captaine & the souldiers, they left beating of Paul. 33 Then ỹ chiefe Captaine came neere and tooke him, & commanded him to be bound with two chaines, & demanded who he was, and what he had done. 34 And one cryed this, another that, among the people. So when he could not know the certaintie for the tumult, he commaunded him to be led into the castle. 35 And when he came vnto the grieces, it was so that he was borne of the souldiers, for the violence of the people. 36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, Away w̄ him. 37 And as Paul should haue beene led into the castell, he said vnto the chiefe Captaine, May I speake vnto thee? Who said, Canst thou *speake* Greeke?

38 Art not thou the Egyptian who before these dayes raised a sedition, and led out into the wilderneſſe foure thousand men that were murtherers? 39 Then Paul said, Doubtleſſe I am a man which am a Iewe, & citizen of Tarſus, a famous citie of Cilicia, and I beſeech thee, ſuffer me to ſpeake vnto the people. 40 And when he had giuen him licence, Paul ſtood on the greeces, and beckened with the hand vnto the people: and when there was made great ſilence, he ſpake vnto them in the Hebrew tongue, ſaying,

CHAP. 22. 27. *Paul is bound to be ſcourged.*

YE men, brethren and Fathers, heare my defence now toward you. 2 (And when they heard, that he ſpake in the Hebrewe tongue to them, they kept the more ſilence, and he ſaide) 3 I am verely a man, *which am* a Iewe, borne in Tarſus in Cilicia, but brought vp in this citie at the feete of Gamaliel, and inſtructed according to the perfect maner of the Law of the fathers, and was zealous toward God, as ye all are this day. 4 And I perſecuted this way vnto ẏ death, binding and deliuering into priſon both men and women. 5 As alſo the chiefe Prieſt doeth beare me witneſſe, and all the companie of the Elders: of whom alſo I receiued letters vnto the brethren, and went to Damaſcus to bring them which were there, bound vnto Hieruſalem, that they might be puniſhed. 6 And ſo it was, as I iourneyed and was come neere vnto Damaſcus

about

about noone, that ſuddenly there ſhone from heauen a great light round about me. 7 So I fell vnto the earth, and heard a voyce ſaying vnto me, Saul, Saul, Why perſecuteſt thou me? 8 Thē I anſwered, Who art thou Lord? 9 And he ſaid to me, I am Ieſus of Nazareth, whom thou perſecuteſt. 10 Moreouer, they that were with me, ſaw in deede a light & were afraid: but they heard not the voyce of him that ſpake vnto me. 11 Then I ſaid, What ſhall I doe, Lord? And the Lord ſaid vnto me. Ariſe, and goe into Damaſcus: and there it ſhalbe tolde thee of all things, which are appointed for thee to do. 12 So whē I could not ſee for the glory of that light, I was led by the hand of them that were with me, and came into Damaſcus. 13 And one Ananias a godly man, as pertaining to the Lawe, hauing good report of al the Iewes which dwelt there, 14 Came vnto me, and ſtoode, and ſaide vnto me, Brother Saul, receiue thy ſight: and that ſame houre I looked vpon him. 15 And he ſaid, The God of our fathers hath appointed thee, that thou ſhouldeſt know his will, and ſhouldeſt ſee that Iuſt one, and ſhouldeſt heare the voyce of his mouth. 16 For thou ſhalt be his witneſſe vnto all men of the things which thou haſt ſeene and heard. 17 Nowe therefore why tarieſt thou? Ariſe and be baptized, and waſh away thy ſinnes, in calling on the Name of the Lorde. 18 And it came to paſſe, that when I was come againe to Hieruſalem, & prayed in the Temple,

I was

I was in a trance, 19 And sawe him, saying vnto me, Make haste, and get thee quickly out of Hierusalem: for they will not receiue thy witnesse cõcerning me. 20 Then I said, Lord, they know that I prisoned, & beat in euery Synagogue them that beleeued in thee 21 And when the blood of thy martyr Steuen was shed, I also stoode by, and consented vnto his death, & kept ye clothes of them that slew him. 22 Then he said vnto me, Depart: for I will send thee farre hence vnto the Gentiles. 23 And they heard him vnto this worde, *but* then they lift vp their voyces, & said, Away with such a fellowe from the earth: for it is not meete that he should liue. 24 And as they cryed and cast off their clothes, and threw dust into the ayre, 25 The chiefe Captaine commanded him to be led into the castle, and bade that he should be scourged and examined, that he might knowe wherefore they cryed so on him. 26 And as they bound him with thonges, Paul saide vnto the Centurion that stoode by, Is it lawfull for you to scourge one ye is a Romane, and not condemned? 27 Nowe when the Centurion heard it, he went and tolde the chiefe Captaine, saying, Take heede what thou doest: for this man is a Romane. 28 Then ye chiefe Captaine came, and said to him, Tell me, art thou a Romane? And he said, Yea 29 And the chiefe Captaine answered, With a great summe obtained I this freedome. Then Paul said, But I was so borne. 30 Then straightway they departed from

from him, which should have examined him: and the chiefe Captaine also was afraide, after hee knewe that he was a Romane, and that hee had bound him. 30 On the next day, because he would have knowen the certaintie wherefore hee was accused of the Iewes, hee loosed him from his bonds, and commanded the hie Priestes and all their Councel to come *together:* and he brought Paul, and set him before them.

CHAP. 23. 2. *Paul brought before Ananias.*

AND Paul beholde earnestly the Councel, and said, Men *and* brethren, I have in al good cõscience serued God vntill this day. 2 Then the hie Priest Ananias commanded them that stoode by, to smite him on the mouth. 3 Then said Paul to him, God wil smite thee, thou whited wal: for thou sittest to iudge me according to the Lawe, and transgressing the Law, commandest thou me to be smitten? 4 And they that stood by, sayde, Reuilest thou Gods hie Priest? 5 Then sayde Paul, I knewe not, brethren, that he was the hie Priest: for it is written, *Thou shalt not speake euil of the Ruler of thy people. *Exod.* 22.27

6 But whē Paul perceiued ỹ the one part were of the Sadduces, & the other of the Pharises he cried in the Councel, Men *and* brethren, *I am a Pharise, the sonne of a Pharise: I am accused of the hope and resurrection of the dead. *Chap.* 24.21. *phil.* 3.5.

7 And when he had sayde this there was a dissension betwene the Pharises and the Sadduces, so that the multitude was diuided. *Matt.* 22.23.

8 *For the Sadduces say that there is no resur-

resurrection, neither Angel, nor spirit: but the Phariſes cõfeſſe both. 9 Then there was a great cry, and the Scribes of the Phariſes part roſe vp, and ſtroue, ſaying. Wee finde none euill in this man: but if a ſpirit or an Angel haue ſpoken to him, let vs not fight againſt God. 10 And when there was a great diſſenſion, the chiefe captaine, fearing leſt Paul ſhould haue bin pulled in pieces of them, cõmanded ỹ ſouldiers to go downe, and to take him from among them, and to bring him into the caſtle. 11 Now the night following the Lord ſtood by him, and ſaid, Be of good courage, Paul: for as thou haſt teſtified of mee in Hieruſalem, ſo muſt thou beare witnes alſo at Rome. 12 And when the day was come, certaine of the Iewes made an aſſembly, and bound them ſelues with a curſe ſaying, that they would neither eate nor drinke, till they had killed Paul. 13 And they were moe then fourtie, which had made this conſpiracie. 14 And they came to the chiefe Prieſtes and Elders, and ſaide, Wee haue bound our ſelues with a ſolemne curſe, that wee will eate nothing, vntil wee haue ſlaine Paul. 15 Now therefore, ye and the Councel ſignifie to the chiefe captaine, that he bring him forth vnto you to morow, as though ye would know ſomething more perfectly of him, and we, or euer he come neere, will bee ready to kill him. 16 But when Pauls ſiſters ſonne heard of their laying awaite, he went and entred into the caſtle, and told Paul. 17 And Paul called one of the Cen-

turions

turions vnto him, and sayd, Take this yong man hence vnto the chiefe captaine: for hee hath a certaine thing to shew him. 18 So he tooke him, and brought him to the chiefe captaine, & said, Paul the prisoner called me vnto him, and prayed mee to bring this yong man vnto thee, which hath some thing to say vnto thee. 19 Then the chiefe captaine tooke him by the hand, & went apart with him alone, and asked him What hast thou to shewe me? 20 And he said, The Iewes haue conspired to desire thee, that thou wouldest bring forth Paul to morow, into the Counsell, as though they would enquire somewhat of him more perfectly: 21 But let them not perswade thee: for there lye in waite for him of them more then fourtie men, which haue bound themselues with a curse, that they will neither eate nor drinke, till they haue killed him: and now are they ready, and waite for thy promes. 22 The chiefe captaine then let the yong man depart, after hee had charged him to vtter it to no man, that hee had shewed him these things. 23 And he called vnto him two certaine Centurions, saying, Make ready two hundreth souldiers, that they may goe to Cæsarea, and horsmen threescore & ten, and two hundreth with darts, at the third houre of the night. 24 And let them make ready an horse, that Paul being set on, may bee brought safe vnto Felix the Gouernour. 25 And hee wrote an Epistle in this maner: 26 Claudius Lysias vnto the most noble Gouer-

nour

nour Felix sendeth greeting 27 As this man was taken of the Iewes, and should haue bene killed of them, I came vpon them with the garrison, and rescued him, perceiuing that he was a Romane. 28 And when I would haue knowen the cause, wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their Council. 29 *There* I perceiued that hee was accused of questions of their Lawe, but had no crime worthy of death, or of bonds 30 And when it was shewed me, howe that the Iewes layd waite for the man, I sent *him* straightway to thee, and commaunded his accusers to speake before thee the things that they had against him, Farewell. 31 Then the souldiers, as it was commanded them, tooke Paul and brought him by night to Antipatris. 32 And the next day they left the horsemen to goe with him, & returned vnto the castle. 33 Now when they came to Cæsarea, they deliuered the Epistle to the Gouernour, and presented Paul also vnto him. 34 So when the Gouernour had read it, he asked of what prouince he was: and when hee vnderstood that he was of Cilicia, 35 I will heare thee, saith he, when thine accusers also are come and commaunded him to bee kept in Herods iudgement hall.

CHAP. 24. 2. *Tertullus accuseth Paul before Felix.*

NOw after fiue dayes, Ananias the hie Priest came downe with the Elders, & *with* Tertullus a certaine oratour, which appeared be-

fore

fore the Gouernour against Paul. 2 And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying, Seeing that we haue obtained great quietnesse through thee, and that many worthy things are done vnto this nation, through thy prouidence, 3 We acknowledge it wholy, and in all places most noble Felix, with all thankes. 4 But that I bee not tedious vnto thee, I pray thee that thou wouldest heare vs of thy courtesie a fewe wordes. 5 Certainely we haue found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mouer of sedition among all the Iewes throughout the world, and a chiefe maintainer of the sect of the Nazarites: 6 And hath gone about to pollute the Temple: therefore we tooke him, & would haue iudged him according to our Law: 7 But the chiefe captaine Lysias came vpon vs, and with great violence tooke him out of our hands, 8 Commaunding his accusers to come to thee: of whome thou mayest (if thou wilt inquire) knowe all these things whereof we accuse him. 9 And the Iewes likewise assented, saying, that it was so. 10 Then Paul, after that the Gouernour had beckened vnto him that hee shoulde speake, answered, I do the more gladly answere for my selfe, forasmuch as I knowe that thou hast bene of many yeeres a Iudge vnto this nation, 11 Seeing that thou mayest knowe, that there are but twelue dayes since I came vp to worship in Hierusalem. 12 And they neither found mee in the Temple disputing with any

man,

man, neither making vproare among the people, neither in the Synagogues, nor in the citie. 13 Neither can they prooue the things, whereof they now accuse me. 14 But this I confesse vnto thee, that after the way (which they call heresie) so worship I the God of my fathers, beleeuing all things which are written in the Lawe and the Prophets, 15 And haue hope towarde God, that the resurrection of the dead, which they themselues looke for also, shalbe both of iust and vniust. 15 And herein I endeuour myselfe to haue alway a cleare conscience towarde God and towarde men. 17 Nowe after many yeeres, I came, and brought almes to my nation and offerings. 18 At what time certaine Iewes of Asia found me purified in the Temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult. 19 Who ought to haue bene present before thee, and accuse me if they had ought against mee. 20 Or let these themselues say, if they haue founde any euil thing in me, while I stood in the Council, 21 Except it be for this one voyce, that I cried standing among them, Of the resurrection of the dead am I accused of you this day. 22 Now when Felix heard these things, he deferred them and sayde, When I shall more perfectly know the things which concerne this way, by the coming of Lysias the chiefe Captaine, I will decide your matter. 23 Then he commanded a Centurion to keepe Paul, and that hee should haue ease, and that hee should forbid none of his acquaintance

quaintance to minister vnto him, or to come vn-
to him. 24 And after certaine dayes, came Fe-
lix with his wife Drusilla, which was a Iewesse,
and he called foorth Paul, and heard him of the
faith in Christ. 25 And as he disputed of righte-
ousnesse and temperance, and of the iudgement
to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Goe thy
way for this time, and when I haue conuenient
time, I wil call for thee. 26 He hoped also that
money should haue bin giuen him of Paul, that
he might loose him: wherefore he sent for him
the oftner, and communed with him. 27 When
two yeares were expired, Portius Festus came
into Felix roume: and *Felix* willing to get fa-
uour of the Iewes, left Paul bound.

CHAP. 25. 2. *Paul pleadeth before*
Festus and Agrippa.

NOw Festus was then come into the pro-
uince, after three dayes he went vp from
Cæsarea vnto Hierusalem. 2 Then the hie Priest,
and the chiefe of the Iewes appeared before him
against Paul: and they besought him, 3 And de-
sired fauour against him, that he would send for
him to Hierusalem: and they layde waite to kill
him by the way. 4 But Festus answered, that
Paul should be kept at Cæsarea, and that he him-
self would shortly depart *thither*. 5 Let them
therefore, sayd he, which among you are able,
come downe with vs: and if there be any wic-
kednesse in the man, let them accuse him.
6 Nowe when hee had tarried among them no

more then tenne dayes, he went downe to Cæ-
rea, and the next day sate in the iudgement
and commaunded Paul to be brought. 7 And
when he was come, the Iewes which were come
from Hierusalem, stood about him, and layd
ny and grieuous complaints against Paul, wh
of they could make no plaine proofe, 8 For
much as he answered, that he had neither offe
ded any thing against the Law of the Iewes, n
ther against the Temple, nor against Cæsar. 9 B
Festus willing to get fauour of the Iewes, a
swered Paul, and said, Wilt thou goe vp to Hie
rusalem, and there be iudged of these things b
fore me? 10 Then said Paul, I stand at C
iudgement seate, where I ought to be iudg
the Iewes I haue done no wrong, as thou
well knowest. 11 For if I haue done wrong
committed any thing worthy of death, I re
not to die: but if there be none of these thi
whereof they accuse mee, no man, to ple
them, can deliuer me to them: I appeale
Cæsar. 12 Then when Festus had spoken w
the Councill, hee answered, Hast thou appe
vnto Cæsar? vnto Cæsar shalt thou goe. 13
after certaine dayes, King Agrippa and Ber
came downe to Cæsarea to salute Festus. 14
when they had remained there many dayes,
stus declared Pauls cause vnto the King, sa
There is a certaine man left in prison by F
15 Of whome when I came to Hierusalem
hie Priestes and Elders of the Iewes info

me, did desired to haue iudgement against him.
26 To whome I answered, that it is not the maner of the Romanes for fauour to deliuer any man to the death, before that hee which is accused, haue the accusers before him, and haue place to defende himselfe, concerning the crime.
27 Therefore when they were come hither, without delay the day following I sate on the iudgement seate, and commanded the man to be brought forth. 18 Against whom when the accusers stood vp, they brought no crime of such things as I supposed: 19 But had certaine questions against him of their owne superstition, and of one Iesus, which was dead, whome Paul affirmed to be aliue. 20 And because I doubted of such maner of question, I asked him whether hee woulde goe to Hierusalem, and there bee iudged of these things. 21 But because hee appealed to be reserued to the examination of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept, til I might send him to Cæsar. 22 Then Agrippa said vnto Festus, I would also heare the man my selfe. To morowe, saide hee, thou shalt heare him.
23 And on the morowe when Agrippa was come and Bernice with great pompe and were entred into the common hall with the chiefe captaines and chiefe men of the citie, at Festus commaundement Paul was brought foorth.
24 And Festus sayd, King Agrippa, and all men which are present with vs, yee see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Iewes haue

man, neither making vproare among the people, neither in the Synagogues, nor in the citie. 13 Neither can they proue the things, whereof they now accuse me. 14 But this I confesse vnto thee, that after the way (which they call heresie) so worship I the God of my fathers, beleeuing all things which are written in the Lawe and the Prophets, 15 And haue hope towards God, that the resurrection of the dead, which they themselues looke for also, shalbe both of iust and vniust. 15 And herein I endeuour my selfe to haue alway a cleare conscience toward God and towarde men. 17 Nowe after many yeeres, I came, and brought almes to my nation and offerings. 18 At what time certaine Iewes of Asia found me purified in the Temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult. 19 Who ought to haue bene present before thee, and accuse me, if they had ought against mee. 20 Or let these themselues say, if they haue founde any vniust thing in me, while I stood in the Counsil, 21 Except it be for this one voyce, that I cried standing among them, Of the resurrection of the dead am I accused of you this day. 22 Nowe when Felix heard these things, he deferred them, and sayde, When I shall more perfectly knowe the things which concerne this way, by the comming of Lysias the chiefe Captaine, I will decide your matter. 23 Then he commanded a Centurion to keepe Paul, and that he should haue ease, and that hee should forbid none of his acquaintance

quaintance to minister vnto him, or to come vnto him. 24 And after certaine dayes, came Felix with his wife Drusilla, which was a Iewesse, and he called foorth Paul, and heard him of the faith in Christ. 25 And as he disputed of righteousnesse and temperance, and of the iudgement to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Goe thy way for this time, and when I haue conuenient time, I wil call for thee. 26 He hoped also that money should haue bin giuen him of Paul, that he might loose him: wherefore he sent for him the oftner, and communed with him. 27 When two yeeres were expired, Portius Festus came into Felix roume: and *Felix* willing to get fauour of the Iewes, left Paul bound.

CHAP. 25. 2. *Paul pleadeth before Festus and Agrippa.*

WHen Festus was then come into the prouince, after three dayes he went vp from Cesarea vnto Hierusalem. 2 Then the hie Priest, and the chiefe of the Iewes appeared before him against Paul: and they besought him, 3 And desired fauour against him, that he would send for him to Hierusalem: and they layde waite to kill him by the way. 4 But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at Cesarea, and that he himselfe would shortly depart *thither*. 5 Let them therefore, sayd he, which among you are able, come downe with vs: and if there be any wickednesse in the man, let them accuse him.

Nowe when hee had taried among them no

more then tenne dayes, he went downe to Cæsarea, and the next day sate in the iudgement seat, and commaunded Paul to be brought. 7 And when he was come, the Iewes which were come from Hierusalem, stood about him, and layd many and grieuous complaints against Paul, whereof they could make no plaine proofe, 8 Forasmuch as he answered, that he had neither offended any thing against the Law of the Iewes, neither against the Temple, nor against Cæsar. 9 Yet Festus willing to get fauour of the Iewes, answered Paul, and said, Wilt thou goe vp to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these things before me? 10 Then said Paul, I stand at Cæsars iudgement seate, where I ought to be iudged: to the Iewes I haue done no wrong, as thou very well knowest. 11 For if I haue done wrong, or committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these things whereof they accuse mee, no man, to pleasure them, can deliuer me to them: I appeale vnto Cæsar. 12 Then when Festus had spoken with the Councill, hee answered, Hast thou appealed vnto Cæsar? vnto Cæsar shalt thou goe. 13 And after certaine dayes, King Agrippa and Bernice came downe to Cæsarea to salute Festus. 14 And when they had remained there many dayes, Festus declared Pauls cause vnto the King, saying, There is a certaine man left in prison by Felix, 15 Of whome when I came to Hierusalem, the hie Priestes and Elders of the Iewes informed me,

me, and desired to haue iudgement against him. 26 To whome I answered, that it is not the maner of the Romanes for fauour to deliuer any man to the death, before that hee which is accused, haue the accusers before him, and haue place to defende himselfe, concerning the crime. 27 Therefore when they were come hither, without delay the day following I sate on the iudgement seate, and commanded the man to be brought forth. 28 Against whom when the accusers stood vp, they brought no crime of such things as I supposed: 29 But had certaine questions against him of their owne superstition, and of one Iesus, which was dead, whome Paul affirmed to be aliue. 30 And because I doubted of such maner of question, I asked him whether hee woulde goe to Hierusalem, and there bee iudged of these things. 31 But because hee appealed to be reserued to the examination of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept, til I might send him to Cæsar. 32 Then Agrippa said vnto Festus, I would also heare the man my selfe. To morowe, saide hee, thou shalt heare him. 33 And on the morowe when Agrippa was come and Bernice with great pompe and were entred into the common hall with the chiefe captaines and chiefe men of the citie, at Festus commaundement Paul was brought foorth. 34 And Festus sayd, King Agrippa, and all men which are present with vs, yee see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Iewes haue

called vpon me, both at Hierusalem, and [illegible]
crying, that he ought not to liue any [illegible]
25 Yet haue I found nothing worthy of [illegible]
that he hath committed: neuertheleſſe, [illegible]
that he hath appealed to Auguſtus, I haue [illegible]
mined to ſend him. 26 Of whom I haue [illegible]
certaine thing to write vnto my Lord: [illegible]
fore I haue brought him foorth vnto you, [illegible]
ſpecially vnto thee, King Agrippa, that after [illegible]
mination had, I might haue ſomewhat to [illegible]
27 For me thinketh it vnreaſonable to ſend [illegible]
priſoner, and not to ſhewe the cauſes which [illegible]
laid againſt him.

CHAP. 26. 2. *Pauls oration to Agrippa.*

THen Agrippa ſaid vnto Paul, Thou art [illegible]
mitted to ſpeake for thy ſelfe. So Paul [illegible]
ched foorth the hand, & anſwered for himſelfe.
2 I thinke my ſelf happy, King Agrippa, becauſe
I ſhall anſwere this day before thee of all the
things whereof I am accuſed of the Iewes.
3 Chiefly, becauſe thou haſt knowledge of all
cuſtomes, and queſtions which are among the
Iewes: wherefore I beſeech thee, to heare me pa-
tiently. 4 As touching my life from my child-
hood, & what it was from the beginning among
mine owne nation at Hieruſalem, knowe all the
Iewes, 5 Which knewe me heretofore, if they
would teſtifie, that after
the moſt ſtrait ſect of our religion I liued a Pha-
riſe. 6 And now I ſtand and am accuſed for the
hope of the promes made of God vnto our

tribes of vs Whereunto our twelue tribes instantly ſeruing God day and night, hope to come: for which hopes ſake, O king Agrippa, I am accuſed of the Iewes. 8 Why ſhould it be thought a thing incredible vnto you, that God ſhoulde raiſe againe the dead? 9 I alſo verely thought in my ſelfe, that I ought to doe many contrary things againſt the Name of IESVS of Nazareth, 10 * Which thing I alſo did in Hieruſalem: Chap. 8. 3. for many of the Saints I ſhutte vp in priſon, hauing receiued authoritie of the hie Prieſtes, and when they were put to death, I gaue my ſentẽce. 11 And I puniſhed them throughout all the Synagogues, & compelled them to blaſpheme, and being more mad againſt them, I perſecuted them euen vnto ſtrange cities. 12 At which time, euen as I went to * Damaſcus with authoritie, & commiſſion from the hie Prieſtes, 13 At midday, O Chap. 9 2. King, I ſawe in the way a light from heauen paſſing the brightneſſe of the ſunne, ſhine round about me, and them which went with me. 14 So when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voyce ſpeaking vnto mee, and ſaying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why perſecuteſt thou me? It is hard for thee to kick againſt prickes. 15 Then I ſaid, Who art thou, Lord? And he ſaid, I am Ieſus whom thou perſecuteſt. 16 But riſe and ſtand vp on thy feete: for I haue appeared vnto thee for this purpoſe, to appoint thee a miniſter and a witnes, both of the things which thou haſt ſeene, and of the things in the which

I will appeare vnto thee, 17 Deliuering thee from
this people, and from the Gentiles, vnto whom
now I send thee, 18 To open their eyes, that
they may turne from darknesse to light, & from
the power of Satan vnto God, that they may re-
ceiue forgiuenesse of sinnes, and inheritance a-
mong them, which are sanctified by faith in me.
19 Wherfore, King Agrippa, I was not disobe-
Chap. dient vnto the heauenly vision, 20 * But shew-
9.22, ed first vnto them of Damascus, & at Hierusalem,
26. & & thorow out all the coasts of Iudea, & then to
23.4. the Gentiles, that they should repent, & turne to
God, and do works worthy amendment of life.
21 For this cause the Iewes caught me in the
Chap. * Temple, & went about to kill me. 22 Neuer-
21.30. theless, I obtained helpe of God, and continue
vnto this day, witnessing both to small and to
great, saying none other things, then those which
the Prophets and Moses did say should come,
23 *To wit*, that Christ should suffer, and that he
should be the first that should rise frō the dead,
and should shew light vnto this people, and to
the Gentiles. 24 And as he thus answered for
himselfe, Festus said with a loud voice, Paul,
thou art besides thy selfe: much learning doeth
make thee mad. 25 But he said, I am not mad, O
noble Festus, but I speake the words of truth, &
soberneſſe. 26 For the King knoweth of these
things, before whom also I speake boldly: for I
am perswaded that none of these things are hid
from him: for this thing was not done in a cor-

27 O King Agrippa, beleeuest thou ỹ Prophets? I know that thou beleeuest. 28 Then Agrippa said vnto Paul, Almost thou perswadest me to become a Christian. 29 Then Paul said, I would to God that not onely thou, but also all that heare me to day, were both almost, and altogether such as I am, except these bondes. 30 And when he had thus spoken, the King rose vp, and the gouernour, & Bernice, and they that sate with them. 31 And when they were gone apart, they talked betweene themselues, saying, This man doth nothing worthy of death, nor of bonds. 32 Then said Agrippa vnto Festus, This man might haue beene looſed, if he had not appealed vnto Cesar.

CHAP. 27. 21 *Pauls ſhipwracke.*

NOw when it was concluded, ỹ we ſhould saile into Italie, they deliuered both Paul and certaine other prisoners vnto a Centurion named Iulius, of the band of Augustus. 2 And we entred into a shippe of Adramyttium, purposing to saile by the coasts of Asia, and launched forth, and had Aristarchus of Macedonia, a Thessalonian, with vs. 3 And the next day we arriued at Sidon: and Iulius courteously intreated Paul, & gaue him liberty to go vnto his friends, that they might refresh him. 4 And from thence we launched and sailed hard by Cyprus, because the windes were contrary. 5 Then sailed we ouer the sea by Cilicia, and Pamphylia, & came to Myra, *a city* in Lycia. 6 And there the Cen-

2. Cor. 11. 25.

turion found a ship of Alexandria, sailing into Italie, and put vs therein. 7 And when we had sailed slowly many dayes, and scarse were come against Guidum, because the winde suffered vs not, we sailed hard by Candie, nere to Salmone. 8 And with much adoe sailed beyond it, and came vnto a certaine place called the Faire hauens, neere vnto the which was the city Lasea. 9 So when much time was spent, and sailing was now ieopardous, because also the Fast was now past, Paul exhorted *them*, 10 And said vnto them, Syrs, I see that this voyage will be with hurt & much dammage, not of the lading & ship onely, but also of our liues. 11 Nevertheless the Centurion beleeued rather the Gouernour and master of the ship, then those things which were spoken of Paul. 12 And because the hauen was not commodious to winter in, many tooke counsell to depart thence, if by any meanes they might attaine to Phenice, *there* to winter, which is an hauen of Candie, and lieth toward the Southwest, and by West, & Northwest, and by West. 13 And when the Southerne winde blew softly, they supposing to obtaine their purpose, loosed nere, & sailed by Candie. 14 But anon after, there arose by it a stormie winde called Euroclydon. 15 And when the shippe was caught, and could not resist the winde, we let her go, & were caried away. 16 And we ran vnder a little Ile named Clauda, and had much adoe to get the boat. 17 Which they tooke vp & vsed

all helpe, vndergirding the ſhippe, fearing leaſt they ſhould haue fallen into Syrtes, and they ſtrake ſaile, & ſo were caried. 18 The next day when we were toſſed with an exceeding tempeſt, they lightened the ſhip. 19 And the third day we caſt out with our owne hands the tackling of the ſhip. 20 And when neither ſun nor ſtarres in many daies appeared, & no ſmall tempeſt lay vpon vs, all hope that we ſhould be ſaued, was then taken away. 21 But after long abſtinence, Paul ſtood forth in the mids of them and ſaid, Syrs, ye ſhould haue hearkened to me, and not haue looſed from Candie: ſo ſhould ye haue gained this hurt & loſſe. 22 But now I exhort you to be of good courage: for there ſhal be no loſſe of any mans life among you, ſaue of the ſhip onely. 23 For there ſtood by me this night the Angel of God, whoſe I am, and whom I ſerue, 24 Saying, Feare not, Paul: for thou muſt be brought before Ceſar: and loe, God hath giuen vnto thee freely all that ſaile with thee. 25 Wherefore, ſirs, be of good courage: for I beleeue God, that it ſhalbe ſo as it hath bin told me. 26 Howbeit, we muſt be caſt into a certaine Iland. 27 And when the foureteenth night was come, as we were caried to and fro in the Adriaticall ſea about midnight, the ſhipmen deemed that ſome country approched vnto thē, 28 And ſounded & foūd it twenty fathoms: and when they had gone a litle further, they ſoūded againe, & found fifteene fathoms. 29 Then fe-

ring least they should haue fallen into some rough places, they cast foure ancres out of the sterne, & wished ỹ the day were come. 30 Now as the mariners were about to flee out of the ship, & had let downe the boat into the sea vnder a colour as though they would haue cast ancres out of ỹ foreship, 31 Paul said vnto the Centurion & the souldiers, Except these abide in the ship, ye cannot be safe. 32 Then the souldiers cut off the ropes of the boat, and let it fall away. 33 And when it began to be day, Paul exhorted them all to take meat, saying, This is the fourteenth day that ye haue taried, & continued fasting, receiuing nothing. 34 Wherefore I exhort you to take meat: for this is for your safegard: for there shall not an haire fall from the head of any of you. 35 And when he had thus spoken, he tooke bread, & gaue thanks to God, in presence of them all, & brake it, and began to eate. 36 Then were they all of good courage, and they also tooke meat. 37 Now we were in the ship in all two hundred threescore and sixteene soules. 38 And when they had eaten enough, they lightned the ship, & cast out ỹ wheat into ỹ sea. 39 And when it was day, they knew not ỹ countrey, but they spied a certaine creeke with a banke, into the which they were minded (if it were possible) to thrust in the ship. 40 So whē they had taken vp the ancres, they committed *the ship* vnto the sea, and loosed the rudder bonds, & hoised vp the maine saile to the winde,

and

and drew to the shore. 41 And when they fell into a place, where two seas met, they thrust in the ships and the forepart stucke fast, and could not be moued, but the hinder part was broken with the violence of the waues. 42 Then the souldiers counsell was to kill the prisoners, lest any of them, when he had swum out, should flee away. 43 But the Centurion willing to saue Paul, stayed them from this counsell, and commanded that they that could swim, should cast themselues first into the sea, and go out to land: 44 And the other, some on boards, and some on certaine *peeces* of the ship: and so it came to passe that they came all safe to land.

CHAP. 28. 3 *The viper on Pauls hand.*

AND when they were come safe, then they knew that the yle was called Melita. 2 And the Barbarians shewed vs no litle kindnesse: for they kindled a fire, & receiued vs euery one, because of the present showre, and because of the colde. 3 And when Paul had gathered a nũber of sticks, and layd them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heate, and leapt on his hand. 4 Now when the Barbarians saw the worme hang on his hand, they said among themselues, This man surely is a murtherer, whom, though he hath escaped the sea, yet Vengeance hath not suffered to liue. 5 But he shooke off the worme into the fire, & felt no harme. 6 Howbeit they waited when he should haue swolne, or fallen downe dead suddenly: but after they had looked

a great while, & saw no inconuenience come to him, they changed their mindes & said, That he was a God. 7 In the same quarters the chiefe man of the yle (whose name was Publius) had possessions: the same receiued vs, and lodged vs three dayes courteously. 8 And so it was, that the father of Publius lay sicke of the feuer, & of a bloody flixe: to whom Paul entred in, & when he prayed, he layd his hands on him, and healed him. 9 When this then was done, other also in the yle, which had diseases, came to him & were healed, 10 Which also did vs great honor: and when we departed, they laded vs with things necessary. 11 Now after three moneths we departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the yle, whose badge was Castor & Pollux. 12 And when we arriued at Syracusa, we taried *there* three dayes. 13 And from thence we set a compasse, & came to Rhegium, and after one day, the South winde blew, & the second day we came to Puteoli: 14 Where we found brethren, and were desired to tary with them seuen dayes, and so we went toward Rome. 15 And from thence, when the brethren heard of vs, they came to meet vs at the Market of Appius, & at the three tauernes, whō when Paul saw, he thanked God, and waxed bolde. 16 So when we came to Rome, the Centurion deliuered the prisoners to the generall captaine: but Paul was suffered to dwell by himselfe with a souldier that kept him. 17 And the third day after, Paul

called

called the chiefe of the Iewes together: and when they were come, he said vnto them, Men and brethren, though I haue committed nothing against the people, or lawes of the fathers, yet was I deliuered prisoner from Hierusalem into the hands of the Romans. 18 Who when they had examined me, would haue let me goe, because there was no cause of death in me. 19 But when the Iewes spake contrary, I was constrained to appeale vnto Cæsar, not because I had ought to accuse my nation of. 20 For this cause therefore haue I called for you, to see you, and to speake with you: for that hope of Israels sake, I am bound with this chaine. 21 Then they said vnto him, We neither receiued letters out of Iudea concerning thee, neither came any of the brethren that shewed or spake any euill of thee. 22 But we wil heare of thee what thou thinkest: for as concerning this sect, we know that euery where it is spoken against. 23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many vnto him into *his* lodging, to whom he expounded & testified the kingdome of God, & perswading them those things that concerne Iesus, both out of the law of Moses, and out of the Prophets, fro morning to night. 24 And some were perswaded with the things which were spoken, and some beleeued not. 25 Therefore when they agreed not among themselues, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, *to wit*, Wel spake the holy Ghost by Esaias ỹ Prophet vnto

our

Esai. 6. 9. our Fathers, 26 Saying, * Go vnto this people, and say, By hearing ye shall heare, and shall not vnderstand, and seeing ye shall see, and not perceiue. 27 For the heart of this people is waxed fat, & their eares are dull of hearing, and with their eyes haue they winked, lest they should see with *their* eyes, & heare with *their* eares, & vnderstand with *their* hearts, and should returne, that I might heale them. 28 Be it knowen therefore vnto you, that this saluation of God is sent to the Gentiles, and they shall heare it. 29 And when he had said these things, ỹ Iewes departed, and had reasoning among themselues. 30 And Paul remained two yeres full in an house hired for himselfe, & receiued all ỹ came in vnto him, 31 Preaching the kingdome of God, & teaching those things, which concerne the Lord Iesus Christ, with all boldnesse of speech, without let.

THE EPISTLE OF THE Apostle Paul to the Romanes.

CHAP. 1. 26 *The punishment of those that refused grace.*

Acts 13. 1. PAVL a seruant of Iesus Christ, called *to be* an Apostle, * put apart to *preach* the Gospel of God, 2 (Which he had promised afore by his Prophets in the holy Scriptures) 3 Concerning his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord (which was made of the seed of Dauid, according to the flesh, 4 And declared mig-

the Sonne of God, touching the Spirit of Sanctification by the resurrectiō of the dead.) 5 By whom we haue receiued grace & Apostleship, that obedience might be giuen vnto the faith for his name among all the Gentiles, 6 Among whō ye be also the called of Iesus Christ: 7 To all *you* that be at Rome beloued of God, called *to be* Saints: Grace *be* with you, & peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ. 8 First I thanke my God through Iesus Christ for you all, because your faith is published throwout the whole world. 9 For God is my witnesse, (whom I serue in my spirit in the Gospel of his Sonne) that without ceasing I make mention of you 10 Alwayes in my prayers, beseeching that by some meanes, one time or other, I might haue a prosperous iourney, by the will of God, to come vnto you. 11 For I long to see you, that I might bestow amōg you some spirituall gift, that you might be strengthened: 12 That is, that I might be comforted together with you, through *our* mutuall faith, both yours and mine. 13 Now my brethren, I would that ye should not be ignorant, how that I haue oftentimes purposed to come vnto you, (but haue bin let hitherto) that I might haue some fruit also among you, as *I haue* among the other Gentiles. 14 I am debter both to the Grecians, and to the Barbarians, both to the wise men & vnto the vnwise. 15 Therfore, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the Gospel to you also that are at

Rome.

Rome. 16 For I am not ashamed of the Gospell of Christ: for it is the power of God vnto saluation to euery one that beleeueth, to the Iewe first & also to the Grecian. 17 For by it the righteousnesse of God is reueiled frō faith to faith: as it is written,* The iust shal liue by faith. 18 For the wrath of God is reuealed frō heauen against all vngodlines, & vnrighteousnes of men, which withholde the truth in vnrighteousnes, 19 Forasmuch as that, which may be knowen of God is manifest in them: for God hath shewed it vnto them. 20 For the inuisible things of him, that is, his eternall power and Godhead, are seene by the creation of the world, being cōsidered in his works, to the intent that they should be without excuse: 21 Because that when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankfull, but became vaine in their thoughts, & their foolish heart was full of darknes. 22 Whē they professed thēselues to be wise, they became fooles. 23 For they turned the glory of the incorruptible God, to the similitude of the image of a corruptible man, & of birds, and foure footed beasts, & of creeping things. 24 Wherfore also God gaue them vp to their hearts lusts, vnto vncleannes, to defile their own bodies betweene themselues. 25 Which turned the truth of God vnto a lie, and worshipped and serued the creature, forsaking the Creator, which is blessed for euer, Amen. 26 For this cause God gaue thē vp vnto vile affections: for euen their women did

Habu. 2. 4.

chan

change the natural vſe into that which is against nature. 27 And likewiſe alſo ỹ men left the natural vſe of the woman, and burned in their luſt one toward another, & man with man wrought filthineſſe, & receiued in themſelues ſuch recompence of their error, as was meete. 28 For as they regarded not to acknowledge God, *cuẽ ſo* God deliuered them vp vnto a reprobate mind, to doe thoſe things which are not conuenient, 29 Being full of all vnrighteouſnes, fornication, wickednes, couetouſnes, malicioufnes, ful of enuie, of murther, of debate, of deceit, taking all things in the euil part, whiſperers, 30 Backbiters, haters of God, doers of wrong, proud, boaſters, inuenters of euil things, diſobedient to parents, without vnderſtãding, conenant breakers, without naturall affection ſuch as can neuer be appeaſed, mercileſſe. 31 Which men, though they knew the Lawe of God, howe that they which comit ſuch things are worthy of death, *yet* not only do ỹ ſame, but alſo fauour them ỹ do them.

CHAP. 2. 14. *Ignorance excuſeth no man.*

THerefore thou art inexcuſable, O man, whoſoeuer thou art that condemneſt: for in that that thou condemneſt another, thou condemneſt thy ſelfe: for thou that condemneſt, doeſt ỹ ſame things. 2 But we know that the iudgement of God is according to truth, againſt them which commit ſuch things. 3 And thinkeſt thou this, O thou man, that condemneſt them which doe ſuch things, and doeſt the ſame, that thou ſhalt

escape ᵛ iudgement of God? 4 Or despiſeſt thou
the riches of his bountifulnes, and patience and
long ſufferance, not knowing that the bountifulnes of God leadeth thee to repentance? 5 But
thou, after thine hardnes, and heart that cannot
Iames repent, *heapeſt vp as a treaſure vnto thy ſelfe
5.3. wrath againſt the day of wrath, & of the decla-
Pſal. ration of the iuſt iudgement of God, 6 *Who
62.12. will reward euery man according to his workes,
matt. 7 *That is*, to them which through patience in
16.27. well doing, ſeeke glory, & honour, & immorta-
reuel. litie, euerlaſting life. 8 But vnto them ʸ are con-
22.12. tentious & diſobey the trueth, & obey vnrighteouſnes, *ſhalbe* indignation & wrath. 9 Tribulation & anguiſh *ſhalbe* vpon the ſoule of euery man that doth euil: of the Iew firſt, & *alſo* of the Grecian 10 But to euery man that doeth good, *ſhalbe* glory, and honour, and peace, to the Iew firſt, & *alſo* to the Grecian. 11 For there is no reſpect of perſons with God. 12 For as many as haue ſinned without the Lawe, ſhall perish alſo without the Law: and as many as haue ſinned in the Law, ſhalbe iudged by the Law, 13 (For the hearers of the Lawe *are* not righteous before God: but the doers of the Law ſhalbe iuſtified. 14 For when the Gentiles which haue not the Lawe, doe by nature the things *contained* in the Law, they hauing not the Lawe, are a Lawe vnto themſelues, 15 Which ſhewe the effect of the Law written in their hearts, their conſcience alſo bearing witneſſe, and their thoughts accuſing

another, or excusing.) 16 At the day when
God shal iudge ỹ secrets of men by Iesus Christ,
according to my Gospel. 17 Beholde, thou art
called a Iew, and rested in the Law, & gloriest in
God, 18 And knowest his will, & triest ỹ things
that differ from it, in that thou art instructed
by the Lawe: 19 And perswadest thy selfe that
thou art a guide of the blinde, a light of them
which are in darknes, 20 An instructer of them
which lacke discretion, a teacher of the vnlear-
ned, which hast the forme of knowledge, and of
truth in the Law. 21 Thou therefore which tea-
chest another, teachest thou not thy selfe? thou
that preachest, A man should not steale, doest
thou steale? 22 Thou that sayest, A man should
not commit adulterie, dost thou commit adul-
terie? thou that abhorrest idoles, committest
thou sacrilege? 23 Thou that gloriest in ỹ Law,
through breaking the Lawe, dishonourest thou
God? 24 For the Name of God is blasphemed
among the Gentiles through you, *as it is writ
ten. 25 For circumcision verely is profitable, if
thou do the Lawe: but if thou be a transgressour
of the Law, thy circumcision is made vncircum-
cision. 26 Therefore if the vncircumcision keepe
the ordinances of the Law, shal not his vncircū-
cision be counted for circumcision? 27 And shall
not vncircūcision which is by nature (if it keepe
the Law) condemne thee which by the letter and
circumcision art a transgressour of the Lawe?
28 For he is not a Iew, which is one outward:

Isai. 52.5. ezek. 36.20

neither is ỹ circumcision, which is outwarde
ỹ fleshe 29 But he is a Iew which is one within,
& the circũcision is of ỹ heart, in the spirit, and not
ỹ letter, whose praise is not of men, but of God.

CHAP. 3. *9 That all men are sinners.*

WHat is then the preferment of the Iewe?
or what is the profite of circumcision?
2 Much euery maner of way: chiefly because vnto
them were of credite committed the oracles
of God. 3 For what though some did not be-
leeue? shall their vnbeliefe make ỹ faith of God
without effect? 4 God forbid: yea, let God be
true, and euery man a lyar, as it is written, That
thou mightest be iustified in thy wordes, & ouer-
come, when thou art iudged. 5 Now if our vn-
righteousnesse commend the righteousnesse of
God, what shall we say? Is God vnrighteous
which punisheth? (I speake as a man.) 6 God
forbid: else howe shall God iudge the world?
7 For if the veritie of God hath more abounded
through my lie vnto his glory, why am I yet con-
demned as a sinner? 8 And (as we are blamed,
and as some affirme that we say) why do we not
euil, that good may come *thereof*? whose dam-
nation is iust. 9 What then? are we more ex-
cellent? No, in no wise: for we haue already pro-
ued, that all, both Iewes and Gentiles are vnder
P *Iud.* sinne, 10 As it is written,* There is none right-
14.13 ous, no not one. 11 There is none that vnder-
&c. 53. standeth: there is none ỹ seeketh God 12 They
Ps. 13. haue all gone out of the way: they haue been

made altogether vnprofitable: there is none that
doeth good, no not one. 13 *Their throte is an *Psal.
open sepulchre; they haue vsed their tongues to 5.10.
deceit: *the poyson of aspes is vnder their lips. *Psal.
14 *Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitter- 139.3
nesse. 15 * Their feete are swift to shed blood. *Psal.
16 Destruction & calamitie are in their wayes, 10.7.
17 And ỹ way of peace they haue not knowen. Esai.
18 *The feare of God is not before their eyes. 59.7.
19 Nowe we knowe that whatsoeuer the Lawe *Psal.
saith, it saith it to them which are vnder ỹ Lawe, 36.2.
that euery mouth may be stopped, and all the
world be subiect to the iudgement of God.
20 Therefore by the workes of the Lawe shall
no flesh be iustified in his sight for by the Lawe
commeth the knowledge of sinne. 21 But nowe
is the righteousnes of God made manifest with-
out the Law, hauing witnes of the Law & of the
Prophets, 22 *To wit*, the righteousnes of God
by the faith of Iesus Christ, vnto all, and vpon all
that beleeue. 23 For there is no difference: for
all haue sinned, & are depriued of the glory of
God, 24 And are iustified freely by his grace,
through the redemption that is in Christ Iesus,
25 Whom God hath set forth *to be* a reconcilia-
tion through faith in his blood to declare his
righteousnes, by ỹ forgiuenes of the sinnes that
are passed, 26 Through the patience of God, to
shew at this time his righteousnes ỹ he might be
iust, and a iustifier of him which is of the faith of
Iesus. 27 Where is then the reioycing? It is ex-

cluded. By what Lawe? of workes? Nay, but by the Law of faith 28 Therfore we conclude, that a man is iustified by faith without the workes of the Law. 29 *Or*, is he the God of the Iewes only, & not of the Gentiles also? Yes, euen of the Gentiles also. 30 For it is one God who shall iustifie circumcision of faith, & vncircumcision through faith 31 Doe we then make the Law of none effect through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the Lawe.

CHAP. 4. 1. *Of faith and workes.*

WHat shall we say then, ỹ Abraham our father hath fouֹd concerning the flesh? 2 For if Abraham were iustified by workes, he hath wherein to reioyce, but not with God. 3 For what saieth the Scripture? Abraham beleeued God, & it was counted to him for righteousnes. 4 Nowe to him that worketh, the wages is not counted by fauour, but by dette: 5 But to him that worketh not, but beleeueth in him ỹ iustifieth the vngodly, his faith is counted for righteousnes. 6 Euen as Dauid declareth the blessednesse of the man, vnto whom God imputeth righteousnes without workes, *saying*, 7 Blessed *are* they, whose iniquities are forgiuen, & whose sinnes are couered 8 Blessed *is* the man, to whom the Lord imputeth not sinne. 9 *Came* this blessednes then vpō the circumcision *only*, or vpon the vncircumcision also? For we say, that faith was imputed to Abraham for righteousnesse. 10 How was it then imputed? when he was circumcised,

circumcised, or vncircumcised? not when he was circumcised, but when he was vncircumcised. 11 After he receiued the signe of circumcision, as the seale of the righteousnes of the faith which he had when he was vncircumcised, ỹ he should be the Father of all them that beleeue, not being circumcised, ỹ righteousnesse might be imputed to them also, 12 And the father of circumcision, not vnto them onely which are of the circumcision, but vnto them also ỹ walke in the steps of the faith of our father Abraham, *which he had* when he was circumcised. 13 For the promise, that he should be the heire of the worlde, was not *giuen* to Abraham or to his seede, through the Law, but through the righteousnes of faith. 14 For if they which are of the Lawe, *be* heires, faith is made voide, and the promise is made of none effect. 15 For the law causeth wrath, for where no Lawe is, there is no transgression. 16 Therefore *it is* by faith that *it might come* by grace, and the promise might be sure to all the seede, not to that onely which is of the Law: but also to ỹ which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of vs all, 17 (As it is written, I haue made thee a father of many nations) *euen* before God whom he beleeued, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not, as though they were. 18 Which *Abraham* aboue hope, beleeued vnder hope, ỹ he should be the father of many nations: according to ỹ which was spokē *to him*, So shal thy seede be. 19 And

he not weake in the faith, considered not his owne body, which was now dead, being about an hundreth yeeres olde, neither the deadnes of Saraes wombe. 20 Neither did he doubt of the promise of God through vnbeliefe, but was strengthened in the faith, & gaue glory to God, 21 Being fully assured that he which had promised, was also able to doe it 22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousnes. 23 Now it is not written for him onely, that it was imputed to him for righteousnes, 24 But also for vs, to whom it shalbe imputed *for righteousnes*, which beleeue in him that raysed vp Iesus our Lord from the dead. 25 Who was deliuered for *our* sinnes, and is risen againe for our iustification.

CHAP. 5. 1 *Of Christs mediation.*

THen being iustified by faith, we haue peace toward God through our Lord Iesus Christ. *Ephes.* 2.18. 2 * By whom also through faith, we haue had this accesse into this grace, wherein we stand, & reioyce vnder the hope of the glory of God. *Iam.* 1.2. 3 Neither *that* onely, but also * we reioyce in tribulations, knowing that tribulation bringeth forth patience, 4 And patience experience, and experience hope, 5 And hope maketh not ashamed, because the loue of God is shed abroade in *Hebr.* 9.15. our hearts by the holy Ghost, which is giuen vnto *1 Pet.* 3.18. vs. 6 For Christ, whē we were yet of no strēgth, at *his* time dyed for the * vngodly. 7 Doubtlesse one wil scarce dye for a righteous man: but yet

for

for a good man it may be that one dare dye. 8 But God setteth out his loue toward vs, seeing that while we were yet sinners Christ dyed for vs. 9 Much more then, being nowe iustified by his blood, we shall be saued from wrath through him. 10 For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Sonne, much more being reconciled, we shalbe saued by his life, 11 And not onely so, but we also reioyce in God through our Lord Iesus Christ, by whom we haue nowe receiued the atonement. 12 Wherefore, as by one man sinne entred into the world, and death by sinne, and so death went ouer all men: forasmuch as all men haue sinned. 13 For vnto the time of the Lawe was sinne in the world, but sinne is not imputed, while there is no Lawe. 14 But death reigned from Adam to Moses, euen ouer them also that sinned not after the like maner of the transgression of Adam, which was the figure of him that was to come. 15 But yet the gift is not so, as is the offence: for if through the offence of that one, many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man Iesus Christ, hath abounded vnto many. 16 Neither is the gift so, as *that which entred in* by one that sinned: for the fault *came* of one *offence* vnto condemnation: but the gift *is* of many offences to iustification. 17 For if by the offence of one, death reigned through one, much more shall they which receiue that abundance

dance of grace, and of that gift of that righteousnesse, reigne in life through one, *that is* Iesus Christ. 18 Likewise then as by ỹ offence of one *the fault came* on all men to condemnation, so by the iustifying of one, *the benefite abounded* toward al men to the iustificatiõ of life. 19 For as by one mans disobedience many were made sinners: so by that disobedience of that one shall many also be made righteous. 20 Moreouer the Lawe entred thereupon that the offence should abound: neuertheleſſe, where sinne abounded, *there* grace abounded much more: 21 That as sinne had reigned vnto death, so might grace also reigne by righteousnesse vnto eternall life, through Iesus Christ our Lord.

CHAP. 6. 2. *Of sanctification.*

Gala. 3.27. *Colos.* 2.12. *Ephe.* 4.23. *Colos.* 3.8. *Hebr.* 12.1. *2 pet.* 2.1. *1.Cor.* 6.14. *2.tim.* 2.11.

WHat shall we say then? Shall we continue still in sinne, that grace may abound? God forbid. 2 Howe shall we that are dead to sinne, liue yet therein? 3 Knowe ye not, * that all we which haue bin baptized into Iesus Christ, haue bin baptized into his death? 4 * We are buried then with him by baptisme into his death, that like as Christ was raised vp frõ the dead to the glory of the Father, so we also should walke in newnes of life. 5 * For if we be planted ẅ him to the similitude of his death, euen so shal we be *to the similitude* of his resurrectiõ, 6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sinne might be destroyed, ỹ henceforth we should not serue sinne. 7 For he ỹ is dead,

shal is freed from sinne. 8 Wherfore, if we be dead with Christ, we beleeue that we shall liue also with him, 9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead, dieth no more: death hath no more dominion ouer him. 10 For in that he died, he died once to sinne: but in that he liueth, he liueth to God. 11 Likewise thinke ye also, that ye are dead to sinne, but are aliue to God in Iesus Christ our Lord. 12 Let not sinne raigne therfore in your mortall body, that ye should obey it in the lustes thereof. 13 Neither giue ye your members as weapons of vnrighteousnesse vnto sinne: but giue your selues vnto God, as they that are aliue frō the dead, and giue your members as weapons of vnrighteousnesse vnto God. 14 For sinne shal not haue dominion ouer you: for ye are not vnder the Lawe, but vnder grace. 15 What then, shal we sinne, because we are not vnder the Lawe, but vnder grace? God forbid. 16 Knowe ye not, that to whomsoeuer ye giue your selues as seruants to obey, his seruants yee are to whome ye obey, whether it bee of sinne vnto death, or of obedience vnto righteousnesse? 17 But God be thanked, that yee haue bene the seruants of sinne, but ye haue obeyed from the heart vnto the forme of the doctrine, whereunto ye were deliuered. 18 Being then made free frō sinne, ye are made the seruants of righteousnesse. 19 I speake after the maner of man, because of the infirmitie of your flesh: for as yee haue giuen your members seruaunts to vncleannes,

Iohn 8.34. 2. pet. 2.19.

nes,and to iniquitie,to *commu* iniquitie,so now giue your members seruants vnto righteousnesse in holinesse. 20 For when ye were the seruants of sinne,ye were freed frō righteousnes.21 What fruit had ye then in those things,whereof ye are now ashamed? For the ende of those things is death. 22 But now being freed from sinne,and made seruants vnto God, ye haue your fruite in holines,and the end,euerlasting life. 23 For the wages of sinne is death: but the gift of God is eternall life,through Iesus Christ our Lord

CHAP. 7. 1. *Of the Lawe* 14 *Of sinne.*

KNowe ye not,brethren(for I speake to them that knowe the Lawe) that the Law hath do-
1. Cor. minion ouer a man as long as he liueth? 2 For
7.39. the woman which is in subiection to a man, is bound by the Lawe to the man, while he liueth: but if the man bee dead, shee is deliuered from the Law of the man. 3 So then, if while the man liueth,she take another man,shee shall be called
Matt. an adulteresse: but if the man be dead,she is free
5.32. from the Lawe, so that she is not an adulteresse, though she take another man. 4 So ye,my brethren,are dead also to the Lawe by the body of Christ,that ye should be vnto another, *euen* vn-to him that is raysed vp from the dead, that wee should bring forth fruit vnto God. 5 For when wee were in the flesh, the affections of sinnes, which were by the Lawe, had force in our members,to bring forth fruit vnto death. 6 But now we are deliuered from the Lawe, be being dead

in

in whom we were holden, that we should serue in newnes of Spirit, and not in the oldnes of the letter. 7 What shall we say then? Is the Lawe sinne? God forbid. Nay, I knew not sinne, but by the Law: for I had not known lust, except the Lawe had sayde, * Thou shalt not lust. 8 But sinne tooke an occasion by the commandement, and wrought in me all maner of concupiscence: for without the Law sinne is dead. 9 For I once was aliue, without the Law: but when the commandement came, sinne reuiued, 10 But I died: and the same cõmandement which was *ordained* vnto life, was found *to bee* vnto me vnto death. 11 For sinne tooke occasion by the commandement, and deceiued me, and thereby slewe *me*. 12 Wherefore the Lawe * *is* holy, and that commandement *is* holy, and iust, and good. 13 Was that then which is good, made death vnto mee? God forbid: but sinne, ‖ that it might appeare sinne, wrought death in mee by that which is good, that sinne might be out of measure sinnefull by the commandement. 14 For we know that the Lawe is spirituall, but I am carnall, solde vnder sinne. 15 For I allow not that which I doe: for what I would, that doe I not: but what I hate, that doe I. 16 If I doe then that which I would not, I consent to the Law, that *it is* good. 17 Now then, it is no more I, that doe it, but sinne that dwelleth in me. 18 For I know, that in me, that is, in my flesh, dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with mee: but I finde no meanes

Exod. 20.17 deut. 5.21.

1. *Tim. 1.8.*

to

to perfourme that which is good. 19 For I do not the good thing, which I would, but the euil which I would not, that do I. 20 Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that doe it, but the sinne that dwelleth in me. 21 I find then this when I would doe good, I am thus yoked, that euil is present with mee. 22 For I delite in the Law of God, concerning the inner man: 23 But I see another Lawe in my members, rebelling against the law of my minde and leading me captiue vnto the Law of sinne, which is in my members. 24 O wretched man that I am, who shall deliuer me from the body of this death! 25 I thanke God through Iesus Christ our Lord Then I my selfe in my mind serue the Law of God, but in my flesh the Lawe of sinne.

CHAP. 8. 1 *The faithfuls assured salvation.*

NOw then there is no condemnation to them that are in Christ Iesus, which walke not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 2 For the Law of the Spirit of life, *which is* in Christ Iesus, hath freed mee from the Lawe of sinne and of death. 3 For (that that was impossible to the Lawe, in as much as it was weake, because of the flesh) God sending his owne Sonne, in the similitude of sinfull flesh, and for sinne, condemned sinne in the flesh, 4 That that righteousnes of the Law might bee fulfilled in vs, which walke not after the flesh but after the Spirit. 5 For they that are after the flesh sauour the things of the flesh: but they that are after the Spirit, the things of the

Spirit.

Spirit. 6 For the wisdome of the flesh *is* death: but the wisdome of the Spirit *is* life and peace, 7 Because the wisdome of the flesh *is* enimitie against God: for it is not subiect to the Lawe of God, neither in deede can bee. 8 So then they that are in the flesh, cannot please God 9 Now ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, because the Spirite of God dwelleth in you: but if any man hath not the Spirite of Christ, the same is not his. 10 And if Christ be in you, the body is dead, because of sinne: but the Spirite *is* life for righteousnes sake. 11 But if the Spirite of him that raysed vp Iesus from the dead, dwel in you, he that raysed vp Christ from the dead shal also quicken your mortall bodies, by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. 12 Therefore, brethren, wee are debters not to the flesh, to liue after the flesh: 13 For if ye liue after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye mortifie the deeds of the body by the Spirit, ye shal liue. 14 For as many are led by the Spirite of God, they are the sonnes of God. 15 For ye haue not receiued the Spirit of bondage to feare againe: but ye haue receiued the Spirit of adoption, whereby wee cry Abba, Father. 16 The same Spirit beareth witnes with our Spirit, that we are the children of God. 17 If *we be* children, *we are* also heires, euen the heires of God, and heires annexed with Christ: If so be that we suffer with him, that we may also be glorified with him. 18 For I count that the afflictions of this present time *are* not worthy of the glory

nes,and to iniquitie,to *commit* iniquitie,so now giue your members seruants vnto righteousnesse in holinesse. 20 For when ye were the seruants of sinne,ye were freed frō righteousnes.21 What fruit had ye then in those things,wherof ye are now ashamed? For the ende of those things is death. 22 But now being freed from sinne,and made seruants vnto God, ye haue your fruite in holines,and the end,euerlasting life. 23 For the wages of sinne is death: but the gift of God is eternall life,through Iesus Christ our Lord

CHAP. 7. 1. *Of the Lawe* 14 *Of sinne.*

KNowe ye not,brethren(for I speake to them that knowe the Lawe) that the Law hath dominion ouer a man as long as he liueth? 2 For the woman which is in subiection to a man,is bound by the Lawe to the man, while he liueth: but if the man bee dead,shee is deliuered from the Law of the man. 3 So then,if while the man liueth,she take another man,shee shall be called an adulteresse: but if the man be dead,she is free from the Lawe, so that she is not an adulteresse, though she take another man. 4 So ye,my brethren,are dead also to the Lawe by the body of Christ,that ye should be vnto another, *euen* vnto him that is raysed vp from the dead, that wee should bring forth fruit vnto God. 5 For when wee were in the flesh, the affections of sinnes, which were by the Lawe, had force in our members,to bring forth fruit vnto death. 6 But now we are deliuered from the Lawe, he being dead

Rom. 7.39. *Matt.* 5.32.

in

in whom we were holden, that we ſhould ſerue in newnes of Spirit, and not in the oldnes of the letter. 7 What ſhall we ſay then? *Is* the Lawe ſinne? God forbid. Nay, I knew not ſinne, but by the Law: for I had not known luſt, except the Lawe had ſayde, * Thou ſhalt not luſt. 8 But ſinne tooke an occaſion by the commandement, and wrought in me all maner of concupiſcence: for without the Law ſinne *is* dead. 9 For I once was aliue, without the Law: but when the commandement came, ſinne reuiued, 10 But I died: and the ſame cõmandement which was *ordained* vnto life, was found *to bee* vnto me vnto death. 11 For ſinne tooke occaſion by the commandement, and deceiued me, and thereby ſlewe *me*. 12 Wherefore the Lawe * *is* holy, and that commandement *is* holy, and iuſt and good. 13 Was that then which is good, made death vnto mee? God forbid: but ſinne, ‖ that it might appeare ſinne, wrought death in mee by that which is good, that ſinne might be out of meaſure ſinnefull by the commandement. 14 For we know that the Lawe is ſpirituall, but I am carnall, ſolde vnder ſinne. 15 For I allow not that which I doe: for what I would, that doe I not: but what I hate, that doe I. 16 If I doe then that which I would not, I conſent to the Law, that *it is* good. 17 Now then, it is no more I, that doe it, but ſinne that dwelleth in me. 18 For I know, that in me, that is, in my fleſh, dwelleth no good thing: for to will is preſent with mee: but I finde no meanes

Exod. 20.17 deut. 5.21.

1. *Tim. 1.8.*

to

to perfourme that which is good. 19 For I do not the good thing, which I would, but the euil which I would not, that do I. 20 Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that doe it, but the sinne that dwelleth in me. 21 I find then that when I would doe good, I am thus yoked, that euil is present with mee. 22 For I delite in the Law of God, concerning the inner man: 23 But I see another Lawe in my members, rebelling against the law of my minde and leading me captiue vnto the Law of sinne, which is in my members. 24 O wretched man that I am, who shall deliuer me from the body of this death? 25 I thanke God through Iesus Christ our Lord Then I my selfe in my mind serue the Law of God, but in my flesh the Lawe of sinne.

CHAP. 8. 1 *The faithfulls assured salvation.*

NOw then there is no condemnation to them that are in Christ Iesus, which walke not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 2 For the Law of the Spirit of life, *which is* in Christ Iesus, hath freed mee from the Lawe of sinne and of death. 3 For (that that was impossible to the Lawe, in as much as it was weake, because of the flesh) God sending his owne Sonne, in the similitude of sinfull flesh, and for sinne, condemned sinne in the flesh, 4 That that righteousnes of the Law might bee fulfilled in vs, which walke not after the flesh but after the Spirit. 5 For they that are after the flesh sauour the things of the flesh: but they that are after the Spirit, the things of the

Spirit.

Spirit. 6 For the wisdome of the flesh *is* death: but the wisdome of the Spirit *is* life and peace, 7 Because the wisdome of the flesh *is* enimitie against God: for it is not subiect to the Lawe of God, neither in deede can bee. 8 So then they that are in the flesh, cannot please God 9 Now ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, because the Spirite of God dwelleth in you: but if any man hath not the Spirite of Christ, the same is not his. 10 And if Christ be in you, the body is dead, because of sinne: but the Spirite *is* life for righteousnes sake. 11 But if the Spirite of him that raysed vp Iesus from the dead, dwel in you, he that raysed vp Christ from the dead shal also quicken your mortall bodies, by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. 12 Therefore, brethren, wee are debters not to the flesh, to liue after the flesh: 13 For if ye liue after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye mortifie the deeds of the body by the Spirit, ye shal liue. 14 For as many are led by the Spirite of God, they are the sonnes of God. 15 For ye haue not receiued the Spirit of bondage to feare againe: but ye haue receiued the Spirit of adoption, whereby wee cry Abba, Father. 16 The same Spirit beareth witnes with our Spirit, that we are the children of God. 17 If *we be* children, *we are* also heires, euen the heires of God, and heires annexed with Christ: If so be that we suffer with him, that we may also be glorified with him. 18 For I count that the afflictions of this present time *are* not worthy of the glory

glory which ſhall bee ſhewed vnto vs. 19 For the feruent deſire of the creature waiteth when the ſonnes of God ſhal be reueiled. 20 Becauſe the creature is ſubiect to vanitie, not of it owne will, but by reaſon of him, which hath ſubdued it vnder hope, 21 Becauſe the creature alſo ſhall bee deliuered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious libertie of the ſonnes of God. 22 For wee know that euery creature groneth with vs alſo, and trauaileth in paine together vnto this preſent. 23 And not onely *the creature*, but we alſo which haue the firſt fruits of the Spirit, euen wee doe ſigh in our ſelues, waiting
Luke 21,28 for the adoption, *euen* the * redemption of our body. 24 For we are ſaued by hope: but hope that is ſeene, is no hope: for howe can a man hope for that which he ſeeth? 25 But if we hope for that we ſee not, we doe with patience abide for it. 26 Likewiſe the Spirit alſo helpeth our infirmities, for wee know not what to pray as we ought: but the Spirite it ſelfe maketh requeſt for vs with ſighes, which can not bee expreſſed. 27 But he that ſearcheth the hearts, knoweth what is the meaning of the Spirit: for he maketh requeſt for the Saintes, according to *the wil of* God. 28 Alſo we know that al things worke together for the beſt vnto them that loue God, euen to them that are called of *his* purpoſe. 29 For thoſe which he knewe before, he alſo predeſtinated to be made like to the image of his Sonne, that he might be the firſt borne

among many brethren. 30 Moreouer whom he predestinated, them also he called, and whom he called, them also he iustified, & whom he iustified, them also he glorified. 31 What shal we then say to these things? If God bee on our side, who can be against vs? 32 Who spared not his owne Sonne, but gaue him for vs all *to death*, howe shall hee not with him giue vs all things also? 33 Who shall laye any thing to the charge of Gods chosen? *It is* God that iustifieth, 34 Who shall condemne? *it is* Christ which is dead, yea or rather, which is risen againe, who is also at the right hand of God, & maketh request for vs. 35 Who shal separate vs from the loue of Christ? shall tribulation, or anguish, or persecution, or famine, or nakednesse, or perill, or sword? 36 As it is written, * For thy sake are we killed all day long: we are counted as sheepe for the slaughter. 37 Neuertheless, in all things we are more then conquerours through him that loued vs. 38 For I am perswaded that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come. 39 Nor height, nor deapth, nor any other creature shal bee able to separate vs from the loue of God, which is in Christ Iesus our Lord. *Psal.* 44.22

CHAP. 9. 10. *Of Predestination.*

I Say the trueth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience bearing mee witnesse in the holy Ghost, 2 That I haue great heauinesse, & continuall sorow in mine heart. 3 For I would wish my selfe

to be ſeparate from Chriſt, for my brethren that
are my kinſmen according to the fleſh. 4 Which
are the Iſraelites, to whom *pertaineth* the adop-
Chap. tion, and the glory, and the * couenants, & the gi-
2.17. ning of the Law, and the ſeruice *of God*, and the
epheſ. promiſes. 5 Of whome *are* the fathers, and of
2.12. whom concerning the fleſh Chriſt *came*, who is
Chap. God ouer all, bleſſed for euer, Amen. 6 *Not-*
2.28. withſtanding it cannot be that the word of God
ſhould take none effect: for all they are not Iſ-
rael, which are of Iſrael: 7 Neither *are they* all
children, becauſe they are the ſeede of Abraham:
Gene. but, * in Iſaac ſhall thy ſeed be called: 8 That is,
21.12. they which are the children of the fleſh, are not
hebr. the children of God: * but the children of the
11.18. promes, are counted for the ſeed. 9 For this
Gala. a worde of promes, * At this ſame time will I
4.28. come, and Sara ſhal haue a ſonne. 10 Neither
Gene. onely *ſo*: *but this*, but alſo * Rebecca when ſhe had
18.10. cõceiued by one, *euen* by our father Iſaac. 11 For
Gene. yet *the children* were borne and when they had
25.21. neither done good nor euill (that the purpoſe
of God might remaine according to election,
not by works, but by him that calleth) 12 It was
Gene. ſayd vnto her, * The elder ſhal ſerue the yonger.
25.23. 13 As it is written, * Iaaue loued Iacob and
Mal. haue hated Eſau. 14 What ſhall we ſay then?
1.2. Is there vnrighteouſnes with God? God forbid.
Exod. 15 For he ſaith to Moſes, * I wil haue mercie on
33.19. him, to whom I wil ſhew mercie: and wil haue
compaſsion on him, on whom I wil haue com-
paſ-

passion. 16 So then *it is* not in him that willeth, nor in him that runneth, but in God that sheweth mercie. 17 For the Scripture saith vnto Pharao,* For this same purpose haue I stirred thee vp, that I might shewe my power in thee, & that my Name might be declared throughout al the earth. 18 Therfore he hath mercy on whom he wil, and whom he wil, he hardeneth. 19 Thou wilt say then vnto me, Why doeth he yet complaine? for who hath resisted his will? 20 But, O man, who art thou that pleadest against God? *shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made mee thus? * Hath not the potter power of ye clay to make of the same lumpe one vessell to honour, and another to dishonour? 22 *What* and if God would, to shew his wrath, and to make his power knowen, suffer with long patience the vessels of wrath, prepared to destruction? 23 And that he might declare the riches of his glory vpon the vessels of mercy, which hee hath prepared vnto glory? 24 Euen vs, whom he hath called, not of the Iewes onely, but also of the Gentiles, 25 As he saith also in Osee, *I will call them, My people, which were not my people: and her, Beloued, which was not beloued. 26 And it shall be in the place where it was sayd vnto them, *Ye are not my people, that there they shal bee called, The children of the liuing God. 27 Also Esaias crieth concerning Israel,* Though the number of the children of Israel were as the sand of the sea,

Exod. 9.16.
Isay 45. 9. Ierem. 18. 6.
Hosh. 2. 23. 1 pet. 2. 10. Hosh. 1. 10. Isay 10. 22.

yet ſhall *but* a remnant be ſaued. 28 For he will make his accompt, and gather it into a ſhort ſumme with righteouſneſſe: for the Lorde will
Iſay make a ſhort count in the earth. 29 *And as E-
c.9. ſaias ſaid before, Except the Lord of hoſtes had left vs a ſeede, we had bene made as Sodom, and had bene like to Gomorrha. 30 What ſhal we ſay then? That the Gentiles which folowed not righteouſneſſe, haue attained vnto righteouſnes, euen the righteouſnes which is of faith. 31 But Iſrael which folowed the Law of righteouſnes, could not attaine vnto the Law of righteouſnes. 32 Wherefore? Becauſe *they ſought it* not by faith, but as *it were* by the workes of the Lawe: for, they haue ſtumbled at the ſtumbling ſtone,
Pſal. 33 As it is written, *Behold, I lay in Sion a ſtum-
118. bling ſtone, and a rocke to make men fall: and
22. euery one that beleeueth in him, ſhall not be aſhamed.

CHAP. 10. 4 *The effects of election.*

BRethren, mine heartes deſire and prayer to God for Iſrael is, that they might be ſaued. 2 For I beare them recorde, that they haue the zeale of God, but not according to knowledge. 3 For they being ignorant of the righteouſnes of God, and going about to eſtabliſh their owne righteouſneſſe, haue not ſubmitted themſelues to
Gala. the righteouſneſſe of God. 4 *For Chriſt is the
3. 24. end of the Law for righteouſnes vnto euery one
Leuit. that beleeueth. 5 For Moſes *thus* deſcribeth the
18. 5. righteouſneſſe which is of the Lawe, * That the

man which doeth these things, shal liue thereby.
6 But the righteousnes which is of faith, speaketh
on this wise, *Say not in thine heart, Who shall *Deut.*
ascend into heauen? (that is to bring Christ from 30.12.
aboue) 7 Or, who shal descend into the deepe?
(that is to bring Christ againe from the dead.)
8 But what saith it? *The worde is neere thee, *Deut.*
euen in thy mouth, & in thine heart. This is the 30.14.
word of faith which we preach. 9 For if thou
shalt confesse with thy mouth the Lord Iesus, and
shalt beleeue in thine heart, that God raised him
vp from the dead, thou shalt be saued. 10 For
with the heart man beleeueth vnto righteousnes,
and with the mouth man confesseth to saluation.
11 For the Scripture saith, *Whosoeuer beleeueth *Isay*
in him, shal not be ashamed. 12 For there is 28.16
no difference betweene the Iew & the Grecian:
for he that is Lord ouer all, is riche vnto all, that
call on him. 13 *For whosoeuer shal cal vpō the *Ioel*
Name of the Lord, shall be saued. 14 But how 1.38.
shall they call on him, in whome they haue not
beleeued? and how shall they beleeue in him, of
whom they haue not heard? and how shal they
heare without a preacher? 15 And howe shall
they preach, except they be sent? as it is written,
*Howe beautifull are the feete of them which *Isay*
bring glad tidings of peace, & bring glad tidings 52.7.
of good things. 16 But they haue not al obeyed
the Gospel: for Esaias saith, *Lorde, who hath *Isay*
beleeued our report? 17 Then faith *is* by hea- 52.1.
ring, and hearing by the word of God. 18 But I

Psal. demaund, Haue they not heard? No doubt their
19. 3. sound went out through all the earth, and their
wordes into the endes of the worlde. 19 But I
demand, Did not Israel know? First Moses
Deu. saith, * I will prouoke you to enuie by a nation
32.21. that is not a nation, and by a foolish nation I
Isa. wil anger you. 20 * And Esaias is bold, and saith,
65.1. I was found of them that sought me not, & haue
bin made manifest to them that asked not after
Isay me. 21 And vnto Israel he sayeth, * All the day
65.2. long haue I stretched foorth mine hand vnto a
disobedient and gainesaying people.

CHAP. XI. 1. *Outward shewe no warrant of the Church.*

I Demaund then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid: for I also am an Israelite, of the seede of Abraham, of the tribe of Beniamin. 2 God hath not cast away his people which he knew before. Knowe ye not what the Scripture saith of Elias howe he communeth with God, a-
1. *Kin.* gainst Israel, saying, 3 * Lord, they haue killed thy
19.10. Prophets, and digged downe thine altars: and I
am left alone, & they seeke my life? 4 But what
1. *Kin.* saith the answere of God to him? * I haue reser-
19.18. ued vnto my selfe seuen thousande men, which
haue not bowed the knee to Baal. 5 Euen
then at this present time is there a remnant ac-
cording to the election of grace. 6 And if
b of grace, it is no more of woorkes, or
else were grace no more grace: but if it be of
woorkes, it is no more grace: or else were
woorke no more worke. 7 What then? Is-

hath not obtained that hee ſought: but the election hath obtained it, and the reſt hath bene hardened, 8 According as it is written, * God hath giuen them the ſpirit of ſlumber, eyes that they ſhould not ſee, and eares that they ſhould not heare vnto this day. 9 And Dauid ſaith, *Let their table be made a ſnare, & a net, and a ſtumbling blocke, euen for a recompenſe vnto them, 10 Let their eyes be darkned that they ſee not, & bow downe their backe alwayes. 11 I demand thē, Haue they ſtumbled, that they ſhould fall? God forbid: but through their fall, ſaluation *commeth* vnto the Gentiles, to prouoke thē to follow them. 12 Wherfore if the fall of thē *be* the riches of the world, and the diminiſhing of them the riches of the Gentiles, how much more ſhall their abundance *be*? 13 For *in that* I ſpeake to you Gentiles, in ſo much as I am the Apoſtle of the Gentiles, I magnifie mine office, 14 *To ſee* if by any meanes I might prouoke them of my fleſh to follow them, and might ſaue ſome of them. 15 For if the caſting away of thē *be* the reconciling of the world, what *ſhall* the receiuing *be*, but life frō the dead? 16 For if the firſt fruits *be* holy, ſo *is* the whole lumpe: and if the root be holy, ſo *are* the branches. 17 * And though ſome of the branches be broken off, and thou being a wilde Oliue tree, was graft in for them, & made partaker of the root, & fatneſſe of the Oliue tree: 18 Boaſt not thy ſelfe againſt the branches: and if thou boaſt thy ſelfe, thou bea-

Iſai. 6.9,10

Pſal. 69.23.

Jere. 11.16.

reſt not the roote, but the roote thee. 19 Thou
wilt ſay then, The branches are broken off, that
I might be graft in. 20 Well: through vnbeliefe
they are broken off, and thou ſtandeſt by faith.
be not hie minded, but feare. 21 For if God ſpa-
red not the naturall branches, take heed, leaſt he
alſo ſpare not thee. 22 Beholde therefore the
bountifulneſſe & ſeuerity of God: toward them
which haue fallen, ſeuerity: but toward thee,
bountifulneſſe: if thou continue in his bountiful-
neſſe: or els thou ſhalt alſo be cut off. 23 And
they alſo, if they abide not ſtill in vnbeliefe, ſhall
be graffed in: for God is able to graffe them in a-
gaine. 24 For if thou waſt cut out of the Olive
tree, which was wilde by nature, & waſt graffed
contrary to nature in a right Olive tree, how
much more ſhall they that are by nature, be graf-
fed in their owne Olive tree? 25 For I would
not, brethren, that ye ſhould be ignorant of this
ſecret (leſt ye ſhould be arrogant in your ſelues)
that partly obſtinacy is come to Iſrael, vntill the
fulneſſe of the Gentiles be come in. 26 And ſo
Iſai. all Iſrael ſhalbe ſaued, as it is written, * There
59.20. ſhall come out of Sion, & ſhall turne
away the vngodlineſſe from Iacob. 27 And this
Iſai. is my couenant to them, * When I ſhall take
27.9. away their ſinnes. 28 As concerning the Gospel
they are enemies for your ſakes: but as touching
the election, they are beloued for the fathers
ſakes. 29 For the gifts and calling of God are
without repentance. 30 For euen as ye in time

past haue not beleeued God, yet haue now obteined mercy through vnbeliefe: 31 Euen so now haue they not beleeued by ỹ mercy *shewed* vnto you, that they also may obteine mercy. 32 For God hath shut vp all in vnbeliefe, that he might haue mercy on al. 33 O the depnesse of the riches, both of the wisdome, & knowledge of God! how vnsearchable are his iudgements, and his wayes past finding out! 34 * For who hath knowen the minde of the Lord? or who was his counseller? 35 Or who hath giuen vnto him first, and he shalbe recompensed? 35 For of him, and through him, and for him are all things: to him *be* glory for euer. Amen. *Iob 41 Isai. 40.13*

CHAP. 12. 1 *The right Christian life described.* I Beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye giue vp your bodies a liuing sacrifice, holy, acceptable vnto God, *which* is your reasonable seruing of God. 2 And fashion not your selues like vnto this world, but be ye chaeged by the renewing of your minde, that ye may * proue what the good, & acceptable & perfect wil of God is. 3 For I say through the grace that is giuen vnto me, to euery one that is among you, that no man presume to vnderstand aboue ỹ which is meet to vnderstand, but that ye vnderstand according to sobrietie, as God hath dealt to euery man the * measure of faith. 4 For as we haue many members in one body, and all members haue not one office, 5 So we being many are one body in Christ, and euery *Ephes. 5.17. 1.Thes. 4.3. 1.Cor. 12.12.*

1.Pet. 4.10. Mat. 6.2. Amos 5.15. Ephes. 4.2. 1.Pet. 3.8. Luke 18.1. Hebr. 13.2. Mat. 5.44. Prou. 3.7. Prou. 20.22. Hebr. 12.14 Eccle. 2.18. Deut 32.35. Prou. 25.22.

enery one, one anothers members. 6 * Seeing then that we haue gifts that are diuers, according to the grace that is giuen vnto vs, whether *we haue* propheſie, *let vs propheſie* according to the proportion of faith: 7 Or an office, *let vs wait* on the office: or he that teacheth, on teaching: 8 Or, he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that diſtributeth, *let him do it* * with ſimplicity: he that ruleth, with diligence: he that ſhewеth mercy, with chearefulneſſe. 9 *Let* loue *be* without diſſimulation. *Abhorre that which is euil, & cleaue vnto that which is good. 10 *Be affectioned to loue one another with brotherly loue. In giuing honor, go one before another, 11 Not ſlouthfull to do ſeruice: feruent in ſpirit: ſeruing the Lord: 12 Reioycing in hope, patient in tribulation, * continuing in prayer: 13 *Diſtributing vnto the neceſsities of ỹ Saints *giuing your ſelues to hoſpitality. 14 * Bleſſe them which perſecute you you: bleſſe, *I ſay, & curſe not. 15 Reioyce with them that reioyce, & weepe with them that weepe. 16 Be of like affection one towards an other: * be not thie minded: but make your ſelues equall to them of the lower ſort: be not wiſe in your ſelues. 17 *Recompenſe to no man euill for euill: procure things honeſt in the ſight of all men. 18 * If it be poſsible, as much as in you is, haue peace with all men. 19 Dearely beloued, *auenge not your ſelues, but giue place vnto wrath: for it is written, * Vengeance is mine: I will repay, ſaith the Lord. 20 * Therefore, if thine enemy hunger,

feed him: if he thirſt, giue him drinke: for in ſo doing, thou ſhalt heape coales of fire on his head. 21 Be not ouercome of euill, but ouercome euill with goodneſſe.

CHAP. 13. 1 *Obedience to Magiſtrates.*

LEt * euery ſoule be ſubiect vnto the higher powers: for there is no power but of God: and the powers that bee, are ordeined of God. *Titus 3.1. 1.pet. 2.13.*
2 Whoſoeuer therefore reſiſteth the power, reſiſteth the ordinance of God: and they that reſiſt, ſhall receiue to themſelues condemnation. 3 For Magiſtrates are not to be feared for good works, but for euill. Wilt thou then be without feare of the power? do well: ſo ſhalt thou haue praiſe of the ſame. 4 For he is the miniſter of God for thy wealth: but if thou do euill, feare: for he beareth not the ſword for nought: for he is the miniſter of God to take vengeance on him that doeth euill. 5 Wherefore ye muſt be ſubiect, not becauſe of wrath onely, but alſo for conſcience ſake. 6 For, for this cauſe ye pay alſo tribute: for they are Gods miniſters, applying themſelues for the ſame things. 7 * Giue to all men therefore their duety: tribute, to whom tribute: cuſtome, to whom cuſtome: feare, to whom feare: honour to whom honour. *Mat. 22.11.*
8 Owe nothing to any man, but to loue one another: for he that loueth another, hath fulfilled the Law. 9 For this, * Thou ſhalt not commit adulterie, Thou ſhalt not kill, Thou ſhalt not ſteale, Thou ſhalt not beare falſe witneſſe, *Exod. 20.14.*

neſſe, Thou ſhalt not couet: and if there be any other commandement, it is briefly comprehended in this ſaying, *namely* in this, * Thou ſhalt loue thy neighbour as thy ſelfe. 10 Loue doth not euill to his neighbour: therfore is loue the fulfilling of the Law. 11 And that, conſidering the ſeaſon, that *it is* now time that we ſhould ariſe from ſleepe: for now is our ſaluation neerer, then when we beleeued it. 12 The night is paſt, & the day is at hand: let vs therefore caſt away the works of darkeneſſe, & let vs put on the armour of light, 13 So that we walke honeſtly, as in the day: not in *gluttony & drunkenneſſe, neither in chambering and wantonneſſe, not in ſtrife & enuying: 14 * But put ye on the Lorde IESVS CHRIST, and take no thought for the fleſh, *to fulfill* the luſts of it.

Leuit. 19. 18. 1. Tim. 1. 8. Luke 21. 34. Gala. 5. 16. 1. Pet. 2. 11. Iames 4. 12.

CHA. 14. 1 *Of offence, to auoyd iudgement.*

HIm that is weake in the faith, receiue vnto you, *but* not for controuerſies of diſputations. 2 One beleeueth that he may eate of all things: and another which is weake, eateth herbes. 3 Let not him that eateth, deſpiſe him that eateth not: and let not him which eateth not, condemne him that eateth: for God hath receiued him. 4 * Who art thou that condemneſt another mans ſeruant? he ſtandeth or falleth to his owne maſter: yea, he ſhall be eſtabliſhed: for God is able to make him ſtand. 5 This man eſteemeth one day aboue another day, and another man counteth euery day alike: let euery man

man be fully perſwaded in his mind. 6 He that obſerueth the day, obſerueth it to the Lord: and he that obſerueth not the day, obſerueth it not to the Lord. He that eateth, eateth to the Lord: for he giueth God thanks: and he that eateth not, eateth not to ỹ Lord, & giueth God thanks. 7 For none of vs liueth to himſelfe, neither doth any die to himſelfe. 8 For whether we liue, we liue vnto the Lord: or whether we die, we die vnto the Lord: whether we liue therefore, or die, we are the Lords. 9 For Chriſt therefore died & roſe againe, & reuiued, that he might be Lord both of the dead and the quicke. 10 But why doeſt thou condemne thy brother? or why doeſt thou deſpiſe thy brother? * for we ſhall all appeare before the iudgement ſeat of Chriſt. 11 For it is written, * I liue, ſaith the Lord, and euery knee ſhall bow to me, & all tongues ſhall confeſſe vnto God. 12 So then euery one of vs ſhall giue accounts of himſelfe to God. 13 Let vs not therefore iudge one another any more: but vſe *your* iudgement rather in this, that no man put an occaſion to fall, or a ſtumbling blocke before his brother. 14 I know, and am perſwaded through the Lord Ieſus, that there is nothing vncleane of it ſelfe: but vnto him that iudgeth any thing to be vncleane, to him *it is* vncleane. 15 But if thy brother be grieued for the meat, then walkeſt thou not charitably: * deſtroy not him with thy meat, for whom Chriſt died. 16 Cauſe not your commoditie to be euil ſpoken

1. Cor. 1.10.
Iſai. 45.23. phil. 2.10.
1. Cor. 8.11.

ſpoken of. 17 For the kingdome of God is not meat nor drinke, but righteouſneſſe and peace, and ioy in the holy Ghoſt. 18 For whoſoeuer in theſe things ſerueth Chriſt, is acceptable vnto God, and is approoued of men. 19 Let vs then follow thoſe things which concerne peace and wherewith one may edifie another. 20 Deſtroy
Titus 1.15. not the worke of God for meats ſake: *all things indeed are pure: but *it is* euill for *ỹ* man which
2.Cor. 8.13. eateth with offence. 21 *It is* good neither to eat fleſh, nor to drinke wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother ſtumbleth, or is offended, or made weake. 22 Haſt thou faith? haue it with thy ſelfe before God: bleſſed *is* he that condemneth not himſelfe in that thing which he alloweth. 23 For he that doubteth, is condemned if he eate, becauſe *he eateth* not of faith: & whatſoeuer is not of faith, is ſinne.

CHAP. 15 1 *To beare with infirmities.*

WE which are ſtrong ought to beare the infirmities of the weake, and not to pleaſe our ſelues. 2 *Therefore* let euery man pleaſe his neighbour in that that is good to edification. 3 For Chriſt alſo would not pleaſe himſelfe, but
Pſal. 69.10. as it is written, * The rebukes of them which rebuke thee, fell on me. 4 For whatſoeuer things are written aforetime, are written for our learning, that we through patience, and comfort of the Scriptures might haue hope. 5 Now the
1.Cor. 1.10. God of patience and conſolation giue you to be *like minded one towards another, accord-

ding

ding to Christ Iesus, 6 That ye with one mind, and with one mouth may praise God, euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ. 7 Wherefore receiue ye one another, as Christ also receiued vs to the glory of God. 8 Now I say, that Iesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision, for the trueth of God, to confirme the promises made vnto the fathers. 9 And let the Gentiles praise God for his mercy, as it is written, * For this cause I will confesse thee among the Gentiles, and sing vnto thy Name. 10 And againe he saith, * Reioyce ye Gentiles, with his people. 11 And againe, * Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles, and laud ye him, all people together. 12 And againe Esaias saith, * There shalbe a roote of Iesse, & he that shall rise to reigne ouer the Gentiles, in him shal the Gentiles trust. 13 Now the God of hope fill you with all ioy, & peace in beleeuing, that ye may abound in hope through the power of the holy Ghost. 14 And I my selfe also am perswaded of you, my brethren, that ye also are full of goodnes & filled with all knowledge, and are able to admonish one another. 15 Neuertheless, brethren, I haue somewhat boldly after a sort written vnto you, as one that putteth you in remembrance, through the grace that is giuen me of God, 16 That I should be the minister of Iesus Christ toward the Gentiles, ministring the Gospel of God, that the offering vp of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the holy Ghost. 17 I haue therfore

Psal. 18.50.
Deut. 32.43.
Psal. 117.1.
Isay 11.10.

whereof

whereof I may reioyce in Christ Iesus, in those things which *pertaine* to God. 18 For I dare not speake of any thing, which Christ hath not wrought by me, *to make* the Gentiles obedient in word & deed, 19 With the power of signes & wonders by the power of the spirit of God: so that from Hierusalem and round about vnto Illyrium, I haue caused to abound the Gospel of Christ. 20 Yea, so I enforced my selfe to preach the Gospel, not where Christ was named, least I should haue built on another mans foundation.

Psal. 51.15. 21 But as it is written, * To whom he was not spoken of, they shall see *him*: & they that heard not, shall vnderstand *him*. 22 * Therefore also

Chap. 1.11. I haue bene oft let to come vnto you: 23 but

1.*The.* 2.17. now seeing I haue no more place in these quarters, & also haue * bene desirous many yeeres gone to come vnto you, 24 When I shall take my iourney into Spaine, I will come to you: for I trust to see you in my iourney, & to be brought on my way thitherward by you, after that I haue bene somewhat filled with your *company*. 25 But now go I to Hierusalem, to minister vnto the Saints. 26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia & Achaia, to make a certaine distribution vnto the poore Saints which are at Hierusalem. 27 For it hath pleased them, and their

2.*Cor.* 6.11. debters are they: * for if the Gentiles be made partakers of their spirituall things, their duety is also to minister vnto them in carnall things. 28 When I haue therefore performed this, and

haue ſaled them this fruite, I will paſſe by you into Spaine. 29 And I know when I come, that I ſhall come to you with abundance of the bleſſing of the Goſpel of Chriſt. 30 Alſo brethren, I beſeech you for our Lord Ieſus Chriſts ſake, and for the loue of the Spirit, that ye would ſtriue with me by prayers to God for me, 31 That I may be deliuered from them which are diſobedient in Iudea, and that my ſeruice which I haue to doe at Hieruſalem, may be accepted of the Saints, 32 That I may come vnto you with ioy by the will of God, and may with you be refreſhed. 33 Thus the God of peace *be* with you all, Amen.

CHAP. 16. 17. *To beware of Sectaries.*

I Commend vnto you Phebe our ſiſter, which is a ſeruant of ye Church of Cenchrea: 2 That ye receiue her in ye Lord, as it becõmeth Saints, and that ye aſsiſt her in what ſoeuer buſines ſhe needeth of your ayde: for ſhe hath giuen hoſpitalitie vnto many, & to me alſo. 3 Greete Priſcilla & Aquila my felow helpers in Chriſt Ieſus. *Acts 18.* 4 (Which haue for my life laide downe their owne necke. Vnto whom not I onely giue thankes, but alſo al the Churches of the Gentiles. 5 Likewiſe *greete* the Church that is in their houſe. Salute my beloued Epenetus, which is the firſt fruites of Achaia in Chriſt. 6 Greete Mary which beſtowed much labour on vs. 7 Salute Andronicus & Iunia my couſins and felowe priſoners, which are notable among ye Apoſtles

and were in Christ before me. 8 Greete Amplias my beloued in the Lord. 9 Salute Vrbanus our fellowe helper in Christ, & Stachys my beloued. 10 Salute Apelles approued in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus *houses*, 11 Salute Herodion my kinseman. Greete them which are of the *friendes* of Narcissus which are in the Lord. 12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, which *women* labour in the Lord. Salute the beloued Persis, which *woman* hath laboured much in the Lord. 13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine. 14 Greete Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Mercurius, and the brethren which are with them. 15 Salute Philologus, and Iulias, Nereas, and his sister, & Olympas, & al the Saints which are with them. 16 Sa-
1. Cor. 16.20 lute one another with an *holy kisse. The Churches of Christ salute you. 17 Now I beseech you
Rom. 16.12 brethren, marke them diligently which cause diuision and offences, contrary to the doctrine
Gal. 1.8. which ye haue learned, *& auoide them. 18 For
Phil. 3.19. they ‡ are such, serue not the Lord Iesus Christ,
Ioh. 8.44. but their owne bellies, & with faire speach and flattering, deceiue ‡ hearts of the simple. 19 For your obedience is come abroad among al: I am glad therefore of you: but yet I would haue you wise, vnto that which is good, and simple
Acts. 16.1, concerning euill. 20 The God of peace shall
Phil. 1.19. tread Satan vnder your feete shortly. The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you. 21 *Ti-
motheus my helper, and Lucius, and Iason, and

Sosipater

Sosipater my kinsemen, salute you. 22 I Tertius, which wrote out this Epistle, salute you in the Lord 23 Gaius mine hoste, and of the whole Church saluteth you. Erastus the steward of the city saluteth you, & Quartus a brother. 24 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you all, Amen. 25 * To him nowe that is of power to stablish you according to my Gospel & preaching of Iesus Christ, by * the reuelation of the mysterie, which was kept secret since the world began 26 (But nowe is opened, and published among al nations by the Scriptures of the Prophets, at the commaundement of the euerlasting God for the obedience of faith.) 27 To God, *I say*, onely wise, be prayse through Iesus Christ for euer, Amen.

Ephe. 3 20.
Ephe. 3.9.
col. 1. 26.
2. *tim.* 1.10.
titus 1.2.

¶ Written to the Romanes from Corinthus, *and sent* by Phebe, seruant of the Church which is at Cenchrea.

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF Paul to the Corinthians.

CHAP. I 12. *Diuisions reprehended.* 17 *He calleth them from pride to humilitie*

PAVL called *to be* an Apostle of IESVS CHRIST, through the will of God, and *our* brother Sosthenes, 2 Vnto the Church of God which is at Corinthus, to them that are * sanctified in Christ Iesus, * Saints by calling, * with all that call on the Name of

Acts. 15.9.
1. *thes.* 4 7.
Rom. 1.7.
2. *Tim.*

our Lord Iesus Christ, in euery place, both their *Lord*, and ours: 3 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ. 4 I thanke my God alwayes on your behalfe for the grace of God, which is giuen you in Iesus Christ, 5 That in all things ye are made rich in him, in all kinde of speach, & in all knowledge: 6 As ỹ testimonie of Iesus Christ hath bin confirmed in you: 7 So that ye are not
Phil. destitute of any gift, *waiting for the appearing
1.20. of our Lord Iesus Christ, 8 *Who shal also con-
Rom firme you vnto the ende, that ye may be blame-
2.11. lesse in the day of our Lord Iesus Christ. 9 *God
1 Thes. is faithfull, by whom ye are called vnto the fel-
5.23. lowship of his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord.
and 5. 10 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the Name of
23. our Lord Iesus Christ, ỹ ye all speake one thing,
1 Thes. and that there be no dissentions among you:
1.24. but be ye knit together in one minde, & in one iudgement. 11 For it hath bin declared vnto me, my brethren, of you by them that are of the house of Cloe, that there are cõtentions among you. 12 Now this I say, that euery one of you
Acts. sayeth, I am Pauls and I am *Apollos, and I am
18.24 Cephas, and I am Christes. 13 Is Christ diuided? was Paul crucified for you? either were ye bap-
Acts. tized into the Name of Paul? 14 I thanke God,
18.8. that I baptized none of you, but *Crispus, and Gaius, 15 Least any should say that I had baptized into mine owne name. 16 I baptized also the house of Stephanas: furthermore knowe I

not,

not, whether I baptized any other. 17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the Gospel, not with *wisedome of wordes, least the crosse of Christ should be made of none effect. 18 For that preaching of the crosse is to them that perish, foolishnes: but vnto vs, which are saued, it is the *power of God. 19 For it is written, *I wil destroy the wisdome of the wise, and wil cast away the vnderstanding of the prudent. 20 Where is ỹ wise? where is the Scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made the wisdome of this world foolishnes? 21 For seeing the world by wisdome knew not God in the wisdome of God, it pleased God by the foolishnes of preaching to saue them that beleeue: 22 *Seeing also that the Iewes require a signe, and the Grecians seeke after wisedome. 23 But we preach Christ crucified: vnto the Iewes, euen a stumbling blocke, and vnto the Grecians, foolishnes: 24 But vnto them which are called both of the Iewes & Grecians, *we preach* Christ, the power of God, & the wisdome of God. 25 For the foolishnes of God is wiser then men, and the weakenes of God is stronger then men. 26 For brethren, you see your calling, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mightie, not many noble *are called*. 27 But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world, to confound the wise, and God hath chosen the weake things of the world, to confound the mightie things. 28 And vile things of the world, and

*1. Cor. 2.13.
*Rom. 1.16.
*Isai. 29.14.
*Matt. 12.38

things which are despised, hath God chosen, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are, 29 That no flesh should reioyce in his presence. 30 But ye are of him in Christ Iesus, who of God is made vnto vs wisedome, and righteousnesse, & sanctification, and redemption, *Iere.* 31 That according as it is written, *He that reioyceth, let him reioyce in the Lord. *9.24.* *2.cor.* *10.17*

CHAP. 2. 1. *The platforme of Pauls preaching, &c.*

AND I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with *excellencie of words, or of wisedome, shewing vnto you the testimonie of God. *Chap.* *1.17.* 2 For I esteemed not to know any thing among you, saue Iesus Christ, & him crucified. 3 *And I *Acts.* *18.1.* was among you in weakenes, & in feare, and in much trembling. 4 Neither *stood* my word and *Chap.* my preaching in the *intising speache of mans *1.17.* wisdome, but in plaine euidence of the Spirit *2.pet.* and of power, 5 That your faith should not be *1.16.* in the wisdome of men, but in ȳ power of God. 6 And we speake wisedome among them that are perfect: not the wisdome of this world, neither of the princes of this world, which come to nought. 7 But we speake the wisdome of God in a mysterie, *euen* the hid *wisdome*, which God had determined before the world, vnto our glory. 8 Which none of the princes of this world hath knowen: for had they knowen it, they *Isai.* would not haue crucified the Lord of glory. *64.4.* 9 But as it is written, *The things which eye hath

not seene, neither eare hath heard, neither came into mans heart, *are*, which God hath prepared for them that loue him. 10 But God hath reuealed *them* vnto vs by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, ȳ deepe things of God. 11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, saue the spirit of a man, which is in him? euen so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God. 12 Nowe we haue receiued not the Spirit of the world, but the Spirit, which is of God, that we might know the things that are giuen to vs of God. 13 Which things also we speake, not in *the words which mans wisdome (*chap. 1. 17.
teacheth, but which the holy Ghost teacheth, 2. pet. 1. 16.
coparing spirituall things with spirituall things. 14 But the naturall man perceiueth not ȳ things of the Spirit of God: for they are fooliſhnes vnto him: neither can he know *them*, because they are spiritually discerned. 15 But he that is spirituall discerneth all things: yet he himselfe is iudged of no man. 16 *For who hath knowen the *Isai.*
minde of the Lord, that he might instruct him? 40. 13
But we haue the minde of Christ. *rom.* 11. 34.

CHAP. 3. 6 *The ministers office.*

AND I could not speake vnto you, brethren, as vnto spirituall men, but as vnto carnall, *euen* as vnto babes in Christ. 2 I gaue you milke to drinke, and not meate: for ye were not yet able *to beare it*, neither yet nowe are yee able. 3 For ye are yet carnall: for whereas *there is* among you enuying, and strife, and diuisions, are

ye not carnall, and walke as men? 4 For when one saith, I am Pauls, and another, I am Apollos, are ye not carnall? 5 Who is Paul then? & who is Apollos, but the ministers by whom ye beleeued, & as the Lord gaue to euery man? 6 I haue planted, Apollos watered, but God gaue the encrease. 7 So then, neither is he that planteth, any thing, neither he that watereth, but God that giueth the increase. 8 And he that planteth, and he that watreth, are one, *and euery man shal receiue his wages, according to his labour. 9 For we together are Gods labourers: ye are Gods husbandrie, and Gods building. 10 According to the grace of God giuen to me, as a skilfull master builder, I haue laide the foundation, & another buildeth thereon: but let euery man take heede howe he buildeth vpon it. 11 For other foundation can no man lay, then ỹ which is laid, which is Iesus Christ. 12 And if any man build on this foundation, gold, siluer, precious stones, timber, hay, or stubble, 13 Euery mans worke shalbe made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shalbe reueiled by the fire: and the fire shall trie euery mans worke of what sort it is. 14 If any mans worke, that he hath built vpon, abide, he shall receiue wages. 15 If any mans worke burne, he shall lose, but he shall be saued himself: neuertheless yet as it were by the fire. 16 *Know ye not that ye are the Temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? 17 If any man destroy the Temple of God, him

*Psal. 62.12 galat. 6.5.

*1. Chap. 3.19. 2. cor. 6.16.

him shall God destroy: for the Temple of God is holy, which ye are. 18 Let no man deceiue himselfe: If any man amõg you seeme to be wise in this world, let him be a foole, that he may be wise. 19 For the wisdome of this world is foolishnes with God: for it is written, *He catcheth *Iob 5.
ỹ wise in their owne craftines. 20 *And againe, 13.
The Lord knoweth ỹ the thoughts of the wise *Psal.
be vaine. 21 Therefore let no man reioyce in 44.12
men: for all things are yours, 22 Whether it be Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death: whether they be things present, or things to come, *euen* all are yours, 23 And ye Christes, and Christ Gods.

CHAP. 4. 1. *The true Apostles described.*

LEt a man so thinke of vs, as of the ministers of Christ, & disposers of the secrets of God: 2 And as for the rest, it is required of the dispossers, that euery man be found faithful. 3 As touching me, I passe very litle to be iudged of you, or of mans iudgement: no, I iudge not mine owne selfe. 4 For I know nothing by my selfe, yet am I not thereby iustified but he that iudgeth me, is the Lord. 5 Therefore *iudge nothing *Mat.
before the time, vntill the Lord come, who will 7.1.
lighten things that are hid in darkenesse, & make the counsels of the hearts manifest: and then shall euery man haue prayse of God. 6 Nowe these things, brethren, I haue figuratiuely applied vnto mine owne selfe and Apollos, for your sakes, that ye might learne by vs, that no man

presume

presume above that which is written, that ye swell not against another for any mans cause. 7 For who separateth thee? & what hast thou that thou hast not receiued? if thou hast receiued it, why reioycest thou, as though thou hadst not receiued it? 8 Nowe ye are full: nowe ye are made rich: ye reigne as Kings without vs, and would to God ye did reigne, that we also might reigne with you. 9 For I thinke that God hath set foorth vs the last Apostles, as men appointed to death: for we are made a gasing stocke vnto the world, & to the Angels, and to men. 10 We *are* fooles for Christs sake, and ye *are* wise in Christ: we *are* weake, and ye are strong: ye *are* honourable, and we *are* despised. 11 Vnto this houre we both hunger & thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, & haue no certaine
Acts. dwelling place, 12 And labour, working with
20.34 our owne handes: we are reuiled, and yet we
1.*thes.* blesse: we are persecuted, and suffer it: 13 We
2.9. are euill spoken of, & we pray: we are made as
2.*thes.* the filth of the world, the offkowring of all
3.8. things, vnto this time. 14 I write not these
Matt. things to shame you, but as my beloued children
5.44. I admonish you. 15 For though ye haue ten
Luke thousand instructours in Christ, yet haue ye not
23.34 many fathers: for in Christ Iesus I haue begot-
Actes ten you through the Gospel. 16 Wherefore
7.60. I pray you, be ye followers of me. 17 For this cause haue I sent vnto you Timotheus, which is my beloued sonne, and faithfull in the Lord,

which shall put you in remembrance of my wayes in Christ, as I teach euery where in euery Church. 18 Some are puffed vp, as though I would not come to you. 19 But I will come to you shortly, *If the Lord will, and wil knowe, not the wordes of them which are puffed vp, but the power. 20 For the kingdome of God is not in word, but in power 21 What will ye? shall I come vnto you with a rod, or in loue, and in the spirit of meekenesse?

*Acts. 19. 21. Iames 4. 15.

CHAP. 5. 1. *Of punishing incest.*

IT is heard certainely *that there is* fornication among you, & such fornication as is not once named among the Gentiles, that one should haue his fathers wife. 2 And ye are puffed vp, and haue not rather sorowed, that he which hath done this deede, might be put from among you. 3 For I verely as absent in body, but present in spirite, haue determined already, as though I were present, that he that hath thus done this thing, 4 When ye are gathered together, & my spirit, in the name of our Lord Iesus Christ, that such one, *I say*, by the power of our Lord Christ, 5 Be deliuered vnto Satan, for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saued in the day of the Lord Iesus. 6 Your reioycing is not good. Know ye not that a litle leauen leaueneth the whole lumpe? 7 Purge out therefore the olde leauen, that ye may be a newe lumpe, as ye are vnleauened: for Christ our Passeouer is sacrificed for vs. 8 Therefore let vs keepe the

feast,

feast, not with old leauen, neither in the leauen of maliciousnesse, and wickednesse: but with the vnleauened bread of sincerities and truth. 9 I wrote vnto you an Epistle, that yee should not company together with fornicators, 10 And not altogether with the fornicatours of this worlde, or with the couetous, or with extortioners, or with idolaters: for then ye must goe out of this world. 11 But now I haue written vnto you, that yee company not together: if any that is called a brother, be a fornicatour, or couetous, or an idolater, or a rayler, or a drunkard, or an extortioner, with such one eate not. 12 For what haue I to do, to iudge them also which are without? do ye not iudge them which are within? 13 But God iudgeth them that are without. Put away therefore from among your selues that wicked man.

CHAP. 6. 1. *Of going to the Lawe.*

DAre any of you, hauing businesse against another, be iudged vnder the vniust, and not vnder the Saintes? 2 Doe ye not knowe, that the Saints shall iudge the world? If the world then shalbe iudged by you, are ye vnworthy to iudge the smallest matters? 3 Know ye not that we shal iudge the Angels? howe much more, things that pertaine to this life? 4 If then yee haue iudgements of things pertaining to this life, set vp them which are least esteemed in ỹ Church. 5 I speake it to your shame. Is it so that there is not a wise man among you? no not one that can iudge betweene

tweene his brethren? 6 But a brother goeth to
lawe with a brother, and that vnder the infidels.
7 Nowe therefore there is altogether infirmitie
in you, in that ye goe to law one with another:
* why rather suffer ye not wrong? why rather *Matt.*
sustaine ye not harme? 8 *Nay, ye your selues do 5 39.
wrong, and do harme, & that to your brethren. *Luke*
9 Know ye not that the vnrighteous shal not in- 6.29.
herit the kingdom of God? Be not deceiued: nei- *rom.*
ther fornicatours, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, 12.19.
nor wātons, nor buggerers, 10 Nor theeues, nor 2 *The.*
couetous, nor drūkards, nor railers, nor extorti- 4.6.
oners shal inherit the kingdome of God. 11 And
such * were some of you: but ye are washed, but *Titus*
ye are sanctified, but ye are iustified in the Name 3.3.
of the Lorde Iesus, and by the Spirit of our God.
12 * All things are lawful vnto me: but al things *Chap.*
are not profitable. I may doe all things, but I wil 10.23.
not bee brought vnder the power of any thing.
13 Meates *are ordeined* for the belly and the bel-
ly for the meates: but God shall destroy both
it, and them. Nowe the body is not for fornicati-
on, but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body.
14 And God hath also raysed vp the Lorde, and
* shal raise vs vp by his power. 15 Know ye not, *Rom.*
that your bodies are the members of Christ? shal 6.5.
I then take the members of Christ, and make
them the members of an harlot? God forbid.
16 Doe ye not knowe, that hee which coupleth
himselfe with an harlot, is one body? * for two, *Gene.*
saith he, shal be one flesh. 17 But he that is ioy- 2.24.

ned

ned vnto the Lord, is one ſpirit. 18 Flee fornication: euery ſinne that a man doeth, is without the body: but hee that committeth fornication, ſinneth againſt his own body. 19 Know ye not, that your body is the *Temple of the holy Ghoſt, which is in you, whom ye haue of God? and ye are not your owne. 20 *For ye are bought for a price: therefore glorifie God in your body, and in your ſpirit: for they are Gods.

Chap. 3.17.

Chap. 7.23.

CHAP. 7. 1 *Of marriage and virginitie.*

NOwe concerning the things whereof ye wrote vnto mee, *it were* good for a man not to touch a woman. 2 Neuertheleſſe, to auoyde fornication, let euery man haue his wife, and let euery woman haue her owne husband. 3 *Let the husband giue vnto the wife due beneuolence, and likewiſe alſo the wife vnto the husband. 4 The wife hath not the power of her owne body, but the husband: and likewiſe alſo the husband hath not the power of his owne body, but the wife. 5 Defraud not one another except *it be* with conſent for a time, that ye may giue your ſelues to faſting & prayer, and againe come together, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinencie. 6 But I ſpeake this by permiſſion, not by commandement. 7 For I would that al men were euen as I my ſelfe *am*. but euery man hath his proper gift of God, one after this maner, and another after that. 8 Therefore I ſay vnto the vnmarried, & vnto the widowes, It is good for them if they abide euen as I *doe*.

1. Pet. 3.7.

9 But

9 But if they cannot abſtaine, let them marrie: for it is better to marry then to burne. 10 *And vnto the married I commaund, not I, but the Lord, let not the wife depart from her husbande. 11 But and if ſhe depart, let her remaine vnmarried, or be reconciled vnto her husband, and let not the husband put away *his* wife. 12 But to the remnant I ſpeake, *and* not the Lorde, If any brother haue a wife that beleeueth not, if ſhe be content to dwell with him, let him not forſake her. 13 And the woman which had an husband that beleeueth not, if hee bee content to dwell with her, let her not forſake him. 14 For the vnbeleeuing husband is ſanctified to the wife, and the vnbeleeuing wife is ſanctified to the husband, elſe were your children vncleane: but now are they holy. 15 But if the vnbeleeuing depart, let them depart: a brother or a ſiſter is not in ſubiection in ſuch things: but God hath called vs in peace. 16 For what knoweſt thou, O wife, whether thou ſhalt ſaue thine husband? Or what knoweſt thou, O man, whether thou ſhalt ſaue thy wife? 17 But as God hath diſtributed to euery man, as the Lord hath called euery one, ſo let him walke: and ſo ordaine I in al Churches. 18 Is any man called being circumciſed? let him not gather *his vncircumciſion:* is any called vncircumciſed? let him not be circumciſed. 19 Circumciſion is nothing, and vncircumciſion is nothing, but the keeping of the commaundements of God. 20 *Let euery man abide in the ſame vocation

*Matt. 5.32. & 19. 9. mar 10. 11, 12. luke 16. 18.

*2. Tim 6. 1.

vocation wherein hee was called. 21 Art thou called *being* a seruant? care not for it: but if thou mayest be free, vse it rather. 22 For he that is called in the Lord, *being* a seruant, is the Lords freeman: likewise also hee that is called *being* free, is Christes seruaunt. 23 * Yee are bought with a price: be not the seruants of men. 24 Brethren, let euery man, wherin he was called, therein abide with God. 25 Nowe concerning virgines, I haue no commandement of the Lord: but I giue mine aduice, as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lorde to bee faithfull. 26 I suppose then this to bee good for the present necessitie: *I meane* that it is good for a man so to be. 27 Art thou bound vnto a wife? seeke not to be loosed: art thou loosed from a wife? seeke not a wife. 28 But if thou takest a wife, thou sinnest not: and if a virgine marry, she sinneth not: nenertheless, such shal haue trouble in the flesh: but I spare you. 29 And this I say brethren, because the time is short, hereafter that both they which haue wiues, bee as though they had none: 30 And they that weepe, as though they wept not: and they that reioyce, as though they reioyced not: and they that buy, as though they possessed not: 31 And they that vse this world, as though they vsed it not: for the fashion of this worlde goeth away. 32 And I would haue you without care. The vnmarried careth for the things of the Lorde, how hee may please the Lorde. 33 But hee that is married careth for the

Chap. 6. 20 1. pet. 2. 18, 19.

this

things of the worlde, howe hee may pleaſe his wife. 34 There is difference alſo betweene a virgin and a wife: the vnmarried woman careth for the things of the Lorde, that ſhe may be holy both in body and ſpirite: but ſhe that is married, careth for the things of the worlde, howe ſhe may pleaſe her husband. 35 And this I ſpeake for your owne commoditie, not to tangle you in a ſnare, but that yee *follow* that, which is honeſt, and that yee may cleaue faſt vnto the Lorde without ſeparation. 36 But if any man thinke that it is vncomely for his virgine, if ſhee paſſe the flowre of *her* age, and needs ſo require, let him doe what he wil, he ſinneth not: let them be married. 37 Neuertheleſſe, hee that ſtandeth firme in his heart, that he hath no neede, but hee hath power ouer his owne will, and hath ſo decreed in his heart, that he will keepe his virgin, he doeth well. 38 So then he that giueth her to marriage, doeth well: but he that giueth her not to marriage, doth better. 39 The wife is bound by the Lawe, as long as her husband *liueth: but if her husband be dead, ſhe is at libertie to marrie with whom ſhe will, only in the Lord. 40 But ſhe is more bleſſed, if ſhe ſo abide, in my iudgement: * and I thinke that I haue alſo the Spirit of God.

Rom. 7.1.

1. Theſſ. 4.8.

CHAP. 8. 8. *Abuſe of Chriſtian libertie.*

AND as touching things ſacrificed vnto idols, wee knowe that wee all haue knowledge: knowledge puffeth vp, but loue edifieth. 2 Now,

If any man thinke that hee knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know. 3 But if any man loue God, the same is known of him. 4 Concerning therefore the eating of things sacrificed vnto idoles, wee knowe that a idole *is* nothing in the worlde, and that there is none other God but one. 5 For though there be that are called gods, whether in heauen, or in earth, (as there be many gods, and many lords) 6 Yet vnto vs there *is* but one God, which is that Father, of whome are all things, and we in him: * and one Lorde Iesus Christ, by whom are all things, & we by him. 7 But euery man hath not that knowledge: for many hauing conscience of the idole, vntil this houre, eate as a thing sacrificed vnto the idole, and so their conscience being weake, *is* defiled. 8 But meate maketh not vs acceptable to God: for neither if wee eate, haue we the more: neither if wee eate not, haue we the lesse. 9 But take heed, lest by any meanes this power of yours bee an occasion of falling to them that are weake. 10 For if any man see thee which hast knowledge, sit at table in the idoles Temple, shall not the conscience of him which is weake, be boldned to eate those things which are sacrificed to idoles? 11 And through thy knowledge shal *the weake brother perish for whom Christ died. 12 Now when ye sinne so against the brethren, and wound their weake conscience, ye sinne against Christ. 13 *Wherefore if meate offende my brother, I will eate no flesh

*Chap. 12.3. *Iohn 13.13.

*Rom. 14.15

*Rom. 14.21.

flesh while the worlde standeth, that I may not offend my brother.

CHAP. 9. 1. *Pauls moderation of (christian liberti.*

AM I not an Apostle? am I not free? haue I not seene Iesus Christ our Lord? are ye not my worke in the Lorde? 2 If I bee not an Apostle vnto other, yet doubtlesse I am vnto you: for ye are the seale of mine Apostleship in the Lord. 3 My defence to them that examine me, is this, 4 Haue wee not power to eate and to drinke? 5 Or haue we not power to leade about a wife being a sister, as well as the rest of the Apostles, and as the brethren of the Lorde and Cephas? 6 Or I onely and Barnabas, haue not we power not to woorke? 7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his owne cost? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruite thereof? or who feedeth a flocke, and eateth not of the milke of the flocke? 8 Say I these things according to man? saith not the Lawe the same also? 9 For it is written in the Lawe of Moses, *Thou shalt not muzzell the mouth of the oxe, that treadeth out the corne: doeth God take care for oxen? *Exod. 32.6.* 10 Either saith hee it not altogether for our sakes? For our sakes no doubt it is written, that he which eareth, should eare in hope, and that he that threshеth in hope, should bee partaker of his hope. 11 *If we haue sowen vnto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we reape your carnall things? *Rom. 15.27.* 12 If others with you be partakers

kers of *this* power, are not we rather? neuerthe-
leſſe, we haue not vſed this power: but ſuffer all
things, that we ſhould not hinder the Goſpel of
Chriſt. 13 Doe ye not know e, that they which
Deut 18.1. miniſter about the * holy things, eate of the
things of the Temple? and they which wait at
the altar, are partakers with the altar? 14 Euen
ſo hath the Lorde ordeined, that they which
preache the Goſpel, ſhould liue of the Goſpel.
15 But I haue vſed none of theſe things: neither
wrote theſe things, that it ſhould be ſo done vn-
to me: for it were better for me to die, then that
any man ſhoulde make my reioycing vaine.
16 For though I preach the Goſpel, I haue no-
thing to reioyce of: for neceſsitie is layde vpon
me, and woe is vnto me, if I preach not the Go-
pel. 17 For if I do it willingly, I haue a reward:
but if I doe it against my will, *notwithſtanding*
the diſpenſation is cõmitted vnto me. 18 What
is my reward then? verely that when I preache
the Goſpel, I make the Goſpel of Chriſt free, that
I abuſe not mine authoritie in the Goſpel. 19 For
though I bee free from all men, yet haue I made
my ſelfe ſeruant vnto al men, that I might winne
Acts. the moe. 20 * And vnto the Iewes, I become as
16 5. a Iew, that I may winne the Iewes: to them that
Galat. are vnder the Lawe, as *though I were* vnder the
2.3. Lawe, that I may winne them that are vnder the
Lawe: 21 To them that are without Lawe, as
though I were without Lawe, (when I am not
without Lawe as pertayning to God, but am

to the Lawe through Christ) that I may winne them that are without Lawe: 22 To the weake I become as weake, that I may winne the weake: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all meanes saue some. 23 And this I doe for the Gospels sake, that I might bee partaker thereof with you. 24 Knowe ye not, that they which runne in a race, runne all, yet one receiueth the price? so runne that ye may obtaine. 25 And euery man that prooueth masteries, abstaineth from all things: and they do it to obtaine a corruptible crowne: but we for an vncorruptible. 26 I therefore so runne, not as vncertainely: so fight I, not as one that beateth the ayre. 27 But I beate downe my body, and bring it into subiection, least by any meanes after that I haue preached to other, I my selfe shoulde be reprooued.

CHAP. 10. 1. *The Iewes are our examples.*

MOreouer, brethren, I woulde not that yee shoulde bee ignorant, that all our fathers were vnder *that cloude, and all passed through that sea, 2 And were al baptized vnto Moses, in that cloud, and in that sea, 3 *And did al eate the same spiritual meate. 4 *And did all drinke the same spiritual drinke (for they dranke of the spirituall Rocke that followed them: and the Rocke was Christ) 5 But with many of them God was not pleased: for they were ouerthrowen in the wildernes. 6 Now these things are our ensamples, to the intent that we should

Exod 13.21.
Exod. 16.15
Exod. 17.6.

Num. 11.4. not luſt after euill things *as they luſted. 7 Neither be ye idolaters as *were* ſome of them, as it is *Exod.* 32.6. written, *The people ſate downe to eate and drinke, & roſe vp to play, 8 Neither let vs commit fornication, as ſome of them committed fornication, and fell in one * day three & twenty *Num.* 25.9. thouſand. 9 Neither let vs tempt Chriſt, as ſome *Num.* 21.6. of them alſo tempted *him*, & * were deſtroyed of ſerpents. 10 Neither murmure ye, as ſome of *Num.* 14.37. them alſo murmured, * and were deſtroyed of the deſtroyer. 11 Now all theſe things came *in fig.* vnto them for enſamples, & were written to admoniſh vs, vpon whom the ends of the world are come. 12 Wherefore, let him that thinketh he ſtandeth, take heed leaſt he fall. 13 There hath no tentation taken you, but ſuch as appertaineth to man: and God is faithfull, which will not ſuffer you to be tempted aboue that you be able, but will euen giue the iſſue with the tentation, that ye may be able to beare it. 14 Wherefore my beloued, flee frō idolatry. 15 I ſpeake as vnto them which haue vnderſtanding: iudge ye what I ſay. 16 The cup of bleſſing which we bleſſe, is it not the communion of the blood of Chriſt? The bread which we breake, is it not the communion of the body of Chriſt? 17 For we that are many, are one bread and one body, becauſe we all are partakers of one bread. 18 Beholde Iſrael, *which is* after ye fleſh: are not they which eate of the ſacrifices, partakers of the altar? 19 What ſay I then? that the idole is any thing?

thing: or that which is sacrificed to idoles, is any thing? 20 *Nay*, but that these things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to deuils, & not vnto God: and I would not that ye should haue fellowshp with the deuils. 21 Ye cannot drinke the cup of the Lord, & the cup of deuils. Ye cannot be partaker of the Lords table, and of the table of deuils. 22 Do we prouoke ỹ Lord to anger? are we stronger then he? 23 *All things are lawfull for me, but all things are not expedient; all things are lawfull for me, but all things edifie not. 24 Let no man seeke his owne, but euery man anothers wealth. 25 Whatsoeuer is solde in the shambles, eate ye, & aske no question for conscience sake. 26 * For the earth is the Lords, and all that therein is. 27 If any of them which beleeue not, call you *to a feast*, and if ye will go, whatsoeuer is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake. 28 But if any man say vnto you, This is sacrificed vnto idols, eate not, because of him that shewed it, and for the conscience (for the earth is the Lords, & all that therein is,) 29 And the conscience, I say, not thine but of that other: for why should my liberty be condemned of another mans conscience? 30 For if I through God's benefit be partaker, why am I euill spoken of, for that wherefore I giue thanks? 31 * Whether therefore ye eat, or drinke, or whatsoeuer ye do, do all to the glory of God. 32 Giue none offence, neither to the Iewes, nor to the Grecians, nor to ỹ Church

Chap. 6.12.

Psal. 24.1.

Colos. 3.17.

of God: 33 Euen as I please al men in al things, not seeking mine owne profit, but *the profit* of many, that they might be saued.

CHAP. 11. 2 *Of reuerent behauiour in the Church.*

2 Thes. 3.9. BE ye followers of me, euen as I am of Christ. 2 Now brethren, I commend you, that ye remember all my things, & keepe the ordinances, as I deliuered them to you. 3 But I will that ye Ephes. 5.23. know, that Christ is the head of euery man: and the man is the womans head: and God is Christs head. 4 Euery man praying or prophesying hauing *any thing* on *his* head, dishonoureth his head. 5 But euery woman that prayeth or prophesieth bareheaded, dishonoureth her head: for it is euen one very thing, as though she were shauen. 6 Therefore if the woman be not couered, let her also be shorne: and if it be shame for a woman to be shorne or shauen, let her be couered. 7 For a man ought not to couer *his* Gene. 1.26. & 5.1 & 9.6 head: forasmuch as he is the * image & glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man. 8 For the man is not of the woman, but the woman of the man. 9 *For the man was not created for the womans sake: but the woman for the man's sake. Gene. 2.22. 10 Therefore ought the woman to haue power on *her* head, because of the Angels. 11 Nevertheless neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord. 12 For as the woman is of the man, so is the man also by the woman: but all things

are of God. 13 Iudge in your selues, is it comely that a woman pray vnto God vncouered? 14 Doeth not nature it selfe teach you, that if a man haue long haire it is a shame vnto him? 15 But if a woman haue long haire, it is a praise vnto her: for her haire is giuen her for a couering. 16 But if any man lust to be contentious, we haue no such custome, neither the Churches of God. 17 Now in this that I declare, I praise *you* not, that ye come together, not with profit, but with hurt. 18 For first of all, when ye come together in the Church, I heare that there are dissentions among you: and I beleeue it *to be true* in some part. 19 For there must be heresies euen among you, y they which are approued among you, might be knowen. 20 When ye come together therefore into one place, *this* is not to eat the Lords supper. 21 For euery man when they should eat, taketh his owne supper afore, and one is hungry & another is drunken. 22 Haue ye not houses to eat & to drinke in? despise ye the Church of God, and shame them that haue not? what shall I say to you? shall I praise you in this? I praise you not. 23 For I haue receiued of the Lord that which I also haue deliuered vnto you, *to wit*, That the Lord Iesus in the night that he was betrayed, tooke bread: 24 *And when he had giuen thanks, he brake it, & said, Take, eat, this is my body, which is broken for you: this do ye in remembrance of me. 25 After the same maner also he tooke the cup, when

Mat. 26. 26. mar. 14. 22.

when he had supped, saying, This cup is ỹ New testament in my blood: this doe as oft as ye drinke it, in remembrance of me. 26 For as often as ye shall eat this bread, and drinke this cuppe, ye shew the Lords death till he come. 27 Wherefore, whosoeuer shall eat this bread, & drinke the cup of the Lord vnworthily, shall be guilty of the body and bloud of the Lord. Cor. 28 * Let euery man therfore examine himselfe, 5. and so let him eat of this bread, & drinke of this cup. 29 For he that eateth & drinketh vnworthily, eateth and drinketh his owne damnation, *because* he discerneth not ỹ Lords body. 30 For this cause many are weake, & sicke among you, & many sleepe. 31 For if we would iudge our selues, we should not be iudged. 32 But when we are iudged, we are chastened of the Lord, because we should not be condemned w the world. 33 Wherefore my brethren, when ye come together to eat, tary one for another. 34 And if any man be hungry, let him eat at home, that ye come not together vnto condemnation. Other things will I set in order when I come.

CHAP. 12. 1 *Of spirituall gifts.*

NOw concerning spirituall gifts, brethren, I would not haue you ignorant. 2 Ye know that ye were Gentiles, and were caried 1. away vnto the dumbe idoles, as yee were led. 9. 3 Wherefore, I declare vnto you, that no * man 10. speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Iesus execrable: also no man can say that Iesus is ỹ Lord, but

but by the holy Ghoſt. 4 Now there are diuerſities of gifts, but the ſame Spirit. 5 And there are diuerſities of adminiſtrations, but the ſame Lord. 6 And there are diuerſities of operations, but God is the ſame which worketh all in all. 7 But the manifeſtation of the Spirit is giuen to euery man, to profit withall. 8 For to one is giuen by the Spirit the word of wiſdome: and to another the word of knowledge, by the ſame Spirit. 9 And to another is giuen faith, by the ſame Spirit: and to another the gifts of healing, by the ſame Spirit: 10 And to another the operations of great works: and to another, propheſie: and to another, the diſcerning of ſpirits: and to another, diuerſities of tongues: and to another, the interpretation of tongues. 11 And all theſe thiugs worketh one, and the ſelfe ſame Spirit, diſtributing to euery man ſeuerally as he will. 12 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of the body, which is one, though they be many, yet are but one body: euen ſo is Chriſt. 13 For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Iewes, or Grecians, whether we be bond, or free, & haue bene all made to drinke into one Spirit. 14 For the body alſo is not one member but many. 15 If the foot would ſay, Becauſe I am not the hand, I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the body? 16 And if the eare would ſay, Becauſe I am not the eye, I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the body?

Rom. 12.3. Ephes. 4.6.

17 If

17 If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? if the whole were hearing, where were the smelling? 18 But now hath God disposed the members euery one of them in the body at his owne pleasure. 19 For if they were all one member, where were the body? 20 But now are there many members yet but one body. 21 And the eye can not say vnto the hand, I haue no need of thee: nor the head againe to the feet, I haue no need of you. 22 Yea, much rather those members of the body, which seeme to be more feeble, are necessary. 23 And vpon those members of the body, which we thinke most vnhoneſt, put we more honeſtie on: and our vncomely parts haue more comelineſſe on. 24 For our comely parts need it not: but God hath tempered the body together, and hath giuen the more honor to that part which lacked, 25 Leſt there ſhould be any diuiſion in the body: but that the members ſhould haue the ſame care one for another. 26 Therfore if one member ſuffer, all ſuffer with it: if one member be had in honour, all the members reioyce with it. 27 Now ye are the body of Chriſt, and members for your part. 28 * And God hath ordei- *Geſ. I.*
ned ſome in the Church: firſt Apoſtles, ſecondly Prophets, thirdly Teachers, then them that do miracles: after that, the gifts of healing, helpers, gouernors, diuerſity of tongues. 29 Are all Apoſtles? are all Prophets? are all teachers? 30 Are all doers of miracles? haue all the gifts

of

of healing? do all speake with tongues? do all interpret? 31 But desire you the best gifts, and I will yet shew you a more excellent way.

CHAP. 13. 1 *He sheweth that there are no gifts so excellent, which in Gods sight are not corrupt, if Charitie be away.*

THough I speake with the tongues of men and Angels, & haue not loue, I am as sounding brasse, or a tinkling cymball. 2 And though I had the *gift* of prophesie, and knew all secrets & all knowledge, yea, if I had all faith, so that I could remoue mountaines, and had not loue, I were nothing. 3 And though I feed the poore with all my goods, and though I giue my body, that I be burned, and haue not loue, it profiteth me nothing. 4 Loue suffereth long: it is bountifull: loue enuieth not: loue doeth not boast it selfe: it is not puffed vp: 5 It doeth no vncomely thing: it seeketh not her owne things: it is not prouoked to anger: it thinketh not euill: 6 It reioyceth not in iniquity, but reioyceth in the truth: 7 It suffereth all things: it beleeueth all things: it hopeth all things: it endureth all things. 8 Loue doeth neuer fall away, though that prophesyings be abolished, or the tongues cease, or knowledge vanish away. 9 For we know in part, and we prophesie in part. 10 But whē that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part, shall be abolished. 11 When I was a childe, I spake as a childe, I vnderstood as a childe, I thought as a childe: but

Mat. 17. 20

but when I became a man, I put away childish
things. 12 For now wee ſee thorow a glaſſe
darkly: but then *ſhall we ſee* face to face. Now
I know in part: but then ſhall I know euen as
I am knowen. 13 And now abideth faith, hope
and loue, *euen* theſe three: but the chiefeſt of
theſe is loue.

CHAP. 14. 1 *Of tongues and interpreting.*
34 *Women forbidden to ſpeake in the Congregation.*

FOllow after loue, and couet ſpirituall *gifts*,
& rather that ye may propheſie. 2 For he
that ſpeaketh a *ſtrange* tongue, ſpeaketh not vn-
to men, but vnto God: for no man heareth *him*,
howbeit in the ſpirit he ſpeaketh ſecret things.
3 But he that propheſieth, ſpeaketh vnto men to
edifying, and to exhortation, and to comfort.
4 He that ſpeaketh *ſtrange* language, edifieth
himſelfe: but he that propheſieth, edifieth the
Church. 5 I would that ye all ſpake *ſtrange*
languages, but rather that ye propheſied: for
greater is he that propheſieth, then he that ſpea-
keth *diuers* tongues, except he expound it, that
the Church may receiue edification. 6 And
now, brethren, if I come vnto you ſpeaking *di-
uers* tongues, what ſhall I profit you, except I
ſpeake to you, either by reuelatiõ, or by know-
ledge, or by propheſying, or by doctrine?
7 Moreouer things without life which giue a
ſound, whether *is be* a pipe or an harpe, except
they make a diſtinction in the ſounds, how ſhall

it

be knowen what is piped or harped? 8 And also, if the trumpet giue an vncertaine sound, who shall prepare himselfe to battell? 9 So likewise you by the tongue, except ye vtter words that haue signification, how shall it be vnderstood what is spoken? for ye shall speake in the ayre 10 There are so many kindes of voyces (as it commeth to passe) in the world, and none of them is dumbe. 11 Except I know then the power of the voyce, I shalbe vnto him that speaketh a Barbarian, and he that speaketh, shalbe a Barbarian vnto me. 12 Euen so, forasmuch as ye couet spirituall *gifts*, seeke that ye may excell vnto the edifying of the Church. 13 Wherefore, let him that speaketh a *strange* tongue, pray, that he may interpret. 14 For if I pray in a *strange* tongue, my spirit preyeth: but mine vnderstanding is without fruite. 15 What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, but I will pray with the vnderstanding also: I will sing with the spirit, but I will sing with the vnderstanding also. 16 Else, when thou blessest with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the roome of the vnlearned, say, Amen, at thy giuing of thankes, seeing hee knoweth not what thou sayest? 17 For thou verely giuest thanks well, but the other is not edified. 18 I thanke my God, I speake langnages more then ye all. 19 Yet I had rather in the Church to speake fiue wordes with mine vnderstanding, that I might also instruct others, then tenne thousand

wordes in a *strange* tongue. 20 Brethren, be
Matt. * not children in vnderſtanding, but as concer-
18.3. ning malicioufneſſe be children, but in vnder-
ſtanding be of a ripe age. 21 In the Law it is
Iſay written, * By men of other tongues, & by other
28.11. languages will I ſpeake vnto this people: yet
ſo ſhall they not heare me, ſayeth the Lord.
22 Wherefore *ſtrange* tongues are for a ſigne,
not to them that beleeue, but to them that be-
leeue not: but propheſying *ſerueth* not for the
that beleeue not, but for them which beleeue.
23 If therefore when the whole Church is come
together in one, and all ſpeake *ſtrange* tongues,
there come in they that are vnlearned, or they
which beleeue not, will they not ſay, that ye are
out of your wits? 24 But if all propheſie, and
there come in one that beleeueth not, or one vn-
learned, he is rebuked of all men, and is iudged
of all. 25 And ſo are the ſecrets of his heart
made manifeſt, and ſo he will fall downe on his
face & worſhip God, and ſay plainly that God
is in you in deed. 26 What is to be *done* then,
brethren? when ye come together, *according* as
euery one of you hath a Pſalme, *or* hath do-
ctrine, *or* hath a tongue, *or* hath reuelation, *or*
hath interpretation, let all things be done vnto
edifying. 27 If any man ſpeake a *ſtrange*
tongue, *let it be* by two, or at the moſt, by three,
and that by courſe, & let one interpret. 28 But
if there be no interpreter, let him keepe ſilence
in the Church, *which ſpeaketh languages*, and
let

him speake to himselfe, and to God. 29 Let the Prophets speake two or three, and let the other iudge. 30 And if any thing be reuealed to another that sitteth by, let ỹ first hold his peace. 31 For ye may all prophecie one by one, that all may learne, & al may haue comfort. 32 The the spirits of the Prophets are subiect to the Prophets. 33 For God is not *the author* of confusion, but of peace, as *we see* in all the Churches of the saints. 34 *Let your women keepe silence 1.Tim
in the Churches: for it is not permitted vnto 2.11.
them to speake: but *they ought* to be subiect, as also *the Law saith. 35 And if they will learne Gene.
any thing, let them aske their husbands at home: 3.16.
for it is a shame for women to speake in the Church. 36 Came the worde of God out from you? either came it vnto you onely? 37 If any man thinke himselfe to be a Prophet, or spirituall, let him acknowledge, that the things, that I write vnto you, are the commandements of the Lord. 38 And if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant. 39 Wherefore brethren, couet to prophesie, and forbid not to speake languages. 40 Let all things be done honestly, and by order.

CHAP. 15. 3. *The summe of Paul. doctrine.*

MOreouer, *brethren, I declare vnto you Gala.
the Gospel, which I preached vnto you, 1.11.
which ye haue also receiued, and wherein ye continue, 2 And whereby ye are saued, if ye keepe in memorie, after what maner I preached it vnto you, except ye haue beleeued in

vaine. 3 For first of all, I deliuered vnto you
that which I receiued, howe that Christ dyed
Esai. for our sinnes, according to the * Scriptures,
53.5. 4 And that he was buried, and that he rose
Ionas third day, according to the * Scriptures, 5 And
2.1. that he was seene of Cephas, then of the twelue.
John 6 After that, he was seene of moe then fiue hun-
20.19 dred brethren at once: whereof many remaine
vnto this present, and some also are asleepe.
7 After that, he was seene of Iames: then of all
Acts the Apostles. 8 * And last of all he was seene of
9.4. me, as of one borne out of due time. 9 * For I
Ephe. am the least of the Apostles, which am not meete
3.8. to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted
Ephe. the Church of God. 10 * But by ỹ grace of God
3.7. I am that I am: and his grace which is in me was
not in vaine: but I laboured more abundantly
then they all: yet not I, but the grace of God
which is with me. 11 Wherefore, whether it
were I, or they, so we preach, and so haue ye
beleeued. 12 Now if it be preached, that Christ
is risen from the dead, howe say some among
you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?
13 For if there be no resurrection of the dead,
then is Christ not risen 14 And if Christ be not
risen, then is our preaching vaine, and your faith
is also vaine. 15 And we are found also false
witnesses of God: for we haue testified of God,
ỹ he hath rayſed vp Christ: whō he hath not rayſed vp, if so be ỹ dead be not rayſed. 16 For if
the dead be not rayſed, then is Christ not rayſed.

17 And

17 And if Christ be not rayſed, your faith is vaine: ye are yet in your ſinnes. 18 And ſo they which are aſleepe in Christ are periſhed. 19 If in this life onely we haue hope in Christ, we are of all men the moſt miſerable 20 But now is Christ riſen from the dead, *and* was made the firſt fruites of them that ſlept. 21 For ſince by man *came* death, by man *came* alſo the reſurrection of the dead. 22 For as in Adam all die, euen ſo in Christ ſhall all be made aliue, 23 But euery man in his owne order: the firſt fruites Christ, afterward, they that are of Christ, at his comming *ſhall riſe againe*. 24 Then *ſhall be* the ende, when he hath deliuered vp the kingdome to God, euen the Father, when he hath put downe all rule, and all authoritie and power. 25 For he muſt reigne till he hath put all his enemies vnder his feete. 26 The laſt enemie that ſhall be deſtroyed, is death. 27 For he hath put downe all things vnder his feete. (And when he ſaieth that all things are ſubdued *to him*, it is manifeſt that he is excepted, which did put downe all things vnder him) 28 And when all things ſhall be ſubdued vnto him, then ſhall the Sonne alſo himſelfe be ſubiect vnto him, that did ſubdue all things vnder him, that God may be all in all. 29 Elſe what ſhall they doe which are baptized for dead? if the dead riſe not at al, why are they then baptized for dead? 30 Why are we alſo in iopardie euery houre? 31 By our reioycing which I haue in Christ Ieſus our Lord, I die dayly.

Col. 1. 18. *reuel.* 1. 5. *1. The.* 4. 13. *Pſal.* 110. 1 *act.* 3. 34. *hebr.* 1. 13. & 10 13. *Pſal.* 8. 6. *hebr.* 2. 8.

wordes in a *strange* tongue. 20 Brethren, be
Matt. * not children in vnderſtanding, but as concer-
18.3. ning malicioufneſſe be children, but in vnder-
ſtanding be of a ripe age. 21 In the Law it is
Eſay written, * By men of other tongues, & by other
28.11. languages will I ſpeake vnto this people: yet
ſo ſhall they not heare me, ſayeth the Lord.
22 Wherefore *ſtrange* tongues are for a ſigne,
not to them that beleeue, but to them that be-
leeue not: but propheſying *ſerueth* not for the
that beleeue not, but for them which beleeue.
23 If therefore when the whole Church is come
together in one, and all ſpeake *ſtrange* tongues,
there come in they that are vnlearned, or they
which beleeue not, will they not ſay, that ye are
out of your wits? 24 But if all propheſie, and
there come in one that beleeueth not, or one vn-
learned, he is rebuked of all men, and is iudged
of all. 25 And ſo are the ſecrets of his heart
made manifeſt, and ſo he will fall downe on his
face & worſhip God, and ſay plainly that God
is in you in deed. 26 What is to be *done* then,
brethren? when ye come together, *according* as
euery one of you hath a Pſalme, *or* hath do-
ctrine, *or* hath a tongue, *or* hath reuelation, *or*
hath interpretation, let all things be done vnto
edifying. 27 If any man ſpeake a *ſtrange*
tongue, *let it be* by two, or at the moſt, by three,
and that by courſe, & let one interpret. 28 But
if there be no interpreter, let him keepe ſilence
in the Church, *which ſpeaketh languages*, and
let

him speake to himselfe, and to God. 29 Let
the Prophets speake two or three, and let the
other iudge. 30 And if any thing be reueiled to
another that sitteth by, let ỹ first hold his peace.
31 For ye may all prophecie one by one, that
all may learne, & al may haue comfort. 32 The
the spirits of the Prophets are subiect to the
Prophets. 33 For God is not *the author* of con-
fusion, but of peace, as *we see* in all the Churches
of the saints. 34 *Let your women keepe silence 1. Tim
in the Churches: for it is not permitted vnto 2. 12.
them to speake: but *they ought* to be subiect, as
also * the Law saith. 35 And if they will learne Gene.
any thing, let them aske their husbands at home: 3. 16.
for it is a shame for women to speake in the
Church. 36 Came the worde of God out from
you? either came it vnto you onely? 37 If any
man make himselfe to be a Prophet, or spirituall, let
him acknowledge, that the things, that I write
vnto you, are the commandements of the Lord.
38 And if any man be ignorant, let him be igno-
rant. 39 Wherefore brethren, couet to prophe-
sie, and forbid not to speake languages. 40 Let
all things be done honestly, and by order.

CHAP. 15. 3. *The summe of Paul. doctrine.*

MOreouer, *brethren, I declare vnto you Gala.
the Gospel, which I preached vnto you, 1. 11.
which ye haue also receiued, and wherein ye
continue, 2 And whereby ye are saued, if ye
keepe in memorie, after what maner I pre-
ached it vnto you, except ye haue beleeued in

vaine. 3 For first of all, I deliuered vnto you
that which I receiued, howe that Christ dyed
Esai. 53. 5. for our sinnes, according to the *Scriptures,
4 And that he was buried, and that he rose a-
Ionas 2. 1. third day, according to the *Scriptures, 5 And
that he was seene of Cephas, then of the twelue.
Iohn 20. 19. 6 After that, he was seene of moe then fiue hun-
dred brethren at once: whereof many remaine
vnto this present, and some also are asleepe.
7 After that, he was seene of Iames: then of all
Acts 9. 4. the Apostles. 8 *And last of all he was seene of
me, as of one borne out of due time. 9 *For I
Ephe. 3. 8. am the least of the Apostles, which am not meete
to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted
Ephe. 3. 7. the Church of God. 10 *But by ỹ grace of God
I am that I am: and his grace which is in me, was
not in vaine: but I laboured more abundantly
then they all: yet not I, but the grace of God
which is with me. 11 Wherefore, whether it
were I, or they, so we preach, and so haue ye
beleeued. 12 Now if it be preached, that Christ
is risen from the dead, howe say some among
you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?
13 For if there be no resurrection of the dead,
then is Christ not risen. 14 And if Christ be not
risen, then is our preaching vaine, and your faith
is also vaine. 15 And we are found also false
witnesses of God: for we haue testified of God,
ỹ he hath rayſed vp Christ: whō he hath not rayſed vp, if so be ỹ dead be not rayſed. 16 For if
the dead be not rayſed, then is Christ not rayſed.

17 And

17 And if Christ be not rayſed, your faith is
vaine: ye are yet in your ſinnes. 18 And ſo they
which are aſleepe in Christ are periſhed. 19 If
in this life onely we haue hope in Christ, we
are of all men the moſt miſerable 20 But now
is Christ riſen from the dead, *and* was made *the
firſt fruites of them that ſlept. 21 For ſince by
man came death, by man *came* alſo the reſurre-
ction of the dead. 22 For as *in Adam all die,
euen ſo in Christ ſhall all be made aliue, 23 But
every man in his owne order: the firſt fruites
Christ, afterward, they that are of Christ, at his
comming *ſhall riſe againe*. 24 Then *ſhall be* the
ende, when he hath deliuered vp the kingdome
to God, euen ỹ Father, when he hath put downe
all rule, and all authoritie and power. 25 For
he muſt reigne * till he hath put all his enemies
vnder his feete. 26 The laſt enemie that ſhall be
deſtroyed, is death. 27 *For he hath put downe
all things vnder his feete. (And when he ſaieth
that all things are ſubdued *to him*, it is manifeſt
that he is excepted, which did put downe all
things vnder him) 28 And when all things ſhall
be ſubdued vnto him, then ſhall the Sonne alſo
himſelfe be ſubiect vnto him, that did ſubdue all
things vnder him, that God may be all in all.
29 Elſe what ſhall they doe which are baptized
for dead? if the dead riſe not at al, why are they
then baptized for dead? 30 Why are we alſo in
ieopardie euery houre? 31 By our reioycing
which I haue in Christ Ieſus our Lord, I die

Col. 1. 18. reuel. 1. 5.
1. The. 4. 13.
Pſal. 110. 1
act. 3. 34.
hebr. 1. 13.
& 10 13. Pſal. 8. 6.
hebr. 2. 8.

dayly. 32 If I haue fought with beastes at Ephe-
sus after the maner of men, what aduantage
Isai. it me, if the dead be not rayſed vp? *let vs eat*
22.13. *and drinke: for to morow we ſhall die.* 33 Be
not deceiued: euill ſpeakings corrupt good
maners 34 Awake to *iuſtice* righteouſly, and ſinne
not: for ſome haue not the knowledge of God:
I ſpeake this to your ſhame. 35 But ſome man
will ſay, How are the dead rayſed vp? and with
what body come they foorth? 36 O foole, that
which thou ſoweſt, is not quickened except it
die: 37 And that which thou ſoweſt, thou ſow-
eſt not that body that ſhalbe, but bare corne, as
it falleth, of wheate, or of ſome other. 38 But
God giueth it a body at his pleaſure, euen to
euery ſeede his owne body. 39 All fleſh *is* not
the ſame fleſh, but there is one fleſh of men, and
another fleſh of beaſtes, and another of fiſhes,
and another of birdes. 40 There *are* alſo hea-
uenly bodies, and earthly bodies: but the glory
of the heauenly *is* one, and *the glory* of the earth-
ly *is* another. 41 There is another glory of the
Sunne, and another glory of the Moone, and
another glory of the ſtarres: for one ſtarre diffe-
reth from *another* ſtarre in glory. 42 So alſo is
the reſurrection of the dead. *The body* is ſowen
in corruption, *and* is rayſed in incorruption.
43 It is ſowen in diſhonour, *and* is raiſed in glo-
rie: it is ſowen in weakeneſſe, *and* is rayſed in
power. 44 It is ſowen a naturall body, *and* is
rayſed a ſpiritual body: there is a natural body,

and

and there is a ſpirituall body. 45 As it is alſo written, The firſt man Adam was made a liuing Gene.
ſoule: and the laſt Adam *was made* a quickening 2.7.
ſpirit. 46 Howbeit that *was* not firſt which is ſpirituall: but that *which is* naturall, and afterward that *which is* ſpirituall. 47 The firſt man *is* of the earth, earthly: the ſecond man *is* the Lord from heauen. 48 As *is* the earthly, ſuch *are* they that are earthly: and as *is* the heauenly, ſuch *are* they alſo that are heauenly. 49 And as we haue borne the image of the earthly, ſo ſhall we beare the image of the heauenly. 50 This ſay I, brethren, that fleſh and blood cannot inherite the kingdome of God, neither doth corruption inherite incorruption. 51 Behold, I ſhew you a ſecret thing, we ſhall not all ſleepe, but we ſhall all be changed, 52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye at the *laſt trumpet: for the trum- Mat.
pet ſhal blow, and the dead ſhalbe raiſed vp in- 24 31
corruptible, and we ſhall be changed. 53 For 1. theſ.
this corruptible muſt put on incorruption: and 4.16.
this mortall *muſt* put on immortalitie. 54 So when this corruptible hath put on incorruption, and this mortall hath put on immortalitie, then ſhal be brought to paſſe the ſaying that is written, *Death is ſwallowed vp into victorie. Oſe.
55 O death, where is thy ſting? O graue, where 13.14.
is thy victorie? 56 The ſting of death is ſinne: heb. 2.
and the ſtrength of ſinne is the Lawe. 57 *But 14.
thankes be vnto God, which hath giuen vs vi- 1. Iob.
ctorie through our Lord Ieſus Chriſt. 58 There- 5.5.

fore my beloued brethren, be ye ſtedfaſt, vnmoueable, abundant alwayes in the worke of the Lord, foraſmuch as ye knowe, that your labour is not in vaine in the Lord.

CHAP. 16. 1. *Exhortation to charitie.*

CONcerning the gathering for the Saints, as I haue ordeined in the Churches of Galatia, ſo doe ye alſo. 2 Euery firſt *day* of the weeke, let euery one of you put aſide by himſelfe, and lay vp as *God* hath proſpered him, that then there be no gatherings whē I come. 3 And when I am come, whomſoeuer ye ſhall allow by letters, them will I ſend to bring your liberalitie vnto Hieruſalem. 4 And if it be meete that I goe alſo, they ſhall goe with me. 5 Now I will come vnto you, after I haue gone thorowe Macedonia (for I will paſſe through Macedonia) 6 And it may be that I will abide, yea, or winter with you, that ye may bring me on my way whitherſoeuer I goe. 7 For I will not ſee you nowe in my paſſage, but I truſt to abide a while with you, if the Lord permit. 8 And I will tarry at Epheſus vntill Pentecoſt. 9 For a great doore and effectuall is opened vnto me: and there are many aduerſaries. 10 Nowe if Timotheus come, ſee that he be without feare with you: for he worketh the worke of the Lord, euen as I *doe*. 11 Let no man therefore deſpiſe him, but conuey him foorth in peace, that he may come vnto me: for I looke for him with the brethren. 12 As touching *our* brother Apollos,

I greatly

I greatly desired him, to come vnto you with the brethren: but his minde was not at all to come at this time: howbeit he will come when he shall haue conuenient time. 13 Watch ye, stand fast in the faith: quite you like men, and be strong. 14 Let all your things be done in loue. 15 Now brethren, I beseech you (ye know the house of Stephanas, that it is the first fruites of Achaia, and that they haue giuen themselues to minister vnto the Saints) 16 That ye be obedient euen vnto such, and to all that helpe with vs, and labour. 17 I am glad of the comming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for they haue supplied the want of you. 18 For they haue comforted my spirit and yours: acknowledge therefore such men. 19 The Churches of Asia salute you: Aquila and Priscilla, with the Church that is in their house, salute you greatly in the Lord. 20 All the brethren greete you. Greete ye one another with an holy kisse. 21 The salutation of *me* Paul with mine owne hand. 22 If any man loue not the Lord Iesus Christ, let him be had in execration, maran-atha. 23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you. 24 My loue *be* with you all in Christ Iesus, AMEN.

Rom. 16.16. 2.Cor. 13.12. 1.Pet. 5.14.

¶ The first *Epistle* to the Corinthians, written from Philippi, *and sent* by Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, and Timotheus.

CHAP. 1. *9. Gods helpe in afflictions.*

PAul an Apostle of IESVS CHRIST, by the will of God, and *our* brother Timotheus, vnto the Church of God, which is at Corinthus with all the Saints, which are in all Achaia: 2 Grace *be* with you, & peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ. 3 *Blessed *be* God, euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort, 4 Which comforteth vs in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any affliction, by the comfort wherewith we our selues are comforted of God. 5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in vs, so our consolation aboundeth through Christ. 6 And whether we be afflicted, *it is* for your consolation and saluation, which is wrought in the enduring of the same sufferings, which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, *it is* for your consolation and saluation, 7 And our hope is stedfast concerning you, in as much as we know that as ye are partakers of the sufferings, so *shall ye be* also of the consolation 8 For brethren, we would not haue you ignorant of our affliction, which came vnto vs in Asia, howe we were pressed out of measure passing strength, so that we altogether doubted euen of life. 9 Yea, we receiued the sentence of death in our selues, because we should not trust

Ephe. 1.3. 2. pet. 1.3.

in our ſelues, but in God, which raiſeth the dead. 10 Who deliuered vs from ſo great a death, and doth deliuer vs: in whom we truſt, that yet hereafter he will deliuer vs, 11 *So that ye la- bour together in prayer for vs, that for the gift beſtowed vpon vs for many, thankes may be gi- uen by many perſons for vs. 12 For our reioy- cing is this, the teſtimonie of our conſcience, that in ſimplicitie and godly pureneſſe, *and* not in fleſhly wiſdome, but by the grace of God we haue had our conuerſation in the world, and moſt of all to youwards. 13 For wee write none other things vnto you, then that ye reade, or elſe that ye acknowledge, and I truſt ye ſhall acknowledge vnto the ende. 14 Euen as ye haue acknowledged vs partly, that we are your reioycing, euen as ye are ours, in the day of *our* Lord Ieſus. 15 And in this confidence was I minded firſt to come vnto you, that ye might haue had a double grace, 16 And to paſſe by you into Macedonia, and to come againe out of Macedonia vnto you, and to be led foorth toward Iudea of you. 17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I vſe lightneſſe? or minde I thoſe things which I minde, according to the fleſh, that with me ſhould be, Yea, yea, and Nay, nay? 18 Yea, God is faithful, that our word to- ward you was not Yea, and nay. 19 For the Sonne of God Ieſus Chriſt, who was preached among you by vs, *that is*, by me, and Syluanus, and Timotheus, was not Yea, and Nay: but in him

Rom. 15.3.

him it was Yea. 20 For all the promises of God in him are Yea, and are in him Amen vnto the glory of God through vs. 21 And it is God which stablisheth vs with you in Christ, and hath anoynted vs. 22 Who hath also sealed vs, and hath giuen the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts. 23 Now, I call God for a record vpon my soule, that to spare you, I came not as yet vnto Corinthus. 24 Not that we haue dominion ouer your faith, but we are helpers of your ioy: for by faith ye stand.

CHAP. 2. *To pardon the repentant.*

BVt I determined thus in my selfe, ỹ I would not come againe to you in heauines. 2 For if I make you sory, who is he then that should make me glad, but the same which is made sory by me? 3 And I wrote this same thing vnto you, lest whē I came, I should take heauines of them, of whom I ought to reioyce: this confidence haue I in you all, that my ioy is the ioy of you all. 4 For in great affliction, and anguish of heart I wrote vnto you with many teares: not that ye should be made sory, but that ye might perceiue the loue which I haue, specially vnto you. 5 And if any hath caused sorow, ỹ same hath not made me sory, but partly (least I should more charge *him*) you all. 6 It is sufficient vnto the same man, that he was rebuked of many. 7 So that nowe contrariwise ye ought rather to forgiue *him*, and comfort *him*, least the same should be swallowed vp ỹ ouermuch heauines. 8 Where-

sore,

sore, I pray you, that you would confirme your
love towardes him. 9 For this cause also did I
write, that I might knowe the proofe of you,
whether you woulde bee obedient in all things.
10 To whome ye forgaue any thing, I *forgiue* al-
so: for verely if I forgaue any thing, to whom I
forgaue it, for your sakes *forgaue I it* in the sight
of Christ, 11 Least Satan should circumuent
vs: for wee are not ignorant of his enterprises.
12 Furthermore when I came to Troas *to preach*
Christes Gospel, and a doore was opened vnto
me of the Lord, 13 I had no rest in my spirit, be-
cause I found not Titus my brother, but tooke
my leaue of them, and went way into Macedo-
nia. 14 Nowe thankes *be* vnto God, which al-
wayes maketh vs to triumph in Christ, and ma-
keth manifest the sauour of his knowledge by
vs in euery place. 15 For we are vnto God the
sweete sauour of Christ, in them that are saued,
and in them which perish: 16 To the one *wee*
are the sauour of death vnto death, and to the o-
ther the sauour of life vnto life: and who is suf-
ficient for these things? 17 * For wee are not as *Chap.*
many, which make marchandise of the word of *4.2.*
God: but as of sinceritie, but as of God in the
sight of God, speake we in Christ.

CHAP. 3 8 *The difference of the Lawe*
and the Gospel.

DOe we begin to praise our selues againe? or
need we as some other, Epistles of recom-
mendation vnto you, or *letters* of recommenda-

tion

tion from you? 2 Ye are our epistle, written in our hearts, which is vnderstood & read of all men. 3 In that ye are made manifest, to be the epistle of Christ, ministred by vs, and written not with ynke, but with the spirit of the liuing God, not in tables of stone, but in fleshly tables of y^e heart. 4 And such trust haue we through Christ to God. 5 Not y^t we are sufficient of our selues, to thinke any thing as of our selues: but our sufficiencie is of God, 6 Who also hath made vs able ministers of the New Testament, not of the letter, but of the Spirit: for the letter kil leth, but the Spirit giueth life. 7 If then the ministration of death *written* with letters and ingrauen in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not beholde the face of Moses, for the glory of his countenance (which glory is done away) 8 How shall not the ministration of the Spirit be more glorious? 9 For if the ministerie of condemnation *was* glorious, much more doth the ministration of righteousnes exceede in glory. 10 For euen y^t which was glorified, was not glorified in this point, *hauing* respect, as touching the exceeding glory. 11 For if y^t which should be abolished, *was* glorious, much more shal that which remaineth, be glorious. 12 Seeing then that wee haue such trust, we vse great boldnes of speach. 13 *And not as Moses, *which* put a vaile vpon his face, that the children of Israel should not looke vnto the end of that which should be abolished. 14 Therefore their minds are hardened: for vntill

*Exod. 34.34.

till this day remaineth the same couering vntaken away in the reading of the old Testament, which *vaile* in Christ is put away. 15 But euen vnto this day, when Moses is read, the vaile is layd ouer their hearts. 16 Neuertheleſſe, when their *hart* shall be turned to the Lord, the vaile shall be taken away. 17 Nowe the Lord is the *Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lorde *is*, *John* there *is* libertie. 18 But wee all beholde as in a *3.14.* mirrour the glory of the Lorde with open face, and are changed into the same image, from glory to glory, as by the Spirit of the Lord.

CHAP. 4. 1. *How easie the Gospell is to be conceiued.*

THerefore, seeing that wee haue this ministerie, as we haue receiued mercy, we faint not, 2 But haue cast from vs the clokes of shame, and walke not in craftinesse, neither handle wee the worde of God deceitfully: but in declaration of the trueth we approue our selues to euery mans conscience in the sight of God. 3 If our Gospel be then hid, it is hid to them that are lost. 4 In whome the God of this worlde hath blinded the mindes, *that is* of the infidels, that the light of the glorious Gospell of Christ, which is the image of God, shoulde not shine vnto them. 5 For we preach not our selues, but Christ Iesus the Lord, and our selues your seruants for Iesus sake. 6 *For God that commanded the light *Gene.* to shine out of darkenes, *is he* which hath shi- *1.3.* ned in our heartes, to giue the light of the knowledge

ledge of the glory of God in the face of Ie-
Christ. 7 For wee haue this treasure in earthen
vessels, that the excellencie of that power might
be of God, and not of vs. 8 We are afflicted on
euery side, yet are we not in distresse: we are in
doubt, but yet we despaire not. 9 We are per-
secuted, but not forsaken: cast downe, but we
perish not 10 Euery where we beare about in
our body the dying of the Lorde Iesus, that the
life of Iesus might also bee made manifest in our
bodies. 11 For we which liue, are alwayes de-
liuered vnto death for Iesus sake, that the life al-
so of Iesus might be made manifest in our mor-
tall flesh. 12 So then death worketh in vs, and
life in you. 13 And because we haue the same
Psal. spirit of faith, according as it is written, * I be-
116. leeued and therefore haue I spoken, we also be-
10. leeue, and therefore speake, 14 Knowing that
hee which hath rayſed vp the Lorde Iesus, shall
raise vs vp also by Iesus, & shall set vs with you.
15 For all things *are* for your sakes, that that
most plenteous grace by the thankesgiuing of
many, may redound to the prayse of God.
16 Therefore we faint not, but though our out-
warde man perish, yet the inwarde man is re-
nued dayly. 17 For our light affliction which
is but for a moment, causeth vnto vs a farre
more excellent *and* an eternall weight of glory:
18 While wee looke not on the things which
are seene, but on the things which are not seene:
for the things which are seene, *are* tempo-
rall:

nall: but the things which are not ſeene, *are* eternall.

CHAP. 5. 6. *The certaine hope of ſaluation.*

FOr we know that if our earthly houſe of this tabernacle be deſtroyed, we haue a building *made* of God, *that is*, an houſe not made with hands, *but* eternal in the heauens. 2 For therefore wee ſigh, deſiring to bee clothed with our houſe, which is from heauen: 3 Becauſe that if we be clothed, wee ſhall * not be found naked. *Reue. 16.15.* 4 For indeede wee that are in this tabernacle, ſigh, and are burdened, becauſe wee would not be vndothed, but would be clothed vpon, that mortalitie might be ſwallowed vp of life. 5 And he ỹ hath created vs for this thing, *is* God, who alſo hath giuen vnto vs the earneſt of the Spirit. 6 Therefore we are alway bolde, though wee knowe that whiles we are at home in the body, we are abſent from the Lord. 7 (For we walke by faith, and not by ſight.) 8 Neuertheleſſe, we are bolde, and loue rather to remoue out of the body, and to dwell with the Lorde. 9 Wherefore alſo we couet, that both dwelling at home, and remouing from home, we may be acceptable to him. 10 * For we muſt all appeare before the *Rom. 14.10.* iudgement ſeate of Chriſt, that euery man may receiue the things which are *done* in his body, according to that he hath done, whether *it bee* good or euil. 11 Knowing therefore ỹ terrour of the Lord, we perſwade men, and we are made manifeſt vnto God, and I truſt alſo that wee are made

made manifest in your consciences. 12 For we
praise not our selues againe vnto you, but
you an occasion to reioyce of vs, that ye
haue *to answere* against them, which reioyce
the face, & not in the heart. 13 For whether
be out of our wit, *we are it* to God: or whe
wee be in our right minde, *we are it* vnto you
14 For that loue of Christ constraineth vs, b
cause we thus iudge, that if one be dead for
then were all dead, and he died for all, that
which liue, should not hencefoorth liue vn
themselues, but vnto him which died for th
and rose againe. 16 Wherefore hencefoorth
know we no man after the flesh, yea though
had knowen Christ after ỹ flesh, yet now he
forth know we *him* no more. 17 Therefore
any man *be* in Christ, *let him be* a new creature
Olde things are passed away: behold, all thi
Isay 43.18. are become new. 18 And all things *are* of God
reuel. 21.5. which hath reconciled vs vnto himselfe by Iesus
Christ, and hath giuen vnto vs the ministerie
reconciliation. 19 For God was in Christ,
reconciled the worlde to himselfe, not imputi
their sinnes vnto them, and hath committed
vs the worde of reconciliation. 20 Now th
are we ambassadours for Christ: as though God
did beseeche *you* through vs, wee pray you
Christes steade, that ye bee reconciled to God.
21 For hee hath made him *to bee* sinne for vs
which knew no sinne, that wee should be made
the righteousnes of God in him.

CHAP.

We therefore, as workers together beseech
you, that yee receiue not the grace of God in
vaine. 2 For he saith, * I haue heard thee in a
accepted, and in the day of saluation haue I
succoured thee: behold now the accepted time,
behold now the day of saluation. 3 We giue
no occasion of offence in any thing, that our mi-
nistery should not be reprehended. 4 But in al
things wee approue our selues as the *ministers
of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in ne-
cessities, in distresses, 5 In stripes, in prisons, in
tumults, in labours, 6 By watchings, by fastings,
by puritie, by knowledge, by long suffering, by
kindnesse, by the holy Ghost, by loue vnfained,
7 By the word of trueth, by the power of God,
by the armour of righteousnes on the right hand,
and on the left, 8 By honour, and dishonour, by
euil report, and good report, as deceiuers, and
yet true: 9 As vnknowen, & yet knowen: as dy-
ing, and beholde, we liue: as chastened, and yet
not killed: 10 As sorowing, and yet alwayes re-
ioycing: as poore, & yet make many rich: as ha-
uing nothing, and yet possessing all things. 11 O
Corinthians, our mouth is open vnto you: our
heart is made large. 12 Yee are not kept straite
in vs, but ye are kept straite in your owne bow-
els. 13 Now for the same recompence, I speake
as vnto my children, Be you also enlarged. 14 Be
not vnequally yoked with the infidels: * for
what fellowship hath righteousnesse with vn-
righteous-

Isay 49. 8.

1. Cor. 4. 9.

Eccle. 13. 18.

righteousnesse? and what communion hath light with darknes? 15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath the beleeuer with the infidel? 16 And what agreement hath the
2. Cor. 5. 16. Leui. 26. 11 Esay 52. 11. Iere. 31. 1. Temple of God with idols? *for ye are the Temple of the liuing God: as God hath saide, *I will dwell among them, and walke there: and I will bee their God, and they shall be my people. 17 *Wherefore come out from among them, and separate your selues, saith the Lorde: and touche none vncleane thing, and I will receiue you. 18 *And I will be a Father vnto you, and ye shall be my sonnes and daughters, saith the Lord Almightie.

CHAP. 7. 2. *Comfort after threatning.*

SEeing then we haue these promises, dearely beloued, let vs clense our selues from all filthines of the flesh and spirit, & finish our sanctification in the feare of God. 2 Receiue vs: we haue done wrong to no man: we haue corrupted no man: we haue defrauded no man. 3 I speake it not to *your* condemnation: for I haue said before, that yee are in our hearts, to die and liue together. 4 I vse great boldnesse of speech toward you: I reioyce greatly in you: I am filled with comfort, & am exceeding ioyous in all our tribulation. 5 For when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we were troubled on euery side, fightings without, and terrours within. 6 But God ỹ comforteth the abiect, comforted vs at the comming of

7 And not by his comming onely, but also by the consolation wherewith he was comforted of you, when he tolde vs your great desire, your mourning, your feruent mind to me ward, so that I reioyced much more. 8 For though I made you sory w a letter, I repent not, though I did repent: for I perceiued that the same epistle made you sory, though *it were* but for a season. 9 I now reioyce, not that ye were sory, but that ye sorowed to repentance: for ye sorowed godly, so that in nothing ye were hurt by vs. 10 For godly sorow causeth repẽtance vnto saluation, not to bee repented of: but the worldly sorow causeth death. 11 For behold, this thing that ye haue bene godly sory, what great care it hath wrought in you: yea, what cleating of your selues: yea, *what* indignation: yea, *what* feare: yea, *how* great desire: yea, *what* zeale: yea, *what* reuenge: in all things yee haue shewed your selues, that ye are pure in this matter. 12 Wherfore, though I wrote vnto you, I did it not for his cause that had doue the wrong, neither for his cause that had the iniurie, but that our care towarde you in the sight of God might appeare vnto you. 13 Therefore wee were comforted, because ye were comforted: but rather wee reioyced much more for the ioy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all. 14 For if that I haue boasted any thing to him of you, I haue not bene ashamed: but as I haue spoken vnto you all things in trueth, euen so our boasting

vnto Titus was true. 15 And his inward affection is more abundant toward you, whiles he remembreth the obedience of you all, and how with feare and trembling ye receiued him. 16 I reioyce *therefore* that I may put my confidence in you in all things.

CHAP. 8. 1. *Of liberalitie to the Saints.*

WE do you also to wit, brethrē, of the grace of God bestowed vpon the Churches of Macedonia, 2 Because in great trial of affliction their ioy abounded, and their most extreeme pouertie abounded vnto their rich liberalitie. 3 For to *their* power (I beare record) yea, and beyond their power, they were willing, 4 And prayed vs with great instance that wee would receiue the grace and felowshíp of the ministring which is toward the Saints. 5 And *this they did*, not as we looked for: but gaue their owne selues first to the Lord, and *after* vnto vs by the will of God, 6 That we should exhort Titus, that as he had begunne, so he would also accomplish the same grace among you also. 7 Therefore as ye abound in euery thing, in faith and word and knowledge, and in al diligence, and in your loue towards vs, *euen so see* that yee abound in this grace also. 8 This say I not by commandement, but because of the diligence of others, therefore proone I the naturalnesse of your loue. 9 For ye knowe the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, that hee being riche, for your sakes became poore, that yee through his pouertie might

might be made rich. 10 And I shew *my* minde herein: for this is expedient for you, which haue begunne not to doe onely, but also to will a yeere agoe. 11 Nowe therefore performe to doe it also, that as *there was* a readinesse to will, euen so yee may performe it of that which yee haue. 12 For if there bee first a willing minde, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not 13 Neither *is it* that other men should be eased, and you grieued: but vpon like condition, at this time your abundance *supplieth* their lacke: 14 That also their abundance may bee for your lacke, that there may be equalitie: 15 As it is written, *He that *gathered* much, had nothing ouer, and hee that *gathered* little, had not the lesse. 16 And thanks *be* vnto God, which hath put in the heart of Titus the same care for you, 17 Because hee accepted the exhortation, yea, hee was so carefull, that of his owne accorde he went vnto you. 18 And wee haue sent also with him the brother, whose praise *is* in the Gospell throughout all the Churches. 19 (And not so onely, but is also chosen of the Churches to bee a fellowe in our iourney, concerning this grace that is ministred by vs vnto the glory of the same Lorde, and *declaration* of your prompt minde) 20 Auoyding this, that no man should blame vs in this abundance that is ministred by vs, 21 *Prouiding for honest things, not onely before the Lorde, but also before men. 22 And wee

Exod. 16.18.

Rom. 12.17

haue sent with them our brother, whom we haue oft times proued to be diligent in many things, but now much more diligent, for the great confidence, which *I haue* in you 23 Whether *any do enquire* of Titus, *he is* my fellow & helper to youward: or of our brethren, they are messengers of the Churches, *and* the glory of Christ. 24 Wherefore shew toward them, and before the Churches the proofe of your loue, & of the reioycing that we haue of you.

CHAP. 9. *6 Of Almes.*

FOr as touching the ministring to the Saints, it is superfluous for me to write vnto you. 2 For I know your readinesse of minde, whereof I boast my selfe of you vnto them of Macedonia, *and say*, that Achaia was prepared a yere ago, & your zeale hath prouoked many. 3 Now haue I sent the brethren least our reioycing ouer you should be in vaine in this behalfe, that ye (as I haue said) be ready: 4 Least if they of Macedonia come with me and finde you vnprepared, we (that we may not say, you) should be ashamed in this my constant boasting 5 Wherefore, I thought it necessary to exhort the brethren to come before vnto you, & to finish your beneuolence appointed afore, that it might be ready, *and come* as of beneuolence and not of niggardlinesse. 6 This yet *remember*, that he which soweth sparingly, shall reape also sparingly, and he that soweth liberally, shall reape also liberally. 7 As euery man wisheth in his heart

so let him giue, not *grudgingly, or of necessity: for God loueth a chereful giuer. 8 And God is able to make all grace to abound toward you, that ye alwayes hauing all sufficiencie in all things, may abound in euery good worke, 9 (As it is written, He hath sparsed abroad, and hath giuen to the poore: his beneuolence remaineth for euer. 10 Also he that findeth seed to the sower, will minister likewise bread for food, and multiply your seed, and increase the fruits of your beneuolence.) 11 That on all parts ye may be made rich vnto all liberalitie, which causeth through vs thanks giuing vnto God. 12 For the ministration of this seruice not onely supplieth the necessities of the Saints, but also abundantly causeth many to giue thanks to God, 13 (Which by the experiment of this ministration praise God for your voluntarie submission to the Gospel of Christ, and for your liberall distribution to them, and to all men) 14 And in their prayer for you, to long after you greatly, for the abundant grace of God in you. 15 Thanks therefore *be* vnto God for his vnspeakable gift.*

Rom. 12.8 Ecclc. 35.10. Psal. 112.9.

CHAP 10. *Armor against wicked cauilations.*

NOw I Paul my selfe beseech you by the meeknesse, & gentlenesse of Christ, which when I am present among you, *am* base, but am bolde toward you being absent: 2 And *this* I require you, that I need not to be bolde when I am present, with that same confidence, wherwith

I thinke to be bold against some, which esteeme vs as though we walked according to the flesh. 3 Neuertheleſſe, though we walke in the flesh, yet we do not warre after the flesh. 4 (For the weapons of our warreſare are not carnall, but mighty through God, to cast downe holdes) 5 Caſting downe the imaginations, and euery high thing that is exalted against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captiuitie euery thought to the obedience of Chriſt, 6 And hauing ready the vengeance against all diſobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled. 7 Looke ye on things after the appearance? If any man truſt in himſelfe that he is Chriſtes, let him conſider this againe of himſelfe, that as he is Chriſtes, euen ſo are we Chriſtes. 8 For though I ſhould boaſt ſomewhat more of our authority, which the Lord hath giuen vs for edification, and not for your deſtruction, I ſhould haue no ſhame. 9 *This I ſay* that I may not ſeeme as it were to feare you with letters. 10 For the letters, ſaith he, are ſore & ſtrong, but his bodily preſence is weake, & his ſpeech is of no value. 11 Let ſuch one thinke this, that ſuch as we are in word by letters, when we are abſent, ſuch *will we be* alſo indeed, when we are preſent. 12 For we dare not make our ſelues of the number, or to compare our ſelues to them, which praiſe thē ſelues: but they vnderſtand not that they meaſure thē ſelues with themſelues, and compare themſelues with themſelues. 13 But we will not reioyce

of

of things, which are not within *our* measure, but according to ỹ measure of the line, where- of God hath distributed vnto vs a measure to attaine euen vnto you. 14 For we stretch not our selues beyond *our* measure, as though we had not attained vnto you: for euen to you also haue we come *in preaching* the Gospel of Christ, 15 Not boasting of things which are without *our* measure: *that is*, of other mens labours: and we hope, when your faith shall increase, to be magnified by you according to our line abundantly, 16 And to preach the Gospell in those *regions* which *are* beyond you: not to rejoyce in another mans line, *that is*, in the things that are prepared already. 17 *But let him that rejoyceth, rejoyce in the Lord. 18 For he that praiseth himselfe, is not allowed, but he whom the Lord praiseth. *Ephe.* 4.7. *Iere.* 9.24. 1. *Cor.* 1.31.

CHAP. XI. *Of godly boasting.*

WOuld to God, ye could suffer a little my foolishnesse & indeed, ye suffer me. 2 For I am ielous ouer you, with godly ielousie: for I haue prepared you for one husband, to present you *as* a pure virgine to Christ. 3 But I feare least *as the serpent beguiled Eue through his subtiltie, so your mindes should be corrupt from the simplicity that is in Christ. 4 For if he that commeth, preacheth another Iesus whom we haue not preached: or if ye receiue another spirit whom ye haue not receiued: either another Gospel which ye haue not receiued, ye might *Gene.* 3.4.

well

well haue ſuffered *him*. 5 Verely I ſuppoſe that I was not inferiour to the very chiefe Apoſtles. 6 And though *I be* rude in ſpeaking, yet *I am* not *ſo* in knowledge, but among you we haue bene made manifeſt to the vtmoſt, in all things. 7 Haue I committed an offence, becauſe I abaſed my ſelfe, that ye might be exalted, and becauſe I preached to you ℣ Goſpel of God freely? 8 I robbed other Churches, and tooke wages *of them* to doe you ſeruice. 9 And when I was preſent with you, and had need, *I was not* ſlouthful to the hinderance of any man: for that which was lacking vnto me, the brethren which came from Macedonia ſupplied, & in all things I kept & will keepe my ſelfe, that I ſhould not be grieuous to you. 10 The trueth of Chriſt is in me, that this reioycing ſhall not be ſhut vp againſt me in the regions of Achaia. 11 Wherefore? becauſe I loue you not? God knoweth. 12 But what I do, that will I do: that I may cut away occaſion from them which deſire occaſion, that they might be found like vnto vs in that wherein they reioyce. 13 For ſuch falſe Apoſtles are deceitful workers, and transforme themſelues into the Apoſtles of Chriſt. 14 And no maruell: for Satan himſelfe is transformed into an Angel of light. 15 Therefore it is no great thing, though his miniſters transforme themſelues, as though *they were* the miniſters of righteouſneſſe, whoſe end ſhalbe according to their works. 16 I ſay againe, let no man thinke, that

Chap. 12. 13.

I

I am foolish, or else take me euen as a foole, that I also may boast my selfe a litle. 17 That I speak, I speake it not after the Lord: but as it were foolishly, in this my great boasting. 18 Seeing that many reioyce after the flesh, I will reioyce also. 19 For ye suffer fooles gladly, because that ye are wise. 20 For ye suffer, euen if a man bring you into bondage, if a man deuoure you, if a man take your goods, if a man exalt himselfe, if a man smite you on the face. 21 I speake as concerning the reproch: as though that we had bene weake: but wherein any man is bolde (I speake foolishly) I am bolde also. 22 They are Hebrewes, so am I: they are Israelites, so am I: they are the seed of Abraham, so am I: 23 They are the ministers of Christ (I speake as a foole) I am more: in labours more abundant: in stripes aboue measure: in prison more plenteously: in death oft. 24 Of the Iewes fiue times receiued I fourtie stripes saue one. 25 I was thrise beaten with rods: I was once stoned: I suffered thrise shipwracke: night & day haue I bene in the deepe sea. 26 In iourneying often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils of mine owne nation, in perils among the Gentiles, in perils in the city, in perils in wildernesse, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren, 27 In wearinesse & painfulnesse, in watchings often, in hunger & thirst, in fastings often, in colde and nakednesse. 28 Beside the things which are outward, I am combred dayly, and

Psal. 3.5.

and haue the care of all the Churches. 29 Who is weake, & I am not weake? who is offended, and I burne not? 30 If I muſt needs reioyce, I will reioyce of mine infirmities. 31 The God euen the Father of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, which is bleſſed for euermore, knoweth that I lie not. 32 In * Damaſcus the gouernour of the people vnder king Aretas, layd watch in the citie of the Damaſcens, and would haue caught me. 33 But at a window was I let downe in a baſket thorow the wall, and eſcaped his hands.

Act. 9.24.

CHAP. 12. 3 *The viſions reuciled to Paul.*

IT is not expedient for me no doubt to reioyce: for I will come to viſions & reuelations of the Lord. 2 I know a man of Chriſt about fourteene yeres agone, (whether *he were* in the body, I cannot tell, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth) which was taken vp into the third heauen. 3 And I know ſuch a man, (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth) 4 How that he was taken vp into paradiſe, and heard wordes which cannot be ſpoken, which are not poſsible for man to vtter. 5 Of ſuch a man will I reioice: of my ſelfe will I not reioyce, except it be of mine infirmities. 6 For though I would reioyce, I ſhould not be a foole: for I will ſay the truth, but I refraine, leaſt any man ſhould thinke of me aboue that he ſeeth in me, or that he heareth of me. 7 And leſt I ſhould be exalted out of meaſure through the abundance of reuelati-

ons,

there was giuen vnto me a pricke in the
flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, be-
cause I should not be exalted out of measure.
9 For this thing I besought the Lord thrise, that
it might depart from me. 9 And he sayd vnto
me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my power
is made perfect through weakenesse. Very gladly
therefore will I reioyce rather in mine infirmi-
ties, that the power of Christ may dwell in me.
10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in re-
proches, in necessities, in persecutions, in an-
guish for Christes sake: for when I am weake,
then am I strong. 11 I was a foole to boast my
selfe: ye haue compelled me: for I ought to haue
bene commended of you: for in nothing was I
inferiour vnto the very chiefe Apostles, though
I be nothing. 12 The signes of an Apostle were
wrought among you with all patience, with
signes and wonders, and great works. 13 For
what is it, wherein ye were inferiours vnto o-
ther Churches, * except that I haue not beene *Chap.*
slouthfull to your hinderance? forgiue me this *11.9.*
wrong. 14 Behold, the third time I am ready to
come vnto you, and yet will I not be slouthfull
to your hinderance: for I seeke not yours, but
you: for the children ought not to lay vp for the
fathers, but the fathers for the children. 15 And
I will most gladly bestow, and will be bestowed
for your soules: though the more I loue you,
the lesse I am loued. 16 But be it that I charged
you not: yet forasmuch as I was crafty, I tooke

you

you with guile. 17 Did I pill you by any of them whom I ſent vnto you? 18 I haue deſired Titus, and with him I haue ſent a brother: did Titus pill you of any thing? walked we not in the ſame ſpirit? walked we not in the ſame ſteps? 19 Againe, thinke ye that we excuſe our ſelues vnto you? we ſpeake before God in Chriſt. But we do all things, dearely beloued, for your edifying. 20 For I feare, leſt when I come I ſhall not finde you ſuch as I would: and that I ſhall be found vnto you ſuch as ye would not, and leaſt there be ſtrife, enuying, wrath, contentions, backbitings, whiſperings, ſwellings, and diſcord. 21 I feare leaſt when I come againe, my God abaſe me among you, and I ſhall bewaile many of them which haue ſinned already, and haue not repented of the vncleanneſſe, and fornication, and wantonneſſe, which they haue committed.

CHAP. 13. 2 *Paul rebuketh the Corinthians.*

THis is the third time that I come vnto you. In the mouth of two or three witneſſes ſhall euery word ſtand. 2 I told you before, and tell you before: as though I had bene preſent the ſecond time, ſo write I now being abſent to them which heretofore haue ſinned, & to all others, that if I come againe, I will not ſpare. 3 Seeing that ye ſeeke experience of Chriſt, that ſpeaketh in me, which toward you is not weake, but is mighty in you. 4 For though he was crucified concerning *his* infirmity, yet liueth he through

Deut. 19. 15. matt. 18. 16. iohn 8. 17. hebr. 10. 28.

through the power of God. And we no doubt are weake in him, but we ſhall liue with him, through ỹ power of God toward you. 5 *Proue your ſelues whether ye are in the faith: examine your ſelues: know ye not your owne ſelues, how that Ieſus Chriſt is in you, except ye be reprobates? 6 But I truſt that he ſhal know that we are not reprobates. 7 Now I pray vnto God that ye do none euil, not that we ſhould ſeeme approoued, but that ye ſhould doe that which is honeſt: though we be as reprobates. 8 For we cannot *do* any thing againſt the truth, but for the truth. 9 For we are glad when we are weake, and that ye are ſtrong: this alſo we wiſh for, *euen* your perfection. 10 Therefore write I theſe things being abſent, leaſt when I am preſent, I ſhould vſe ſharpneſſe, according to the power which the Lord hath giuen me, to edification, & not to deſtruction. 11 Finally brethren, fare ye well: be perfect: be of good comfort: be of one minde: liue in peace, and the God of loue and peace ſhal be with you. 12 Greet one another with *an holy kiſſe. All the Saints ſalute you. 13 The grace of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, and the loue of God, and the communion of the holy Ghoſt be with you all, Amen.

2 Cor. 11. 28.

1 Cor. 16. 20.

¶ The ſecond *Epiſtle* to the Corinthians, written from Philippi, a city in Macedonia, *and ſent* by Titus and Lucas.

THE

CHAP. 1. *6 He reproueth the Galatians for reuolting from the Gospel.*

PAVL an Apostle (not of men, neither by man, * but by Iesus Christ, and God the Father which hath raised him from the dead) 2 And all the brethren which are with me, vnto the Churches of Galatia: 3 Grace be with you, and peace from God the Father, and frō our Lord Iesus Christ, 4 Which gaue himselfe for our sinnes, that he might deliuer * vs from this present euill world, according to the will of God euen our Father, 5 To whom be glory for euer and euer, Amen. 6 I marueile that ye are so soone remooued away vnto another Gospel, from him that had called you in the grace of Christ, 7 Which is not another *Gospel*, saue that there be some which trouble you, and intend to peruert the Gospel of Christ. 8 But though that we, or an Angel from heauen preach vnto you otherwise, then that which we haue preached vnto you, let him be accursed. 9 As we said before, so say I now againe, If any man preach vnto you otherwise, then ye haue receiued, let him be accursed. 10 For now preach I mans *doctrine*, or Gods? or goe I about to please men? for if I should yet please men, I were not the seruant of Christ. 11 *Now I certifie you, brethren, that the Gospell which was

Titus 2.3.

Luke 2.74.

2. Cor. 15.1.

was preached of me, was not after man. 12 For neither receiued I it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the reuelation of Iesus Christ. 13 For ye haue heard of my conuersation in time past, in the Iewish religion, howe that * I persecuted the Church of God extreamely, and wasted it, 14 And profited in the Iewish religion aboue many of my companions of mine owne nation, and was much more zealous of the traditions of my fathers. 15 But when it pleased God (which had separated me from my mothers wombe, and called *me* by his grace) 16 To reuile his sonne in me, that I should preach him among the Gentiles, immediatly I communicated not with flesh and blood: 17 Neither came I againe to Hierusalem to them which were Apostles before me, but I went into Arabia, and turned againe into Damascus. 18 Then after three yeeres I came againe to Hierusalem to visite Peter, & abode with him fifteene dayes. 19 And none other of the Apostles sawe I, saue Iames the Lords brother. 20 Nowe the things which I write vnto you, behold, *I witnes* before God, that I lie not. 21 After that I went into the coastes of Syria and Cilicia: for I was vnknowen by face vnto the Churches of Iudea, which were in Christ. 22 But they had heard only *some say*, He which persecuted vs in time past, nowe preacheth the faith which before he destroyed. 23 And they glorified God for me.

Act. 9.1.

Ephe. 3.8.

you with guile. 17 Did I pill you by any of them whom I ſent vnto you? 18 I haue deſired Titus, and with him I haue ſent a brother: did Titus pill you of any thing? walked we not in the ſelfe ſame ſpirit? *walked we* not in the ſame ſteps? 19 Againe, thinke ye that we excuſe our ſelues vnto you? we ſpeake before God in Chriſt. But *we do* all things, dearely beloued, for your edifying. 20 For I feare, leſt whē I come, I ſhall not finde you ſuch as I would: and that I ſhall be found vnto you ſuch as ye would not, and leaſt *there be* ſtrife, enuying, wrath, contentions, backbitings, whiſperings, ſwellings, and diſcord. 21 *I feare* leaſt when I come againe, my God abaſe me among you, and I ſhall bewaile many of them which haue ſinned already, and haue not repented of the vncleanneſſe, and fornication, and wantonneſſe, which they haue committed.

CHAP. 13. 2 *Paul rebuketh the Corinthians.*

Deut. 19 15. *matt.* 18.16. *iohn* 8.17. *hebr.* 10.28.

I Doe this is the third time that I come vnto you. By the mouth of two or three witneſſes ſhall euery word ſtand. 2 I told you before, and tell you before: as though I had bene preſent the ſecond time, ſo write I now being abſent to them which heretofore haue ſinned, & to all others, that if I come againe, I will not ſpare. 3 Seeing that ye ſeeke experience of Chriſt, that ſpeaketh in me, which toward you is not weake, but is mighty in you. 4 For though he was crucified concerning *his* infirmity, yet liueth he through

through the power of God. And we no doubt are weake in him, but we shall liue with him, through y power of God toward you. 5 *Proue your selues whether ye are in the faith: examine your selues: know ye not your owne selues, how that Iesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates? 6 But I trust that he shal know that we are not reprobates. 7 Now I pray vnto God that ye do none euil, not that we should seeme approoued, but that ye should doe that which is honest: though we be as reprobates. 8 For we cannot *do* any thing against the truth, but for the truth. 9 For we are glad when we are weake, and that ye are strong: this also we wish for, *euen* your perfection. 10 Therefore write I these things being absent, least when I am present, I should vse sharpnesse, according to the power which the Lord hath giuen me, to edification, & not to destruction. 11 Finally brethren, fare ye well: be perfect: be of good comfort: be of one minde: liue in peace, and the God of loue and peace shall be with you. 12 Greet one another with *an holy kisse. All the Saints salute you. 13 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, and the loue of God, and the communion of the holy Ghost be with you all, Amen.

2. Cor. 11.28.

1. Cor. 16.20.

¶ The second *Epistle* to the Corinthians, written from Philippi, a city in Macedonia, *and sent* by Titus and Lucas.

THE

CHAP. 1. *He reproueth the Galatians for reuolting from the Gospel.*

PAVL an Apostle (not of men, neither by man, * but by Iesus Christ, and God the Father which hath raised him from the dead) 2 And all the brethren which are with me, vnto the Churches of Galatia: 3 Grace be with you, and peace from God the Father, and *frō* our Lord Iesus Christ, 4 Which gaue himselfe for our sinnes, that he might deliuer * vs from this present euill world, according to the will of God euen our father, 5 To whom be glory for euer and euer, Amen. 6 I marueile that ye are so soone remooued away vnto another Gospel, from him that had called you in the grace of Christ, 7 Which is not another *Gospel*, saue that there be some which trouble you, and intend to peruert the Gospel of Christ. 8 But though that we, or an Angel from heauen preach vnto you otherwise, then that which we haue preached vnto you, let him be accursed. 9 As we said before, so say I now againe, If any man preach vnto you otherwise, then ye haue receiued, let him be accursed. 10 For now preach I mans *doctrine*, or Gods? or goe I about to please men? for if I should yet please men, I were not the seruant of Christ. 11 *Now I certifie you, brethren, that the Gospell which was

Titus 2.3.

Luke 1.74.

2. Cor. 15.1.

was preached of me, was not after man. 12 For neither receiued I it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the reuelation of Iesus Christ. 13 For ye haue heard of my conuersation in time past, in the Iewish religion, howe that * I persecuted the Church of God extreamely, and wasted it, 14 And profited in the Iewish religion aboue many of my companions of mine owne nation, and was much more zealous of the traditions of my fathers. 15 But when it pleased God (which had separated me from my mothers wombe, and called *me* by his grace) 16 To reuile his sonne in me, that I should preach him among the Gentiles, immediatly I communicated not with flesh and blood: 17 Neither came I againe to Hierusalem to them which were Apostles before me, but I went into Arabia, and turned againe into Damascus. 18 Then after three yeeres I came againe to Hierusalem to visite Peter, & abode with him fifteene dayes. 19 And none other of the Apostles sawe I, saue Iames the Lords brother. 20 Nowe the things which I write vnto you, behold, *I witnes* before God, that I lie not. 21 After that I went into the coastes of Syria and Cilicia: for I was vnknowen by face vnto the Churches of Iudea, which were in Christ. 22 But they had heard only *some say*, He which persecuted vs in time past, nowe preacheth the faith which before he destroyed. 23 And they glorified God for me.

Act. 9.

Ephe. 3.

CHAP. 2. 17. *That we are freely iustified by Christ, &c.*

THen fourteene yeres after, I went vp againe to Hierusalem with Barnabas, & tooke with me Titus also. 2 And I went vp by reuelation, and declared vnto them that Gospel, which I preach among the Gentiles, but particularly to them that were the chiefe, least by any meanes I should runne, or had runne in vaine: 3 But neither yet Titus which was with me, though he were a Grecian, was cõpelled to be circumcised, 4 To wit, for ỹ false brethren which were craftily sent in, and crept in priuily to spie out our libertie, which we haue in Christ Iesus, that they might bring vs into bondage. 5 To whom we gaue not place by subiection for an houre, that the trueth of ỹ Gospel might cõtinue with you. 6 But by them which seemed to be great, *I was not taught* (whatsoeuer they were in time passed, I am nothing the better: God accepteth no mans person) for they ỹ are the chiefe, did adde nothing to me *aboue that I had*. 7 But contrariwise, when they saw ỹ the Gospel ouer the vncircumcision was committed vnto me, as the *Gospel* ouer the Circumcision, was vnto Peter 8 (For he that was mighty by Peter in ỹ Apostleship ouer the circumcision, was also mighty by me toward the Gentiles) 9 And whẽ Iames, and Cephas, & Iohn knew of the grace that was giuen vnto me, which are counted to be pillars, they gaue to me & to Barnabas the right hands

Deut. 10.17. 2.chr. 19.7. Iohn 34.19 actes 10.34. rom. 1.1. ephes. 3.9. coloss. 1.25. 1.pet. 5.17.

of felowſhip, ỹ we *ſhould preach* vnto the Gentiles, and they vnto the Circumciſion, 10 *Warning* onely that we ſhould remember the poore, which thing alſo I was diligent to doe. 11 And when Peter was come to Antiochia, I withſtood him to his face: for he was to be condemned. 12 For before that certaine came from Iames, he ate with ỹ Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew & ſeparated himſelfe, fearing them which were of the Circumciſion. 13 And the other Iewes played ỹ hypocrites likewiſe with him, inſomuch that Barnabas was led away with them by that their hypocriſie. 14 But when I ſawe, that they went not the right way to the truth of the Goſpel, I ſaid vnto Peter before all men, If thou being a Iewe, liueſt as the Gentiles, and not like the Iewes, why conſtrainſt thou the Gentiles to do like ỹ Iewes? 15 We *which are* Iewes by nature, and not ſinners of the Gentiles, 16 Know that a man is not iuſtified by the works of the Law, but by ỹ faith of Ieſus Chriſt, euen we *I ſay* haue beleeued in Ieſus Chriſt, that we might be iuſtified by the faith of Chriſt, and not by the works of the Law becauſe that by the workes of the Lawe no fleſh ſhall be iuſtified. 17 * If then while we ſeeke to be made righteous by Chriſt, we our ſelues are found ſinners, is Chriſt therefore the miniſter of ſinne? God forbid. 18 For if I builde againe the things that I haue deſtroyed, I make my ſelfe a treſpaſſer. 19 For I through the Law am dead to the Law, *Rom. 3. 19.*

that I might liue vnto God. 20 I am crucified with Christ, but I liue, *yet* not I any more but Christ liueth in me: and in that that I nowe liue in the flesh, I liue by the faith in the Sonne of God, who hath loued me, and giuen himselfe for me. 21 I doe not abrogate the grace of God: for if righteousnes *be* by the Lawe, then Christ died without a cause.

CHAP. 3. *The Galatians rebuked for refusing grace and leaning to the Law.*

O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that ye should not obey the truth, to whom Iesus Christ before was described in your sight, *and* among you crucified? 2 This only would I learne of you, Receiued ye the Spirite by the workes of the Law, or by the hearing of faith *preached*? 3 Are ye so foolish, that after ye haue begun in the Spirit, ye would now be made perfect by the flesh? 4 Haue ye suffered so many things in vaine? if so be it be euen in vaine. 5 He therefore that ministreth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, *doth he it* through the workes of the Lawe, or by the hearing of faith *preached*? 6 Yea rather as Abraham beleeued God, and it was * imputed to him for righteousnesse. 7 Know ye therefore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham. 8 For the Scripture foreseeing, that God would iustifie the Gentiles through faith, preached before the Gospel vnto Abraham *saying*, * In thee shall all the Gentiles be blessed.

Gene. 15.6. rom. 4.3. Iames 2.23. Gene. 22.3. actes 3.25.

9 So then they which be of faith, are blessed
with faithfull Abraham. 10 For as many as are
of the workes of the Lawe, are vnder the curse:
for it is written, *Cursed is euery man that con- *Deu.
tinueth not in all things, which are written in 27.26.
the booke of the Law, to doe them. 11 And that
no man is iustified by the Lawe in the sight of
God, it is euident: * for the iust shall liue by *Hab.
faith. 12 And the Lawe is not of faith: * but the 2.4.
man that shal do those things, shal liue in them. *Leui.
13 Christ hath redeemed vs from the curse of the 18.5.
Law, made a curse for vs (for it is written, *Cur- *Deu.
sed is euery one that hangeth on tree) 14 That 21.23.
the blessing of Abraham might come on § Gen-
tiles through Christ Iesus, that we might re-
ceiue the promise of the Spirit through faith.
15 Brethren, I speake as men doe: * Though it be *Hebr.
but a mans couenant, when it is confirmed, yet 9.17.
no man doeth abrogate it, or addeth any thing
thereto. 16 Nowe to Abraham and his seede
were the promises made. He saieth not, And to
the seedes, as *speaking* of many: but, And to thy
seede, as of one, which is Christ. 17 And this I
say, that the couenant that was confirmed afore
of God in respect of Christ, the Lawe which was
foure hundreth and thirtie yeeres after, cannot
disanull, that it should make § promise of none
effect 18 For if the inheritance *be* of the Law,
it is no more by the promes, but God gaue it
freely vnto Abraham by promise. 19 Where-
fore then *serueth* the Law? It was added because

of the transgressions, till the seede came vnto the which the promise was made: and it was ordained by Angels in the hand of a Mediatour. 20 Nowe a Mediatour is not a Mediatour of one: but God is one. 21 Is the Law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had bene a Law giuen which could haue giuen life, surely righteousnesse should haue bene by the Law. 22 But the Scripture hath concluded all vnder sinne, that the promise by the faith of Iesus Christ should be giuen to them that beleeue. 23 But before faith came, we were kept vnder the Lawe, *as vnder* a garison, and shut vp vnto that faith, which should afterward be reuealed. 24 Wherefore ¶ Law was our schoolemaster *to bring vs* to Christ, that we might be made righteous by faith. 25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer vnder a schoolemaster. 26 For ye are all the sonnes of God by faith in Christ Iesus. 27 For all ye that are baptized into Christ, haue put on Christ. 28 There is neither Iew nor Grecian: there is neither bond nor free: there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Iesus. 29 And if ye be Christes, then are ye Abrahãs seede, & heires by promise.

Rom. 3.9.

CHAP. 4. *Christ hath deliuered vs from the bondage of the Law, &c.*

THen I say, that the heire as long as he is a childe, differeth nothing from a seruant, though he be Lord of all, 2 But is vnder tutours and gouernours, vntil the time appointed of the

Father.

Father. 3 Euen so, we when we were children, were in bondage vnder the rudiments of the world. 4 But when ỹ fulnesse of time was come, God sent forth his Sonne made of woman, *and* made vnder the Law, 5 That he might redeeme them which were vnder ỹ Lawe, that we might receiue the adoption of the sonnes. 6 And be- *Rom.* 8.15.
cause ye are sonnes, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Sonne into your hearts, which cryeth, Abba, Father. 7 Wherefore, thou art no more a seruant, but a sonne: nowe if *thou be* a sonne, *thou art* also the heire of God through Christ. 8 But euen then, when ye knewe not God, ye did seruice vnto them, which by nature are not gods: 9 But now seeing ye know God, yea rather are knowen of God, howe turne ye againe vnto impotent and beggerly rudiments, whereunto *as* from ỹ beginning, ye wilbe in bondage againe? 10 Ye obserue dayes, and moneths, and times, and yeeres. 11 I am in feare of you, least I haue bestowed on you labour in vaine. 12 Be ye as I: for I am euen as you: brethren, I beseech you: ye haue not hurt me at all. 13 And ye know, howe through infirmitie of the flesh I preached the Gospel vnto you at the first. 14 And the tryall of me which was in my flesh, ye despised not, neither abhorred: but ye receiued me as an Angel of God, *yea*, as Christ Iesus. 15 What was then your felicitie? for I beare you record, that if it had beene possible, ye would haue plucked out your owne eyes, and haue giuen them vnto

me. 16 Am I therefore become your enemie, because I tell you the truth? 17 They are zelous ouer you amisse: yea, they would exclude you, ỹ ye should altogether loue them. 18 But it is a good thing to loue earnestly alwayes in a good thing, and not onely when I am present with you, 19 My litle children, of whom I trauaile in birth againe, vntill Christ be formed in you. 20 And I would I were with you now, that I might change my voyce: for I am in doubt of you. 21 Tell me, ye that will be vnder the Law, doe ye not heare the Law? 22 For it is written
Gene. 16.15 that Abraham had two sonnes, * one by a seruant, & *one by a free woman. 23 But he which
Gene. 21.1. was of the seruant, was borne after the flesh: and he which was of the free woman, *was borne* by promes. 24 By the which things another thing is meant: for these *mothers* are the two Testaments, the one which is Agar of mount Sina, which gendreth vnto bondage. 25 (For Agar is Sina is a mountaine in Arabia, and it answereth to Hierusalem which now is) and she is in bondage with her children. 26 But Hierusalem, which is aboue, is free: which is the mother of vs
Isai. 54.1. all. 27 For it is written, *Reioyce thou barren that beareſt no children: breake foorth, & cry, thou that trauaileſt not: for the desolate hath many moe children, then she which hath an hus-
Rom. 8.9. band. 28 *Therefore, brethren, we are after the maner of Isaac, children of the promes. 29 But as then he that was borne after the flesh, perse-

cuted

ceiued him that *was borne* after the ſpirit, euen ſo it is nowe. 30 But what ſaith the Scripture? *Put out the ſeruant and her ſonne: for the ſonne of the ſeruant ſhall not be heire with the ſonne of the free woman.* 31 Then brethren, we are not children of the ſeruant, but of the free woman. *Gen. 21. 10*

CHAP. 5. *The worthines of Chriſtian freedome, and how we ſhould vſe the ſame &c.*

STand faſt therefore in the libertie wherewith Chriſt hath made vs free, & be not intangled againe with the yoke of bondage. 2 *Behold, I Paul ſay vnto you, that if ye be circumciſed, Chriſt ſhall profite nothing. 3 For I teſtifie againe to euery man, which is circumciſed, that he is bound to keepe the whole Lawe. 4 Ye are *aboliſhed from Chriſt, whoſoeuer are iuſtified by the Law, ye are fallen from grace. 5 For we through the Spirit waite for the hope of righteouſnes through faith. 6 For in Ieſus Chriſt neither circumciſion auaileth any thing, neither vncircumciſion, but faith which worketh by loue. 7 Ye did runne well: who did let you, that ye did not obey the truth? 8 *It is* not the perſwaſion of him that calleth you. 9 * A litle leauen doth leauen the whole lumpe. 10 I haue truſt in you through ☞ Lord, that ye will be none otherwiſe minded: but he ☞ troubleth you, ſhall beare *his* condemnation, whoſoeuer he be. 11 And brethren, if I yet preach circumciſion, why doe I yet ſuffer perſecution? Then is the ſlander of* *Act. 15. 1.* *1 Cor. 1. 7.* *1 Cor. 5. 6.*

the

the crosse abolished. 12 Would to God they were euen cut off, which doe disquiet you. 13 For brethren, ye haue bene called vnto libertie: onely vse not your libertie as an occasion vnto ỹ flesh, but by loue serue one another. 14 For all ỹ Law is fulfilled in one word, which is this,

Leuit. 19.18. matt. 22.39. mark. 12.31. rom. 13.9. iames 2.8. Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy self. 15 If ye bite & deuoure one another, take heede least ye be consumed one of another. 16 Then I say, Walke in the Spirit, and ye shal not fulfill the lustes of the flesh. 17 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, & the Spirit against the flesh: & these are contrary one to the other, so that ye cannot doe the same things that ye would. 18 And if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not vnder ỹ Lawe. 19 Moreouer the workes of the flesh are manifest, which are adulterie, fornicatiõ, vncleannes, wantonnes, 20 Idolatrie, witchcraft, hatred, debate, emulations, wrath, cõtentions, seditions, heresies, 21 Enuie, murthers, drunkennes, gluttonie, and such like, whereof I tell you before, as I also haue tolde you before, that they which doe such things, shall not inherite the kingdome of God. 22 But the fruite of the Spirit is loue, ioy, peace, long suffering, gentlenes, goodnes, faith, 23 Meekenes, temperance: against such there is no Lawe. 24 For they ỹ are Christes haue crucified the flesh with the affections & the lustes. 25 If we liue in ỹ Spirit, let vs also walke in the Spirit. 26 Let vs not be desirous of vaine glory, prouoking one another, enuying one an other.

CHAP.

BRethren, if a man be ſuddenly taken in any offence, ye which are ſpirituall, reſtore ſuch one ℣ the ſpirit of meekenes, conſidering thy ſelfe, leaſt thou alſo be tempted. 2 Beare ye one an others burden, & ſo fulfill the Lawe of Chriſt. 3 For if any man ſeeme to himſelfe, that he is ſomewhat, whē he is nothing, he deceiueth himſelfe in his imagination 4 But let euery man proue his owne worke, and then ſhall he haue reioycing in himſelfe onely, and not in another. 5 ℣ For euery man ſhal beare his owne burden. 1.Cor. 6 Let him that is taught in the word, make him 3.8. that hath taught him, partaker of al ℣ his goods. 2.Cor. 7 Be not deceiued: God is not mocked: for 9.7. whatſoeuer a man ſoweth, that ſhall he alſo reape. 8 For he that ſoweth to his fleſh, ſhall of the fleſh reape corruption: but he that ſoweth to the ſpirit, ſhal of the ſpirit reape life euerlaſting. 9 ✠ Let vs not therefore be wearie of 2.The. well doing: for in due ſeaſon we ſhall reape, if 3.13. we faint not. 10 While we haue therfore time, let vs doe good vnto all men, but eſpecially vnto them, which are of the houſhold of faith. 11 Ye ſee howe large a letter I haue written vnto you with mine owne hand. 12 As many as deſire to make a faire ſhew in ℣ fleſh, they conſtraine you to be circumciſed, only becauſe they would not ſuffer perſecution for the croſſe of Chriſt. 13 For they themſelues which are circumciſed, keepe not the Law, but deſire to haue you circumciſed,

circumcised, ỹ they might reioyce in your flesh. 14 But God forbid that I should reioyce, but in the crosse of our Lord Iesus Christ, whereby the world is crucified vnto me, and I vnto the world. 15 For in Christ Iesus neither circumcision auaileth any thing, nor vncircumcision, but a newe creature. 16 And as many as walke according to this rule, peace *shall be* vpon them, and mercie and vpon the Israel of God. 17 From henceforth let no man put me to businesse: for I beare in my body the marks of the Lord Iesus. 18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Vnto the Galatians written from Rome.

THE EPISTLE OF PAVL to the Ephesians.

CHAP. 1. 1. *Of the free election of God.*

PAVL an Apostle of IESVS CHRIST by the wil of God, to the* Saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithfull in Christ Iesus, 2 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lorde Iesus Christ. 3 *Blessed *be* God, and the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, which hath blessed vs with all spirituall blessing in heauenly things in Christ, 4 As he hath chosen vs in him, before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy, and without blame before him in loue: 5 Who hath predestinated vs to bee adopted through Iesus

1. Cor. 1. 2.
2. cor. 1. 3.
1. pet. 1. 3.

Iesus Christ in himselfe, according to the good pleasure of his wil, 6 To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherewith he hath made vs freely accepted in *his* beloued, 7 By whome wee haue redemption through his blood, *euen* the forgiuenesse of sinnes, according to his grace: 8 Wherby he hath bene abundant towarde vs in all wisdome and vnderstanding, 9 And hath opened vnto vs the mysterie of his will according to his good pleasure, which he had purposed in him, 10 That in the dispensation of the fulnesse of the times, hee might gather together in one all things, both which are in heauen, and which are in earth, *euen* in Christ: 11 In whom also wee are chosen when we were predestinate according to the purpose of him which worketh all things after the counsell of his owne will, 12 That wee, which first trusted in Christ, shoulde bee vnto the prayse of his glory: 13 In whom also ye *haue trusted*, after that ye heard the worde of trueth, *euen* the Gospell of your saluation, wherein also after that yee beleeued, ye were sealed with the holy Spirit of promes, 14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, for the redemption of that libertie purchased vnto the prayse of his glory. 15 Therefore also after that I heard of the faith, which yee haue in the Lorde Iesus, and loue toward all the Saints, 16 I cease not to giue thankes for you, making mention of you in my prayers, 17 That the God of our Lorde Iesus Christ, that Father of glory,

glory, might giue vnto you the Spirite of wisdome, and reuelation through the acknowledging of him, 18 That the eyes of your vnderstanding may be lightened, that ye may know what the hope is of his calling, and what the riches of his glorious inheritance is in the Saints, 19 And what is the exceeding greatnesse of his
Chap. power toward vs which beleeue, *according to
3.7. the working of his mightie power, 20 Which
Colos. he wrought in Christ, when he rayſed him from
2.12. the dead, and ſet him at his right hande in the heauenly *places*, 21 Farre aboue all principalitie, and power, and might, and domination, and euery Name, that is named, not in this world onely, but alſo in that that is to come, 22 And hath made all things ſubiect vnder his feete, and hath giuen him ouer all things *to be* the head to the Church, 23 Which is his body, *euen* the fulneſſe of him that filleth all in all things.

CHAP. 2. 8. *That wee are ſaued by grace.*

Coloſ. AND *you hath he quickened*, that were dead
2.13. in treſpaſſes and ſinnes, 2 Wherin in time paſt ye walked, according to the courſe of this worlde, *and* after the prince that ruleth in the aire, *euen* the ſpirite that nowe worketh in the children of diſobedience, 3 Among whom we alſo had our conuerſation in time paſt, in the luſtes of our fleſh, in fulfilling the will of the fleſh, and of the minde, and were by nature the children of wrath, as wel as others. 4 But God

which

which is riche in mercie, through his great loue wherewith he loued vs, 5 Euen when we were dead by sinnes, hath quickened vs together in Christ, *by whose* grace ye are saued, 6 And hath raised vs vp together, and made vs sit together in the heauenly *places* in Christ Iesus, 7 That hee might shewe in the ages to come the exceeding riches of his grace, through his kindenesse towards vs in Christ Iesus. 8 For by grace are ye saued through faith, and that not of your selues, it is the gift of God, 9 Not of works, least any man should boast himselfe. 10 For wee are his workmanship created in Christ Iesus vnto good workes, which God hath ordained, that wee should walke in them. 11 Wherfore remember, that ye being in times past Gentiles in the flesh, & called vncircumcision of them, which are called circumcision in the flesh, made with hands, 12 That yee were, *I say*, at that time without Christ, & were aliants from the common wealth of Israel, & were * strangers from the couenants of promes, and had no hope, and *were* without God in the world. 13 But now in Christ Iesus, ye which once were farre off, are made neere by the blood of Christ. 14 For hee is our peace which hath made of both one, and hath broken the stop of the partition wall, 15 * In abrogating through his flesh the hatred, *that is*, the Law of commandements *which standeth* in ordinances, for to make of twaine one new man in himselfe, so making peace, 16 And that he might reconcile

Rom. 9. 4.

Coloss. 2. 14.

reconcile both vnto God in one body by his crosse, & slay hatred thereby, 17 And came and preached peace to you which were afarre off, and to them that were neere. 18 For through him wee both haue an entrance vnto the Father by one Spirit. 19 Now therfore ye are no more strangers and forreiners: but citizens with the Saints, and of the houshold of God, 20 And are built vpon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Iesus Christ himselfe being the chiefe corner stone, 21 In whom all the building coupled together, groweth vnto an holy Temple in the Lord, 22 In whom ye also are knit together, to be the habitation of God by the Spirit.

CHAP. 3. 1. *The cause why the Iewes persecuted Paul.*

FOr this cause, I Paul *am* the prisoner of Iesus Christ for you Gentiles, 2 If ye haue heard of the dispensation of the grace of God, which is giuen me to youward, 3 *That is*, that God by reuelation hath shewed this mysterie vnto me (as I wrote aboue in few wordes, 4 Whereby when ye reade, ye may knowe mine vnderstanding in the mysterie of Christ) 5 Which in other ages was not opened vnto the sonnes of men, as it is nowe reueiled vnto his holy Apostles & Prophets by the Spirit, 6 That the Gentiles should be inheriters also, & of the same body, and partakers of his promes in Christ by the Gospel, 7 Whereof I am made a minister by the gift of the grace of God giuen vnto me through

through the effectuall working of his power. 8 Vnto me the leaſt of al Saints is this grace giuen, that I ſhould preach among the Gentiles the vnſearcheable riches of Chriſt. 9 And to make cleare vnto al men what the fellowſhip of the myſterie is, which frō the beginning of the worlde hath bene hid in God, who hath created all things by Ieſus Chriſt, 10 To the intent, that now vnto principalities and powers in heauenly *places*, might be knowen by the Church the manifolde wiſdome of God, 11 According to the eternal purpoſe, which he wrought in Chriſt Ieſus our Lorde: 12 By whome we haue boldneſſe and entrance with confidence by faith in him. 13 Wherefore I deſire that ye faint not at my tribulation for your ſakes, which is your glory. 14 For this cauſe I bow my knees vnto the Father of our Lorde Ieſus Chriſt, 15 (Of whom is named the whole family in heauen and in earth) 16 That he might graunt you according to the riches of his glory, that ye may be ſtrengthened by his Spirite in the inner man, 17 That Chriſt may dwel in your hearts by faith: that we being rooted & grounded in loue, 18 may be able to comprehend with al Saints, what is the breadth, and length, and deapth, & height: 19 And to know the loue of Chriſt, which paſſeth knowledge, that yee may bee filled with all fulneſſe of God. 20 Vnto him therefore that is able to doe exceeding abundantly aboue al that we aſke or thinke, according to the power that

Worketh in vs, 21 *Be* prayse in the Church by Christ Iesus, throughout al generations for euer, Amen.

CHAP. 4. 1. *An exhortatiō to mutual loue.*

I Therefore, being prisoner in the Lorde, pray you that yee walke worthy of the vocation whereunto ye are called, 2 With al humblenes of minde, & meekenes, with long suffring, suppor. ting one another through loue, 3 Endeuouring to keepe the vnitie of the Spirit in the bond of peace. 4 There *is* one body, and one Spirit, euen as ye are called in one hope of your vocation. 5 *There is* one Lorde, one Faith, one Baptisme, 6 One God and Father of all, which is a boue al, & through all, and in you all. 7 But vn to euery one of vs is giuen grace, according to the measure of the gift of Christ. 8 Wherefore he sayeth, When he ascended vp on high, he led captiuitie captiue, and gaue giftes vnto men. 9 (Now, in that he ascended, what is it but that he had also descended first into the lowest parts of the earth? 10 Hee that descended, is euen the same that ascended, farre aboue all heauens, that he might fil all things) 11 Hee therefore gaue some *to bee* Apostles, and some Prophetes, and some Euangelists, and some Pastours, and Teachers, 12 For the repairing of the Saints, for the worke of the ministery, *and* for the edification of the body of Christ, 13 Till wee all meete to gether (in the vnitie of faith and that acknowledging of the Sonne of God) vnto a perfit

man

man, *and* vnto the measure of the age of the fulnes of Christ, 14 That we hencefoorth be no more children, wanering and caried about with euery wind of doctrine, by the deceit of men, and with craftines, whereby they lay in waite to deceiue. 15 But let vs folowe the truth in loue, and in al things growe vp into him, which is the head, *that is*, Christ. 16 By whome all the body being coupled & knit together by euery ioynt, for the furniture *thereof* (according to the effectuall power, *which is* in the measure of euery part) receiueth increase of the body, vnto the edifying of it selfe in loue. 17 This I say therefore and testifie in the Lord, that ye hencefoorth walke not as *other Gentiles walke, in vanity of *Rom.* their minde, 18 Hauing their vnderstanding *1. 21.* darkned, & being strangers from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them because of the hardnesse of their heart: 19 Which being past feeling, hauing giuen themselues vnto wantonnesse, to worke al vncleannesse, *euen* with greedines. 20 But ye haue not so learned Christ, 21 If so bee yee haue heard him, and haue bene taught by him, as the truth is in Iesus, 22 *That *Colos.* ye cast off, concerning the conuersation *3.8.* in time past, that olde man which is corrupt through the deceiueable lustes, 23 And be renoued in the spirit of your minde, 24 And put on the newe man, which after God is created vnto righteousnes, and true holines. 25 Wherefore cast off lying, and speake euery man truth

vnto his neighbour: for we are members one of another. 26 Be angry, but ſinne not: let not the ſunne goe downe vpon your wrath, 27 Neither giue place to the deuill. 28 Let him that ſtole, ſteale no more: but let him rather labour, and worke with his handes the thing which is good, that hee may haue to giue vnto him that needeth. 29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouthes: but that which is good to the vſe of edifying, that it may miniſter grace vnto the hearers. 30 And grieue not the holy Spirit of God, by whom ye are ſealed vnto the day of redemption. 31 Let all bitterneſſe, and anger, and wrath, crying, and euill ſpeaking bee put away from you, with all maliciouſneſſe. 32 Bee ye courteous one to another, and tender hearted, freely forgiuing one another, euen as God for Chriſtes ſake freely forgaue you.

CHAP. 5. 15. *The duties of husbands & wiues.*

BE ye therefore followers of God as deare children, 2 *And walke in loue, euē as Chriſt hath loued vs, & hath giuen himſelfe for vs, *to be* an offering and a ſacrifice of a ſweete ſmelling ſauour to God. 3 *But fornication, and all vncleannes, or couetouſnes, let it not be once named among you, as it becommeth Saints. 4 Neither filthineſſe, neither fooliſh talking, neither ieſting, which are things not comely, but rather giuing of thankes. 5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, neither vncleane perſon, nor couetous

John 13.34.

Chap. 4. 29.

nerous person, which is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdome of Christ, & of God.
6 *Let no man deceiue you with vaine words: for, for such things cõmeth the wrath of God vpon the children of disobedience. 7 Be not therefore companions with them. 8 For yee were once darknes, but are now light in the Lorde: walke as children of light, 9 (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodnesse, and righteousnes, and trueth) 10 Approuing that which is pleasing to the Lord 11 And haue no fellowship with the vnfruitful workes of darknes, but euen reproue them rather. 12 For it is shame euen to speake of the things, which are done of them in secret. 13 But all things when they are reproued of the light, are manifest: for it is light that maketh all things manifest. 14 Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and stande vp from the dead, and Christ shall giue thee light. 15 Take heede therefore that yee walke circumspectly, not as fooles, but as wise, 16 Redeeming the season: for the daves are euill. 17 *Wherefore be ye not vnwise, but vnderstande what the will of the Lorde is. 18 And bee not drunken with wine, wherein is excesse: but bee fulfilled with the spirite, 19 Speaking vnto your selues in Psalmes & hymnes, and spirituall songs, singing, and making melody to the Lord in your hearts. 20 Giuing thankes alwayes for all things vnto God, euen the Father, in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, 21 Submitting your selues one to

Mat. 24. 4. *Coloss.* 4. 5. *Rom.* 12. 2. *Ephes* 4. 3.

Col. 3. 18. another in the feare of God. 22 *Wiues, subiect your ſelues vnto your husbands, as vnto ỹ Lorde. 1. Cor. 11. 3. 23 *For the husband is the wiues head, euen as Chriſt is the head of the Church, and the ſame is the Sauiour of *his* body. 24 Therefore, as the Church is in ſubiection to Chriſt, euen ſo let the wiues *bee* to their husbands in euery thing. Coloſ. 3. 19. 25 *Husbands, loue your wiues, euen as Chriſt loued the Church, & gaue himſelf for it. 26 That he might ſanctifie it, and cleanſe it by the waſhing of water through the word, 27 That he might make it vnto himſelfe a glorious Church, not hauing ſpot or wrinckle, or any ſuch thing: but that it ſhould bee holy and without blame. 28 So ought men to loue their wiues, as their owne bodies: he that loueth his wife, loueth himſelfe. 29 For no man euer yet hated his owne fleſh, but nouriſheth and cheriſheth it, euen as the Lord *doth* the Church. 30 For we are members Gene. 2. 24. of his body, of his fleſh, & of his bones. 31 *For this cauſe ſhall a man leaue father, and mother, matt. 19. 5. and ſhal cleaue to his wife, and they twaine ſhal be one fleſh. 32 This is a great ſecret, but I ſpeake mark. 10. 7. concerning Chriſt, and concerning the Church. 33 Therefore euery one of you, *let* 1. cor. 7. 29. euery one loue his wife, euen as himſelfe, and *let* the wife *ſee* that ſhe feare her husband.

CHAP. 6. *Dueties of children, ſeruants and maſters.*

Coloſ. 3. 20. CHildren, *obey your parẽts in the Lord: for this is right. 2 Honor thy father & mother (which

(which is the first commandement with promes)
3 That it may be well with thee, and that thou
mayst line long on earth. 4 And ye fathers, pro-
uoke not your children to wrath: but bring thē
vp in instruction and information of the Lord.
5 * Seruants, be obedient vnto them that are *Colos.*
your masters, according to the flesh, with feare 3.22.
and trembling in singlenesse of your hearts, as *1 tim.*
vnto Christ, 6 Not with seruice to the eye, as 2.9.
men pleasers, but as the seruants of Christ, doing *1.pet.*
the will of God from the heart, 7 With good 2.18.
will, seruing the Lord & not men. 8 And know
ye that whatsoeuer good thing any man doth,
that same shall he receiue of the Lord, whether
he be bond or free. 9 And ye masters doe the
same things vnto thē, putting away threatning, *Deut.*
and know that euen your master also is in hea- 10.17.
uen, neither is there * respect of person with *2.chr.*
him. 10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the 19.7.
Lord, and in the power of his might. 11 Put on *iob* 34.
the whole armour of God, that ye may be able 19 *act.*
to stand against the assaults of the deuill. 12 For 10.34.
we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but a- *rom.*
gainst *principalities, against powers, & against 2.11.
the worldly gouernors, *the princes* of the dark- *galat.*
nesse of this world, against spirituall wickednes- 2.6.
ses, *which are* in the hie places. 13 For this cause *colos.*
take vnto you the whole armour of God, that 3 25.
ye may be able to resist in the euill day, and ha- *1.pet.*
uing finished all things, stand fast. 14 Stand 1.17.
therefore, and your loines gird about with veri- *Chap.*

the, and hauing on the breſt plate of righteouſneſſe, 15 And your feet ſhod with the preparation of the Goſpel of peace. 16 Aboue all, take the ſhield of faith, wherewith ye may quench all the firie darts of the wicked, 17 And take the helmet of ſaluation, and the ſword of the Spitit, which is the word of God. 18 And pray alwayes with all maner prayer and ſupplication in the Spirit: and watch thereunto with all perſeuerance and ſupplication for all Saints, 19 And for me, that vtterance may be giuen vnto me, that I may open my mouth boldly to publiſh the ſecret of the Goſpel, 20 Whereof I am the ambaſſadour in bonds, that therein I may ſpeake boldly, as I ought to ſpeake. 21 But that ye may alſo know mine affaires, *and* what I do, Tychicus *my* deare brother and faithfull miniſter in the Lord, ſhall ſhew you of all things, 22 Whom I haue ſent vnto you for the ſame purpoſe, that ye might know mine affaires, and that he might comfort your hearts. 23 Peace *be* with the brethren, and loue with faith from God the Father, and *from* the Lord Ieſus Chriſt. 24 Grace *be* with all them which loue our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, to *their* immortalitie, Amen.

¶ Written from Rome vnto the Epheſians, *and ſent* by Tychicus.

THE

CHAP. 1. 27 *Exhortation to vnitie*
28 *and patience.*

PAVL and Timotheus the ſeruants of IESVS CHRIST, to all the Saints in Chriſt Ieſus which are at Philippi, with the Biſhops and Deacons: 2 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Ieſus Chriſt. 3 I thanke my God, *hauing* you in perfect memory, 4 (Alwayes in al my prayers for all you, praying with gladneſſe) 5 Becauſe of the fellowſhip which ye haue in the Goſpel, from the firſt day vnto now. 6 And I am perſwaded of this ſame thing, that he that hath begun *the* good worke in you, will perfourme it vntill the day of Ieſus Chriſt, 7 As it becommeth me ſo to iudge of you all, becauſe I haue you in remembrance, that both in my bands, and in *my* defence, and confirmation of the Goſpel you all were partakers of my grace. 8 For God is my record, how I long after you all from the very heart roote in Ieſus Chriſt, 9 And this I pray, that your loue may abound, yet more and more in knowledge, and in all iudgement, 10 That ye may allow thoſe things which are beſt, that ye may be pure, & without offence vnto the day of Chriſt, 11 Filled with the fruits of righteouſneſſe, which are by Ieſus Chriſt vnto the glory and praiſe of God. 12 I

would

Would ye vnderſtood, brethren, that the things which *haue come* vnto me, are turned rather to the furthering of the Goſpel, 13 So that my bands in Chriſt are famous thorowout all the iudgement hall, & in all other *places*, 14 Inſomuch that many of the brethren of the Lord are boldened through my bandes, and dare more frankly ſpeake ỹ word. 15 Some preach Chriſt euen through enuy and ſtrife, and ſome alſo of good will. 16 The one part preacheth Chriſt of contention *and* not purely, ſuppoſing to adde more affliction to my bands. 17 But the other of loue, knowing that I am ſet for the defence of the Goſpel. 18 What then? yet Chriſt is preached al maner wayes, whether it *be* vnder a pretence, or ſincerely: and I therein ioy: yea, and will ioy. 19 For I know that this ſhall turne to my ſaluation through your prayer, and by the helpe of the Spirit of Ieſus Chriſt, 20 As I feruently looke for, & hope, that in nothing I ſhall be aſhamed, but that with all confidence, as alwayes, ſo now Chriſt ſhalbe magnified in my body, whether it *be* by life, or by death. 21 For Chriſt *is* to me both in life, and in death aduantage. 22 And whether to liue in the fleſh *were* profitable for me, & what to chuſe I know not. 23 For I am diſtreſſed betweene both, deſiring to be looſed and to be with Chriſt, which is beſt of all. 24 Neuertheleſſe, to abide in the fleſh, is more needfull for you. 25 And this am I ſure of, that I ſhall abide, and with you all continue,

for your furtherance and ioy of *your* faith, 26 That ye may more abundantly reioyce in Iesus Christ for me, by my comming to you again. 27 Onely let your conuersation be, as it becommeth the Gospel of Christ, that whether I come and see you, or els be absent, I may heare of your matters that ye continue in one Spirit, and in one minde fighting together through the faith of the Gospel. 28 And in nothing feare your aduersaries, which is to them a token of perdition, and to you of saluation, and that of God. 29 For vnto you it is giuen for Christ, that not onely ye should beleeue in him, but also suffer for his sake, 30 Hauing ỹ same fight, which ye saw in me, and now heare *to be* in me.

CHAP. 2. 3 *Humilitie commended by Christ's example.*

IF *there be* therfore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of loue, if any felowship of the Spirit, if any compassion & mercy, 2 Fulfill my ioy, that ye be like minded, hauing ỹ same loue, being of one accord, and of one iudgement, 3 That nothing *be done* through contention, or vaine glory, but that in meekenesse of minde euery man esteeme other better then himselfe. 4 Looke not euery man on his owne things, but euery man also on the things of other men. 5 Let the same minde be in you that was euen in Christ Iesus, 6 Who being in the forme of God, thought it no robberie to be equal wᵗʰ God: 7 But he made himselfe of no reputation, and tooke

tooke on him the forme of a ſeruant, and was made like vnto men, and was found in ſhape as a man. 8 He humbled himſelfe & became obedient vnto the death, euen the death of the Croſſe. 9 Wherfore God hath alſo highly exalted him, & giuē him a Name aboue euery name, 10 That at the name of Ieſus ſhould euery knee bow, *both* of things in heauen, and things in earth, and things vnder y^e earth, 11 And that euery tongue ſhould confeſſe, that Ieſus Chriſt *is* the Lord, vnto the glory of God the Father. 12 Wherefore my beloued, as ye haue alwayes obeyed me, not as in my preſence onely, but now much more in mine abſence, *ſo* make an end of your owne ſaluation with feare and trembling. 13 For it is God which worketh in you, both the will and the deed, *euen* of *his* good pleaſure. 14 Doe all things without * murmuring and reaſonings, 15 That ye may be blameleſſe, and pure, *as* the ſonnes of God without rebuke in the mids of a naughty and crooked nation, among whom ye ſhine as *lights in the world, 16 Holding forth the word of life, that I may reioyce in the day of Chriſt, that I haue not run in vaine, neither haue laboured in vaine. 17 Yea, and though I be offered vp vpon the ſacrifice, and ſeruice of your faith, I am glad, & reioyce with you all. 18 For the ſame cauſe alſo be ye glad, and reioyce with me. 19 And I truſt in the Lord Ieſus, to ſend * Timotheus ſhortly vnto you, that I alſo may be of good comfort, when I know your ſtate.

20 For

20 For I haue no man like minded, who will
faithfully care for your matters. 21 *For al seeke 1.Cor.
their owne, and not that which is Iesus Christes. 10.24.
22 But ye know the proofe of him, that as a son
with the father, he hath serued with me in the
Gospel. 23 Him therfore I hope to send assoone
as I know how it will go with me, 24 And trust
in the Lord, that I also my selfe shal come shortly. 25 But I supposed it necessary to send *my*
brother Epaphroditus vnto you, my companion
in labour, & fellow souldier, euen your messenger, and he that ministred vnto me such things as
I wanted. 26 For he longed after all you, & was
full of heauinesse, because ye had heard, that he
had bene sicke. 27 And no doubt he was sicke,
very neere vnto death: but God had mercy on
him, and not on him onely, but on me also: lest
I should haue sorow vpon sorow. 28 I sent
him therefore the more diligently, that when ye
should see him againe, ye might reioyce, and I
might be the lesse sorowfull. 29 Receiue him
therefore in the Lord with all gladnesse, and
make much of such: 30 Because that for the
worke of Christ he was nere vnto death, and regarded not his life, to fulfill that seruice which
was lacking on your part toward me.

CHAP. 3. 2 *False apostles confuted.* 10 *The force of faith.*

MOreouer, my brethrē, reioyce in the Lord.
It grieueth me not to write ye ſame things
to you, and for you it is a sure thing. 2 Beware

of

of dogges, beware of euill workers: beware of the concision. 3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and reioyce in Christ Iesus, & haue no confidence in the flesh. 4 Though I might also haue confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that hee hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, much more I, 5 Circumcised the eight day, of the kinred of 2. Cor. Israel, of the tribe of Beniamin, * an Ebrew of 11.22. the Ebrewes by * the Law a Pharise. 6 Con- Acts cerning zeale, I persecuted the Church: tou- 23.6. ching the righteousnesse which is in the Law, I was vnrebukeable. 7 But the things that were vantage vnto me, the same I counted losse for Christes sake. 8 Yea, doubtlesse I thinke all things but losse for the excellent knowledge sake of Christ Iesus my Lord, for whom I haue counted all things losse, and do iudge *them* to be doung, that I might winne Christ, 9 And might be found in him, *that is*, not hauing mine owne righteousnesse, which is of the Law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, *euen* the righteousnes which is of God through faith, 10 That I may know him, and the vertue of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his afflictions. and be made conformable vnto his death, 11 If by any meanes I might attaine vnto the resurrection of the dead: 12 Not as though I had already attained *to it*, either were already perfit: but I follow, if that I may comprehend *that* for whose sake also I am comprehended of

Christ

Iesus. 13 Brethren, I count not my selfe, that I haue attained *to it*, but one thing *I doe:* I forget that which is behinde, and endeuour my selfe vnto that which is before, 14 And followe hard toward the marke, for the price of the high calling of God in Christ Iesus. 15 Let vs therefore as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if ye be otherwise minded, God shall reueile euen the same vnto you. 16 Neuertheless, *in that* whereunto we are come, let vs proceede by one rule, that we may minde one thing. 17 Brethren, be followers of me, and looke on them, which walke so, as ye haue vs for an ensample. 18 *For many walke, of whom I haue tolde you often, and now tell you weeping, *that they are* the enemies of the Crosse of Christ. 19 Whose end *is* damnation, whose God *is their* belly, and whose glory *is* to their shame, which minde earthly things. 20 But our conuersation is in heauen, from whence also we looke for the *Sauiour, *euen* the Lord Iesus Christ, 21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like vnto his glorious body, according to the working, wherby he is able euen to subdue all things vnto himselfe.

Rom. 16.

1. Cor. 1.7. Tit. 2.13.

CHAP. 4. 1 *Liberalitie commended.*

THerefore, my brethren, beloued and longed for, *my* ioy & my crowne, so continue in the Lord, ye beloued. 2 I pray Euodias, & beseech Syntyche, that they be of one accord in the Lord. 3 Yea, and I beseech thee, faithfull yokefellow, helpe

helpe thoſe *women*, which laboured w me in the
Goſpel, with Clement alſo, & with other my fel-
Reue. low laborers, whoſe names *are* in the booke of
3.5. & life. 4 Reioyce in the Lord alway, againe I ſay,
10.8. reioyce. 5 Let your patient minde be knowen
& 21. vnto all men. The Lord *is* at hand. 6 Be nothing
27. carefull, but in all things let your requeſts be
ſhewed vnto God in prayer, and ſupplication w
giuing of thanks. 7 And ye peace of God which
paſſeth all vnderſtanding, ſhall preſerue your
hearts & minds in Chriſt Ieſus. 8 Furthermore,
brethrē, whatſoeuer things are true, whatſoeuer
things *are* honeſt, whatſoeuer things *are* iuſt,
whatſoeuer things *are* pure, whatſoeuer things
are worthy loue, whatſoeuer things *are* of good
report, if there *be* any vertue, or if there *be* any
praiſe, thinke on theſe things, 9 Which ye haue
both learned, & receiued, & heard, & ſeene in me:
thoſe things do, & the God of peace ſhalbe with
you. 10 Now I reioyce alſo in the Lord greatly,
that now at the laſt your care for me ſpringeth
afreſh, wherein notwithſtanding ye were care-
full, but ye lacked oppottunity. 11 I ſpeake not
becauſe of want: for I haue learned in whatſoe-
uer ſtate I am, therewith to be content. 12 And
I can be abaſed, & I can abound: euery where &
all things I am inſtructed, both to be full, & to be
hungry, & to abound, & to haue want. 13 I am
able to *do* all things through ye helpe of Chriſt
which ſtrengtheneth me. 14 Notwithſtanding
ye haue well done, that ye did communicate

affliction. 15 And ye Philippians knowe also inthe beginning of the Gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no Church communicated with me, cõcerning the matter of giuing and receiuing, but ye onely. 16 For euen *when I was* in Thessalonica, ye sent once, & afterward twise for my necessitie, 17 Not that I desire a gift: but I desire the fruite which may further your reckoning. 18 Nowe I haue receiued all, and haue plentie: I was euen filled, after that I had receiued of Epaphroditus that which *came* from you, an odour that smelleth sweete, a sacrifice acceptable and pleasant to God. 19 And my God shall fulfill all your necessities through his riches with glory in Iesus Christ. 20 Vnto God euen our Father, *be* praise for euermore, Amen. 21 Salute all the Saints in Christ Iesus. The brethren which are with me, greete you. 22 All the Saints salute you, and most of all they which are of Cesars household. 23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, *be* with you all, Amen.

Written to the Philippians from Rome, *and sent* by Epaphroditus.

THE EPISTLE OF PAVL to the Colossians.

CHAP. 1. 20. *That all the parts of our saluation consist in Christ alone.*

PAVL an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of God, & Timotheus our brother. 2 To them which are at Colosse, Saints and brethren in

Christ: Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, & *from* the Lord Iesus Christ. 3 We giue thankes to God euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, alwayes praying for you. 4 Since we heard of your faith in Christ Iesu, and of *your* loue toward all Saints, 5 For the hopes sake, which is laid vp for you in heauen, whereof ye haue heard before by the worde of trueth, *which is* the Gospel, 6 Which is come vnto you, euen as *it is* vnto all the world, and is fruitfull as *it is* also among you, from the day that ye heard & truely knew the grace of God. 7 As ye also learned of Epaphras our deare fellow seruant, which is for you a faithful minister of Christ: 8 Who hath also declared vnto vs your loue in the Spirit. 9 For this cause we also since ỹ day we heard of it, cease not to pray for you, & to desire ỹ ye might be fulfilled with knowledge of his will, in all wisdome, & spirituall vnderstanding, 10 That ye might walke worthy of the Lord, & please him in all things, being fruitfull in all good workes, & increasing in the knowledge of God, 11 Strengthned with all might through his glorious power, vnto all patience, and long suffering with ioyfulnes,

Mat. 3.17. *&* 17. *&* 2. *pet.* 1.17. 12 Giuing thankes vnto the Father, which hath made vs meete to be partakers of ỹ inheritance of the Saints in light, 13 Who hath deliuered vs from the power of darkenes, & hath translated vs into the kingdome * of his deare Sonne, 14 In whom we haue redemption through his

blood *that is*, the forgiuenes of sinnes, 15 Who is the * image of the inuisible God, the first be- *Heb.*
gotten of euery creature. 16 *For by him were* 1.3.
al things created, which are in heauen, & which *Thou*
are in earth, things visible and inuisible: whether 1.3.
they be Thrones, or Dominiõs, or Principalities,
or power, al things were created by him, & for
him. 17 And he is before al things, & in him all
things consist 18 And he is ỹ head of the body
of the Church: he is the beginning, * *and* the first *Reue.*
begotten of the dead, that in al things he might 1.5.
haue the preeminence. 19 * For it pleased *the* 1.*cor.*
Father, ỹ in him should al fulnesse dwel, 20 And 15.20
through peace made by that blood of that his *Chap.*
crosse, to reconcile to himselfe through him, 2.9.
through him, *I say*, all things, both which *are* in *Iohn*
earth, & which *are* in heauen, 21 And you which 1.14.
were in time past stragers and enemies, because
your mindes *were set* in euill workes, hath he
now also reconciled, 22 In that body of his flesh
through death, to make you holy, and vnblame-
able and without fault in his sight, 23 If ye con-
tinue grounded and stablished in the faith, & be
not mooued away from ỹ hope of the Gospel,
whereof ye haue heard, & which hath bin prea-
ched to euery creature which is vnder heauen,
whereof I Paul am a minister. 24 Now reioyce
I in my sufferings for you, & fulfill the rest of the
afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies
sake which is the Church, 25 Whereof I am a
minister, according to the dispensation of God,

which is giuen me vnto youward, to fulfill the
Rom. word of God, 26 * *Which is* the mysterie hid
16.25. since the world began, & from *all* ages, but now
ephes. is made manifest to his Saints, 27 To whom
3.9. God would make knowen what is the riches
of his glorious mysterie among the Gentiles,
1.Tim which *riches* is Christ in you,* y hope of glory,
1.10. 28 Whom we preach, admonishing euery man,
titus and teaching euery man in all wisdome, that we
1.2. may present euery man perfect in Christ Iesus,
1 pet. 29 Whereunto I also labour & striue, according
1.20. to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

CHAP. 2. 16. *Of abstinence from meates.*
18. *Of worshipping of Angels.*

FOr I would ye knewe what great fighting I haue for your sakes, & for them of Laodicea, and for as many as haue not seene my person in the flesh, 2 That their hearts might be comforted, & they knit together in loue, & in all riches of the full assurance of vnderstanding, to know the mysterie of God, euen the Father, and of Christ. 3 In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdome and knowledge 4 And this I say, least any man should beguile you with enticing
2.Cor. wordes: 5 *For though I be absent in the flesh,
5.1. yet am I with you in the spirit, reioycing, and beholding your order, and your stedfast faith in Christ. 6 As ye haue therefore receiued Christ Iesus the Lord, so walke in him, 7 Rooted and built in him, & stablished in the faith, as ye haue bin taught, abounding therein with thankesgiuing.

ting. 8 Beware leſt there be any man ỹ ſpoile you through philoſophie, and vaine deceite, through the traditions of men, according to the rudiments of the world, and not after Chriſt. 9 For in him dwelleth al the fulneſſe of ỹ Godhead bodily. 10 And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principalitie & power. 11 In whom alſo ye are * circumciſed with circumciſion made without hands, by putting off the ſinful body of the fleſh, through the circumciſion of Chriſt, 12 In that ye * are buried with him through Baptiſme, in whom ye are alſo raiſed vp together through the faith of the operation of God, which rayſed him from the dead. 13 *And you which were dead in ſinnes, & in the vncircumciſion of your fleſh, hath he quickened together with him, forgiuing you all *your* treſpaſſes, 14 And putting out the *hand writing of ordinances that was againſt vs, which was contrary to vs, he euen tooke it out of the way, and faſtned it vpon the croſſe, 15 And hath ſpoyled the Principalities, and powers, and hath made a ſhew of them openly, & hath triumphed ouer them in the ſame *croſſe*. 16 Let no man therefore condemne you in meate and drinke, or in reſpect of an holy day, or of the new moone, or of the Sabbath *dayes*, 17 Which are *but* a ſhadowe of things to come: but ỹ body is in Chriſt. 18 Let no man at his pleaſure beare rule ouer you by humbleneſſe of mind, and worſhipping of Angels, aduancing himſelfe in thoſe things

Rom. 2.29.

Rom. 6.4.

ephes. 1.19.

Ephes 2.1.

Ephes. 2.15.

which he neuer ſawe, raſhly puſt vp with his fleſhly minde, 19 And holdeth not the head whereof all the body furniſhed and knit together by ioynts and bandes, increaſeth with the increaſing of God. 20 Wherefore if ye be dead with Chriſt from the ordinances of the world, why, as though ye liued in ỹ world, are ye burdened with traditions? 21 *As*, Touch not, Taſte not, Handle not. 22 Which all periſh with the vſing, *and are* after the commandements & doctrines of men. 23 Which things haue in deede a ſhew of wiſdome, in voluntarie religion and humbleneſſe of mind, and in not ſparing the body, which are things of no value, *ſith they pertaine* to the filling of the fleſh.

CHAP. 3. 1. *Of earthly, and of heauenly exerciſes.*

IF ye then be riſen with Chriſt, ſeeke thoſe things which are aboue, where Chriſt ſitteth at the right hand of God. 2 Set your affections on things which are aboue, & not on things which are on the earth. 3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Chriſt in God. 4 When Chriſt which is our life, ſhall appeare, then ſhall ye alſo appeare with him in glory. 5 *Mortifie therefore your members which are on the earth, fornication, vncleannes, the inordinate affection, euill concupiſcence, and couetouſnes which is idolatrie. 6 For the which things ſake ỹ wrath of God commeth on the children of diſobedience, 7 Wherein ye alſo walked once, when ye liued

Ephe. 5.3.

liued in them. 8 But now put ye away euen all
these things, wrath, anger, maliciousnes, cursed
speaking, filthy speaking, out of your mouth.
9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye haue
put off the olde man, with his workes, 10 And
haue put on the new, which is renued in know-
ledge after the image of him that created him,
11 Where is neither Grecian nor Iew, circumci-
sion nor vncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian,
bond, free: but Christ is all, and in all things.
12 Now therefore as the elect of God holy and
beloued, put on the bowels of mercies, kindnes,
humblenes of mind, meekenesse, long suffering:
13 Forbearing one another, and forgiuing one
another, if any man haue a quarrell to another,
euen as Christ forgaue, euen so doe ye. 14 And
aboue all these things, *put on* loue, which is the
bond of perfectnesse. 15 And let the peace of
God rule in your hearts, to ỹ which ye are cal-
led in one body, and be ye thankfull. 16 Let
the word of Christ dwell in you plenteously in
all wisdome, teaching and admonishing your
owne selues, in psalmes, and hymnes, and spiri-
tuall songs, singing with a grace in your hearts
to the Lord. 17 *And whatsoeuer ye shall doe, *1.Cor.*
in worde or deede, *doe* all in the Name of the *10.31.*
Lord Iesus, giuing thankes to God euen the Fa- *Ephe.*
ther by him. 18 *Wiues, submit your selues vnto *5.22.*
your husbands, as it is comely in the Lorde. *1.Pet.*
19 *Husbands, loue your wiues, and be not bit- *3.1.*
ter vnto them. 20 *Children, obey your Parents *Ephe.*
6.1.

in all things: for that is well pleasing vnto the Lord. 21 Fathers, prouoke not your children to
Ephe. 6.5. anger, least they be discouraged. 22 *Seruants,
Titus 2.9. be obedient vnto them that are *your* masters
1.pet. 2.18. according to the flesh in al things, not with eye seruice as men pleasers, but in singlenesse of heart, fearing God. 23 And whatsoeuer ye doe, doe it heartily, as to the Lord, and not to men, 24 Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receiue the reward of the inheritance: for ye serue the Lord Christ. 25 But he that doeth wrong, shall receiue for the wrong that he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

CHAP. 4. 2. *Of prayer and gratious speach.*

YE masters, doe vnto your seruants, ỹ which is iust, and equall, knowing that ye also haue
Luke 18.1. a master in heauen. 2 *Continue in prayer, and
2.thes 3.17. watch in the same with thankesgiuing, 3 *Pray-
Ephe. 6.18. ing also for vs, that God may open vnto vs the
2.thes 3.1. doore of vtterance, to speake the mysterie of
Ephe. 5.15. Christ: wherefore I am also in bondes, 4 That I may vtter it, as it becommeth me to speake. 5 *Walke wisely toward them that are without, and redeeme the season. 6 *Let* your speach *be* gracious alwayes, & powdred with salt, that ye may knowe howe to answere euery man. 7 Tychicus *our* beloued brother and faithfull minister, and fellow seruant in the Lord, shal declare vnto you my whole state, 8 Whom I haue sent vnto you for the same purpose, that be might

might know your ſtate, & might comfort your
hearts, 9 With Oneſimus a faithful & a beloued
brother, who is one of you. They ſhal ſhew you
of all things here. 10 Ariſtarchus my priſon fel-
lowe ſaluteth you, and Marcus, Barnabas couſin
(touching whom ye receiued commandements,
If he come vnto you, receiue him) 11 And Ieſus
which is called Iuſtus, which are of the circum-
ciſion. Theſe onely are my worke fellowes vn-
to the kingdome of God, which haue bene vn-
to my conſolation. 12 Epaphras the ſeruant of
Chriſt, which is one of you, ſaluteth you, and
alwayes ſtriueth for you in prayers, that ye may
ſtand perfect, and full in all the will of God.
13 For I beare him record, that he hath a great
zeale for you, and for them of Laodicea, and
them of Hierapolis. 14 * Luke the beloued Phi- 2. Tim.
ſtion greeteth you, and Demas. 15 Salute the 4. 11.
brethren which are of Laodicea, and Nymphas,
and the Church which is in his houſe. 16 And
when this Epiſtle is read of you, cauſe that it be
read in the Church of the Laodiceans alſo, and
that ye likewiſe reade the Epiſtle *written* from
Laodicea. 17 And ſay to Archippus, Take heede
to the miniſterie, that thou haſt receiued in the
Lord, that thou fulfill it. 18 The ſalutation by
the hand of me Paul. Remember my bandes.
Grace *be* with you, Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to the Coloſſi-
ans, *and ſent* by Tychicus and O-
neſimus.

THE

CHAP. 1. 4. *What ſoeuer is praiſeworthy in any, is of the goodneſſe of God, &c.*

PAul and Syluanus, and Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Theſſalonians, *which is* in God the Father, and in the Lord Ieſus Chriſt: Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, & *from* the Lord Ieſus Chriſt. 2 We giue God thankes alwayes for you all, making mention of you in our prayers 3 Without ceaſing, remembring your effectuall faith, and diligent loue, and the patience of *your* hope in our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, in the ſight of God, euen our Father, 4 Knowing, beloued brethren, that ye are elect of God. 5 For our Gospel was not vnto you in word onely, but alſo in power and in the holy Ghoſt, & in much aſſurance, as ye know alſo after what maner we were among you for your ſakes. 6 And ye became followers of vs, and of the Lord, and receiued the word in much affliction, with ioy of the holy Ghoſt. 7 So that ye were as enſamples to all that beleeue in Macedonia and Achaia. 8 For from you ſounded out the word of the Lord, not in Macedonia and in Achaia onely: but your faith alſo which is toward God, ſpread abroade in all quarters, that we needе not to ſpeake any thing. 9 For they themſelues ſhewe of vs what maner of entring in we had vnto you, and how ye turned to God from idoles, to ſerue the liuing and true God,

10 And

10 And to looke for his Sonne from heauen, whom he rayſed from the dead, *euen* Ieſus which deliuereth vs from that wrath to come.

CHAP. 2. 5. *The preacher muſt neither ayme at gaine, nor praiſe of men.*

FOr ye your ſelues knowe, brethren, that our entrance in vnto you was not in vaine. 2 But euen after that we had ſuffered before, & were ſhamefully entreated at *Philippi (as ye know) we were bolde in our God, to ſpeake vnto you the Goſpel of God with much ſtriuing. 3 For our exhortation was not by deceit, nor by vncleannes, nor by guile. 4 But as we were allowed of God, that the Goſpel ſhould be committed *vnto vs*, ſo we ſpeake, not as they that pleaſe men, but God, which approoueth our hearts. 5 Neither yet did we euer vſe flattering words, as ye know, nor coloured couetouſnes, God *is* record. 6 Neither ſought we praiſe of men, neither of you, nor of others when we might haue bene chargeable, as the Apoſtles of Chriſt. 7 But we were gentle among you, euen as a nource cheriſheth her children. 8 Thus being affectioned towards you, our good will was to haue dealt vnto you, not y Goſpel of God onely, but alſo our owne ſoules, becauſe ye were deare vnto vs. 9 For ye remember, brethren, *our labour & trauaile: for we laboured day & night, becauſe we would not be chargeable vnto any of you, and preached vnto you the Goſpel of God. 10 Ye *are* witneſſes, & God *alſo* how holily and iuſtly,

*Act. 16.12.

*Acts 20.34. 1.cor. 4.12. 2.the. 3.8.

Iuſtly, and vnblameably we behaued our ſelues among you that beleeue. 11 As ye know how that we exhorted you, and comforted, and beſought euery one of you (as a father his children)

Ephe. 4. 1. 12 That ye would *walke worthy of God, who hath called you vnto his kingdome and glory.

Phil. 1. 27. 13 For this cauſe alſo thanke wee God without ceaſing, that whē ye receiued the word of God,

Col. 1. 10. which yee heard of vs, ye receiued it not as the word of men, but as it is in deede the worde of God, which alſo worketh in you that beleeue. 14 For brethren, ye are become folowers of the Churches of God, which in Iudea are in Chriſt Ieſus, becauſe yee haue alſo ſuffered the ſame things of your owne coũtrey men, euen as they *haue* of the Iewes, 15 Who both killed the Lord Ieſus & their owne Prophets, and haue perſecuted vs away, and God they pleaſe not, & are contrary to al men, 16 And forbid vs to preach vnto the Gentiles, that they might be ſaued, to fulfil their ſinnes alwaies: for ẏ wrath *of God* is come on them, to the vtmoſt. 17 For aſmuch brethren, as we were kept from you for a ſeaſon, concerning ſight, but not in the heart, we enforced the more to ſee your face with great deſire. 18 Therfore we would haue come vnto you (I Paul at leaſt once or twiſe) but Satan hindred vs. 19 For what is our hope or ioy, or crowne of reioycing? are not euen you it in the preſence of our Lorde Ieſus Chriſt at his comming? 20 Yes, yee are our glory and ioy.

CHAP.

WHerefore ſince we coulde nol onger forbeare, we thought it good to remaine at Athens alone, 2 * And haue ſent Timotheus our brother and miniſter of God, and our labour fellow in the Goſpel of Chriſt, to eſtabliſh you, and to comfort you touching your faith, 3 That no man ſhould be moued with theſe afflictions: for ye your ſelues knowe, that we are appointed thereunto. 4 For verely when wee were with you, we tolde you before that wee ſhould ſuffer tribulatiõs euen as it came to paſſe, and ye knowe it. 5 Euen for this cauſe, when I could no longer forbeare, I ſent *him*, that I might know of your faith, leaſt the tempter had tempted you in any ſort, and that our labour had bene in vaine. 6 But nowe lately when Timotheus came from you vnto vs: and brought vs good tidings of your faith and loue, and that ye haue good remembrance of vs alwayes, deſiring to ſee vs, as we alſo *do* you, 7 Therefore, brethren, wee had conſolation in you, in all our affliction and neceſsitie through your faith. 8 For nowe are we aliue, if ye ſtand faſt in the Lorde. 9 For what thankes can wee recompenſe to God againe for you, for all the ioy wherewith wee reioyce for your ſakes before our God, 10 Night and day, * praying exceedingly that we might ſee your face, and might accompliſh that which is lacking in your faith? 11 Nowe *and* God himſelfe, euen our Father, and our Lorde Ieſus

Acts. 16.1.

Rom. 1.10.

15.23.

Iesus Christ, guide our iourney vnto you, 12 And the Lord increase you, and make you abound in loue one toward another, and towarde all men,
Chap. 5. 23. 1. cor. 1. 8. euen as wee doe towarde you: 13 *To make your hearts stable, and vnblameable in holinesse before God, euen our Father, at the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ with all his Saints.

CHAP. 4. 9. *Of brotherly loue,* 13 *Immoderate sorow,* 15 *The resurrection.*

AND furthermore we beseech you, brethren, and exhort you in the Lorde Iesus, that yee increase more & more, as yee haue receiued of vs, howe ye ought to walke, and to please God.
2 For ye know what commandements we gaue
Rom. 12. 1. ephes. 5. 17. you by the Lord Iesus. 3 *For this is the wil of God, *euen* your sanctification, *and* that ye should abstaine from fornication, 4 That euery one of you should know, how to possesse his vessell in
1. cor. 6. 8. holinesse and honour, 5 *And* not in the lust of cõcupiscence, euen as the Gentiles which know
1. cor. 1. 2. not God: 6 *That no man oppresse or defraud his brother in any matter: for the Lorde *is* auenger of all such things, as wee also haue tolde
Iohn 13. 34. & 15 you before time, and testified. 7 *For God hath not called vs vnto vncleannesse, but vnto holi-
12. 1. iohn 2. 8. & 4. nesse. 8 He therfore that despiseth *these things*, despiseth not man, but God who hath euen giuen you his holy Spirit. 9 But as touching brotherly loue, ye neede not that I write vnto you *for ye are taught of God to loue one another.
21. 10 Yea, and that thing verely ye doe vnto all the brethren,

beleeue, which are throughout all Macedonia: but we beseech you brethren, that yee increase more and more, 11 And that yee studie to bee quiet, and to meddle with your owne businesse, and to worke with your owne handes, as wee commaunded you, 12 That yee may behaue your selues honestly towarde them which are without, and that nothing be lacking vnto you. 13 I would not, brethren, haue you ignorant concerning them which are asleepe, that ye sorowe not euen as other which haue no hope. 14 For if we beleeue that Iesus is dead, and is risen, euen so them which sleepe in Iesus, will God bring with him. 15 For this say wee vnto you by the worde of the Lorde, that wee which liue and are remayning in the comming of the Lorde, shall not preuent them which sleepe. 16 For the Lorde himselfe shall descende from heauen with a shoute, * and with the voyce of the Archangel, and with the trumpet of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: 17 Then shall we which liue and remaine, bee caught vp with them also in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the ayre: and so shall wee be euer with the Lord. 18 Wherefore, comfort your selues one another with these wordes.

* 1 Cor. 15.23

CHAP. 5. 1. *Curious enquiring of Christs coming condemned* 12 *Diuers good precepts.*

BVt of the times and seasons, brethren, ye haue no neede that I write vnto you. 2 For yee your selues know perfectly, that the day of the Lord

Lord shall come, euen as a thiefe in the night. 3 For when they shal say, Peace, and safetie, then shal come vpon them sudden destruction, as the trauaile vpon a woman with child, and they shal not escape. 4 But ye brethren, are not in darknes, that that day should come on you, as it were a thiefe. 5 Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, neither of the darknes. 6 Therefore let vs not sleepe as doe other, but let vs watch and be sober. 7 For they that sleepe, sleepe in the night, and they that bee drunken, are drunken in the night. 8 But let vs which are of the day, be sober, *putting on the breast plate of faith, and loue, and of the hope of saluation for an helme. 9 For God hath not appointed vs vnto wrath, but to obtaine saluation by the meanes of our Lorde Iesus Christ, 10 Which died for vs, that whether we wake or sleepe, we shoulde liue together with him. 11 Wherfore exhort one another, and edifie one another, euen as yee doe.

*Esay 59.17 ephes. 6.17.

12 Now we beseech you, brethren, that ye acknowledge them, which labour among you, and are ouer you in the Lorde, and admonish you, 13 That ye haue them in singular loue for their workes sake. Bee at peace among your selues. 14 Wee desire you, brethren, admonish them that are out of order: cõfort the feeble minded, beare with the weake: be patient toward all men. 15 *See that none recompense euil for euil vnto any man, but euer folow that which is good

*Prou. 17.13. & 20. 22. matt. 5.39. rom. 12.17. 1.pet. 3.9.

bo

towarde your selues, and towarde all men. 17 Reioyce euermore. 17 * Pray continually. Luke 18.1. In all things giue thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Iesus toward you. 19 Quench not the Spirit. 20 Despise not prophecying. 21 Try all things, and keepe that which is good. 22 Abstaine from all appearance of euil. 23 Now the very God of peace sanctifie you throughout: and I pray God that your whole spirit and soule and body may be kept blameless vnto the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ. 24 * Faithful is he which calleth you, which will also doe it. 1. Cor. 1. 9. 25 Brethren, pray for vs. 26 Greete all the brethren with an holy kisse. 27 I charge you in the Lord, that this Epistle be read vnto all the brethren the Saints. 28 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you, Amen.

¶ The first *Epistle* vnto the Thessalonians, written from Athens.

THE SECOND EPISTLE of Paul to the Thessalonians.

CHAP. I. 1. *Faith, charitie, and patience commended.*

PAul and Syluanus, & Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians, *which is* in God our Father, and in the Lorde Iesus Christ: 2 Grace *bee* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lorde Iesus

1.Thes 1.3. Christ. 3 *We ought to thanke God alwaies for you, brethren, as it is meet, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, & the loue of euery one of you toward another aboundeth, 4 so that wee our selues reioyce of you in the Churches of God, because of your patience and faith in al your persecutions and tribulations that ye suffer. 5 *Which is a manifest token of the righteous iudgement of God, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdome of God, for the which ye also suffer. 6 For it is a righteous thing with God, to recompence tribulation to them that trouble you, 7 And to you which are troubled rest with vs, *when the Lord Iesus shal shew himselfe from heauen with his mighty Angels, 8 in flaming fire, rendring vengeance vnto them that doe not know God, & which obey not vnto the Gospel of our Lord Iesus Christ, 9 Which shall be punished with euerlasting perdition, from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power, 10 When he shal come to be glorified in his Saints, and to bee made marueilous in all them that beleeue (because our testimonie toward you was beleeued) in that day. 11 Wherefore, we also pray alwaies for you, that our God may make you worthy of this calling, and fulfil all the good pleasure of his goodnesse, and the worke of faith with power, 12 That the Name of our Lorde Iesus Christ may bee glorified in you, and yee in him, according to the grace of our God, and of the Lord Iesus Christ.

1.Thes 1.2. Iude 6. 1.Thes 4.16.

CHA

NOw we beseech you brethren, by the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, and by our assembling vnto him, 2 That ye be not suddenly moued from *your* minde, nor troubled, neither by spirit, nor by worde, nor by letter, as *it were* fro vs, as though the day of Christ were at hand. 3 Let no man deceiue you by any meanes: for *that day shall not come* except there come a departing first, & that that man of sinne be disclosed, *euen* the sonne of perdition, 4 Which is an aduersary, and exalteth himselfe against all that is called God, or that is worshipped: so that he doeth sit as God in the Temple of God, shewing himselfe that hee is God. 5 Remember yee not, that when I was yet with you, I tolde you these things? 6 And now ye know what withholdeth that he might bee reuealed in his time. 7 For the mysterie of iniquitie doeth already worke: onely he which now withholdeth, *shall let* till he be taken out of the way. 8 And then shall that wicked man be reuealed, * whome the Lord shal consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shal abolish with the brightnesse of his comming. 9 *Euen him* whose comming is by the effectuall working of Satan, with all power, and signes, and lying wonders, 10 And in all deceiueablenesse of vnrighteousnesse, among them that perish, because they receiued not the loue of the trueth, that they might bee saued. 11 And therefore God shall send them strong delusion,

* *Isay* 11.4.

that they ſhould beleeue lyes, 12 That all they might be damned which beleeued not ȳ trueth, but had pleaſure in vnrighteouſnes. 13 But we ought to giue thankes alway to God for you, brethren beloued of the Lord, becauſe that God hath from the beginning choſen you to ſaluation, through ſanctification of the ſpirite, and the faith of trueth. 14 Whereunto he called you by our Goſpel, to obtaine the glory of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt. 15 Therefore, brethren, ſtand faſt, and keepe the inſtructions which ye haue bin taught, either by worde, or by our Epiſtle. 16 Nowe the ſame Ieſus Chriſt our Lorde, and our God euen the Father which hath loued vs, and hath giuen vs euerlaſting conſolation and good hope through grace, 17 Comfort your hearts, and ſtabliſh you in euery word and good worke.

CHAP. 3. *Of ſide and peruerſe profeſſours.*

Epheſ 6.12. coloſ. 4.3. FVrthermore, brethren, * pray for vs, that the word of the Lord may haue free paſſage, and be glorified, euen as it is with you, 2 And that we may be deliuered from vnreaſonable & euil men: for al men haue not faith. 3 But the Lord is faithfull, which will ſtabliſh you, and keepe you from euill. 4 And wee are perſwaded of you through the Lord, that ye both do, and wil doe the things which we warne you of. 5 And the Lorde guide your hearts to the loue of God and the waiting for of Chriſt. 6 We warne you brethren, in the Name of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt that ye withdrawe your ſelues from euery bro-

ther

ther that walketh inordinately, & not after the instruction, which he receiued of vs. 7 For ye your selues know, how ye ought to folow vs: for we behaued not our selues inordinately among you, 8 Neither tooke wee bread of any man for nought: but we wrought with labour and trauaile night & day, because we would not be chargeable to any of you. 9 Not because we haue not authoritie, but that we might make our selues an ensample vnto you to folow vs. 10 For euen when we were with you, this we warned you of, that if there were any, which would not worke, that he should not eate. 11 For we heare, that there are some which walke among you inordinately, and worke not at all, but are busie bodies, 12 Therefore them that are such, wee warne and exhort by our Lord Iesus Christ, that they worke with quietnes, and eate their owne bread. 13 And ye, brethren, be not weary in well doing. 14 If any man obey not this our saying in this letter, note him, and haue no company with him, that he may be ashamed: 15 Yet count him not as an enemie, but admonish him as a brother. 16 Now the Lorde himselfe of peace giue you peace alwayes by al meanes. The Lord be with you all 17 The salutation of me Paul, with mine owne hand, which is the token in euery epistle: so I write, 18 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with all, Amen.

1.Cor. 11. 1. 1.Thes 4. 11.

¶ The second *Epistle* to the Thessalonians, written from Rome.

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF Paul to Timotheus.

CHAP. I. 1 *The true Pastour:* 6 *Vaine questions.* 12 *The Ministers authoritie.*

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ by the commandement of God our Sauiour, and of *our* Lord Iesus Christ our hope, 2 Vnto Timotheus *my* naturall sonne in ỹ faith: Grace, mercy, *and* peace from God our Father, & *from* Christ Iesus our Lord. 3 As I besought thee to abide still in Ephesus, when I departed into Macedonia, *so do*, that thou mayest warne some, ỹ they teach none other doctrine, 4 Neither that they giue heed to fables and genealogies *which are* endlesse, which breed questions rather then godly edifying which is by faith. 5 * For the end of the commandement is loue out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, & of faith vnfained. 6 From the which things some haue erred, and haue turned vnto vaine iangling. 7 They would be doctors of the law, & yet vnderstand not what they speake, neither whereof they affirme. 8 And we know that the Law is good, if a man vse it lawfully, 9 Knowing this, that the Law is not giuen vnto a righteous man, but vnto the lawlesse and disobedient, to the vngodly, and to sinners, to the vnholy, and to the prophane, to murtherers of fathers and mothers, to manslayers, to 10 To whoremongers, to buggerers, to men-stealers, to liers, to the periured,

Rom. 13.10.

perfited, and if there be any other thing, that is contrary to wholesome doctrine, 11 *Which is* according to the glorious Gospel of the blessed God, which is committed vnto me. 12 Therfore I thanke him, which hath made me strong, *that is* Christ Iesus our Lord: for he counted me faithfull, and put me in *his* seruice: 13 When before I was a blasphemer, and a persecuter, & an oppresser: but I was receiued to mercy: for I did it ignorantly through vnbeliefe. 14 But the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant with faith and loue, which is in Christ Iesus. 15 This *is a* true saying, and by all meanes worthy to be receiued, that * Christ Iesus came into the world to saue sinners, of whom I am chiefe. 16 Notwithstanding, for this cause was I receiued to mercy, that Iesus Christ should first shew on me all long suffering vnto the ensample of them, which shall in time to come beleeue in him vnto eternall life. 17 Now vnto the King euerlasting, immortall, inuisible, vnto God onely wise, *be* honour *and* glory, for euer, and euer, Amen. 18 This commandement commit I vnto thee, sonne Timotheus, according to the prophesies, which went before vpon thee, that thou by thē shouldest fight a good fight, 19 Hauing faith and a good conscience, which some haue put away, and as concerning faith, haue made shipwracke. 20 Of whom is Hymeneus, and Alexander, * whom I haue deliuered vnto Satan, that they might learne not to blaspheme.

Matt. 9. 13. mark. 2. 17.

1. Cor. 5. 3.

CHAP. 2. 1 *Of prayer.* 9 *Womens apparell and behauiour.*

I Exhort therefore, that first of all supplications, prayers, intercessions, *and* giuing of thanks be made for all men, 2 For Kings, and for all that are in authority, that we may leade a quiet & peaceable life, in all godlinesse & honestie. 3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Sauiour, 4 Who will that all men shalbe saued, & come vnto the acknowledging of the truth. 5 For there is one God, & our Mediator betweene God & man, *which is* the man Christ Iesus, 6 Who gaue himselfe a ransome for all men, *to be* y testimony in due time, 7 * Whereunto I am ordeined a preacher & an Apostle (I speake the truth in Christ, & lie not) *euen* a teacher of the Gentiles in faith & verity. 8 I will therfore that the men pray, euery where lifting vp pure handes without wrath or doubting. 9 * Likewise also the women, that they aray themselues in comly apparell, with shamefastnesse & modestie, not with broyded haire, or golde, or pearles, or costly apparel, 10 But (as becometh women that professe the feare of God) w good works. 11 Let the woman learne in silence with all subiection. 12 * I permit not a woman to teach neither to vsurpe authority ouer the man, but to be in silence. 13 For * Adam was first formed, then Eue. 14 * And Adam was not deceiued, but the woman was deceiued, & was in the transgression. 15 Notwithstading, through bearing

2. Tim 1. 11.

1. Pet. 3. 3.

1. Cor. 14. 34.

Gene. 1. 27. & 2. 7, 22.

Gene. 3. 6.

ring of children, she shalbe saued, if they continue in faith, and loue, & holinesse with modesty.

CHAP. 3. 2 *Of Bishops and Deacons.* 12 *Their wiues, children, and families.*

THis *is* a true saying, If any man desire the office of a Bishop, he desireth a worthy worke.

1 * A Bishop therefore must be vnreproueable, the husband of one wife, watching, temperate, modest, harberous, apt to teach, 3 Not giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthy lucre, but gentle, no fighter, not couetous, 4 One that can rule his owne house honestly, hauing children vnder obedience with all honesty. 5 For if any can not rule his owne house, how shall he care for the Church of God? 6 He may not be a yong scholar, least he being puffed vp fall into the condemnation of the deuil. 7 He must also be well reported of, euen of them which are without, least hee fall into rebuke, and the snare of the deuill. 8 Likewise *must* Deacons be graue, not double tongued, not giuen vnto much wine, neither to filthy lucre, 9 * Hauing ỹ mystery of the faith in pure cõscience. 10 And let them first be proued: thẽ let them minister, if they be foũd blameless. 11 Likewise their wiues *must* be honest, not euill speakers, *but* sober *and* faithful in all things. 21 Let the Deacons be the husbands of one wife, and such as can rule their children well, & their owne housholde: 13 For they ỹ haue ministred well, get thẽselues a good degree, and great liberty in the faith, which is in Christ

Titus 2.6.

Chap. 1.19.

Christ Iesus. 14 These things write I vnto thee, trusting to come very shortly vnto thee. 15 But if I tary long, that thou mayest yet know, how thou oghtest to behaue thy selfe in the house of God, which is the Church of the liuing God, the pillar and ground of trueth. 16 And without controuersie, great is the mystery of godlinesse, *which is*, God is manifested in the flesh, iustified in the Spirit, seene of Angels, preached vnto the Gentiles, beleeued on in the world, *and* receiued vp in glory.

CHAP. 4. 1 *Of Christian exercises.*

NOw the Spirit speaketh euidently, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, and shall giue heed vnto Spirits of errour, and doctrines of deuils, 2 Which speake lies through hypocrisie, and haue their consciences burned with a hote yron, 3 Forbidding to marry, *and commanding* to abstaine frō meats which God hath created to be receiued with giuing thanks of thē which beleeue & know the truth. 4 For euery creature of God *is* good, and nothing *ought* to be refused, if it be receiued with thanksgiuing. 5 For it is sanctified by the word of God, and prayer. 6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Iesus Christ, which hast bene nourished vp in the words of faith, & of good doctrine, which thou hast continually followed. 7 But cast away prophane, & olde wiues fables, and exercise thy selfe vnto godlinesse. 8 For bodily

bodily exerciſe profiteth litle: but godlineſſe is profitable vnto all things, which hath the promiſe of ỹ life preſent, & of that that is to come. 9 This is a true ſaying, and by all meanes worthy to be receiued. 10 For therefore we labor and are rebuked, becauſe we truſt in the liuing God, which is the Sauiour of all men, ſpecially of thoſe that beleeue. 11 Theſe things warne & teach. 12 Let no man deſpiſe thy youth, but be vnto them that beleeue, an enſample, in word, in coũerſation, in loue, in ſpirit, in faith, & in pureneſſe. 13 Till I come, giue attendance to reading, to exhortation, *and* to doctrine. 14 Deſpiſe not the gift that is in thee, which was giuen thee by propheſie with the laying on of the handes of the company of the Elderſhip. 15 Theſe things exerciſe, *and* giue thy ſelfe vnto them, that it may be ſeene how thou profiteſt among all men. 16 Take heed vnto thy ſelfe, and vnto learning, continue therein: for in doing this thou ſhalt both ſaue thy ſelfe, and them that heare thee.

CHAP. 5. 5 *Of widowes and Elders.*

REbuke not an Elder, but exhort him as a father, & the yonger men as brethren, 2 The elder women as mothers, the yonger as ſiſters, with all pureneſſe. 3 Honour widowes, which are widowes indeed. 4 But if any widow haue children or nephewes, let thẽ learne firſt to ſhew godlineſſe toward their owne houſe, and to recompenſe their kinred: for ỹ is an honeſt thing,

and

and acceptable before God. 5 And she that is a widow indeed, and left alone, trusteth in God, & continueth in supplications & prayers night & day. 6 But she that liueth in pleasure, is dead, while she liueth. 7 These things therefore warne *them* of, that they may be blamelesse. 8 If there be any ỹ prouideth not for his owne, and namely for them of his household, he denieth the faith, & is worse then an infidell. 9 Let not a widow be taken into the number vnder threescore yeere olde, that hath bene the wife of one husband, 10 And well reported of for good works: if she haue nourished her children, if she haue lodged the strangers, if she haue washed the Saints feet, if she haue ministred vnto them which were in aduersity, if she were continually giuen vnto euery good worke. 11 But refuse the yonger widowes: for when they haue begun to wax wanton against Christ, they will marry, 12 Hauing damnation, because they haue broken the first faith. 13 And likewise also being idle they learne to go about from house to house: yea, *they are* not onely idle, but also pratlers, and busibodies, speaking things which are not comely. 14 I wil therefore that the yonger women marry, and beare children, and gouerne the house, *and* giue none occasion to the aduersary to speake euill. 15 For certaine are already turned backe after Satan. 16 If any faithfull man, or faithfull woman haue widowes, let them minister vnto the, & let not the Church be charged, that there may

be

be sufficient for them that are widowes indeed.
17 The Elders that rule well, let them be had in
double honour, specially they which labour in
the word & doctrine. 18 For the Scripture saith,
*Thou shalt not mouzell the mouth of the oxe
that treadeth out the corne: and, *The laborer
is worthy of his wages. 19 Against an Elder re-
ceiue none accusation, but vnder two or three
witnesses. 20 Them that sinne, rebuke openly,
that the rest also may feare. 21 I charge *thee* be-
fore God & the Lord Iesus Christ, and the elect
Angels, that thou obserue these things without
preferring one to another, and do nothing par-
tially. 22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, nei-
ther be partaker of other mens sinnes: keepe
thy selfe pure. 23 Drinke no longer water, but
vse a litle wine for thy stomacks sake, and thine
often infirmities. 24 Some mens sinnes are o-
pen before hand, & go before vnto iudgement:
but some mens follow after. 25 Likewise also
the good works are manifest before hand, and
they that are otherwise, cannot be hid.

Deut. 25.4.
Matt. 10.10.
Luke 10.7.
Chap. 6.13.

CHA. 6. 1 *Of Couetousnesse*, 13 *and rich men.*

LEt as many seruants as are vnder the yoke,
count their masters worthy of al honor, that
the Name of God, and *his* doctrine be not euill
spoken of. 2 And they which haue beleeuing
masters, let them not despise them, because they
are brethren, but rather do seruice, because they
are faithfull, and beloued, and partakers of the
benefit. These things teach & exhort. 3 If any

man

man teach otherwiſe, and conſenteth not to the wholeſome words of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, & to the doctrine, which is according to godlines, 4 He is puft vp and knoweth nothing, but doteth about queſtions & ſtrife of words, whereof commeth enuy, ſtrife, railings, euill ſurmiſings, 5 Froward diſputations of mē of corrupt minds & deſtitute of the truth, which thinke that gaine is godlines: from ſuch ſeparate thy ſelfe. 6 But godlineſſe is great gaine, if a man be content with that he hath. 7 For we brought nothing into the world, *and* it is certaine, that we can cary nothing out. 8 Therefore when we haue food & raiment, let vs therwith be content. 9 For they that will be rich, fall into tentation & ſnares, and into many fooliſh and noyſome luſtes, which drowne men in perdition & deſtruction. 10 For the deſire of mony is the root of all euill, which while ſome luſted after, they erred frō the faith, and pearced themſelues thorow with many ſorrowes. 11 But thou, O man of God, flee theſe things, & folow after righteouſneſſe, godlineſſe, faith, loue, patience, & meekneſſe 12 Fight the good fight of faith: lay holde of eternall life, whereunto thou art alſo called, and haſt profeſſed a good profeſſion before many witneſſes,

Chap. 5 21. Matt. 27. 11. 13 *I charge thee in the ſight of God, who quickneth all things, and before Ieſus Chriſt, which vnder Pontius Pilate * witneſſed a good confeſſion, 14 That thou keepe *this* commandement without ſpot, & vnrebukeable, vntill the appea-

ring

ring of our Lord Iesus Christ, 15 Which in due time he shall shew, that is *blessed and Prince only, the King of kings, and Lord of Lords, 16 Who only hath immortality, & dwelleth in the light ỹ none can attaine vnto, whom neuer man saw, neither can see, vnto whom *be* honour and power euerlasting, Amen. 17 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not hie minded, and ỹ they *trust not in vncertaine riches, but in ỹ liuing God (which giueth vs abundantly al things to enioy) 18 That they do good, *and* be rich in good works, *and* ready to distribute, & communicate, 19 *Laying vp in store for themselues a good foundation against the time to come, that they may obteine eternal life. 20 O Timotheus, keepe that which is committed vnto thee, & auoid prophane & vaine babblings, and oppositions of science falsly so called, 21 Which while some professe, they haue erred concerning the faith. Grace *be* with thee, Amen.

Chap. 1.11.
reuel. 17.14.
Iohn 1.18.
Mark. 4.19.
luke 12.15.
Mat. 6.20.

¶ The first *Epistle* to Timotheus written from Laodicea, which is the chiefest city of Phrygia Pacaciana.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF Paul to Timotheus.

CHAP. 1. 5 *Timothies faith commended.*

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of God, according to the promise of life which is in Christ Iesus, 2 To Timotheus *my* beloued

and acceptable before God. 5 And she that is a widow indeed, and left alone, trusteth in God & continueth in supplications & prayers night & day. 6 But she that liueth in pleasure, is dead while she liueth. 7 These things therefore warne *them* of, that they may be blameleſſe. 8 If there be any y prouideth not for his owne, and namely for them of his houſhold, he denieth the faith, & is worſe then an infidell. 9 Let not a widow be taken into the number vnder threeſcore yeares olde, that hath bene the wife of one husband, 10 And well reported of for good works: if she haue nouriſhed her children, if she haue lodged the ſtrangers, if she haue waſhed the Saints feet, if she haue miniſtred vnto them which were in aduerſity, if she were continually giuen vnto euery good worke. 11 But refuſe the yonger widowes: for when they haue begun to wax wanton againſt Chriſt, they will marry, 12 Hauing damnation, becauſe they haue broken the firſt faith. 13 And likewiſe alſo being idle they learne to go about from houſe to houſe: yea, *they are* not onely idle, but alſo pratlers, and buſibodies, ſpeaking things which are not comely. 14 I will therefore that the yonger women marry, and beare children, and gouerne the houſe, *and* giue none occaſion to the aduerſary to ſpeake euill. 15 For certaine are already turned backe after Satan. 16 If any faithfull man, or faithfull woman haue widowes, let them miniſter vnto them, & let not the Church be charged, that there may

be

be sufficient for them that are widowes indeed.
17 The Elders that rule well, let them be had in
double honour, specially they which labour in
the word & doctrine. 18 For the Scripture saith,
*Thou shalt not mouzell the mouth of the oxe
that treadeth out the corne: and, *The labourer
is worthy of his wages. 19 Against an Elder re-
ceiue none accusation, but vnder two or three
witnesses. 20 Them that sinne, rebuke openly,
that the rest also may feare. 21 *I charge thee be-
fore God & the Lord Iesus Christ, and the elect
Angels, that thou obserue these things without
preferring one to another, and do nothing par-
tially. 22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, nei-
ther be partaker of other mens sinnes: keepe
thy selfe pure. 23 Drinke no longer water, but
vse a litle wine for thy stomacks sake, and thine
often infirmities. 24 Some mens sinnes are o-
pen before hand, & go before vnto iudgement:
but some mens follow after. 25 Likewise also
the good works are manifest before hand, and
they that are otherwise, cannot be hid.

Deut. 25.4. *Matt.* 10.10. *luke* 10.7. *Chap.* 6.13.

CHA. 6. 1 *Of Couetousnesse*, 13 *and rich men.*

LEt as many seruants as are vnder the yoke,
count their masters worthy of al honor, that
the Name of God, and his doctrine be not euill
spoken of. 2 And they which haue beleeuing
masters, let them not despise them, because they
are brethren, but rather do seruice, because they
are faithfull, and beloued, and partakers of the
benefit. These things teach & exhort. 3 If any
man

man teach otherwise, and consenteth not to the wholesome words of our Lord Iesus Christ, & to the doctrine, which is according to godlines, 4 He is puft vp and knoweth nothing, but doteth about questions & strife of words, wherof commeth enuy, strife, railings, euill surmisings, 5 Froward disputations of mē of corrupt minds & destitute of the truth, which thinke that gaine is godlines: from such separate thy selfe. 6 But godlinesse is great gaine, if a man be content with that he hath. 7 For we brought nothing into the world, and it is certaine, that we can carry nothing out. 8 Therefore when we haue food & raiment, let vs therwith be content. 9 For they that will be rich, fall into tentation & snares, and into many fooliſh and noysome lustes, which drowne men in perdition & destruction. 10 For the desire of mony is the root of all euill, which while some lusted after, they erred frō the faith, and pearced themselues thorow with many sorrowes. 11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things, & follow after righteousnesse, godlinesse, faith, loue, patience, & meekenesse. 12 Fight the good fight of faith: lay holde of eternall life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

Chap. 5.21. Matt. 27.11. 13 *I charge thee in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Iesus Christ, who vnder Pontius Pilate * witnessed a good confession, 14 That thou keepe this commandement without spot, & vnrebukeable, vntill the ap-

ing of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, 15 Which in due
time he ſhall ſhew, that is *bleſſed and Prince *Chap.
only, the King of kings, and Lord of Lords, 1.11.
16 Who only hath immortality, & dwelleth in *reuel.
the light ỹ none can attaine vnto, *whom neuer 17.14.
man ſaw, neither can ſee, vnto whom *be* honour *Iohn
and power euerlaſting. Amen. 17 Charge them 1.18.
that are rich in this world, that they be not hie
minded, and ỹ they *truſt not in vncertaine ri- *Mark.
ches, but in ỹ liuing God (which giueth vs abun- 4.19.
dantly al things to enioy) 18 That they do good, *luke*
and be rich in good works, *and* ready to diſtri- 12.15.
bute, & communicate, 19 *Laying vp in ſtore for *Mat.
themſelues a good foundation againſt the time 6.2.
to come, that they may obteine eternal life. 20 O
Timotheus, keepe that which is committed vnto
thee, & auoid prophane & vaine babblings, and
oppoſitions of ſcience falſly ſo called, 21 Which
while ſome profeſſe, they haue erred concerning
the faith. Grace *be* with thee, Amen.

¶ The firſt *Epiſtle* to Timotheus written from Laodicea, which is the chiefeſt city of Phrygia Pacaciana.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF Paul to Timotheus.

CHAP. I. 5 *Timothies faith commended.*

PAul an Apoſtle of Ieſus Chriſt, by the will of God, according to the promiſe of life which is in Chriſt Ieſus, 2 To Timotheus *my* belo-

ued

ued sonne: Grace, mercy *and* peace from God
the Father, and *from* Iesus Christ our Lord. 3 I
Acts thanke God, * whom I serue from *mine* elders
22.3. with pure conscience, that without ceasing I
haue remembrance of thee in my prayers night
and day, 4 Desiring to see thee, mindfull of thy
teares, that I may be filled with ioy: 5 When I
call to remembrance the vnfained faith that *is*
in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother
Lois, and in thy mother Eunice, and am assured
that *it dwelleth* in thee also. 6 Wherefore, I
put thee in remembrance that thou stirre vp the
gift of God which is in thee, by the putting on
of mine handes. 7 For God hath not giuen
to vs the Spirit of feare, but of power, and
loue, and of a sound minde. 8 Be not there-
fore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord,
neither of me his prisoner: but be partaker of
the afflictions of the Gospel, according to the
1.Cor. power of God, 9 Who hath saued vs, and
1.2. called vs with * an holy calling, not accor-
Titus ding to our * works, but according to his owne
3.5. purpose and grace, which was giuen to vs
Rom through Christ Iesus before the * world was,
15.62. 10 But is now made manifest by that appea-
ephes. ring of our Sauiour Iesus Christ, who hath abo-
1.4. lished death, and hath brought life and immorta-
colosſ. lity vnto light through the Gospel, 11 * Where-
1.26. vnto I am appointed a preacher, and Apostle,
1.Tim and a teacher of the Gentiles. 12 For the which
2.7. cause I also suffer these things, but I am not a-

shamed

kenowed) for I knowe whom I haue beleeued, and am perſwaded that he is able to keepe that which I haue cõmitted to him againſt that day. 13 Keepe the true patterne of the wholeſome wordes which thou haſt heard of me in faith and loue which is in Chriſt Ieſus. 14 That worthy thing, which was committed to thee, keepe through the holy Ghoſt, which dwelleth in vs. 15 This thou knoweſt, that all they which are in Aſia, be turned from mee: of which ſort are Phygellus & Hermogenes. 16 The Lord giue mercie vnto the houſe of Oneſiphorus: for hee oft refreſhed mee, and was not aſhamed of my chaine, 17 But whē he was at Rome, he ſought me out very diligently, and found *me*. 18 The Lord graunt vnto him, that he may finde mercie with the Lorde at that day, and in howe many things hee hath miniſtred vnto mee at Epheſus, thou knoweſt very well.

CHAP. 2. 3. *Of perſeuerance in Chriſtian warfare.*

THou therefore, my ſonne, be ſtrong in the grace that is in Chriſt Ieſus. 2 And what things thou haſt heard of me by many witneſſes, the ſame deliuer to faithfull men, which ſhalbe able to teach other alſo. 3 Thou therfore ſuffer affliction as a good ſouldier of Ieſus Chriſt. 4 No man y warreth, entangleth himſelf w the affaires of *this* life, becauſe he would pleaſe him that hath choſen him to be a ſouldier. 5 And if any man alſo ſtriue for a maſtery, he is not crow-

ned, except he ſtriue as he ought to doe. 6 The husbandman muſt labour before he receiue the fruits. 7 Conſider what I ſay, & the Lord giue thee vnderſtãding in al things. 8 Remẽber that Ieſus Chriſt *made* of the ſeed of Dauid was raiſed againe frõ the dead according to my Goſpel: 9 Wherin I ſuffer trouble as an euil doer, euen vnto bonds: but the word of God is not bound. 10 Therfore I ſuffer al things, for the elects ſake, that they might alſo obtaine the ſaluatiõ which is in Chriſt Ieſus with eternal glory. 11 *It is a*

Rom. 6.5. true ſaying, For if we bee * dead together with *him*, we alſo ſhal liue together *with him*: 12 If

Matt. 10.33. we ſuffer, we ſhal alſo reigne together *with him*: * If we deny *him*, he alſo wil deny vs. 13 * If we

mark. 8.38. beleeue not, *yet* abideth he faithfull: he cannot

Rom. 3.3. & 9.6. deny himſelf. 14 Of theſe things put them in remẽbrance, & proteſt before the Lord, ỹ they ſtriue not about words, which is to no profit, *but* to the peruerting of the hearers. 15 Study to ſhew thy ſelfe approued vnto God, a workeman ỹ needeth not to be aſhamed, diuiding the word of trueth aright. 16 Stay prophane and vaine babblings: for they ſhall increaſe vnto more vngodlineſſe. 17 And their word ſhall fret as a canker: of which ſort is Hymenæus & Philetus. 18 Which as concerning the trueth haue erred frõ the marke, ſaying ỹ the reſurrection is paſt already, & do deſtroy ỹ faith of ceteine. 19 But the foũdation of God remaineth ſure, & hath this ſeale, The Lord knoweth who

are

his: and, I et euery one that calleth on the
name of Christ, depart from iniquity. 20 Not-
withstanding in a great house are not only ves-
sels of golde and of siluer, but also of wood &
of earth, * and some for honour, and some vn- Rom.
to dishonour. 21 If any man therefore purge 9.21.
himselfe from these, he shalbe a vessell vnto ho-
nour, sanctified, & meet for the Lord, and prepa-
red vnto euery good worke. 22 Flee also from
the lusts of youth, and follow after righteous-
nesse, faith, loue, *and* peace, with them that * call 1. Cor
on the Lord with pure heart, 23 * And put a- 1.2.
way foolish and vnlearned questions, knowing 1. Tim
that they ingender strife. 24 But the seruant 1.4. &
of the Lord must not striue, but *must* be gentle 4.7.
toward all men apt to teach, suffering the euill, Titus
25 Instructing them with meekenesse that are 3 9.
contrary minded, *proouing* if God at any time
will giue them repentance, that they may ac-
knowledge the truth, 26 And come to amend-
ment out of the snare of the deuill, of whome
they are taken prisoners, to *doe* his will.

CHAP. 3. 1 *The dangers of the last dayes.*

THis know also, that in the * last dayes shall 1. Tim
come perillous times. 2 For men shall be 4.1.
louers of their owne selues, couetous, boasters, 2. pet
proud, cursed speakers, disobedient to parents, 3.3.
vnthankfull, vnholy, 3 Without naturall affe- iude
ction, truce-breakers, false accusers, intempe-
rate, fierce, no louers at all of them which are
good, 4 Traitors, heady, hie minded, louers of

pleasures more then louers of God, 5 Hauing a shew of godlinesse, but haue denied the power thereof: turne away therefore from such. 6 For of this sort are they which creepe into houses, and leade captiue simple women laden with sinnes, & led with diuers lusts, 7 *Which women are* euer learning, & are neuer able to come to ỹ acknowledging of the truth. 8 *And
Exod. 7.11. as Iannes and Iambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the truth, men of corrupt minds, reprobate concerning the faith. 9 But they shall preuaile no longer: for their madnesse shall be euident vnto all men, as theirs also was. 10 But thou hast fully knowen my doctrine, maner of liuing, purpose, faith, long suffering, loue, patience, 11 Persecutions, *and* afflictions which came vnto me at Antiochia, at Iconium, and at Lystri: which persecutions I suffered, but from them all the Lord deliuered me. 12 Yea, and all that will liue godly in Christ Iesus, shall suffer persecution. 13 But the euill men & deceiuers, shall waxe worse and worse, deceiuing & being deceiued. 14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned, and which are committed vnto thee, knowing of whom thou hast learned *them:* 15 And that thou hast knowen the holy Scriptures of a childe, which are able to make thee wise vnto saluation through
2. Pet. 1.20. the faith which is in Christ Iesus. 16 * For the whole Scripture *is* giuen by inspiration of God, and *is* profitable to teach, to conuince, to correct,

ed, and to inſtruct in righteouſnes, 17 That *the* man of God may be abſolute, being made perfect vnto all good workes.

CHAP. 4. 1. *He chargeth Timothy to preach diligently.*

I Charge *thee* therefore before God, and *before* the Lorde Ieſus Chriſt, which ſhall iudge the quicke and dead at that his appearing, & in his kingdome, 2 Preach the word: be inſtant, in ſeaſon & out of ſeaſon; improue, rebuke, exhort with all long ſuffering and doctrine. 3 For the time wil come, whē they wil not ſuffer wholſom doctrine: but hauing their eares itching, ſhal after their own luſtes get them an heape of teachers, 4 And ſhal turne their eares frō the trueth, and ſhalbe giuen vnto fables. 5 But watch thou in all things: ſuffer aduerſitie: do the worke of an Euangeliſt: cauſe thy miniſtery to be throughly vſed of. 6 For I am now ready to be offred, & the time of my departing is at hand. 7 I haue fought a good fight, & haue finiſhed *my* courſe: I haue kept the faith. 8 *For* henceforth is layd vp for me the crown of righteouſnes, which the Lord the righteous Iudge ſhall giue me at that day, and not to me onely, but vnto al them alſo that loue that his appearing. 9 Make ſpeed to come vnto me at once: 10 For Demas hath forſaken me, and hath embraced this preſent world, and is departed vnto Theſſalonica. Creſcens *is gone* to Galatia, Titus vnto Dalmatia. 11 *Only Luke is* wᵗ me. Take Marke and bring him with *Coloſ.* 4. 10, thee: 14.

thee: for hee is profitable vnto mee to minister. 12 And Tychicus haue I sent to Ephesus. 13 The cloake that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou commest, bring with thee, and the bookes, but specially the parchments. 14 Alexander the coppersmith hath done me much euill: the Lorde rewarde him according to his workes. 15 Of whom be thou ware also: for he withstoode our preaching sore. 16 At my first answering no man assisted mee, but all forsooke me: *Ipsis Deus*, that it may not be layd to their charge. 17 Notwithstanding the Lord assisted me, and strengthened me, that by me the preaching might be fully beleeued, and that all the Gentiles should heare: and I was deliuered out of the mouth of the Lyon. 18 And the Lord will deliuer mee from euery euill worke, and will preserue mee vnto his heauenly kingdome: to whome *bee* praise for euer and euer. Amen. 19 Salute Prisca, and Aquila, and the *chap. 1. 16.* *houshold of Onesiphorus. 20 Erastus abode at Corinthus: Trophimus I left at Miletum sicke. 21 Make speed to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren. 22 The Lord Iesus Christ *be* with thy spirit. Grace *be* with you, AMEN.

¶ The second *Epistle* written from Rome vnto Timotheus, the first Bishop elected of the Church of Ephesus, whē Paul was presented the second time before the Emperour Nero

THE

CHAP 1. 1. *What kinde of men ought to be chosen Ministers.*

PAul a seruant of God, and an Apostle of Iesus Christ, according to the faith of Gods elect, and the acknowledging of the trueth, which is according to godlines, 2 Vnto the hope of eternal life, which God that cannot lie, hath promised before * the worlde began 3 But hath made his worde manifest in due time through the preaching which is * cõmitted vnto me, according to the cõmandement of God our Sauiour: 4 To Titus *my* naturall sonne according to the cõmon faith, Grace, mercy & peace from God the Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ our Sauiour. 5 For this cause left I thee in Creta, that thou shouldest continue to redresse the things that remaine, & shouldest ordeine Elders in euery citie, as I appointed thee, 6 *If any be vnreprouable, the husband of one wife, hauing faithfull children, which are not slandered of riot, neither are disobedient. 7 For a Bishop must be vnreprouable, as Gods steward, not froward, not angry, not giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthy lucre, 8 But harberous, one that loueth goodnesse, wise, righteous, holy, temperate, 9 Holding fast that faithfull worde according to doctrine, that hee also may be able to exhort with wholesome doctrine, and conuince them

Rom. 16.25. ephes. 3 9. colos. 1.26. 2.tim. 1.9. 1.pet. 1.20. Gala. 1.1. 1.Tim 3.2.

that ſay againſt it. 10 For there are many dis-
obedient & vaine talkers & deceiuers of minds,
chiefly they of the circumciſion, 11 Whoſe
mouthes muſt be ſtopped, which ſubuert whole
houſes, teaching things which they ought not,
for filthie lucres ſake. 12 One of themſelues,
euen one of their owne prophets ſaid, The Cre-
tians *are* alwayes lyars, euill beaſtes, ſlowe bel-
lies. 13 This witnes is true: wherefore con-
uince them ſharply, that they may be ſound in
1.Tim 1.4. the faith, 14 And not taking heed to *Iewiſh
ſables and cõmaundements of men, that turne
Rom. 14.23. frõ the trueth. 15 Vnto the pure* *r. al things
pure, but vnto them that are defiled, and vnbe-
leeuing, *is* nothing pure, but euen their mindes
and cõſciences are defiled. 16 They profeſſe
that they know God, but by works they denie
him, and are abominable and diſobedient, and
vnto euery good worke reprobate.

CHAP. 2. 2. *The duelies of diuers degrees deſcribed.*

BVt ſpeake thou the things which become
wholſome doctrine, 2 That the elder men
be watchful, graue, temperat, ſound in the faith,
in loue, *and* in patience. 3 The elder women
likewiſe, that they be in ſuch behauiour, as be-
commeth holines, not falſe accuſers, not ſubiect
to much wine, *but* teachers of honeſt things,
4 That they may inſtruct the yong women to
be ſober minded, that they loue their husbands,
that they loue their children, 5 *That they be*
temperate,

temperate, chaſte, keeping at home, good, * and ſubiect vnto their husbands, ỹ the word of God be not euill ſpoken of. 6 Exhort yong men likewiſe, that they bè ſober minded. 7 In all things ſhewe thy ſelfe an enſample of good works, with vncorrupt doctrine, with grauitie, integritie, 8 *And* with the wholſome word, which cannot be condemned, ỹ he which withſtandeth, may be aſhamed, hauing nothing concerning you to ſpeake euil of. 9 *Let ſeruants be ſubiect to their maſters, and pleaſe *them* in al things, not anſwering againe, 10 Neither pickers, but that they ſhew al good faithfulnes, that they may adorne the doctrine of God our Sauiour in al things. 11 *For that grace of God, that bringeth ſaluatiõ vnto al men, hath appeared, 12 And teacheth vs that we ſhould deny vngodlines, & worldly luſtes, & that we ſhould liue ſoberly and righteouſly, and godly in this preſent world, 13 Looking for ỹ bleſſed hope, & appearing of that glory of that mighty God, and our Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt, 14 Who gaue himſelfe for vs, that he might redeeme vs frõ all iniquitie, & purge vs *to be* a peculiar people vnto himſelfe, zealous of good works. 15 Theſe things ſpeake, and exhort, and conuince with all authoritie. See that no man deſpiſe thee.

Ephe. 5. 23.

Ephe. 6. 5. coloſ. 3 22. 1. pet. 2. 18.

1. Cor. 1. 2. coloſ. 1. 22.

CHAP. 3. *1. To reuerence ſuperiours. 9 To reiect vaine babblers.*

PVt them in remembrance that they *be ſubiect to the Principalities, and powers, *and* that

Rom. 13. 1. 1. pet. 2. 13.

that they be obedient, *and* ready to euery good worke, 2 That they ſpeake euill of no man, that they bee no fighters, *but* ſoft, ſhewing all
1. *Cor.* meekenes vnto al men. 3 *For we our ſelues
6. 11. alſo were in times paſt vnwiſe, diſobedient, deceiued, ſeruing the luſts and diuers pleaſures, liuing in malicioufnes and enuie, hatefull, *and* hating one another. 4 But when that bountifulnes & that loue of God our Sauiour toward man
2. *Tim* appeared, 5 *Not by the works of righteouſ-
1. 9. nes, which wee had done, but according to his mercy he ſaued vs, by the waſhing of the newe birth, & the renuing of the holy Ghoſt, 6 Which he ſhed on vs abundantly, through Ieſus Chriſt our Sauiour, 7 That wee, being iuſtified by his grace, ſhould bee made heires according to the hope of eternall life. 8 This *is* a true ſaying, & theſe things I wil thou ſhouldeſt affirme, that they which haue beleeued in God, might be careful to ſhew forth good works. These things
1. *Tim* *a e* good & profitable vnto men. 9 *But ſtay
1. 4. fooliſh queſtions, & genealogies, and contenti-
and 4. ons, and braulings about the Law: for they are
7. 2. vnprofitable and vaine. 10 Reiect him that is
tim. 2. an heretike, after once or twiſe admonition.
23. 11 Knowing that he that is ſuch, is peruerted, and ſinneth, being damned of his owne ſelfe. 12 When I ſhal ſend Artemas vnto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come to me vnto Nicopolis: for I haue determined there to winter. 13 Bring Zenas the expounder of the Law, and Apollos

Apollos on their iourney diligently, that they lacke nothing. 14 And let ours alſo learne to bee forth good workes for neceſſary vſes, that they be not vnfruitfull. 15 All that are with me, ſalute thee. Greete them that loue vs in the faith. Grace *be* with you all, Amen.

¶ To Titus, elect the firſt Biſhop of the Church of the Cretians, written from Nicopolis in Macedonia.

THE EPISTLE OF Paul to Philemon.

CHAP. 1. 8. *Paul entreateth for Oneſimus.*

PAul a priſoner of Ieſus Chriſt, and *our* brother Timotheus vnto Philemon our deare friend, & fellow helper, 2 And to *our* deare *ſiſter* Apphia, and to Archippus our fellow ſouldier, and to the Church that is in thine houſe: 3 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, & *from* the Lord Ieſus Chriſt. 4 I geue thankes to my God, making mention 1.*The.* alwayes of thee in my prayers, 5 (When I 1.2. heare of thy loue and faith, which thou haſt to- 2.*The.* warde the Lorde Ieſus, and towarde all Saints) 1.3. 6 That the fellowſhip of thy faith may be made effectual, and ſ what ſoeuer good thing is in you through Chriſt Ieſus, may be knowen 7 For we haue great ioy and conſolation in thy loue, becauſe by thee, brother, the Saints bowels are comforted. 8 Wherefore, though I be very

bold

bold in Christ to commaund thee that which is conuenient, 9 Yet for loues sake I rather beseech thee, though I be as I am, euen Paul aged, and euen now a prisoner for Iesus Christ. 10 I beseech thee for my sonne* Onesimus, whom I haue begotten in my bonds, 11 Which in time past was to thee vnprofitable, but now profitable both to thee & to me, 12 Whom I haue sent againe: thou therefore receiue him, that is mine owne bowels, 13 Whom I would haue reteined with me, that in thy stead he might haue ministred vnto mee in the bondes of the Gospel. 14 But without thy mind would I do nothing, that thy benefite should not be as it were of necessitie, but willingly. 15 It may be that hee therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receiue him for euer, 16 Not now as a seruant, but aboue a seruāt, *euen as* a brother beloued, specially to me: how much more then vnto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord? 17 If therefore thou count our things cōmon, receiue him as my selfe. 18 If hee haue hurt thee, or oweth thee ought, that put on mine account. 19 I Paul haue written *this* with mine owne hand: I wil recompense it, albeit I do not say to thee, that thou owest moreouer vnto me euen thine owne selfe. 20 Yea, brother, let me obteine this pleasure of thee in the Lord: comfort my bowels in the Lord. 21 Trusting in thine obedience, I wrote vnto thee, knowing ỹ thou wilt do euen more then I say. 22 Moreouer al-

Coloss. 4.9.

to prepare me lodging: for I trust through your prayers I shalbe freely giuē vnto you. 23 There salute thee Epaphras my fellowe prisoner in Christ Iesus, 24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas and Luke my felow helpers. 25 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with your spirit, Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, *and sent* by Onesimus a seruant.

THE EPISTLE TO the Hebrewes.

CHAP. I. 1. *Of Christes incomparable excellencie, &c.*

AT sundrie times and in diuers maners God spake in the old time to *our* Fathers by the Prophets: in these last daies he hath spoken vnto vs by his Sonne, 2 Whom he hath made heire of all things, by whom also he made the worlds. 3 *Who being the brightnes of the glory, and the ingraued forme of his person, and bearing vp al things by his mightie worde, hath by himselfe purged our sinnes, and sitteth at the right hand of the Maiestie in the high- est places, 4 And is made so much more excellent then the Angels, in as much as hee hath obteined a more excellent Name then they. 5 For vnto which of the Angels said he at any time, *Thou art my Sōne, this day begate I thee? And againe, *I will be his Father, and he shal be my Sonne? 6 And againe, when he bringeth

*Coloss. 1.15.
*Chap. 5.5. *psal. 2.7. *2.Sa. 7.14. *1.chr. in 22.10

in his first begotten Sonne into the worlde, hee
Psal. 97.7. saith, *And let all ỹ Angels of God worship him.
Psal. 104.4. 7 And of the Angels he saith, * He maketh the Spirits his messengers, and his ministers a flame of fire. 8 But vnto the Sõne he saith, *O God,
Psal. 45.7. thy throne u for euer & euer: the scepter of thy kingdom is a scepter of righteousnes. 9 Thou hast loued righteousnesse, and hated iniquitie. Wherefore God, euen thy God, hath anoynted thee ẅ the oyle of gladnes aboue thy fclowes.
Psal. 102. 25. 10 And, *Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast established the earth, & the heauens are the workes of thine hands: 11 They shal perish, but thou dost remaine: and they al shal waxe old as doth a garment, 12 And as a vesture shalt thou fold them vp and they shalbe changed: but thou art the same, and thy yeres shal not faile. 13 Vnto which also of the Angels said hee at any time,
Psal. 110.1. 1.cor. 15.25. *Sit at my right hand, til I make thine enemies thy footestoole? 14 Are they not all ministring spirites, sent foorth to minister for their sakes, which shalbe heires of saluation?

CHAP. 2. 9. That we ought to giue our selues wholy vnto Christ.

WHerfore we ought diligẽtly to giue heed to the things which we haue heard, lest at any time we runne out. 2 For if the word spoken by Angels was stedfast, & euery transgression, & disobedience receiued a iust recompence of reward, 3 How shal we escape, if we neglect so great saluation, which at the first began to be

be preached by the Lord, & *afterward* was confirmed vnto vs by them ỹ heard him, 4 *God bearing witnes thereto, both with signes & wonders, and with miracles, and giftes of the holy Ghost, according to his own will? 5 For he hath not put in subiectiō vnto the Angels the world to come, where of we speake. 6 But* one in a certaine place witnessed, saying, What is man, that thou shouldest be mindefull of him? or the sonne of man, that thou wouldest consider him? 7 Thou madest him a little inferiour to the Angels: thou crownedst him with glory & honor, & hast set him aboue the works of thine hands, 8 *Thou hast put al things in subiection vnder his feet. And in that he hath put al things in subiection vnder him, he left nothing ỹ should not be subiect vnto him. But we yet see not al things subdued vnto him, 9 But we see Iesus crowned with glory and honour, *which was made a little inferiour to the Angels, through the suffering of death, that by Gods grace he might taste death for all men. 10 For it became him, for whom *are* all these things, and by whom *are* all these things, seeing that he brought many children vnto glory, that he should consecrate the Prince of their saluation through afflictions. 11 For he that sanctifieth, & they which are sanctified, *are* all of one: wherefore he is not ashamed to call them brethren, 12 Saying, *I wil declare thy Name vnto my brethren: in the middes of the Church wil I sing praises to thee.

Mar. 16.20.

Psal. 8.6.

1. *Cor.* 15.27.

Phil. 2.18.

Psal. 22.25.

13 And

Pſal. 18. 2. Eſai 8. 18. Hoſ. 13. 14. 1 cor. 15. 55.

13 And againe, *I wil put my truſt in him. And againe, *Behold, here am I, & the children, which God hath giuen me. 14 Forasmuch then as the children were partakers of fleſh and blood, he alſo himſelf likewiſe tooke part with them, that he might deſtroy *through death, him ȳ had the power of death, ȳ is the deuil, 15 And that he might deliuer all them, which for feare of death were all their life time ſubiect to bondage. 16 For he in no ſort tooke on *him* the Angels *nature*, but he tooke on *him* the ſeede of Abraham. 17 Wherefore in all things it behoued him to be made like vnto his brethren, that he might be merciful, and a faithfull high Prieſt in things concerning God, that hee might make reconciliation for the ſinnes of the people. 18 For in that he ſuffered, and was tempted, he is able to ſuccour them that are tempted.

CHAP. 3. 1. *Moſes and Chriſt compared.*

THerfore, holy brethrē, partakers of the heauenly vocation, cōſider the Apoſtle & high Prieſt of our profeſſion, Chriſt Ieſus: 2 Who was faithfull to him ȳ hath appointed him, euen *as Moſes *was* in al his houſe. 3 For this man is counted worthy of more glory then Moſes, in as much as hee which hath builded the houſe, hath more honour then the houſe. 4 For euery houſe is builded of ſome man, & he that hath built all things, is God. 5 Nowe Moſes verely was faithful in all his houſe, as a ſeruant, for a witneſſe of the things which ſhould bee ſpo-

Num. 12. 7.

ken

men. 6 But Christ is as the Sonne, ouer his
owne house, whose house we are, if we hold fast
the confidence and that reioycing of that hope
vnto the end. 7 Wherefore, as the holy Ghost
saith, *To day if ye will heare his voice, 8 Har- Chap.
den not your hearts, as in the prouocation, ac- 4.7.
cording to the day of the tentation in the wil- psal.
dernesse, 9 Where your fathers tempted me, 95.8.
proued me, and saw my works fourtie yeeres.
10 Wherefore I was grieued with that
generation, and said, They erre euer in their
heart, neither haue they knowen my wayes.
11 Therefore I sware in my wrath, if they shall
enter into my rest. 12 Take heede, brethren,
least at any time there be in any of you an euill
heart, and vnfaithfull, to depart away from the
liuing God. 13 But exhort one another dayly,
while it is called, To day, least any of you be
hardened through the deceitfulnesse of sinne.
14 For we are made partakers of Christ, if we
keepe sure vnto the end that beginning, where-
with we are vpholden, 15 So long as it is said,
To day if ye heare his voyce, harden not your
hearts, as in the prouocation. 16 For some
when they heard, prouoked him to anger:
howbeit, not all that came out of Egypt by
Moses. 17 But with whom was he displeased
fourtie yeeres? Was hee not displeased with
them that sinned, *whose carkeises fell in the Num.
wildernesse? 18 And to whom sware he that 14.37.
they should not enter into his rest, but vnto the

that obeyed not? 19 So we see that they could not enter in, because of vnbeliefe.

CHAP. 4. 1 *Of the eternall rest.*

LEt vs feare therefore, least at any time by forsaking the promise of entring into his rest, any of you should seeme to be depriued. 2 For vnto vs was the Gospel preached as also vnto them: but the word that they heard, profited not them, because it was not mixed with faith in those that heard it. 3 For wee which haue beleeued, doe enter into rest, as he said: *Psal. 95.12.* *the other,* * As I haue sworne in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although y works were finished from the foundation of the world. 4 For he spake in a certaine place of the seuenth day on this wise, * And God did rest the *Gen. 2. 2.* seuenth day from all his works. 5 And in this *deut. 5.14.* place againe, if they shall enter into my rest. 6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter thereinto, and they to whom it was first preached, entred not therein for vnbeliefe sake. 7 Againe he appointed in Dauid a certaine day, by To day, after so long a time, saying, as it is said, * This day, if ye heare his voyce, harden *Chap. 3.7.* not your hearts. 8 For if Iesus had giue them rest, then would he not after this day haue spoken of another day. 9 There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God. 10 For he that is entred into his rest, hath also ceased from his owne workes, as God did from his. 11 Let vs studie therefore to enter into that rest, least any

any man fall after the ſame enſample of diſobedience. 12 For the word of God is liuely, & mighty in operation, and ſharper then any two edged ſword, and entreth through, euen vnto the diuiding aſunder of the ſoule and the ſpirit, and of the ioynts, and the marow, & is a diſcerner of the thoughts, & the intents of the heart. 13 Neither is there any creature, which is not manifeſt in his ſight: but all things *are* naked and open vnto his eyes, with whom we haue to doe. 14 Seeing then that we haue a great high Prieſt, which is entred into heauen, *euen* Ieſus the Sonne of God, let vs holde faſt our profeſſion. 15 For we haue not an hie Prieſt, which can not be touched with the feeling of our infirmities, but was in all things tempted in like ſort, *yet* without ſinne. 16 Let vs therefore goe boldly vnto the throne of grace, that we may receiue mercie, & finde grace to helpe in time of neede.

CHAP. 5. 1 *Chriſt is our high Prieſt.*

FOr euery high Prieſt is taken from among men, and is ordeined for men, in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts & ſacrifices for ſinnes, 2 Which is able ſufficiently to haue compaſsion on them that are ignorant, and that are out of the way, becauſe that he alſo is compaſſed with infirmity, 3 And for the ſames ſake he is boũd to offer for ſinnes, as well for his owne part, as for the peoples. 4 And no man taketh this honour vnto him- *1.Chr. 13.1. and 23.1.*

selfe, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron.
5 So likewise Christ tooke not to himselfe this
honour, to be made the high Priest but he that
Chap. sayd vnto him, * Thou art my Sonne, this day
1.5. begate I thee, *gaue it him.* 6 As he also in an-
psal. other place speaketh, * Thou art a Priest for e-
2.7. uer, after the order of Melchi-sedec. 7 Who
Chap. in the dayes of his flesh did offer vp prayers
7.17. & supplications, with strong crying and teares
psal. vnto him, that was able to saue him from death,
110.4. and was also heard *in* that which he feared.
8 And though he were the Sonne, yet learned
he obedience, by the things which he suffered,
9 And being consecrate, was made the author
of eternall saluation vnto all them that obey
him: 10 And is called of God the high Priest
after the order of Melchi-sedec. 11 Of whom
we haue many things to say, which are hard to
be vttered, because ye are dull of hearing.
12 For when as concerning the time ye ought
to be teachers, yet haue ye need againe that
we teach you what *are* the first principles of
the word of God: and are become such as haue
need of milke, & not of strõg meat. 13 For euery
one that vseth milke, is inexpert in the word of
righteousnesse: for he is a babe. 14 But strong
meate belongeth to them that are of age, which
through long custome haue their wits exer-
sed, to discerne both good and euill.

CHAP.

Hetfore, leauing the doctrine of the begin-
ning of Chriſt, let vs be led forward vnto
perfection, not laying againe the foundation
of repentance from dead works, & of faith to-
ward God, 2 Of the doctrine of baptiſmes, &
laying on of hands, & of the reſurrection from
the dead, & of eternall iudgement. 3 And this
will we do, if God permit. 4 *For it is impoſ-
ſible, that they which were once lightened, and
haue taſted of the heauenly gift, & were made
partakers of the holy Ghoſt, 5 And haue ta-
ſted of the good word of God, & of the pow-
ers of the world to come, 6 If they fal away,
ſhould be renued againe by repentance: ſee-
ing they crucifie againe to themſelues ỹ Sonne
of God, and make a mocke of him. 7 For the
earth which drinketh in the raine that com-
meth oft vpon it, & bringeth foorth herbs meet
for them by whom it is dreſſed, receiueth bleſ-
ſing of God. 8 But that which beareth thornes
and bryars, is proued, and is nere vnto curſing,
whoſe end is to be burned. 9 But beloued, we
haue perſwaded our ſelues better things of
you, and ſuch as accompany ſanation, though
we thus ſpeake. 10 For God is not vnrighte-
ous, that he ſhould forget your worke, & labour
of loue, which ye ſhewed toward his Name, in
that ye haue miniſtred vnto the Saints, and yet
miniſter. 11 And wee deſire that euery one of
you ſhew the ſame diligence, to the full aſſu-
rance of hope vnto the end, 12 That ye be not

Chap. 10.26. matt. 12.45. 2.pet. 2.20.

slouthful, but folowers of them, which through faith & patience inherite the promises. 13 For when God made the promise to Abraham, because he had no greater to sweare by, he sware
Gene. 22. 16. by himselfe, 14 Saying, * Surely I will abundantly blesse thee, & multiply thee marueilously. 15 And so after that he had tarried patiently,
Gene. 22. 17. he enioyed the promise. 16 For men verely sweare by him that is greater *then themselues*, and an othe for confirmation is among them an end of all strife. 17 So God willing more abundantly to shew vnto the heires of promise the stablenesse of his counsel, bound himselfe by an othe, 18 That by two immutable things, wherein it is vnpossible that God should lie, wee might haue strong cõsolation, which haue our refuge to lay hold vpon that hope which is set before vs, 19 Which we haue, as an ancre of the soule, both sure and stedfast, and it entreth into that which is within the vaile, 20 Whither the forerunner is for vs entred in, *euen* Iesus that is made an high Priest for euer after the order of Melchi-sedec.

CHAP. 7. *Christ compared with Melchi-sedec.*

Gene. 14. 18. FOr this Melchi-sedec * *was* king of Salem, the Priest of the most hie God, who met Abraham, as he returned from the slaughter of the Kings, & blessed him: 2 To whom also Abraham gaue the tithe of al things: who first is by interpretation King of righteousnesse: after that, *he is* also King of Salem, that is, King of peace,

3 Without father, without mother, without kindred, and hath neither beginning of dayes, nor end of life: but is likened vnto the Sonne of God, and continueth a Priest for euer. 4 Now consider how great this man *was*, vnto whom euen the Patriarke Abraham gaue the tithe of the spoiles. 5 For verely they which are the children of Leui, which receiue the office of the Priesthood, haue a * commandement to take, according to the Law tithes of the people (that is, of their brethren) though they came out of the loines of Abraham. 6 But he whose kinred is not counted among them, receiued tithes of Abraham, & blessed him that had the promises. 7 And without all contradiction the lesse is blessed of the greater. 8 And here men that die, receiue tithes: but there he *receiueth them*, of whom it is witnessed, that he liueth. 9 And to say as the thing is, Leui also which receiueth tithes, payed tithes in Abraham. 10 For he was yet in the loynes of his father *Abraham*, when Melchi-sedec met him. 11 If therfore perfection had bene by the Priesthood of the Leuites (for vnder it the Law was established to the people) what needed it furthermore, that another Priest should rise after the order of Melchi-sedec, & not to be called after the order of Aaron? 12 For if the Priesthood be changed, then of necessity must there be a change of the Law. 13 For he of whom these things are spoken, perteineth vnto another tribe, whereof no man serued at the altar.

* *Num.* 18.21.

14 For it is euident, that our Lord ſprung out of Iuda, cõcerning the which tribe Moſes ſpake nothing touching the Prieſthood. 15 And it is yet a more euident thing, becauſe that after the ſimilitude of Melchi ſedec there is riſen vp another Prieſt, 16 Which is not made *Prieſt* after the Law of the carnal commandement, but after the power of the endleſſe life. 17 For he teſtifieth *thus*, * Thou art a Prieſt for euer, after the order of Melchi-ſedec. 18 For the commandement ỹ went afore, is diſanulled, becauſe of the weakneſſe therof, & vnprofitableneſſe. 19 For the Law made nothing perfite, but the bringing in of a better hope *made perfite*, whereby we draw nere vnto God. 20 And for as much as it is not without an oth (for theſe are made Prieſts without an othe: 21 But this *is made* with an othe by him that ſaid vnto him, *The Lord hath ſworne, & will not repent, Thou art a Prieſt for euer, after the order of Melchi-ſedec) 22 By ſo much is Ieſus made a ſurety of a better Teſtament. 23 And among them many were made Prieſts, becauſe they were not ſuffred to endure, by the reaſon of death. 24 But this man, becauſe he endureth euer, hath a prieſthood, which cannot paſſe from one to another 25 Wherefore, he is able alſo perfectly to ſaue them that come vnto God by him, ſeeing he euer liueth, to make interceſſion for them. 26 For ſuch an hie Prieſt it became vs to haue, *which is* holy, harmeleſſe, vndefiled, ſeparate from ſinners, and made

Chap. 5. 6. pſal. 110. 4.

Pſal. 110. 4.

made higher then ỹ heauens? 27 Which nee-
deth not daily as thoſe hie Prieſtes to offer vp
ſacrifice, *firſt for his owne ſinnes, and then for* *Leui.*
the peoples: for that did he once, when he offe- 16.11.
red vp himſelfe. 28 For the Law maketh men
hie Prieſts, which haue infirmitie: but ỹ word
of the othe that was ſince the Law, *maketh* the
Sonne, who is conſecrated for euermore.

CHAP. 8. 1. *That the ceremonies of the Lawe are ended.*

NOw of the things which we haue ſpoken,
this is the ſumme, that we haue ſuch an hie
Prieſt, that ſitteth at the righ hand of the throne
of the Maieſtie in heauens, 2 And *is* a miniſter
of the Sanctuarie, and of that true Tabernacle
which the Lord pight, & not man. 3 For eue-
ry high Prieſt is ordeined to offer both gifts
and ſacrifices: wherefore it was of neceſsitie,
that this man ſhould haue ſomewhat alſo to
offer. 4 For he were not a Prieſt, if he were on
the earth, ſeeing there are Prieſtes that accor-
ding to the Law offer gifts, 5 Who ſerue vnto
the paterne and ſhadow of heauenly things, as
Moſes was warned by God, when he was about
to finiſh the Tabernacle. *See, ſayd he, that thou* *Exod.*
make al things according to ỹ paterne, ſhewed 25.40
to thee in the mount. 6 But nowe *our high* *actes*
Prieſt hath obteined a more excellent office, in 7.44.
aſmuch as hee is the Mediatour of a better Te-
ſtament, which is eſtabliſhed vpon better pro-
miſes. 7 For if that firſt *Teſtament* had bin vn-
blameable,

blameable, no place ſhould haue beene ſought
Chap. for ỹ ſecond. 8 For in rebuking them he ſaith,
10.16. *Behold, the daies will come, ſayth the Lord,
Iere. when I ſhall make with the houſe of Iſrael, and
31.31, with the houſe of Iuda a new Teſtament: 9 Not
32,33, like the Teſtament that I made with their fa-
34. thers, in the day that I tooke them by the hand,
Rom. to leade them out of ỹ land of Egypt: for they
11.27. continued not in my Teſtament, and I regarded
them not, ſaith the Lord. 10 For this is the Te-
ſtament that I will make with the houſe of Iſra-
el, After thoſe dayes, ſaith the Lord, I will put
my Lawes in their minde, & in their heart I wil
write them, and I will be their God, and they
ſhalbe my people, 11 And they ſhal not teache
euery man his neighbour, and euery man his
brother, ſaying, Knowe the Lord: for all ſhall
knowe me, from the leaſt of them, to the grea-
teſt of them. 12 For I wilbe merciſull to their
vnrighteouſneſſe, and I will remember their
ſinnes and their iniquities no more. 13 In that
he ſaith a new *Teſtament* he hath abrogate the
olde: now that which is diſanulled, and waxed
olde, is ready to vaniſh away.

CHAP. 9. 2. *The Law compared with Chriſt.*

THen the firſt *Teſtament* had alſo ordinan-
ces of religion, and a worldly Sanctuarie.
2 For the firſt Tabernacle was made, where-
in was the candleſticke, and the table, and the
ſhew bread, which *Tabernacle* is called the ho-
ly places. 3 And after the ſecond vaile was the
tabernacle,

tabernacle, which is called the Holiest of all,
4 Which had the golden censer, and the Arke
of the Testament ouerlayed round about with
gold, wherein the golden pot which had Man-
na, was, and * Aarons rodde that had budded, *Num.
and the *tables of the Testament. 5 *And ouer 17.10.
the Arke were the glorious Cherubims, sha- 1 *Kin.*
dowing the mercy seate: of which things we 8.9.
will not nowe speake particularly. 6 Nowe *Exo.*
when these things were thus ordeined, the 25.22.
Priestes went alwayes into the first tabernacle,
and accomplished the seruice. 7 But into the
second went the *hie Priest alone, once euery *Exod.*
yeere, not without blood which he offered for 30.10
himselfe, and for the ignorances of the people. *Ieuit.*
8 Whereby the holy Ghost this signified, that 16.2.
the way into the Holiest of all was not yet ope-
ned, while as yet the first tabernacle was stan-
ding, 9 Which was a figure for that present
time wherein were offered giftes and sacrifi-
ces that coulde not make holy, concerning the
conscience, him that did the seruice, 10 Which
onely stood in meates and drinkes, and diuers
washings, and carnall rites, which were inioy-
ned, vntill the time of refotmation. 11 But
Christ being come an high Priest of good
thinges to come, by a greater and a more per-
fect Tabernacle, not made with hands, that is,
not of this building, 12 Neither by the blood
of goates & calues: but by his owne blood en-
tred he in once into the holy place, and obtei-
ned

Leui. 16.14. num. 19.4. 1.Pet. 1.19. 1.Ioh. 1.7. Rom. 5.6. Gala. 3.13. Exod. 24.8.

ned eternall redemption *for vs.* 13 * For if the blood of buls & of goates, and the ashes of an heifer, sprinkling them ỹ are vncleane, sanctifieth as touching ỹ purifying of ỹ flesh, 14 How much more shall the * blood of Christ which through the eternal Spirit offred himselfe without fault to God, * purge your conscience from dead workes, to serue the liuing God? 15 And for this cause is he the Mediatour of the newe Testament, that through * death which was for the redemption of the transgressions *that were* in the former Testament, they which were called, might receiue the promise of eternall inheritance. 16 For where a Testament is, there must be the death of him ỹ made the Testamẽt. 17 * For the Testament is confirmed when men are dead: for it is yet of no force as long as he that made it, is aliue. 18 Wherefore neither was the first ordeined without blood. 19 For when Moses had spoken euery precept to the people, according to the Lawe, he tooke the blood of calues, and of goats, with water and purple wooll and hyssope, and sprinkled both the booke, & all the people, 20 * Saying, This is the blood of the Testament, which God hath appointed vnto you. 21 Moreouer, he sprinkled likewise the Tabernacle w blood also, & al the ministring vessels. 22 And almost al things are by the Law purged with blood, and without shedding of blood is no remission. 23 It was then necessarie, that the similitudes of heauenly

enly things ſhould be purified w̄ ſuch things: but the heauenly thinges themſelues *are purified* with better ſacrifices then are theſe. 24 For Chriſt is not entred into the holy places ẏ are made with hands, which are ſimilitudes of the true *Sanctuarie*: but *is entred* into very heauen, to appeare now in the ſight of God for vs. 25 Not that he ſhould offer himſelfe often, as the hie Prieſt entred into the Holy place euery yere with other blood, 26 (For then muſt he haue often ſuffered ſince the foundation of the world) but now in the end of the world hath he bin made manifeſt, once to put away ſinne, by the ſacrifice of himſelfe. 27 And as it is appointed vnto men that they ſhall once die, and after ẏ *commeth* the iudgement: 28 So Chriſt was once offred to take away the ſinnes of many, and vnto them that looke for him, ſhall he appeare the ſecond time without ſinne vnto ſaluation.

Rom. 5.8. 1. *pet.* 3.18.

CHAP. 10. 5. *Chriſt but once offered, though a perpetuall ſacrifice.*

FOr the Lawe hauing the ſhadowe of good thiugs to come, and not the very image of the things, can neuer with thoſe ſacrifices, which they offer yeere by yeere continnally, ſanctifie the commers thereunto. 2 For would they not then haue ceaſed to haue bene offered, becauſe that the offerers once purged, ſhould haue had no more conſcience of ſinnes? 3 But in thoſe *ſacrifices* there *is* a remẽbrance againe of ſinnes euery

euery yeere. 4 For it is vnpossible that the
blood of buls & goats should take away sinnes.
5 Wherefore when he cōmeth into the world,
Psal. he saith, * Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest
40.7. not: but a body hast thou ordeined me. 6 In
burnt offrings, and sinne offerings thou hast had
no pleasure. 7 Then I sayd, Lo, I come (in the
beginning of the booke it is written of me) that
I should do thy wil, O God. 8 Aboue, when
he said, Sacrifice & offering, and burnt offerings,
and sinne offrings thou wouldest not haue, neither hadst pleasure *therein* (which are offred by
the Law.) 9 Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy
wil, O God, he taketh away the first, that he may
stablish the second. 10 By the which will we
are sanctified, *euen* by the offring of Iesus Christ
once *made*. 11 And euery Priest standeth dayly ministring, & ofte times offreth one maner of
offering, which can neuer take away sinnes:
Chap. 12 But this man after he had offred one sacri-
1.13. fice for sinnes, * sitteth for euer at the right hand
Psal. of God, 13 And from henceforth tarieth, * til
110.2. his enemies be made his footestoole. 14 For
1. *cor.* with one offering hath he consecrated for euer
15 25. them that are sanctified. 15 For the holy Ghost
Chap. also beareth vs record: for after he had said be-
8 8. fore, 16 * This *is* the Testament that I wil make
iere. vnto them, After those dayes, saith the Lord, I
31.33. wil put my lawes in their heart, & in their minds
rom. I wil write them, 17 And their sinnes and ini-
11.27. quities wil I remember no more. 18 Nowe
where

where remission of these things is, there is no more offring for sinne. 19 Seing therefore, brethren, that by the blood of Iesus we may be bold to enter into the Holy place, 20 By the new and liuing way, which he hath prepared for vs, through the vaile, ỹ is, his flesh: 21 *And seing we haue* an hie Priest, *which is* ouer the house of God, 22 Let vs drawe neere with a true heart in assurance of faith, our heartes being pure from an euil conscience, 23 And washed in our bodies with pure water, let vs keepe the profession of our hope without wauering, (for he is faithfull that promised) 24 And let vs consider one another to prouoke vnto loue, and to good works, 25 Not forsaking the fellowship that we haue among our selues as the maner of some is: but let vs exhort *one another*, and that so much the more, because ye see that the day draweth neere. 26 * For if we sinne wilingly after that wee haue receiued and acknowledged ỹ truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sinnes, 27 But a feareful looking for of iudgment, and violent fire, which shal deuoure the aduersaries. 28 Hee that despiseth Moses Lawe, dieth without mercie * vnder two or three witnesses: 29 Of how much sorer punishment suppose ye shall he be worthie, which treadeth vnder foot the Sonne of God, & counteth the blood of the Testament as an vnholy thing, wherewith he was sanctified, and doeth despite the Spirit of grace? 30 For we know him

Chap. 6.4.

Deut. 19.15 matt. 18.16. iohn 8.17.

Deut. 32.35. Rom. 12.19. him, that hath said, *Vengeance belongeth vnto me: I will recompense, saith the Lord. And againe, The Lord shall iudge his people. 31 It is a fearefull thing to fall into the hands of the liuing God. 32 Now call to remembrance the dayes that are passed, in the which, after that yee had receiued light, ye endured a great fight in afflictions, 33 Partly while ye were made a gazing stocke both by reproches & afflictions, and partly while yee became companions of them which were so tossed to and fro. 34 For both ye sorowed with me for my bonds, and suffered with ioy the spoyling of your goods, knowing in your selues howe that ye haue in heauen a better, and an enduring substance. 35 Cast not away therefore your confidence which hath great recompense of reward. 36 For yee haue neede of patience, that after yee haue done the will of God ye might receiue the promise. 37 For yet a very little while, and he that shall come, will come, & will not tary. 38 *Now the iust shall liue by faith: but if any withdraw himself, my soule shall haue no pleasure in him. 39 But we are not they which withdraw our selues vnto perdition, but follow faith vnto the conseruation of the soule.

Hab. 2.4. Rom. 1.17. Galat. 3.11.

CHAP. XI. 1. *That all the fathers were saued onely by faith.*

NOwe faith is the ground of things which are hoped for, and the euidence of things which are not seene. 2 For by it our elders were well

reported of. 3 Through faith we vnder- Gene.
stand that y world was ordeined by the word 1.1.
of God, so that the things which we see, are not ioha
made of thinges which did appeare. 4 By faith 1.10.
Abel offered vnto God a greater sacrifice then Gene.
Cain, by which he obteined witnesse that 4.4.
he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: by Matt.
which faith also he being dead, yet speaketh. 23.35.
5 By faith was Enoch translated, that Gene.
he should not see death: neither was he found, 5.24.
for God had translated him: for before he was
translated, he was reported of, that he had plea-
sed God. 6 But without faith it is vnpossible
to please him: for he that commeth to God,
must beleeue that God is, and that he is a re-
warder of them that seeke him. 7 By faith
Noe being warned of God of y things which Gene.
were as yet not seene, moued with reuerence, 6.13.
prepared the Arke to y sauing of his household,
through the which Arke he condemned the
world, and was made heire of the righteousnes
which is by faith. 8 By faith Abraham, when Gene.
he was called, obeyed God, to goe out into a 12.4.
place, which he should afterwarde receiue for
inheritance, and he went out, not knowing
whither he went. 9 By faith he abode in the
land of promise, as in a strange countrey, as
one that dwelt in tents with Isaac and Iacob,
heires with him of the same promise. 10 For
he looked for a citie hauing a foundation,
whose builder and maker is God. 11 Through

Gene. 7.19. faith * Sara also receiued strength to conceiue
21.2. seede, and was deliuered of a childe when shee
was past age, because shee iudged him faithfull
which had promised. 12 And therefore sprang
there of one, euen of one which was dead so
many as the starres of the skie in multitude,
and as the sand of the sea shore which is innu-
merable. 13 All these died in faith, & receiued
not the promises, but saw them afarre off, and
beleeued *them*, and receiued *them* thankfully,
and confessed that they were strangers and pil-
grims on the earth. 14 For they that say such
things, declare plainely that they seeke a coun-
trey. 15 And if they had bin mindfull of that
countrey, from whence they came out, they
had leisure to haue returned. 16 But now they
desire a better that is an heauenly: wherefore
Gene. 22.10 God is not ashamed of them to bee called their
God: for hee hath prepared for them a citie.
Gene. 21.12. 17 By faith * Abraham offred vp Isaac, when
he was tried, & he that had receiued the pro-
rom. 9.7. mises offered his onely begotten Sonne. 18 (To
Gene. whom it was sayd, * In Isaac shall thy seede be
27,28, called) 19 For he cōsidered that God was able
29. to raise *him* vp euen frō the dead: from whence
Gene. he receiued him also after a sort. 20 By faith *Is-
48 15. saac blessed Iacob & Esau, concerning things to
Gene. come. 21 By faith *Iacob when he was a dying,
47.31. blessed both the sonnes of Ioseph and * leaned
Gene. on ye end of his staffe, worshipped God. 22 By
50.25. faith * Ioseph when he dyed, made mention of

the

departing of the children of Israel, & gaue commaundement of his bones. 23 * By faith Moses when he was borne, was hid three mo- nethes of his parents, because they sawe he was a proper childe, neither feared they the * Kings commaundement. 24 By faith * Moses when he was come to age, refused to bee called the sonne of Pharaos daughter, 25 And chose rather to suffer aduersitie with ỹ people of God, then to enioy the pleasures of sinnes for a season, 26 Esteeming, the rebuke of Christ greater riches then the treasures of Egypt: for hee had respect vnto the recompence of the reward. 27 By faith he forsooke Egypt, and feared not the fiercenes of the king: for he endured, as he that sawe him which is inuisible. 28 Through faith he ordeined the * Passeouer, and the effusion of blood, least hee that destroyed the first borne, should touch them. 29 By faith they * passed through the red sea as by drie lande, which when the Egyptians had assayed to doe, they were swallowed vp. 30 By faith the * walles of Iericho fell downe, after they were compassed about seuen dayes. 31 By faith the harlot * Rahab perished not with them which obeyed not, when * she had receiued the spies peaceably. 32 And what shall I more say? for the time would be too short for me to tell of * Gedeon, of * Barac, and of * Sampson, and of * Iephte, also of Dauid, and Samuel, and of the Prophets: 33 Which through faith subdued kingdomes,

Exod. 2.2.
Exod. 1.16.
Exod. 2.11.
Exod. 12.28
Exod. 14.22
Iosh. 6.20.
Iosh. 6.23.
Iosh. 2.1.
Iudg. 6.11.
Iudg. 4.6.
Iudg. 13.24
Iudg. 11.1.

kingdomes, wrought righteousneſſe, obteined the promiſes, ſtopped the mouthes of lyons, 34 Quenched the violence of fire, eſcaped the edge of the ſword, of weake were made ſtrong, waxed valiant in battell, turned to flight the armies of the aliants. 35 The women receiued their dead raiſed to life: other alſo were racked, & would not be deliuered, that they might receiue a better reſurrection. 36 And others haue beene tryed by mockings and ſcourgings, yea, moreouer by bondes and priſonment. 37 They were ſtoned, they were hewē aſunder, they were tempted, they were ſlayne with the ſword, they wandred vp and downe in ſheepes ſkinnes, & in goates ſkinnes, being deſtitute, afflicted, *and* tormented: 38 Whom the world was not worthy of: they wandred in ỹ wildernesſes, and mountaines, and dennes, and caues of the earth. 39 And theſe all through faith obtained good report, and receiued not the promiſe, 40 God prouiding a better thing for vs, that they without vs ſhould not be made perfite.

CHAP. 12. 1. *Exhortation to patience and conſtancie.*

Rom. 6.4. *coloſſ.* 3.8. *epheſ.* 4.24. *1.pet.* 2.1. WHerefore, * let vs alſo, ſeeing that we are compaſſed with ſo great a cloude of witneſſes, caſt away euery thing ỹ preſſeth downe, and ỹ ſinne that hangeth ſo faſt on: let vs runne with patience the race that is ſet before vs, 2 Looking vnto Ieſus the author and finiſher of our faith, who for the ioy that was ſet before

him, endured the crosse, and despised the shame, and is set at the right hand of the throne of God. 3 Consider therfore him that endured such speaking against of sinners, least ye should be wearied & faint in your mindes. 4 Ye haue not yet resisted vnto blood, striuing against sinne. 5 And yee haue forgotten the consolation, which speaketh vnto you as vnto children, My sonne, despise not the chastening of the Lorde, neither faint when thou art rebuked of him: 6 For whom the Lord loueth, he chasteneth: and he scourgeth euery sonne that he receiueth: 7 If ye endure chastening, God offereth himselfe vnto you as vnto sonnes: for what sonne is it whom ỹ father chasteneth not? 8 If therfore ye be without correctiõ, wherof al are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sonnes. 9 Moreouer we haue had the fathers of our bodies which corrected vs, and we gaue them reuerence: should we not much rather be in subiection vnto the Father of spirits, that wee might liue? 10 For they verely for a few dayes chastened vs after their own pleasure: but he *chastneth vs* for our profite, that we might be partakers of his holinesse. 11 Nowe no chastising for the present seemeth to be ioyous, but grieuous: but afterward it bringeth the quiet fruite of righteousnesse, vnto them which are thereby exercised. 12 Wherefore lift vp *your* handes which hang downe, & *your* weake knees, 13 And make straight steps vnto your feet, lest ỹ which

Prou. 3.11.

a halting, be turned out of the way, but let it ra-
Rom. her be healed. 14 *Follow peace with al men,
12.18 and holinesse, without ỹ which no man shall see
the Lord. 15 Take heede, that no man fall away
from the grace of God: let no roote of bitternes
spring vp and trouble you, least thereby many
be defiled. 16 Let there be no fornicatour, or
Gene. prophane person, as * Esau, which for a portion
25.33. of meate sold his birthright. 17 *For ye know
Gene. howe that afterward also when he would haue
27.38. inherited the blessing, hee was reiected: for he
found no place to repentance, though he sought
that *blessing* wt teares. 18 For ye are not come
Exod. vnto the *mount that might be touched, nor vn-
19.26 to burning fire, nor to blacknes, & darknes, and
tempest, 19 Neither vnto ỹ sounde of a trum-
pet, and the voyce of wordes, which they that
Exod. heard it, excused themselues, * that the worde
20.19. should not be spoke to thē any more, 20 (For
they were not able to abide that which was
Exod. commaunded, *Yea, though a beast touch the
19.12. mountaine, it shalbe stoned, or thrust through
with a dart: 21 And so terrible was the sight
which appeared, that Moses sayde, I feare and
quake.) 22 But ye are come vnto ỹ mount Si-
on, and to the citie of the liuing God, the celesti-
all Ierusalem, & to the company of innumera-
ble Angels, 23 And to the assembly and con-
gregation of the first borne, which are written
in heauen, & to God the Iudge of all, and to the
spirits of iust and perfite men, 24 And to Iesus
the

the Mediatour of the new Teſtament, and to the
bloud of ſprinkling that ſpeaketh better things
then that of Abel. 25 See that yee deſpiſe not
him that ſpeaketh: for if they eſcaped not,
which refuſed him, that ſpake on earth: much
more ſhal we *not eſcape*, if we turne away from
him, that *ſpeaketh* frō heauen. 26 Whoſe voice
then ſhooke the earth, and now hath declared,
ſaying, * Yet once more will I ſhake, not the *Aggæ*
earth only, but alſo heauen. 27 And this *word*, *2.7.*
Yet once more, ſignifieth the remouing of thoſe
things, which are ſhaken, as of thoſe things,
which are made *with handes*, that the things
which are not ſhaken, may remaine. 28 Wher-
fore ſeeing we receiue a kingdome which can-
not be ſhaken, let vs haue grace, whereby we
may ſo ſerue God, that we may pleaſe him with
reuerence and feare. 29 For * euen our God *Deut.*
is a conſuming fire. *4.24.*

CHAP. 13. *Precepts both of maners and doctrine.*

LEt * brotherly loue continue. 2 * Be not *Rom.*
forgetful to entertaine ſtrangers: for there- *12.10.*
by ſome haue * receiued Angels into their hou- *1.Pet.*
ſes vnawares. 3 Remember them that are in *4.9.*
bonds, as though ye were bound with them: *Gene.*
and them that are in affliction, as if ye were al- *18.3*
ſo *afflicted* in the body. 4 Marriage * is honou- *& 19.*
rable among all, and the bedde vndefiled: but *3.*
whoremongers and adulterers God will iudge.
5 Let your cōuerſation be without couetouſnes,

and be content with those things that ye haue
Iosh. for he hath said, 6 *I will not faile thee, nei-
1.5. ther forsake thee: 7 So that wee may boldly
Psal. say, *The Lorde is my helper, neither will I
118.6. feare what man can do vnto me. 8 Remember
them which haue the ouersight of you, which
haue declared vnto you the worde of God:
whose faith follow, considering what hathbene
the ende of their conuersation. Iesus Christ ye-
sterday, and to day, the same also *is* for euer.
9 Be not caried about with diuers *and* strange
doctrines: for it is a good thing that the heart be
stablished with grace, *&* not with meates, which
haue not profited them that haue bene occupi-
ed therein. 10 We haue an altar whereof they
haue no authoritie to eate which serue in the
Leui. Tabernacle. 11 *For the bodies of those beasts
4.11. whose blood *is* brought into the Holy place by
and 6. the hie Priest for sinne, are burnt without the
30. campe. 12 Therefore euen Iesus, that he might
& 16. sanctifie the people with his owne blood, suffred
27. without the gate. 13 Let vs goe forth to him
Mich. out of the campe, bearing his reproch. 14 *For
2.10. here haue we no continuing citie: but we seeke
one to come. 15 Let vs therefore by him offer
the sacrifice of praise alwayes to God, that is,
Hosh. the *fruite of the lippes, which confesse his
14.13. Name. 16 To doe good, and to distribute for-
get not: for with such sacrifices God is pleased.
17 Obey them that haue the ouersight of you,
and submit your selues: for they watch for your
soules,

rules, as they that muſt giue accounts, that they may doe it with ioy, and not with griefe: for that is vnprofitable for you. 18 Pray for vs: for we are aſſured that we haue a good conſcience in all things, deſiring to liue honeſtly. 19 And I deſire you ſomewhat the more earneſtly, that yee ſo doe, that I may be reſtored to you more quickly. 20 The God of peace that brought againe from the dead our Lorde Iesus, the great ſhepheard of ỹ ſheepe, through the blood of ỹ euerlaſting Couenant, 21 Make you perfect in all good workes, to doe his wil, working in you that which is pleaſant in his ſight through Ieſus Chriſt, to whom *be* praiſe for euer and euer, Amen. 22 I beſeeche you alſo brethren, ſuffer the wordes of exhortation: for I haue written vnto you in fewe wordes. 23 Know that *our* brother Timotheus is deliuered, with whome (if he come ſhortly) I will ſee you. 24 Salute all them that haue the ouerſight of you, and all the Saintes. They of Italy ſalute you. 25 Grace *be* with you all, AMEN.

Written to the Hebrewes from Italie, *and ſent* by Timotheus.

THE

CHAP. I. *6 Of patience, faith, and humilitie. 13 Of temptations.*

IAmes a ſeruaunt of God and of the Lord Ieſus Chriſt, to ỹ twelue Tribes, which are ſcattered abroad, ſalutation. 2 My brethren, count it exceeding ioy, when ye fall in-
Rom. to diuers tentations, 3 *Knowing that the try-
3.5. ing of your faith bringeth foorth patience. 4 And let patience haue *her* perfect woorke, that ye may be perfect and entire, lacking nothing. 5 If any of you lacke wiſdome, let him aſke of God, which giueth to all men liberally, and reprocheth no man, and it ſhall be giuen
Matt. him. 6 * But let him aſke in faith, and wauer
7.7. not: for he that wauereth, is like a waue of the
marke ſea, toſt of the winde, and caried away. 7 Nei-
11.24. ther let that man thinke that he ſhall receiue a-
luke nything of the Lord. 8 A double minded man
11.9. *u* vnſtable in all his wayes. 9 Let the brother
iohn of lowe degree reioyce in that hee is exalted:
14.13. 10 Againe, he ỹ is rich, in that he is made low:
Iſai. for as the flower of the graſſe, ſhal he* vaniſh a-
40.6. way. 11 For *as when* ỹ ſunne riſeth with heat,
1.*pet.* then the graſſe withereth, and his floure falleth
1.24. away, & the goodly ſhape of it periſheth: euen ſo ſhal ỹ rich man wither away in *all* his waies.
Iob 5. 12 * Bleſſed *u* the man that endureth tentation:
17. for when he is tried, he ſhal receiue the crowne of life, which the Lord hath promiſed to them

that

that loue him. 13 Let no man ſay when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with euill, neither tempteth he any man. 14 But euery man is tempted, when he is drawn away by his owne concupiſcence, and is entiſed. 15 Then when luſt hath conceiued, it bringeth forth ſinne, and ſinne when it is finiſhed, bringeth forth death. 16 Erre not, my deare brethren. 17 Euery good giuing, and euery perfect gift is from aboue, and commeth downe from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableneſſe, neither ſhadow of turning. 18 Of his owne will begate hee vs with the worde of trueth, that wee ſhould be as the firſt fruites of his creatures. 19 Wherefore my deare brethren, * let euery man bee ſwift to heare, ſlow to ſpeak, & ſlow to wrath. 20 For the wrath of man doeth not accompliſh the righteouſnes of God. 21 Wherefore lay apart all filthineſſe, and ſuperfluitie of maliciouſneſſe, and receiue with meekeneſſe the word that is graffed in you, which is able to ſaue your ſoules. 22 * And be ye doers of the word, and not hearers onely, deceiuing your owne ſelues. 23 For, if any heare the word, and doe it not, he is like vnto a man that beholdeth his naturall face in a glaſſe. 24 For when he hath conſidered himſelfe, he goeth his way, and forgetteth immediately what maner of one hee was. 25 But who ſo looketh in the perfect Lawe of libertie, and continueth *therein*, be not being a forgetfull

Prou. 17.27.

Matt. 7.21. *rom.* 1.13

forgetful hearer, but a doer of the worke, shalbe blessed in his deed. 26 If any man among you seemeth religious, & refraineth not his tongue, but deceiueth his owne heart, this mans religion is vaine. 27 Pure religion and vndefiled before God, euen the Father, is this, to visite the fatherlesse, and widowes in their aduersitie, *and* to keepe himself vnspotted of the world.

CHAP. 2. 1. *Of partialitie.* 14 *True faith cannot be voyde of good workes.*

Leuit. 12.15. deut. 1.17. & 16. 19. prou. 24.13.

MY brethren, haue not the faith of our glorious Lord Iesus Christ in *respect of persons. 2 For if there come into your company a man with a gold ring, and in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poore man in vile rayment, 3 And ye haue respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, & say vnto him, Sit thou here in a goodly place, and say vnto the poore, Stande thou there, or sit here vnder my footestoole, 4 Are ye not partial in your selues, and are become iudges of euil thoughts? 5 Harken, my beloued brethren, Hath not God chosen the poore of this world, *that they should be* rich in faith, and heires of the kingdome which hee promised to them that loue him? 6 But ye haue despised the poore. Doe not the riche oppresse you by tyrannie, and do not they draw you before the iudgement seats? 7 Do not they blaspheme the worthy Name after which yee bee named? 8 But if yee fulfill the royall Lawe, according to the Scripture, *which saith,* Thou

Thou ſhalt loue thy neighbour as thy ſelfe, yee doe well. 9 But if ye regard the perſons, yee commit ſinne, and are rebuked of the Lawe, as tranſgreſſors. 10 For whoſoeuer ſhall keepe the whole Lawe, *and* yet fayleth in one *point*, he is guiltie of all. 11 For he that ſaide, Thou ſhalt not commit adulterie, ſaid alſo, Thou ſhalt not kil. Now though thou doeſt none adulterie, yet if thou killeſt, thou art a tranſgreſſour of the Lawe. 12 So ſpeake ye, and ſo doe, as they that ſhall bee iudged by the Lawe of libertie. 13 For there ſhalbe cõdemnation mercileſſe to him that ſheweth no mercy, and mercie reioyceth againſt condemnation. 14 What auaileth it, my brethren, though a man ſaith he hath faith, when he hath no workes? can that faith ſaue him? 15 For if a brother or a ſiſter be naked, and deſtitute of dayly foode, 16 And one of you ſay vnto them, Depart in peace: warme your ſelues, and fill your bellies: notwithſtanding yee giue them not thoſe things which are needefull to the body, what helpeth it? 17 Euen ſo the faith, if it haue no workes, is dead in it ſelfe. 18 But ſome man might ſay, Thou haſt the faith, and I haue workes: ſhewe mee thy faith out of thy workes, and I will ſhewe thee my faith by my workes. 19 Thou beleeueſt that there is one God: thou doeſt well: the deuils alſo beleeue it, and tremble. 20 But wilt thou vnderſtande, O thou vaine man, that the faith *which* is without woorkes, is dead? 21 Was not

Abraham

Abraham our father iustified through workes,
Gene 22.10. *when he offered Isaac his sonne vpon the altar? 22 Seest thou not that the faith wrought with his workes? and through the workes was the faith made perfect. 23 And the Scripture
Gene. 15.6. was fulfilled, which saith, * Abraham beleeued God, and it was imputed to him for righteousrom. 4.3. nesse: and hee was called the friende of God. 24 Yee see then howe that of workes a man is
Galat. 3.6. iustified, and not of faith onely. 25 Likewise
Iosh. 2.1. also was not* Rahab the harlot iustified through works, when she had receiued the messengers, and sent them out another way? 26 For as the body without the spirit is dead, euen so the faith without workes is dead.

CHAP. 3. 3 *Of moderation of the tongue,* 15 *And how much mans wisdome* 17 *differeth from heauenly.*

MY brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receiue the greater condemnation. 2 For in many things we sinne al. If any man sinne not in word, hee is a perfect man, and able to bridle all the body. 3 Behold, we put bittes into the horses mouthes that they should obey vs, and we turne about al their body. 4 Beholde also the shippes, which though they be so great, and are driuen of fierce winds, yet are they turned about with a very small rudder, whithersoeuer the gouernour listeth. 5 Euen so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth of great things: behold, how great a thing

ding a litle fire kindleth 6 And the tongue *is* fire, *yea*, a worlde of wickednesse: so is the tongue set among our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature, and it is set on fire of hel. 7 For the whole nature of beastes, and of birdes, and of creeping thinges, and things of the sea is tamed, and hath bin tamed of the nature of man. 8 But the tongue can no man tame, *It is* an vnruly evil, full of deadly poyson. 9 Therewith blesse wee God euen the Father, and therewith curse wee men, which are made after the similitude of God. 10 Out of one mouth proceedeth blessing & cursing: my brethren, these things ought not so to be. 11 Doeth a fountaine send forth at one place sweete *water* & bitter? 12 Can the figtree, my brethren, bring foorth oliues, either a vine figs? so can no fountaine make both salt water and sweete. 13 Who is a wise man, and indued with knowledge among you? let him shewe by good conuersation his woorkes in meekenes of wisdome. 14 But if ye haue bitter enuying, and strife in your hearts, reioyce not, neither be lyars against the trueth. 15 This wisdome descendeth not from aboue, but *is* earthly, sensuall, & deuilish. 16 For where enuying and strife *is*, there *is* sedition, and all maner of euill workes. 17 But the wisdome that *is* from aboue, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, easie to be entreated, ful of mercie and good fruits, without iudging and without hypocrisie.

18 And

18 And the fruite of righteousnes is sowen in peace, of them that make peace.

CHAP. 4 1 *Of the workes of the flesh.* 7 *Hee exhorteth to humilitie,* 8 *and to purge the heart.* 9 *from pride, &c.*

FRom whence *are* warres, & contentions among you? are they not hence, *even* of your pleasures, that fight in your members? 2 Ye lust, and haue not: ye enuie, and desire immoderately, and cannot obtaine: ye fight and warre, and get nothing, because ye aske not. 3 Ye aske, and receiue not, because ye aske amisse, that ye might lay the same out on your pleasures. 4 Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the amitie of ỹ world is the enimitie of God? Whosoeuer therefore wil be a friende of the world, maketh himselfe the enemie of God. 5 Do ye thinke that the Scripture sayeth in vaine, The spirite that dwelleth in vs, lusteth after enuie? 6 But *the Scripture* offereth more grace, and
Pro. 3.34. therefore saith, * God resisteth the proude, and giueth grace to the humble. 7 * Submit your
1.pet. 5.5. selues to God: resist the deuil, and hee will flee
Ephes. 4.27. from you. 8 Draw neere to God, & he wil draw neere to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners, and purge your hearts, ye wauering minded. 9 Suffer afflictions, and sorow ye, & weepe, let your
1.Pet. 5.6. laughter bee turned into mourning, and ioye into heauinesse. 10 * Cast downe your selues before the Lorde, and he will lift you vp.

11 Speake not euill one of another, brethren.

He

that ſpeaketh euil of his brother, or he that
damneth his brother, ſpeaketh euil of the Law,
and condemneth the Law: and if thou condem-
neſt the Lawe, thou art not an obſeruer of the
Lawe, but a iudge. 12 There is one Lawgiuer,
which is able to ſaue, and to deſtroy. * Who art *Rom.*
thou that iudgeſt another man? 13 Go to now 13.4.
ye that ſay, To day or to morow wee will goe
into ſuch a citie, and continue there a yere, and
buy and ſel, and get gaine, 14 (And yet ye can
not tell what *ſhall be* to morowe. For what is
your life? It is euen a vapour that appeareth a
little time, and afterwarde vaniſheth away)
15 For that ye ought to ſay, * If the Lord wil, 1. *Cor.*
and if we liue, we will doe this or that. 16 But 4.11.
ye reioyce in your boaſtings: all ſuch reioycing
is euil. 17 Therefore, to him that knoweth how
to do well, and doeth it not, to him it is ſinne.

CHAP 5. 1. *Againſt cruel rich men.*

GO to now, ye rich men: weepe, and howle
for your miſeries that ſhal come vpon you
2 Your riches are corrupt: and your garments
are motheaten. 3 Your gold & ſiluer is cãkred,
and the ruſt of them ſhalbe a witnes againſt you
and ſhal eate your fleſh, as *it were* fire. Ye haue
heaped vp treaſure for the laſt dayes. 4 Behold,
the hire of the labourers, which haue reaped
your fieldes (which is of you kept backe by
fraud) crieth, and the cryes of them which haue
reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lord of
hoſtes. 5 Ye haue liued in pleaſure on the earth,

and in wantonnesse. Yee haue nourished your
heares, as in a day of slaughter. 6 Ye haue con-
demned *and* haue killed the Iust, & he hath not
resisted you. 7 Be patient therefore, brethren,
vnto the comming of the Lord. Behold, the hus-
bandman wayteth for the precious fruite of the
earth and hath long patience for it, vntill he re-
ceiue the former, and the latter raine. 8 Be ye
also patient therefore and settle your heares:
for the comming of the Lorde draweth neere.
9 Grudge not one against another, brethren,
least ye be condemned: behold, the iudge stan-
deth before the doore. 10 Take, my brethren,
the Prophets for an ensample of suffring aduer-
sitie, & of long patience, which haue spoken in
the Name of the Lord. 11 Behold, we count them
blessed which endure. Ye haue heard of the pa-
tience of Iob, and haue knowen what ende the
Lord *made*. For the Lord is very pitifull & mer-
ciful. 12 But before all things, my brethren,
Mat. *sweare not, neither by heauen, nor by earth,
34. 5. nor by any other other but let your yea, be yea,
and *your* nay, nay, lest ye fal into cõdemnation.
13 Is any among you afflicted? Let him pray. Is
any merie? let him sing. 14 Is any sicke among
you? Let him call for the Elders of the Church,
and let them pray for him, and anoynt him with
Mar. *oyle in ỹ Name of the Lord. 15 And the pray-
6. 13. er of faith shal saue the sicke, and the Lord shal
raise him vp: and if he haue committed sinnes,
they shall be forgiuen him. 16 Acknowledge
you

your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed: for the prayer of a righteous man auayleth much, if it bee feruent.
17 *Helias was a man subiect to like passions 1.Kin.
as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might 17.1.
not raine, & it rained not on the earth for three & 18.
yeeres and sixe moneths. 18 And he prayed a- 45.
gaine, and the heauen gaue raine, and the earth luke
brought forth her fruit. 19 Brethren, *if any of 4.25.
you haue erred from the trueth, and some man Matt.
hath conuerted him, 20 Let him know that he 18.15.
which hath conuerted the sinner from going a-
stray out of his way, shall saue a soule frō death,
and shall hide a multitude of sinnes.

THE FIRST EPISTLE generall of Peter.

CHAP. I 1. *Gods mercie in Iesus Christ.* 13 *Exhortations to godly conuersation.*

PETER an Apostle of IESVS Christ, to the strangers that dwell here and there throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia and Bithinia, 2 Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father vnto sanctification of the Spirite, through obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Iesus Christ: Grace and peace be multiplied vnto you. 3 *Blessed *ber* God, euen the Father of our Lorde Iesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercie hath begotten vs againe vnto a liuely hope

by the reſurrection of Ieſus Chriſt from the dead, 4 To an inheritance immortal & vndefiled, and that withereth not, reſerued in heauen for vs, 5 Which are kept by ỹ power of God through faith vnto ſaluation, which is prepared to be ſhewed in the laſt time. 6 Wherin ye reioyce, though now for a ſeaſon (if need require) ye are in heauines, through manifold tentations, 7 That the trial of your faith being much more precious then gold that periſheth (though it be tried with fire) might be found vnto *your* praiſe, and honour and glory at the appearing of Ieſus Chriſt: 8 Whom ye haue not ſeene and ye loue *him*, in whome nowe, though ye ſee him not, yet doe you beleeue, and reioyce with ioy vnſpeakeable and glorious, 9 Receiuing the ende of your faith, *euen* the ſaluation of your ſoules. 10 Of the which ſaluation the Prophets haue inquired and ſearched, which prophecied of the grace that ſhoulde come vnto you, 11 Searching when or what time the Spirite which teſtified before of Chriſt which was in them, ſhould declare the ſufferings *that ſhould come* vnto Chriſt, and the glory that ſhould follow, 12 Vnto whome it was reuealed, that not vnto themſelues, but vnto vs they ſhoulde miniſter the things which are nowe ſhewed vnto you by them which haue preached vnto you the Goſpel by the holy Ghoſt ſent downe from heauen, the which things the Angels deſire to beholde. 13 Wherefore, girde vp the loynes

of

your minde, be sober, and trust perfectly on
the grace ỹ is brought vnto you, in the reuela-
tion of Iesus Christ, 14 As obedient children, not
fashioning your selues vnto the former lusts of
your ignorance: 15 But as he which hath called
you is holy, so be ye holy in * all maner of con-
uersation, 16 Because it is written, *Be ye ho-
ly, for I am holy. 17 And if ye call him Father,
which without * respect of persons iudgeth ac-
cording to euery mans worke, passe the time of
your dwelling here in feare, 18 Knowing that
ye were not redeemed with corruptible things,
as siluer & gold, from your vaine conuersation,
receiued by ỹ traditions of the fathers, 19 *But
with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lambe
vndefiled, & without spot. 20 Which was * or-
dained before the foundation of the world, but
was declared in the last times for your sakes,
21 Which by his meanes do beleeue in God that
raised him from the dead, & gaue him glory, that
your faith & hope might be in God. 22 Hauing
purified your soules in obeying ỹ truth through
the Spirit, to *loue brotherly without fayning,
loue one another with a pure heart feruently,
23 Being borne anew, not of mortall seed, but
of immortall, by the word of God, who liueth &
endureth for euer. 24 For all *flesh is as grasse,
& al the glory of man is as the flower of grasse.
The gras withereth, & the flower falleth away.
25 But ỹ word of the Lord endureth for euer: &
this is the word which is preached among you.

Luke 1.75. Leuit. 11.44. Deut. 10.17.

1. Cor. 6.20. Rom. 16.25.

Chap. 2.17.

Isai. 40.6. Iames 2.10.

CHAP. 2. 1. *Holmesse of life and obedience to Magistrates.*

Rom. 6. 4. *ephes.* 4. 23. *colos.* 3. 8. *hebr.* 12. 1. *Reue.* 1. 6.

WHerfore, * laying aside all maliciousnes & all guile and dissimulation, and enuie and all euil speaking, 2 As new borne babes desire the sincere milke of the word, that ye may grow thereby, 3 Because ye haue tasted that the Lord is bountifull. 4 To whom ye come as vnto a liuing stone disalowed of men, but chosen of God, *and* precious. 5 Ye also as liuely stones, be made a spirituall house, an holy * Priesthood to offer vp spirituall sacrifices acceptable to God by Iesus Christ. 6 Wherefore also it is

Isai. 28. 16. *Psal.* 118. 22 *Isai.* 8. 14. *rom.* 9. 33.

contained in the Scripture, * Beholde, I put in Sion a chiefe corner stone, elect & precious: and he that beleeueth therein, shall not be ashamed. 7 Vnto you therefore which beleeue, it is precious: but vnto them which be disobedient, * the stone which the builders disalowed, the same is made the head of the corner, 8 And a * stone to stumble at, & a rocke of offence, euen *to them* which stumble at the word being disobedient, vnto the which thing they were euen ordeined.

Exo. 19. 6. *Hose.* 2. 23. *rom.* 9. 25.

9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royall * Priesthood, an holy nation, a people set at libertie, that ye should shew forth the vertues of him that hath called you out of darkenesse into his marueilous light, 10 * Which in time past were not a people, yet *are* nowe the people of God: which in time past were not vnder mercy: but now haue obteined mercy. 11 Dearely beloued

said, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims,
* abstaine from fleshly lusts, which fight against
the soule, 12 * And haue your conuersation ho- 13.14.
nest among the Gentiles, that they which speake Galat.
euil of you as of euil doers, may by your * good 5.16.
workes which they shall see, glorifie God in the Chap.
day of the visitation. 13 * Submit your selues 3.16.
vnto all maner ordinance of man for the Lords Matt.
sake, whether it be vnto the King, as vnto the 5.16.
superiour, 14 Or, vnto gouernours, as vnto Rom.
them that are sent of him, for the punishment of 13.1.
euil doers, and for the praise of them that doe
well. 15 For so is the wil of God, that by well
doing yee may put to silence the ignorance of
the foolish men, 16 As free, and not as hauing
the libertie for a cloake of maliciousnesse, but
as the seruants of God. 17 Honour all men:
* loue brotherly fellowship: feare God: honor Chap.
the King. 18 * Seruants be subiect to your ma- 2.22.
sters with all feare, not only to the good and Rom.
courteous, but also to the froward. 19 * For 12.10.
this is thanke-worthy, if a man for conscience Ephes.
toward God endure griefe suffering wrongful- 5.6.
ly. 20 For what praise is it, if when ye be buf- colos.
feted for your faults, yee take it patiently? but 3.22.
and if when ye do well, ye suffer wrong & take 2.Cor.
it patiently, this is acceptable to God. 21 For 7.10.
hereunto ye are called: for Christ also suffered Isai.
for you, leauing you an ensample that ye should 53.9.
follow his steps. 22 * Who did no sinne, neither 1.John
was there guile found in his mouth. 23 Who 3.5.

when

when he was reuiled, reuiled not againe: whe hee suffered, he threatned not, but committed it
Isai. 53.5. to him that iudgeth righteously. 24 * Who his owne selfe bare our sinnes in his body on
mat. 8.17. the tree, that we being dead to sinne, should liue in righteousnesse: by whose stripes ye were healed. 25 For yee were as sheepe going astray: but are now returned vnto the shepheard and Bishop of your soules.

CHAP. 3. 1. *Precepts for wiues & husbands.*

Colos. 3.18. ephes. 5.22. LIkewise * let the wiues be subiect to their husbands, that euen they which obey not the word, may without the word be wonne by the conuersation of the wiues, 2 While they behold your pure conuersation, which is with
2. Tim. 3.9. feare. 3 * Whose apparelling, let it not be outward, with broyded haire, & golde put about, or in putting on of apparel. 4 But let it be the hid man of the heart, *which consisteth* in the incorruption of a meeke & quiet spirit, which is before God a thing much set by. 5 For euen after this maner in time past did the holy women, which trusted in God, tire themselues, and were subiect to their husbands. 6 As Sara obeyed Abraham, and * called him Syr: whose
Gene. 18.12. 1. Cor. 7.3. daughters ye are, whiles ye do well, not being afraid of any terror. 7 * Likewise ye husbands, dwell with them as men of knowledge, giuing honour vnto the woman, as vnto the weaker vessel, euen as they which are heires together of the grace of life, that your prayers be not interrupted.

corrupted. 8 Finally, be ye all of one minde: *one* ſuffer with another: loue as brethren: *be* pitifull: *be* courteous, 9 * Not rendring euill *Prou.* for euill, neither rebuke for rebuke: but con- 17.13. trariwiſe bleſſe, knowing that yee are thereunto called, that yee ſhould be heires of bleſſing. 10 * For if any man long after life, and to ſee *Pſal.* good dayes, let him refraine his tongue from e- 34.13. uil, and his lippes that they ſpeake no guile. 11 * Let him eſchew euill, & do good; let him *Iſai.* ſeeke peace, & follow after it. 12 For the eyes 1.16. of the Lord *are* ouer the righteous, & his eares *are open* vnto their prayers: and the face of the Lord *is* vpon them that doe euil. 13 And who is *he* that wil harme you, if ye folow that which is good? 14 *Notwithſtanding bleſſed *are ye*, *Mat.* if yee ſuffer for righteouſneſſe ſake *. Yea, feare 5.10. not their feare, neither be troubled. 15 But ſan- *Iſai.* ctifie the Lord God in your hearts: and be rea- 8.12, dy alwayes to giue an anſwere to euery man 13. that aſketh you a reaſon of the hope that is in you, with meekneſſe & reuerence, 16 Hauing a good conſcience, that when they ſpeake euill of you, as of euill doers, they may be aſhamed, which ſlander your good cõuerſation in Chriſt. 17 For *it is* better (if the wil of God be ſo) that ye ſuffer for well doing, then for euill doing. 18 * For Chriſt alſo hath once ſuffered for *Rom.* ſinnes, the iuſt for the vniuſt, that hee might 5.6. bring vs to God, was put to death concer- *Hebr.* ning the fleſh, but was quickened in the ſpirit. 9.15.

19 By

19 By the which hee also went, and preached vnto the spirits that are in prison, 20 Which were in time passed disobedient, when once the long suffering of God abode in the dayes of Noe, while the Arke was preparing, wherein fewe, that is, eight soules were saued in the water. 21 Wherof the baptisme that now answering that figure (which is not a putting away of the filth of the flesh, but a confident demauding which a good conscience maketh to God) saueth vs also by the resurrection of Iesus Christ, 22 Which is at the right hand of God, gone into heauen, to whome the Angels, and powers, and might are subiect.

Gene. 6.14. matt. 24.30. luke 17.26.

CHAP. 4. *Of mortification, charitie, and patience.*

FOrasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for vs in the flesh, arme your selues likewise with the same minde, *which is*, that hee which hath suffered in the flesh, hath ceassed from sinne, 2 That he henceforward should liue (as much time as remaineth in the flesh) not after the lusts of men, but after the will of God. 3 * For it is sufficient for vs that we haue spent the time past of the life, after the lust of the Gentiles, walking in wantonnesse, lustes, drunkennesse, in gluttony, drinkinge, and in abominable idolatries. 4 Wherein it seemeth to them strange, that ye runne not with them vnto the same excesse of riot: *therefore* speake they euil of you. 5 Which shal giue accounte to him, that is ready to iudge quicke

Ephes. 4.22.

wicke & dead. 6 For vnto this purpose was the Gospel preached also vnto the dead, ỹ they might be condemned, according to men in the flesh, but might liue according to God, in the spirit. 7 Now the ende of al things is at hand. Beye therefore sober, and watching in prayer. 8 But aboue all things haue feruent loue among you: *for loue shal couer the multitude of sinns. *Prou. 10.12.
9 *Bee ye harberous one to another without grudging. 10 *Let euery man as hee hath receiued the gift, minister the same one to another, as good disposers of the manifold grace of God. 11 If any man speake, *let him speake* as the words of God. If any man minister, *let him doe it* as of the abilitie which God ministreth, that God in all things may be glorified through Iesus Christ, to whom is praise & dominion for euer, & euer. Amen. 12 Dearly beloued, thinke it not strange concerning the firie trial, which is among you to proouе you, as though some strange thing were come vnto you: 13 But reioyce, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christes sufferings, that when his glory shall appeare, ye may be glad & reioyce. 14 *If ye be railed vpō for the Name of Christ, blessed *are yee*: for the spirit of glory, & of God resteth vpō you: *which* on their part is euill spoken of: but on your part is glorified. 15 But let none of you suffer as a murtherer, or *as* a thiefe, or an euill doer, or as a busie body in other mens matters. 16 But *if any man suffer* as a Christian, let him not be a-

*Rom. 12.3. *hebr. 13.2. *Rom. 12.6. *phil. 2.14. *Mat. 5.10.

shamed:

shamed, but let him glorifie God in this behalfe.
17 For the time *is come*, that iudgemẽt must begin at ỹ house of God. If it first *begin* at vs, what shal the end be of thẽ which obey not the Gospel of God? 18 * And if the righteous scarcely be saued, where shall the vngodly and the sinner appeare? 19 Wherfore let them that suffer according to the wil of God, commit their soules *to him* in well doing, as vnto a faithful Creator.

Prou. 2.31.

CHAP. 5 *Duties of Elders*, 5 *and yonger sort.*

THe Elders which are among you, I beseech which am also an Elder, and a witnesse of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shalbe reuealed, 2 Feed the flocke of God, which dependeth vpon you, caring for it not by constraint, but willingly: not for filthy lucre, but of a ready minde: 3 Not as though ye were lords ouer *Gods* heritage, but that ye may be ensamples to the flocke. 4 And when the chiefe Shepheard shall appeare, ye shall receiue an incorruptible crown of glory. 5 Likewise ye yonger, submit your selues vnto the Elders, and submit your selues euery man one to another: * decke your selues inwardly in lowlinesse of minde: for God * resisteth the proud, and giueth grace to the humble. 6 * Humble your selues therefore vnder the mightie hand of God, that hee may exalt you in due time. 7 Cast * all your care on him: for hee careth for you. 8 Be sober and watch: for * your aduersarie

Rom. 12.10. Iames 4.6. Iames 4.10. Psal. 35 23. Matt. 6.25. Luk.12 22. Luke 22.31.

uersarie the deuill as a roaring lion walketh about, seeking whom he may deuoure: 9 Whō resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren which are in the world. 10 And the God of al grace, which hath called vs vnto his eternall glory by Christ Iesus after that ye haue suffered a little, make you perfect, confirme, strengthen, and stablish you. 11 To him be glory and dominion for euer and euer, Amen. 12 By Siluanus a faithfull brother vnto you, as I suppose, haue I written briefly, exhorting and testifying how that this is the true grace of God, wherein ye stand. 13 The Church that is at Babylon elected together with you, saluteth you, and Marcus my sonne. 14 Greet yee one another with the * kisse of loue. Peace be with you all which are in Christ Iesus, AMEN.

*Rom. 16.16.

THE SECOND EPISTLE generall of Peter.

CHAP. 1 *Exhortation to holinesse of life.*

SImon Peter a seruant & an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to you which haue obteined like precious faith with vs by the righteousnesse of our God & Sauiour Iesus Christ: 2 Grace & peace be multiplied to you, through the knowledging of God & of Iesus our Lord, 3 According as his diuine power hath giuen vnto vs al things that *pertaine* vnto life & godlinesse,

lineſſe, through the knowledge of him that
hath called vs vnto glory, & vertue. 4 Whe-
by moſt great and precious promiſes are giuen
vnto vs, that by them ye ſhou'd be partakers
of the diuine nature, in that yee flee the cor-
ruption, which is in the world through lust.
5 Therefore giue euen all diligence thereun-
to: ioyne moreouer vertue with your faith;
and with vertue, knowledge: 6 And with
knowledge, temperance: and with temperance,
patience: and with patience, godlineſſe;
7 And with godlineſſe, brotherly kindeneſſe:
and with brotherly kindneſſe, loue. 8 For if
theſe things be among you, and abound, they
will make you that ye neither ſhall be idle, nor
vnfruitfull in the knowledge of our Lord Ieſus
Chriſt. 9 For he that hath not theſe things, is
blinde, and cannot ſee farre off, and hath for-
gotten that he was purged from his old ſinnes.
10 Wherefore, brethren, giue rather diligence
to make your calling and election ſure: for if
ye doe theſe things, ye ſhall neuer fall. 11 For
by this meanes an entring ſhalbe miniſtred vn-
to you abundantly into the euerlaſting king-
dome of our Lord and Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt.
12 Wherefore, I wil not be negligēt to put you
alwayes in remembrance of theſe things, though
that ye haue knowledge, and be ſtabliſhed in
the preſent trueth. 13 For I thinke it meete
long as I am in this tabernacle, to ſtirre you vp
by putting you in remembrance, 14 Seeing I
know

knowe that the time is at hande that I muſt lay
downe this my tabernacle, euen as our Lord Ie-
ſus Chriſt hath *ſhewed me. 15 I wil endeuour *Iohn
therefore alwayes, that ye alſo may be able to 21. 18.
haue remembrance of theſe things after my de-
parting. 16 *For we followed not deceiueable 1. Cor.
fables when we opened vnto you the power, & 8. 17.
comming of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, but with our and
eyes we ſawe his maieſtie: 17 For he receiued 2. 2.
of God the Father honour & glory, when there
came ſuch a voyce to him from that excellent
glory: * This is my beloued Sonne in whom I Mat.
am well pleaſed. 18 And this voyce we heard 17. 5.
when it came from heauen, being with him in
the holy mount. 19 We haue alſo a moſt ſure
word of the Prophets, to the which ye do well
that ye take heed, as vnto a light that ſhineth in
a darke place, vntill the day dawne, and the day
ſtarre ariſe in your hearts. 20 *So that ye firſt 2. Tim
know this, that no prophecie of the Scripture 3. 16.
is of any priuate interpretation. 21 For the
prophecie came not in olde time by the will of
man: but holy men of God ſpake as they were
moued by the holy Ghoſt.

CHAP. 2. 1. *Of the falſe teachers.*

BVt there were falſe prophets alſo among the
people, euen as there ſhall be falſe teachers
among you: which priuily ſhall bring in dam-
nable hereſies, euen denying the Lord, that hath
bought them, and bring vpon themſelues ſwift
damnation. 2 And many ſhall followe their
deſtructions,

destructions, by whom the way of trueth shall be euil spoken of. 3 And through couetousnes shal they with fained words make marchandise of you, whose condemnation long since resteth not, & their destruction slumbreth not. 4 For if God spared not the * Angels that had sinned, but cast them downe into hel, & deliuered them into chaines of darknes to be kept vnto damnation: 5 Neither hath spared the olde world, but saued * Noe the eight *person*, a preacher of righteousnes, & brought in the flood vpon the world of the vngodly, 6 * And turned the cities of Sodome & Gomorrhe into ashes, condemned them and ouerthrewe them, and made them an ensample vnto them that after should liue vngodly. 7 And deliuered iust Lot vexed with the vncleanly conuersation of the wicked: 8 (For he being righteous, and dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soule from day to day with their vnlawfull deedes) 9 The Lord knoweth to deliuer the godly out of tentation, & to reserue the vniust vnto the day of iudgement vnder punishment. 10 And chiefly them that walke after the flesh, in the lust of vncleannesse, and despise gouernment, *which are* bold, and stand in their owne conceite, and feare not to speake euill of them that are in dignitie. 11 Whereas the Angels which are greater both in power and might, giue not railing iudgement against them before the Lord. 12 But these, as naturall bruit beasts, led

2. Pet. 2. 1. John 4. 18. Iude 6. Gene. 7. 1. Gene. 19. 3. 24.

with ſenſualitie, and made to be taken and deſtroyed, ſpeake euill of thoſe things which they knowe not, and ſhall periſh through their owne corruption, 13 And ſhall receiue the wages of vnrighteouſneſſe, as they which count it pleaſure daily to liue deliciouſly. Spots *they are* and blottes, deliting themſelues in their deceiuings, in feaſting with you, 14 Hauing eyes full of adulterie, and that cannot ceaſe to ſinne, beguiling vnſtable ſoules: they haue hearts exerciſed with couetouſneſſe, *they are* the children of curſe: 15 Which forſaking the right way, haue gone aſtray, following the way *of Balaam, *the ſonne* of Boſor, which loued the wages of vnrighteouſneſſe. 16 But he was rebuked for his iniquitie: *for* the dumme beaſt ſpeaking with mans voyce, forbade the fooliſhneſſe of the Prophet. 17 *Theſe are welles without water, *and* cloudes caried about with a tempeſt, to whom the blacke darkeneſſe is reſerued for euer. 18 For in ſpeaking ſwelling words of vanitie, they beguile with wantonnes through the luſtes of the fleſh them that were cleane eſcaped frō them which are wrapped in errour, 19 Promiſing vnto them libertie, and are themſelues the *ſeruants of corruption: for of whom ſo euer a man is ouercome, euen vnto ȳ ſame is he in bondage. 20 *For if they, after they haue eſcaped from ȳ filthines of ȳ world, through ȳ acknowledging of the Lord, and of the Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt, are yet taugled againe

Num. 23.2.

Iude 12.

Iohn 8.34.

Matt. 12.45.

Hebre. 6.4.

therein, and ouercome, the latter ende is worse with them then the beginning. 21 For it had bin better for them, not to haue acknowledged the way of righteousnesse, then after they haue acknowledged it, to turne from the holy commandement giuen vnto them. 22 But it is come vnto them according to ỹ true prouerbe, *The dogge is returned to his owne vomite: and, The sowe that was washed, to the wallowing in the myre.

Prou. 26. 11.

CHAP. 3. 8. *To waite for the day of the Lord.*

THis second Epistle I nowe write vnto you, beloued, wherewith I stirre vp, and warne your pure mindes, 2 To call to remembrance the wordes which were told before of the holy Prophets, and also the commaundement of vs the Apostles of the Lord and Sauiour. 3 *This first vnderstand, that there shall come in the last dayes, mockers, which will walke after their lustes, 4 And will say, Where is the promise of his comming? for since the fathers died, all things continue alike from the beginning of the creation. 5 For this they willingly know not, that the heauens were of old, and the earth that was of the water, & by the water, by the word of God. 6 Wherefore ỹ world that then was, perished, ouerflowed with the water. 7 But the heauens and earth, which are now, are kept by the same worde in store, and reserued vnto fire against the day of condemnation, and of the destruction of vngodly men. 8 Dearely beloued,

2. Tim. 4. 1. 2. tim. 3. 1. Iude 18.

beloued, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lorde * as a thousand yeres, & a thousand yeres as one day. 9 The Lord of that promise is not slacke (as some men count slacknes) but is patient towards vs, *and would haue no man to perish, but would al men to come to repẽtance 10 But ỹ* day of the Lord will come as a theefe in the night, in the which the heauens shall passe away with a noyse, and the elements shall melt with heate, & the earth with the workes that are therein, shalbe burnt vp. 11 Seeing therefore that all these things must be dissolued, what maner persons ought ye to be in holy conuersation and godlinesse, 12 Looking for, and hasting vnto the comming of that day of God, by the which the heauens being on fire, shalbe dissolued, and the elements shall melt with heate? 13 But we looke for *newe heauens, and a newe earth, according to his promise, wherein dwelleth righteousnesse. 14 Wherefore, beloued, seeing that ye looke for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blamelesse 15 * And suppose that the long suffering of our Lord is saluation, euen as our beloued brother Paul according to the wisedome giuen vn to him wrote to you, 16 As one that in all *his* Epistles speaketh of these things: among the which some things are hard to be vnderstood, which they that are vnlearned & vnstable, wrest, as they *doe* also other Scriptures vnto their

Psal. 90.4. Ezek. 18.32 Mat. 24.24. 1. thes. 5.2. reuel. 3.3. and 6. 15. Isa. 65.17 and 66.22 Rom. 2.4.

owne destruction. 17 Ye therefore beloued, seeing ye knowe these things before, beware least ye be also plucked away with the error of the wicked, & fall from your owne stedfastnesse. 18 But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ: to him *be* glory both now & for euermore, Amen.

THE FIRST EPISTLE generall of Iohn.

CHAP. 1. 9. *Gods mercie to the faithfull.*

THat which was from the beginning, which we haue heard, which we haue seene with these our eyes, which we haue looked vpon, and these handes of ours haue handled of that Worde of life, 2 (For that life was made manifest, and we haue seene it, and beare witnesse, and shewe vnto you that eternall life, which was with the Father, and was made manifest vnto vs) 3 That, *I say*, which we haue seene and heard, declare we vnto you, that ye also may haue fellowship with vs, and that our fellowship also may be with the Father, & with his Sonne Iesus Christ. 4 And these thinges write we vnto you, that your ioy may be full. 5 This then is the message, which wee haue heard of him, and declare vnto you, that * God is light, and in him is no darkenesse. 6 If we say that we haue felowship with him, & walke in darkenes, we lie, and doe not truely: 7 But if

Iohn 8.12.

we walke in the light, as he is in the light, we haue fellowſhip one with another, and the bloud of Ieſus Chriſt his ſonne cleanſeth vs from all ſinne. 8 * If we ſay that we haue no ſinne, we deceiue our ſelues, and trueth is not in vs. 9 If we acknowledge our ſinnes, he is faithfull and iuſt, to forgiue vs our ſinnes, and to cleanſe vs from all vnrighteouſneſſe. 10 If we ſay we haue not ſinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in vs.

Hebr. 9.28. 1.*pet.* 1.19. 1.*Kin.* 8.46. 2.*chr.* 6.36.

CHAP. 2. 1. *That Chriſt is our Mediatour.*

MY litle children, theſe things write I vnto you, that ye ſinne not: & if any man ſinne, wee haue an aduocate with the Father, Ieſus Chriſt, ẏ iuſt. 2 And he is the reconciliation for our ſinnes: and not for ours onely, but alſo for *the ſinnes* of the whole world. 3 And hereby we are ſure that we know him, if we keepe his commandements. 4 He that ſaith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandements, is a lyar, and the trueth is not in him. 5 But he that keepeth his worde, in him is the loue of God perfect in deede: hereby we knowe that we are in him. 6 He that ſaith he remaineth in him, ought euen ſo to walke, as he hath walked. 7 Brethren, I write no new commandement vnto you: but an olde commaundement, which ye haue had from the beginning: this old commaundement is that worde, which ye haue heard from the beginning. 8 Againe, a newe commandement I write vnto you, that which

is true in him, and also in you: for the darkenes is past, and the true light now shineth. 9 He that saith that he is in that light, and hateth his brother, is in darkenes vntill this time. 10 *He that loueth his brother abideth in that light, and there is no occasion of euil in him. 11 But he that hateth his brother is in darkenes, and walketh in darkenes, and knoweth not whither he goeth, because that darkenesse hath blinded his eyes. 12 Litle children, I write vnto you, because your sinnes are forgiuē you for his names sake. 13 I write vnto you, fathers, because ye haue knowen him that is from the beginning. I write vnto you, yong men, because ye haue ouercome that wicked one, I write vnto you, litle children, because ye haue knowen the Father. 14 I haue written vnto you, fathers, because ye haue knowen him that is from the beginning. I haue written vnto you, young men, because ye are strong, and the worde of God abideth in you, and ye haue ouercome that wicked one. 15 Loue not this world, neither the things that are in this world. If any man loue this world, the loue of the Father is not in him. 16 For all that is in the world (as the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life) is not of the Father, but is of this world. 17 And this world passeth away, & the lust thereof: but he that fulfilleth the will of God, abideth euer. 18 Litle children, it is the last time, and as yee haue heard that Antichrist shal come, euen now are

Chap. 4. 14.

are there many Antichriſts: whereby we know that it is the laſt time. 19 They went out from vs, but they were not of vs: for if they had bin of vs, they ſhould haue continued with vs. But this *cõmeth to paſſe*, that it might appeare, that they are not all of vs. 20 But ye haue an oyntment from that Holy one, and knowe all things. 21 I haue not written vnto you, becauſe ye knowe not the trueth: but becauſe ye knowe it, & that no lie is of ỹ trueth. 22 Who is a liar, but he ỹ denieth that Ieſus is ỹ Chriſt? the ſame is that Anticichriſt ỹ denieth the Father and ỹ Sonne. 23 Whoſoeuer denieth ỹ Sonne, the ſame hath not ỹ Father. 24 Let therefore abide in you ỹ ſame which ye haue heard from the beginning. If that which ye haue heard from the beginning, ſhall remaine in you, ye alſo ſhall continue in the Sonne, & in ỹ Father. 25 And this is the promiſe ỹ he hath promiſed vs, *euen* that eternall life. 26 Theſe things haue I written vnto you, concerning them ỹ deceiue you. 27 But that annoynting which ye receiued of him, dwelleth in you: and ye neede not that any man teach you: but as the ſame annoynting teacheth you of all things, and it is true, and is not lying, & as it taught you, ye ſhall abide in him. 28 And nowe, litle children, abide in him, that when he ſhall appeare, we may be bold, & not be aſhamed before him at his comming. 29 If ye know that he is righteous, know ye that he which doeth righteouſly, is borne of him.

CHAP. 3. *Gods loue toward vs.*

BEhold, what loue the Father hath giuen vs, that we ſhould be called the ſonnes of God: for this cauſe this worlde knoweth vs not, becauſe it knoweth not him. 2 Dearely beloued, now are we the ſonnes of God, but yet it is not made manifeſt what we ſhalbe: and we knowe that when he ſhalbe made manifeſt, we ſhalbe like him: for we ſhall ſee him as he is. 3 And euery man that hath his hope in him, purgeth himſelfe, euen as he is pure. 4 Whoſoeuer committeth ſinne, tranſgreſſeth alſo the Lawe: for ſinne *is* the tranſgreſſion of the Law. 5 And ye knowe ye he was made manifeſt, that
Iſai. 53.6 9,11. he might * take away our ſinnes, and in him is
1.*pet.* 2.22, 24. no ſinne. 6 Whoſoeuer abideth in him, ſinneth not: whoſoeuer ſinneth, hath not ſeene him, neither hath knowen him. 7 Litle children, let no man deceiue you: he that doeth righteouſneſſe, is righteous, as he is righteous.
Iohn 8.44. 8 He that * committeth ſinne, is of the deuill: for the deuill ſinneth from the beginning: for this purpoſe was made manifeſt that Sonne of God, that he might looſe ye workes of ye deuill. 9 Whoſoeuer is borne of God, ſinneth not: for his ſeede remaineth in him, neither can he ſinne, becauſe he is borne of God. 10 In this are the children of God knowen, and the children of the deuil: whoſoeuer doeth not righteouſneſſe, is not of God, neither he that loueth not his brother. 11 For this is the meſſage, that

ye

ye heard from the beginning, ỹ * we should loue one another, 12 Not as *Cain *which* was of that wicked one, and slewe his brother: and wherefore slewe hee him? because his owne workes were euill, and his brothers good. 13 Marueile not, my brethren, though this world hate you. 14 We knowe that we are translated from death vnto life, because we loue the brethren: *he that loueth not *his* brother, abideth in death. 15 Whosoeuer hateth his brother, is a manslayer: and ye knowe that no manslayer hath eternall life abiding in him. 16 * Hereby haue we perceiued loue, that he layd downe his life for vs: therefore we ought also to lay downe *our* liues for the brethren. 17 *And whosoeuer hath this worlds good, and seeth his brother haue neede, and shutteth vp his compassion from him, howe dwelleth the loue of God in him? 18 My litle children, let vs not loue in word, neither in tongue *onely*, but in deede and in trueth. 19 For thereby we know that we are of the trueth, and shal before him assure our heartes 20 For if our heart cõdemne vs, God is greater then our heart, and knoweth all things. 21 Beloued, if our heart condemne vs not, then haue we boldnes toward God: 22 *And whatsoeuer we aske, we receiue of him, because we keepe his commandements, and doe those things which are pleasing in his sight. 23 *This is then his cõmandement, That we beleeue in ỹ Name of his Sõne Iesus Christ, ỹ loue

John 13.34. *& 15. 12.
Gene. 4.8.
Chap. 2.10.
Leuit. 19.17
John 15 13.
ephes. 5.2.
Luke 3.11.
Chap. 5.24.
matt. 21.22.
John 6.23.

loue one another, as he gaue commaundement.
John 13.34. & 15. 10. 24 For he that keepeth his commaundements, dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we knowe that he abideth in vs, *euen* by that Spirit which he hath giuen vs.

CHAP. 4. *To try the spirits.*

DEarely beloued, beleeue not euery spirit, but trie ye spirits whether they be of God: for many false prophets are gone out into this world. 2 Hereby thall ye knowe the Spirit of God, Euery spirit which confesseth that Iesus Christ is come in ye flesh, is of God. 3 And euery spirit that confesseth not Iesus Christ to be come in the flesh, is not of God: but this is the *spirit* of Antichrist, of whom ye haue heard, how that he should come, and nowe already he is in this world 4 Litle children, ye are of God, & haue ouercome them: for greater is he that is in you, then he ye is in this world. 5 They are of this world, therfore speake they of this world, and this worlde heareth them. 6 We are of
Joh. 8.47. God, *he that knoweth God heareth vs: he that is not of God, heareth vs not. Hereby know we the Spirite of trueth, and the spirite of errour. 7 Beloued, let vs loue one another: for loue cometh of God, & euery one ye loueth, is borne of God, & knoweth God. 8 He ye loueth not,
John 3 16. knoweth not God: for God is loue. 9 *Herein was that loue of God made manifest amongst vs, because God sent his only begotten Sonne into this world, ye we might liue through him.

10 Herein

9 Herein is that loue, not that we loued God, but that he loued vs, and ſent his Sonne *to be* a reconciliation for our ſinnes. 11 Beloued, if God ſo loued vs, we ought alſo to loue one another. 12 *No man hath ſeene God at any time. If we loue one another, God dwelleth in vs, and his loue is perfect in vs. 13 Hereby know we, that we dwell in him, and he in vs: becauſe he hath giuen vs of his Spirit. 14 And wee haue ſeene, & do teſtifie, that the father hath ſent that Sonne *to be* ỹ Sauiour of the world. 15 Whoſoeuer confeſſeth that Ieſus is ỹ Sonne of God, in him dwelleth God, and he in God. 16 And wee haue knowen, and beleeued the loue that God hath in vs. God is loue, & he that dwelleth in loue, dwelleth in God, and God in him. 17 Herein is that loue perfect in vs, that wee ſhould haue boldnes in ỹ day of iudgement: for as he is, euen ſo are we in this world. 18 There is no feare in loue, but perfect loue caſteth out feare: for feare hath painfulneſſe: & he that feareth is not perfect in loue. 19 We loue him, becauſe he loued vs firſt. 20 If any man ſay, I loue God, and hate his brother, he is a liar: for howe can hee that loueth not his brother whome hee hath ſeene, loue God whom hee hath not ſeene? 21 *And this commaundement haue wee of him, that he which loueth God, ſhoulde loue his brother alſo.

*John 1. 18. 1. Iohn 4. 16.

*John 13. 34. & 15 12.

CHAP. 5. *That faith and brotherly loue are inſeparable.*

Whoſoeuer

WHosoeuer beleeueth that Iesus is the Christ, is borne of God, and euery one that loueth him, which begat, loueth him also which is begotten of him. 2 In this we know that wee loue the children of God, when we loue God, and keepe his commandements. 3 For this is the loue of God, that we keepe his commandements: & his * commandements are not burdenous. 4 For all that is borne of God, ouercommeth this world: and this is the victory that hath ouercome ȳ world, *euen* our faith. 5 * Who is it that ouercommeth this world, but he which beleeueth that Iesus is the Sonne of God? 6 This is that Iesus Christ that came by water and blood: not by water onely, but by water and blood, and it is that Spirit, that beareth witnesse: for that Spirit is trueth. 7 For there are three, which beare record in heauen, the Father, the Word, and the holy Ghost, and these three are one. 8 And there are three, which beare record in the earth, the spirit, & the water, & the blood: and these three agree in one. 9 If we receiue the witnesse of men, the witnesse of God is greater: for this is the witnesse of God, which he testified of his Sonne. 10 * He that beleeueth in that Sonne of God, hath the witnesse in himselfe: he that beleeueth not God, hath made him a liar, because he beleeued not the record, that God witnessed of that his Sonne. 11 And this is that record, *to wit*, that God hath giuen vnto vs eternall

Matt. 11.30.

1.*Cor.* 15.57.

*Ioh.*3. 36.

eternall life, & this life is in ỹ his Sonne. 12 He that hath that Sonne, hath that life: and he that hath not that Sonne of God, hath not that life. 13 These things haue I written vnto you, that beleeue in the Name of that Sonne of God, that ye may know that ye haue eternal life, and that ye may beleeue in the Name of that Sonne of God. 14 And this is that assurance, that wee haue in him, * that if we aske any thing according to his will, he heareth vs. 15 And if wee know that hee heareth vs, whatsoeuer we aske, we know that wee haue the petitions that wee haue desired of him. 16 If any man see his brother sinne a sinne that is not vnto death, let him aske, & he shall giue him life for them that sinne not vnto death. * There is a sinne vnto death: I say not that thou shouldest pray for it. 17 All vnrighteousnesse is sinne, but there is a sinne not vnto death. 18 We know that whosoeuer is borne of God, sinneth not: but he that is begotten of God, keepeth himselfe, and that wicked toucheth him not. 19 We know that we are of God, and this whole world lieth in wickednesse. 20 But we know that that* Sonne of God is come, and hath giuen vs a minde to know him which is true: and we are in him, that is true, *that is*, in ỹ his Sonne Iesus Christ: this same is that very God, and that eternall life. 21 Litle children, keepe your selues from idoles. Amen.

Chap. 3.22.

Matt. 12.31. mark. 3.29.

Luke 24.45

THE

This Epistle is written to a woman of great renowne, whom he exhorteth to constancie.

THe Elder to the elect Lady, & her children, whō I loue in the truth and not I onely, but also all they that haue knowen the trueth, 2 For the trueths sake which dwelleth in vs, and shall be with vs for euer: 3 Grace be with you, mercie and peace from God the Father, & from the Lord Iesus Christ the Sonne of the Father, with trueth and loue. 4 I reioyced greatly, that I found of thy children walking in truth, as we haue receiued a commandement of the Father. 5 And now beseech I thee, Lady, (not as writing a new commandement vnto thee, but that same which we had from the beginning) that we *loue one another. *Iohn 13.12.* 6 And this is that loue, that we should walke after his commandements. This commandement is, that as ye haue heard from the beginning, ye should walke in it. 7 For many deceiuers are entred into this world, which confesse not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh. He that is such one, is a deceiuer & an Antichrist. 8 Looke to your selues, that we lose not the things which we haue done, but that we may receiue a full reward. 9 Whosoeuer transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. Hee that continueth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Sonne.

10 If

10 If there come any vnto you, and bring not this doctrine, *receiue him not to house, neither bid him, God speed. 11 For he that biddeth him, God speed, is partaker of his euill deeds. A Although I had many things to write vnto you, yet I would not *write* with paper & inke: but I trust to come vnto you, and speake mouth to mouth, that our ioy may be full. 12 The sonnes of thine elect sister greet thee, Amen.

Rom. 16. 17.

THE THIRD EPISTLE of Iohn.

Hospitalitie commended. 9 Vaine glory condemned, &c.

THe Elder vnto the beloued Gaius, whome I loue in the trueth. 2 Beloued, I wish chiefly, that thou prosperedst and faredst well as thy soule prospereth. 3 For I reioyced greatly when the brethren came, and testified of the trueth that is in thee, how thou walkest in the trueth. 4 I haue no greater ioy then this, *that is*, to heare that my sonnes walke in veritie. 5 Beloued, thou doest faithfully, whatsoeuer thou doest to the brethren, and to strangers, 6 Which bare witnesse of thy loue before the Churches. Whom if thou bringest on their iourney as it beseemeth, according to God, thou shalt doe well, 7 Because that for his Names sake they went forth, and tooke nothing of the Gentiles. 8 We therefore ought to receiue such, that wee might be helpers to

the

the trueth. 9 I wrote vnto the Church: but Diotrephes which loueth to haue the preeminence among thē, receiueth vs not. 10 Wherefore if I come, I wil call to your remembrance his deeds which he doeth, prating against vs with malicious words, and not therewith content, neither he himselfe receiueth the brethren, but forbiddeth them that would, and thrusteth them out of the Church. 11 Beloued, follow not that which is euill, but that which is good: he that doeth well, is of God: but he that doeth euill, hath not seene God. 12 Demetrius hath good report of all men and of the truth it selfe yea, & we our selues beare record, and ye know that our record is true. 13 I haue many things to write: but I will not with inke and penne write vnto thee. 14 For I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speake mouth to mouth. Peace be with thee. The friendes salute thee. Greet the friends by name.

THE GENERAL EPISTLE of Iude.

IVde a seruant of Iesus Christ, and brother of Iames, to them which are called & sanctified of God the Father, & reserued to Iesus Christ: 2 Mercy vnto you, and peace and loue be multiplied. 3 Beloued, when I gaue all diligence to write vnto you of the common saluation, it was needfull for me to write vnto you, to exhort you, that ye should earnestly cō-

tend

and for *the maintenance* of the faith, which was once giuen vnto the Saints. 4 For there are certein men crept in, which were before of olde ordeined to this condemnation: vngodly men *they are* which turne the grace of our God into wantonnesse, * & deny God the only Lord, 2.*Pet.*
and our Lord Iesus Christ. 5 I will therfore put 2.1.
you in remẽbrance, forasmuch as ye once knew this, how that the Lord after that he had deliuered the people out of Egypt, * destroyed thẽ *Num.*
afterward which beleeued not. 6 The * Angels 14.37
also which kept not their first estate, but left 2.*Pet.*
their owne habitation, he hath reserued in euer- 2.4.
lasting chaines vnder darkenes vnto the iudgement of the great day. 7 As * Sodom & Gomor- *Gene.*
rhe, & the cities about thẽ, which in like maner 19.24.
as they did, committed fornication, & followed strange flesh, are set forth for an example, & suffer ỹ vengeance of eternal fire 8 Likewise notwithstanding these sleepers also defile the flesh, & despise gouernment, and speake euil of them that are in authoritie. 9 Yet Michael the Archangel, when he stroue against the deuil, & disputed about the body of Moses, durst not blame him with cursed speaking, but said, The Lord rebuke thee. 10 But these speake euill of those things, which they know not: and whatsoeuer things they know naturally, as beasts which are without reason, in those things they corrupt thẽselues. 11 Wo *be* vnto them: for they haue fo- *Gene.*
lowed the way of * Cain, and are cast away by 4.8.

Num. 22.21 the deceit of * Balaams wages, & periſh in the gainesaying of * Core. 12 Theſe are ſpots in
2. pet. 2.15. your feasts of charitie whē they feast with you,
Num. 16.1. without all feare, feeding themſelues: * clouds
2. Pet. 2.17. *they are* without water, caried about of winds,
corrupt trees, *and* without fruit, twiſe dead, &
plucked vp by ỹ roots. 13 *They are* the raging
waues of the sea, ſoming out their own ſhame:
they are wandring ſtarres, to whom is reſerued
the blackeneſſe of darkeneſſe for euer. 14 And
Enoch alſo the ſeuenth from Adam propheſied
Reuel. 1.7. of ſuch, saying, * Beholde, the Lord commeth
with thouſands of his Saints, 15 To giue iudg-
ment againſt al men, & to rebuke all the vngod-
ly among them of al their wicked deeds, which
they haue vngodly committed, and of all their
cruell ſpeakings, which wicked ſinners haue
ſpoken againſt him. 16 Theſe are murmurers:
complainers, walking after their owne luſtes:
Pſal. 17.10. * whoſe mouthes ſpeake proud things, hauing
mens perſons in admiration, becauſe of aduan-
tage. 17 But, ye beloued, remember the words
which were ſpoken before of the Apoſtles of
our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, 18 How that they tolde
1. Tim. 4.1. you that there ſhould be mockers * in the laſt
2 tim. 3.1. time, which ſhould walke after their owne vn-
godly luſts. 19 Theſe are they that ſeparate
2 pet. 3.3. themſelues from other, naturall, hauing not the
Spirit. 20 But, ye beloued, edifie your ſelues
in your moſt holy faith, praying in the holy
Ghoſt, 21 And keepe your ſelues in the loue

of

of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Ie-
sus Christ, vnto eternall life. 22 And haue com-
passion of some, in putting difference: 23 And
other saue with feare, pulling them out of the
fire, and hate euen that garment which is spot-
ted by the flesh. 24 Now vnto him that is a-
ble to keepe you, that ye fall not, and to pre-
sent you faultlesse before the presence of his
glory with ioy, 25 *That is*, to God only wise,
our Sauiour, *be* glory, and maiestie, and do-
minion, and power, both now & for euer, Amen.

THE REVELATION OF Iohn the Diuine.

CHAP. 1. 12 *The mysterie of the seuen candlesticks and starres.*

THE Reuelation of Iesus Christ, which God gaue vnto him, to shew vnto his seruants thinges which must shortly bee done: which he sent, and shewed by his Angel vnto his seruant Iohn, 2 Who bare record of the word of God, & of the testimony of Iesus Christ, & of all things that he saw. 3 Blessed *is he* that readeth, & they that heare ỹ words of this prophesie, & keepe those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand. 4 Iohn, to the seuen Churches which are in Asia, Grace *be* with you, and peace from him, Which is, & Which was, & *Which is to come, & from the seuen Spirits, which are before his Throne, 5 And from Iesus Christ, which is a * faithfull

Exod. 3. 14. Psal. 89. 38

1.Cor. witnesse, and *that first begotten of the dead, &
15.21. that prince of the kings of the earth, vnto him
Col.1. that loued vs, and washed vs from our sinnes in
18. his *blood, 6 And made vs *Kings & Priests
Heb. vnto God euē his Father, to him, I say, be glory,
9.14. & dominion for euermore, Amen. 7 Beholde,
1.pet. he commeth with * clouds, & euery eye shall see
1.19. him: yea, euen they which pearced him thorow:
1.John & all kinreds of the earth shal waile before him,
1.9. Euen so, Amen. 8 I am * Alpha & Omega, the
1.Pet. beginning & the ending, sayth the Lord, Which
2.5. is, and Which was, and Which is to come, euen
Isai. the Almightie. 9 I Iohn, euen your brother, &
3.14. companion in tribulation, and in the kingdome
matt. and patience of Iesus Christ, was in the yle cal-
24.30. led Pathmos for the word of God, and for the
iude witnessing of Iesus Christ. 10 And I was rauis-
14. shed in spirit on the Lords day, & heard behind
Chap. me a great voyce, as it had bene of a trumpet,
21 6. 11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, that first, and
& 22. that last: and that which thou seest, write in a
13. booke. & send it vnto the seuen Churches which
are in Asia, vnto Ephesus, and vnto Smyrna, and
vnto Pergamus, and vnto Thyatira, & vnto Sar-
dis, and vnto Philadelphia, and vnto Laodicea.
12 Then I turned backe to see the voyce, that
spake with me: and when I was turned, I saw
seuen golden candlesticks, 13 And in the mids
of the seuen candlesticks, one like vnto the
Sonne of man, clothed with a garment downe
to the feet, and girded about the pappes with a
golden

golden girdle. 14 His head, and haires *were* white as white wooll, *and* as ſnow, & his eyes *were* as a flame of fire. 15 And his feet like vnto fine braſſe, burning as in a fornace: and his voice as the ſound of many waters. 16 And he had in his right hand ſeuen ſtarres: and out of his mouth went a ſharpe two edged ſword: & his face *ſhone* as the ſun ſhineth in his ſtrength. 17 And when I ſaw him I fel at his feet as dead: then he layd his right hand vpon me, ſaying vnto me, Feare not: I am * that firſt and that laſt, *Iſai.* 18 And am aliue, but I was dead: and behold, I *41.4.* am aliue for euermore, Amen, and I haue the *& 44.* keyes of hel and of death. 19 Write the things *6.* which thou haſt ſeene, & the things which are, & the things which ſhall come hereafter. 20 The myſterie of the ſeuen ſtarres which thou ſaweſt in my right hand, and the ſeuen golden candleſticks, *is this*, The ſeuen ſtarres are the Angels of the ſeuen Churches: and the ſeuen candleſticks which thou ſaweſt, are the ſeuē Churches.

CHAP. 2 *To Smyrna, Pergamus, & Thyatyra.*

VNto the Angel of the Church of Epheſus write, Theſe things ſaith he that holdeth the ſeuen ſtarres in his right hand, and walketh in the middes of the ſeuen golden candleſticks. 2 I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canſt not beare with them which are euill, and haſt examined them which ſay they are Apoſtles, and are not, and haſt found them liars. 3 And thou waſt burde-

ned, and haſt patience, and for my Names ſake, haſt laboured, and haſt not fainted. 4 Neuertheles, I haue *somewhat* againſt thee, becauſe thou haſt left thy firſt loue. 5 Remember therfore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and doe the firſt works: or els I will come againſt thee ſhortly, and will remooue thy candleſticke out of his place, except thou amend. 6 But this thou haſt, that thou hateſt the works of the Nicolaitanes, which I alſo hate. 7 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit ſaith vnto the Churches, To him that ouercommeth, will I giue to eate of the tree of life, which is in the middes of the Paradiſe of God. 8 And vnto the Angel of the Church of the Smyrnians write, Theſe things ſayth he that is firſt, and laſt, which was dead & is aliue. 9 I know thy works and tribulation, and pouerty (but thou art rich) & *I know* the blaſphemie of them, which ſay they are Iewes, and are not, but *are* the Synagogue of Satan. 10 Feare none of thoſe thinges, which thou ſhalt ſuffer. beholde, it ſhall come to paſſe, that the deuill ſhall caſt ſome of you into priſon, that ye may be tried, and ye ſhall haue tribulation tenne dayes: be thou faithfull vnto the death, and I will giue thee the crowne of life. 11 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit ſaith to the Churches: He that ouercommeth, ſhall not be hurt of the ſecond death. 12 And to the Angel of the Church which is at Perga-

mus write, This saith he which hath that sharpe sword with two edges. 13 I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, *euen* where Satans throne is, and thou keepest my Name, and hast not denied my faith, euen in those dayes when Antipas my faithfull martyr was slayne among you, where Satan dwelleth. 14 But I haue a fewe things against thee, because thou hast there them that mainteine the doctrine of *Balaam, which taught Balac to put a stumbling blocke before the children of Israel, that they should eate of things sacrificed vnto idoles, & commit fornication. 15 Euen so hast thou them, that maintaine the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which thing I hate. 16 Repent thy selfe, or els I wil come vnto thee shortly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth. 17 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirite sayeth vnto the Churches, To him that ouercõmeth, will I giue to eate of the Manna that is hid, and will giue him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth, saiuing he that receiueth it. 18 And vnto the Angel of the Church, which is at Thyatira write, These things saith the sonne of God, which hath his eyes like vnto a flame of fire, and his feet like fine brasse. 19 I knowe thy workes, and thy loue, and seruice, and faith, and thy patience, & thy workes, and that they *are* moe at the last, then at the first. 20 Notwithstanding, I haue a fewe things against thee, that thou sustainest the woman Iezabel,

*Num. 24.14. and 25.2.

bel, which calleth her selfe a Propheteſſe, to teach and to deceiue my ſeruants, to make them commit fornication, and to eat meate ſacrificed vnto idoles. 21 And I gaue her ſpace to repent of her fornication, & ſhe repented not. 22 Behold, I wil caſt her into a bed, & them that commit fornication with her, into great affliction, except they repēt them of their works. 23 And I will kill her children with death: and all the Churches ſhal know that I am he which *ſearch the reines and heartes: and I wil giue vnto euery one of you according vnto your workes. 24 And vnto you I ſay, the reſt of them of Thyatira, As many as haue not this learning, neither haue knowen the deepenes of Satan (as they ſpeake) I wil put vpō you none other burden, 25 But that which ye haue already, holde faſt till I come. 26 For he that ouercommeth, and keepeth my workes vnto the ende, to him will I giue power ouer nations, 27 * And he ſhal rule them with a rod of yron: *and* as the veſſels of a potter, ſhall they be broken. 28 Euen as I receiued of my Father, ſo wil I giue him the morning ſtarre. 29 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit ſaith to the Churches.

1. Sam 16. 7. Pſal. 7. 10. Ierem. 11. 20 & 17. 10.

Pſal. 2. 9.

CHAP. 3. 1. *To Sardis, Philadelphia, and Laodicea.*

AND write vnto the Angel of the Church which is at Sardis, Theſe things ſaith hee that hath the ſeuē Spirits of God, and the ſeuen ſtarres, I know thy works: for thou haſt a name that

that thou liueſt, but thou art dead. 2 Be awake and ſtrengthen ỹ things which remaine, that are ready to die: for I haue not found thy workes perfite before God. 3 Remember therefore, how thou haſt receiued & heard, and hold faſt, and repent *If therefore thou wilt not watch, I wil come on thee as a theefe, and thou ſhalt not knowe what houre I will come vpon thee. 4 *Notwithſtãding*, thou haſt a few names yet in Sardis, which haue not defiled their garments: and they ſhall walke with me in white: for they are worthy. 5 He that ouercommeth, ſhall be clothed in white aray, & I will not put out his name out *of the booke of life, but I wil confeſſe his Name before my Father, and before his Angels. 6 Let him ỹ hath an eare, heare, what the Spirit ſaith vnto the Churches. 7 And write vnto the Angel of the Church which is of Philadelphia, Theſe things ſaith he, that is Holy, & True, which hath the key of Dauid, which openeth and no man ſhutteth, and ſhutteth and no man openeth, 8 I knowe thy works: behold, I haue ſet before thee an open doore, and no man can ſhut it: for thou haſt a litle ſtrength, and haſt kept my word, and haſt not denied my Name. 9 Beholde, I wil make them of the Synagogue of Satan, which call themſelues Iewes, and are not, but doe lie: behold, *I ſay*, I wil make them, that they ſhall come and worſhip before thy feete, and ſhall knowe that I haue loued thee. 10 Becauſe thou haſt kept the word of my patience,

Chap. 16.15.
1. Theſſ. 5.2.
Chap. 3.5.
2. Pet. 3.10.
Chap. 20.12. & 21. 27.
Phil. 4.3.

tience, therfore I wil deliuer thee frō the houre of tentatiō, which wil come vpon al the world, to trie them that dwel vpon the earth. 11 Beholde, I come shortly: holde that which thou hast, that no man take thy crowne. 12 Him that ouercommeth, will I make a pillar in the Temple of my God, and hee shall goe no more out: and I wil write vpō him the Name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, *which is*, the newe Hierusalem, which commeth downe out of heauen from my God, and *I will write vpon him* my new Name. 13 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirite saith vnto the Churches. 14 And vnto the Angel of ỹ Church of the Laodiceans, write, These things saith Amen, that faithful and true witnesse, that beginning of the creatures of God. 15 I know thy workes, that thou art neither colde nor hote: I would thou wert cold or hote. 16 Therefore, because thou art luke warme, and neither cold nor hote, it will come to passe, that I shall spew thee out of my mouth. 17 For thou sayest, I am riche, and increased with goods, and haue need of nothing, and knowest not how thou art wretched, and miserable, and poore, and blinde, and naked. 18 I counsell thee to buy of mee gold tried by the fire, that thou mayest be made riche: and white rayment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that thy filthy nakednesse doe not appeare: and anoynt thine eyes with eye salue, that thou mayest see. 19 As many as I loue,

*I re-

19 I rebuke and chaſten: be zealous therefore and amende. 20 Beholde, I ſtand at the doore, and knocke. If any man heare my voyce, and open the doore, I will come in vnto him, and will ſup with him, and he with me. 21 To him that ouercommeth, wil I graunt to ſit with me in my throne, euen as I ouercame, and ſit with my Father in his throne. 22 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit ſaith vnto the Churches. *Prou. 3.12. hebr. 12.5.*

CHAP. 4. 1. *The viſion of the Maieſtie of God,* 4 *And of the foure beaſtes and xxiiii. Elders.*

AFter this I looked, & beholde, a doore was open in heauen, and the firſt voyce which I heard, was as *it were* of a trumpet talking with me, ſaying, Come vp hither, and I wil ſhew thee things which muſt bee done hereafter. 2 And immediatly I was *rauiſhed* in the ſpirit, and beholde, a throne was ſet in heauen, and one ſate vpon the throne. 3 And hee that ſate, was to looke vpon, like vnto a iaſper ſtone, and a ſardine, and there *was* a rainebow round about the throne, in ſight like to an emerauld. 4 And round about the throne *were* foure and twentie ſeates, and vpon the ſeates I ſawe foure and twentie Elders ſitting, clothed in white rayment, and had on their heads crownes of gold. 5 And out of the throne proceeded lightnings, and thundrings, and voyces, and there were ſeuen lampes of fire burning before the throne, which are the ſeuen ſpirits of God. 6 And before

fore the throne there *was* a sea of glasse like vnto cryſtall: and in the middes of the throne, and round about the throne *were* foure beaſts ful of eyes before and behinde. 7 And the firſt beaſt *was* like a lyon, and the ſecõd beaſt like a calfe, and the third beaſt had a face as a man, and the fourth beaſt was like a flying egle. 8 And the foure beaſts had ech one of them ſix wings about him, and they were full of eyes within, and they ceaſed not day nor night, ſaying, Holy, holy, holy Lorde God Almightie, Which was, and Which is, and Which is to come. 9 And when thoſe beaſts gaue glory, and honour, and thankes to him that ſate on the throne, which liueth for euer and euer, 10 The foure and twentie Elders fell downe before him that ſate on the throne, and worſhipped him that liueth for euermore, and caſt their crownes before the throne, ſaying, 11 Thou art *worthy, O Lord, to receiue glory, and honour, and power: for thou haſt created all things, and for thy willes ſake they are, and haue bene created.

Chap. 5.10.

CHAP. 5. 1. *The Lambe openeth the ſealed booke.*

AND I ſaw in the right hand of him that ſate vpon the throne, a booke written within, and on the backſide, ſealed with ſeuen ſeales. 2 And I ſawe a ſtrong Angel which preached with a loud voyce, Who is worthy to open the Booke, and to looſe the ſeales thereof? 3 And no man in heauen, nor in earth, neither vnder the

the earth, was able to open the Booke, neither to looke theron. 4 Then I wept much, becauſe no man was found worthy to open, and to read the Booke, neither to looke thereon. 5 And one of the Elders ſaide vnto mee, Weepe not: beholde, that * Lion which is of the tribe of Iuda, that roote of Dauid, hath obteined to open the booke, and to looſe the ſeuen ſeales thereof. 6 Then I beheld, and loe in the mids of the throne, and of the foure beaſtes, and in the mids of the Elders, ſtoode a Lambe as though he had bene killed, which had ſeuen hornes, and ſeuen eyes, which are the ſeuen ſpirits of God, ſent into all the world. 7 And hee came and tooke the booke out of ỹ right hand of him that ſate vpõ the throne. 8 And when he had taken the Booke, the foure beaſts and the foure & twentie Elders fell downe before the Lambe, hauing euery one harpes & golden vials ful of odours, which are the praiers of the Saints. 9 And they ſung a newe ſong, ſaying, Thou art worthy to take the Booke, and to open the ſeales thereof, becauſe thou waſt killed, and haſt redeemed vs to God by thy blood, out of euery kinred and tongue, and people, and nation. 10 And haſt made vs vnto our God * Kings, and Prieſts, and we ſhal reigne on the earth. 11 Then I beheld, and I heard the voyce of many Angels round about the throne, *about* the beaſtes and the Elders, and there *were* * ten thouſand times ten thouſand, and thouſand thouſands, 12 Saying

Gene. 49.9.

Chap. 2.6. 2. pet. 2.9. Deut. 7.10.

with

with a loude voyce, Worthy is the Lambe that was killed, to receiue power, and riches, and wisedome, and ſtrength, and honour, and glory, and praiſe. 13 And all the creatures which are in heauen and on the earth, and vnder the earth, and in the ſea, and all that are in them, heard I, ſaying, Praiſe, and honour, and glory, and power *bee* vnto him, that ſitteth vpon the throne, and vnto the Lambe for euermore. 14 And the foure beaſtes ſayde, Amen, and the foure and twentie Elders fel downe and worſhipped him that liueth for euermore.

CHAP. 6. *The Lambe openeth the ſix ſeales.*

AFter, I beheld when the Lambe had opened one of the ſeales, & I heard one of the foure beaſts ſay, as *it were* the noyſe of thunder, Come and ſee. 2 Therefore I beheld, and lo, there *was* a white horſe, & he that ſate on him, had a bow, and a crowne was giuen vnto him, and he went forth cõquering that he might ouercome. 3 And whẽ he had opened the ſecond ſeale, I heard the ſecond beaſt ſay, Come and ſee. 4 And there went out another horſe, *that was* red, & power was giuen to him that ſate theron, to take peace from the earth, & that they ſhould kill one another, & there was giuen vnto him a great ſword. 5 And when he had opened the third ſeale, I heard the third beaſt ſay, Come and ſee. Then I beheld, and loe, a blacke horſe, and he that ſate on him, had balances in his hand. 6 And I heard a voyce in the mids of the foure beaſtes ſay, A

measure of wheate for a penie, and three measures of barley for a penie, and oyle, and wine hurt thou not. 7 And when he had opened the fourth seale, I heard ỹ voyce of the fourth beast say, Come and see. 8 And I looked, & behold, a pale horse, and his name that sate on him was Death, and Hell followed after him, and power was giuen vnto them ouer the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, & with hunger, & with death, and with the beastes of the earth. 9 And when he had opened the fifth seale, I saw vnder the altar the soules of them that were killed for the word of God, and for the testimonie which they mainteined. 10 And they cried w̃ a loud voyce, saying, How long Lord, which art holy and true! doest thou not iudge and auenge our blood on them that dwel on the earth? 11 And long white robes were giuen vnto euery one, and it was said vnto them, that they shoulde rest for a litle season vntil their felow seruants, and their brethren that should be killed euẽ as they were, were fulfilled. 12 And I beheld when he had opened ỹ sixt seale, & lo, there was a great earthquake, & the sunne was as blacke as sackcloth of haire, and the moone was like blood. 13 And the starres of heauen fel vnto the earth, as a figtree casteth her greene figs whẽ it is shaken of a mighty wind. 14 And heauen departed away, as a scrole whẽ it is rolled, and euery mountaine and yle were moued out of their places. 15 And the Kings of the earth, & the great men,

men, and the rich men, and the chiefe captaines, and the mightie men, and euery bondman, and
Isa. 2. 19. hose. 10. 8. luke 23. 30. euery free man hid themselues in dennes, and among the rocks of the mountaines, 16 And said to the mountains & rocks, Fal on vs, and hide vs frō the presence of him ỹ sitteth on ỹ throne, & frō the wrath of the Lambe. 17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who can stand?

CHAP. 7. *The Elect sealed.*

AND after that, I saw foure Angels stand on the foure corners of the earth, holding the foure winds of the earth, that the winds should not blow on the earth, neither on the sea, neither on any tree. 2 And I saw another Angel come vp from the East, which had the seale of the liuing God, and he cried with a loud voice to the foure Angels to whō power was giuen to hurt the earth, and the sea, 3 Saying, Hurt ye not the earth, neither the sea, neither the trees, till we haue sealed the seruāts of our God in their foreheads. 4 And I heard the nūber of them which were sealed, and there *were* sealed an hundreth and foure and fourtie thousand of al the tribes of the children of Israel. 5 Of the tribe of Iuda were sealed twelue thousande. Of the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelue thousande. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelue thousand. 6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelue thousande. Of the tribe of Nephtali were sealed twelue thousande. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelue thousand. 7 Of the tribe of Simeō were

sealed

sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Iuda were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Ruben were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelue thousand. 6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Nephthalim were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelue thousand. 7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Leui were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelue thousand. 8 Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Ioseph were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Beniamin were sealed twelue thousand. 9 After these things I beheld, and loe, a great multitude, which no man could number, of al nations & kinreds, and people and tongues, stood before the throne, & before the Lambe, clothed with long white robes, and palmes in their hands. 10 And they cryed with a loud voyce, saying, Saluation *commeth* of our God, that sitteth vpon the throne, and of the Lambe. 11 And all the Angels stood round about the throne, and *about* the Elders, and the foure beasts, and they fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God, 12 Saying, Amen. Praise, and glory, and wisdome, & thanks, and honor, and power, and might, *be* vnto our God for euermore, Amen. 13 And one of the Elders spake, saying vnto me, What are these which are arayed in lōg white robes? & whence came they? 14 And I said vnto him, Lord, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they, which came out of great tribulatiō & haue washed their long robes, and haue made their long robes white in ỹ blood of the Lambe. 15 Therfore are they in the presence of the throne of God, & serue him day & night in his Temple, & he ỹ sitteth on the throne, wil dwel among thē,

Isai. 49.10 16 They shal hunger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shal the sun light on them, neither any heate. 17 For the Lambe, which is in the midst of the throne, shal governe them, and shal leade them vnto the liuely fountaines of waters. And * God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes.

Chap. 21.4. Isai. 25.8.

CHAP. 8 *The seuenth seale opened, &c.*

AND when he had opened the seuenth seale, there was silence in heauen about halfe an houre. 2 And I saw ye seuen Angels which stood before God, & to them were giuen seuen trumpets. 3 Then another Angel came & stood before the Altar, hauing a golden censer, & much odors was giuen vnto him, that he should offer with the prayers of all Saints vpon the golden altar, which is before the throne. 4 And the smoke of ye odors wt the prayers of the Saints, went vp before God, out of the Angels hand. 5 And the Angel tooke the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it into the earth, & there were voyces, & thũdrings, and lightnings, & earthquake. 6 Then the seuen Angels which had the seuen trumpets, prepared themselues to blow the trumpets. 7 So the first Angel blew the trumpet, & there was haile & fire mingled with blood, and they were cast into the earth, & the third part of trees was burnt, and all greene grasse was burnt. 8 And the second Angel blew the trumpet, & as it were a great mountaine burning with fire, was cast into the sea, & the third part of the sea became blood. 9 And the third

part

part of the creatures, which were in the ſea, and had life, died, & the third part of ſhips were deſtroyed. 10 The the third Angel blew the trumpet, & there fell a great ſtarre from heauen burning like a torch, & it fell into the third part of the riuers, & into ỹ fountaines of waters. 11 And the name of the ſtarre is called wormewood: therefore the third part of the waters became wormwood, & many mẽ died of the waters, becauſe they were made bitter. 12 And the fourth Angel blew the trumpet, & the third part of the ſun was ſmitten, & the third part of the moone, and the third part of the ſtarres, ſo that the third part of thẽ was darkned: and the day *was ſmitten*, that the third part of it could not ſhine, and likewiſe the night. 13 And I beheld, & heard one Angel flying thorow the mids of heauen, ſaying with a loud voyce, Wo, wo, wo to the inhabitants of the earth, becauſe of the ſounds to come of the trumpets of the three Angels, which were yet to blow the trumpets.

CHAP. 9. *Deſtroying locuſts, and ſpoiling horſemen.*

AND the fift Angel blew the trumpet, & I ſaw a ſtarre fal from heauen vnto the earth, and to him was giuẽ the key of the bottomleſſe pit. 2 And he opened the bottomleſſe pit, & there aroſe the ſmoke of the pit, as the ſmoke of a great fornace, & the ſun, & the aire were darkened, by the ſmoke of the pit. 3 And there came out of the ſmoke locuſts vpon the earth, & vnto them

them was giuen power, as the scorpions of the earth haue power. 4 And it was commanded them, ỹ they should not hurt the grasse of the earth, neither any greene thing, neither any tree: but only those mẽ which haue not the seale of God in their foreheads. 5 And to them was commanded that they should not kill them, but that they should be vexed fiue moneths, & that their pain should be as the paine ỹ commeth of a scorpion, whẽ he hath stung a man. 6 Therefore in those dayes shal men seeke death, & shal not find it, & shal desire to die, & death shal flee frõ them. 7 And the formes of the locusts were like vnto horses prepared vnto battell, and on their heads *were* as *it were* crownes, like vnto golde, & their faces *were* like the faces of men, 8 And they had haire as the haire of women, & their teeth were as the teeth of lyons. 9 And they had habergions like to habergions of iron: & the sound of their wings *was* like the sound of charets when many horses run vnto battell. 10 And they had tailes like vnto scorpions, and there were stings in their tailes, and their power was to hurt men fiue moneths. 11 And they haue a King ouer thẽ, which is the Angel of the bottomles pit, whose name in Hebrew *is* Abaddon, & in Greeke he is named Apollyon, *that is*, *destroying*. 12 One woe is past, *and* behold, yet two woes come after this. 13 Then the first Angel blew the trumpet, & I heard a voice from the foure hornes of the golden altar, which is before

Chap. 6.16. *Isa.* 2. 19. *Hose.* 10.8.

before God, 14 Saying to the sixt Angel, which had the trumpet, Loose the foure Angels, which are bound in the great riuer Euphrates. 15 And the foure Angels were loosed, which were prepared at an houre, at a day, at a moneth, and at a yeare, to slay the third part of men. 16 And the number of horsmen of war were twentie thousand times ten thousand: for I heard the number of them. 17 And thus I saw the horses in a vision, and them that sate on them, hauing fierie habergions, and of Iacinth, and of brimstone, & the heads of the horses were as the heads of lyons: and out of their mouthes went foorth fire and smoke, and brimstone. 18 Of these three was the third part of men killed, *that is*, of the fire, and of the smoke, and of the brimstone, which came out of their mouths. 19 For their power is in their mouthes, & in their tailes: for their tailes were like vnto serpents, and had heads, wherewith they hurt. 20 And the remnant of the men which were not killed by these plagues, repented not of the works of their handes, that they should not worship deuils, and * idoles of gold & of siluer, and of brasse, and of stones and of wood, which neither can see, neither heare nor goe. 21 Also they repented not of their murther, and of their sorcerie, neither of their fornication, nor of their theft. *Psal. 115.4. & 135 15.*

CHAP. 10. *John eateth a booke.*

AND I saw another mightie Angel come downe from heauen, clothed with a cloud,

and the rainebow vpon his head, & his face was as the ſun, and his feet as pillars of fire. 2 And he had in his hand a litle booke open, & he put his right foot vpon the ſea, and his left on the earth, 3 And he cried with a loud voice, as when a lyon roareth: and when he had cried, ſeuen thunders vttered their voices. 4 And when the ſeuen thunders had vttered their voyces, I was about to write: but I heard a voice frō heauen, ſaying vnto me, Seale vp thoſe things which the ſeuen thunders haue ſpoken, & write them not. 5 And the Angel which I ſaw ſtand vpon the ſea, & vpon the earth, lift vp his hand to heauen, 6 And ſware by him that liueth for euermore, which created heauen, & the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, & the ſea, and the things which therein are, that time ſhould be no more. 7 But in ỹ dayes of the voice of the ſeuenth Angel, when he ſhal begin to blow the trumpet, euen the myſtery of God ſhall be finiſhed, as he hath declared to his ſeruants the Prophets. 8 And the voice which I heard from heauen, ſpake vnto me againe, and ſaid, Goe, & take the litle booke which is open in the hand of the Angel, which ſtandeth vpon the ſea, and vpon the earth. 9 So I went vnto the Angel, and ſaide to him, Giue mee the litle booke. And he ſaid, Take it, and eate it vp, and it ſhall make thy belly bitter, but it ſhall be in thy mouth as ſweet as hony. 10 Then I tooke the little booke out of the Angels hand, and ate it vp,

and it was in my mouth as sweet as honie: & when I had eaten it, my belly was bitter. 11 And he sayd vnto me, Thou must prophesie againe among the people and nations, and tongues, and to many Kings.

CHAP. 11 *The two witnesses.* 15 *The resurrection described.*

THen was giuen me a reed, like vnto a rod, and the Angel stood by, saying, Rise & mete the Temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therin. 2 But the court which is without the Temple cast out, and mete it not: for it is giuen vnto the Gentiles, & the holy citie shall they tread vnder foot, two and fortie moneths. 3 But I wil giue power vnto my two witnesses, & they shall prophesie a thousand two hundred and threescore dayes, clothed in sackcloth. 4 These are two oliue trees, and two candlesticks, standing before the God of the earth. 5 And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouthes, and deuoureth their enemies: for if any man would hurt them, thus must he be killed. 6 These haue power to shut heauen, that it raine not in the dayes of their prophesying, and haue power ouer waters to turne them into blood, and to smite the earth with all maner plagues, as often as they will. 7 And whē they haue finished their testimony, the beast that commeth out of the bottomlesse pit, shall make warre against them, and shall ouercome them, & kill thē. 8 And their corpses

ſhall lie in the ſtreets of the great city, which ſpiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where our Lord alſo was crucified. 9 And they of the people and kindreds, and tongues, & Gentiles ſhall ſee their corpſes three dayes & an halfe, & ſhal not ſuffer their carkeſes to be put in graues. 10 And they that dwell vpon the earth, ſhall reioyce ouer them, & be glad, and ſhall ſend gifts one to another: for theſe two Prophets vexed them that dwelt on the earth. 11 But after three dayes & an halfe, the ſpirit of life *comming* frō God, ſhall enter into them, & they ſhal ſtand vp vpon their feet: and great feare ſhal come vpon them which ſaw them. 12 And they ſhall heare a great voice from heauen, ſaying vnto them, Come vp hither. And they ſhal aſcend vp to heauen in a cloud, and their enemies ſhal ſee them. 13 And the ſame houre ſhall there bee a great earthquake, & the tenth part of the citie ſhal fal, & in the earthquake ſhalbe ſlaine in number ſeuen thouſand: and ỹ remnant were ſore feared, and gaue glory to the God of heauen. 14 The ſecond wo is paſt, & beholde, the third wo wil come anon. 15 And the ſeuenth Angel blew the trumpet, and there were great voices in heauen, ſaying, The kingdomes of this world are our Lords, & his Chriſtes, & he ſhall reigne for euermore. 16 Then the foure and twenty Elders, which ſate before God on their ſeats, fel vpon their faces, & worſhipped God, 17 Saying, We giue thee thanks, Lord God Almightie, Which

art

art, and Which wast, & Which art to come: for thou hast receiued thy great might, and hast obteined thy kingdome. 18 And the Gentiles were angrie, & thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be iudged, and that thou shouldest giue reward vnto thy seruants the Prophetes, & to the Saints, and to them that feare thy Name, to smal and great, and shouldest destroy them, which destroy the earth. 19 Then the Temple of God was opened in heauen, and there was seene in his Temple the Arke of his couenant: and there were lightnings, & voices, and thundrings, and earthquake, & much haile.

CHAP. 12 *The woman with childe, and the dragon, &c.*

AND there appeared a great wonder in heauen: A woman clothed with the sunne, and the moone *was* vnder her feet, & vpon her head a crowne of twelue starres. 2 And she was with childe, & cried trauailing in birth, & was pained ready to be deliuered. 3 And there appeared another wonder in heauen: for beholde, a great red dragon hauing seuen heads, and ten hornes, and seuen crownes vpon his heads: 4 And his taile drew the third part of the starres of heauen, & cast them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman, which was ready to be deliuered, to deuour her child whē she had broght foorth. 5 So she brought forth a man childe, which should rule all nations w a rod of iron: & that her childe was taken vp vnto God, & to his

his throne. 6 And ỹ woman fled into wilderneſſe, where ſhe hath a place prepared of God, that they ſhould feed her there a thouſand two hundreth and threeſcore dayes. 7 And there was a battel in heauen, Michael and his Angels fought againſt the dragon, & the dragon fought and his Angels. 8 But they preuailed not, neither was their place found any more in heauen. 9 And the great dragon that olde ſerpent, called the deuill & Satan, was caſt out, which deceiueth all the world: he was *euen* caſt into the earth, and his angels were caſt out with him. 10 Then I heard a loud voyce in heauen, ſaying, Now is ſaluation in heauen, & ſtrength, and the kingdome of our God, & the power of his Chriſt: for the accuſer of our brethren is caſt downe, which accuſed thē before our God day and night. 11 But they ouercame him by the blood of that Lamb, & by that word of their teſtimony, and they loued not their lines vnto the death. 12 Therefore reioyce ye heauens, & ye that dwel in them. Wo to the inhabitants of the earth, & of the ſea: for the deuil is come downe vnto you, which hath great wrath, knowing that he hath but a ſhort time. 13 And when the dragon ſaw that he was caſt vnto the earth, hee perſecuted the woman which had brought foorth the man *childe*. 14 But to the woman were giuen two wings of a great egle, that ſhe might flie into the wilderneſſe, into her place, where ſhe is nouriſhed for a time, and times & halfe

halfe a time, from the presence of the serpent. 15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water after the woman like a flood, that he might cause her to be caried away of ỹ flood 16 But the earth holpe the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed vp the flood, which the dragon had cast out of his mouth. 17 Then the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went and made war with the remnant of her seed, which keepe the commandements of God, and haue the testimonie of Iesus Christ. 18 And I stood by the sea sand.

CHAP. 13 1 *The beast with many heads.* 11 *Another beast rising out of the earth.*

AND I saw a beast rise out of the sea, hauing seuen heads, and ten hornes, and vpon his hornes *were* ten crownes, & vpon his heads the name of blasphemie. 2 And the beast which I saw, was like a leopard, & his feet like a beares, and his mouth as the mouth of a lyon: and the dragon gaue him his power, and his throne, and great authoritie. 3 And I saw one of his heads as *it were* wounded to death, but his deadly wound was healed, and all the world woondred, *and* folowed the beast. 4 And they worshipped the dragon which gaue power vnto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like vnto the beast? who is able to warre with him? 5 And there was giuen vnto him a mouth, that spake great things and blasphemies, and power was giuen vnto him, to do

two

two and fourty moneths. 6 And he opened his mouth vnto blasphemie against God, to blaspheme his Name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwel in heauen. 7 And it was giuen vnto him to make warre with the Saints, & to ouercome them, & power was giuen him ouer euery kindred and tongue, & nation. 8 Therefore al that dwel vpon the earth, shall worship him, whose names are not written in the Booke of life of that Lambe, which was slaine frō the beginning of the worlde. 9 If any man haue an eare, let him heare. 10 If any leade into captiuitie, he shal go into captiuitie: *If any kil with a sword, he must be killed by a sword: here is the patience, and the faith of the Saints. 11 And I beheld another beast cōming vp out of ỹ earth, which had two hornes like the Lambe, but hee spake like the dragon. 12 And he did all that the first beast could do before him, & he caused the earth, & them which dwel therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. 13 And he did great wonders, so that he made fire to come downe frō heauen on the earth, in ỹ sight of men. 14 And deceiued them that dwel on the earth by the signes, which were permitted to him to do in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwel on the earth, that they should make the image of the beast, which had the wound of a sword, and did liue. 15 And it was permitted to him to giue a spirit vnto the image of the beast, so that the image of the beast should

Gene. 9.6. Matt 26.52

ſhould ſpeake, and ſhould cauſe that as many as woulde not worſhip the image of the beaſt, ſhould be killed. 16 And he made al, both ſmal and great, riche and poore, free and bond, to receiue a marke in their right hande or in their foreheads, 17 And that no man might bye or ſell, ſaue he that had the marke, or the name of the beaſt, or the number of his name. 18 Here is wiſedome. Let him that hath wit, count the number of the beaſt: for it is the number of a man, and his number is ſixe hundreth threeſcore and ſixe.

CHAP. 14. 1. *The Lambe on mount Sion.* 16 *The Lords haruеſt.*

THen I looked, and loe, a Lambe ſtoode on mount Sion, & with him an hundreth fourtie & foure thouſand, hauing his Fathers Name written in their foreheades. 2 And I heard a voyce frō heauen, as the ſound of many waters, and as the ſound of a great thunder: and I heard the voyce of harpers harping with their harpes. 3 And they ſung as *it were* a new ſong before the throne, and before the foure beaſts, and the Elders, & no man could learne that ſong, but the hundreth fourtie & foure thouſand, which were bought from the earth. 4 Theſe are they, which are not defiled w̄ women: for they are virgines: theſe follow the Lambe whitherſoeuer he goeth: theſe are bought from men, being the firſt fruites vnto God, and to the Lambe. 5 And in their mouthes was found no guile: for they are

without

without spot before the throne of God. 6 Then I saw another Angel flie in the mids of heauen, hauing an euerlasting Gospel, to preach vnto them, that dwel on the earth, and to euery nation, and kinred, and tongue, & people, 7 Saying with a loud voice, Feare God, and giue glory to him: for the houre of his iudgement is come: and worship him that made heauen and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters. 8 And there followed another Angel, saying, Babylon that great city is fallen, it is fallen: for shee made all nations to drinke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication. 9 And the third Angel folowed them, saying with a loud voyce, If any man worship the beast & his image, and receiue *his* marke in his forehead, or on his hād, 10 The same shall drinke of the wine of the wrath of God, yea, of the pure wine, which is powred into the cup of his wrath, and he shalbe tormented in fire and brimstone before the holy Angels, & before the Lambe. 11 And the smoke of their torment shal ascend euermore: and they shal haue no rest day nor night, which worship the beast, & his image, and whosoeuer receiueth the print of his Name. 12 Here is the patience of Saints: here are they that keepe the cōmandements of God, & the faith of Iesus. 13 Then I heard a voyce from heauen, saying vnto me, Write, The dead which die the Lorde, *are* fully blessed. Euen so saith the Spirite: for they rest from their labours, & their works folow them.

Psal. 145.6. *Acts.* 14.15. *Chap.* 18.2. *Isay* 21.9. *Iere.* 51.8.

14 And

14. And I looked, & behold, a white cloud, and vpon the cloude one ſitting like vnto the Sonne of man, hauing on his head a golden crowne, and in his hand a ſharpe ſickle. 15 And another Angel came out of the Temple, crying with a loude voyce to him that ſate on the cloude, Thruſt in thy ſickle, and reape: for the time is come to reape, for the * harueſt of the earth is ripe. 16 And he that ſate on the cloude thruſt in his ſickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped. 17 Then another Angel came out of the Temple, which is in heauē, hauing alſo a ſharpe ſickle. 18 And another Angel came out frō the altar, which had power ouer fire, and cried with a loud cry to him that had the ſharp ſickle, and ſayd, Thruſt in thy ſharpe ſickle and gather the cluſters of the vineyarde of the earth: for her grapes are ripe. 19 And the Angel thruſt in his ſharpe ſickle on the earth, & cut down the vines of the vineyard of the earth, and caſt them into that great winepreſſe of the wrath of God. 20 And the winepreſſe was troden without the city, and blood came out of the winepreſſe, vnto the horſe bridles by the ſpace of a thouſande and ſixe hundreth furlongs.

Ioel 3. 13. Matt. 13 39.

CHAP. 15. *Seuen Angels with ſeuen vials. 15 Admonition to take heede and watch.*

AND I ſaw another ſigne in heauen, great and marueilous, ſeuen Angels hauing the ſeuen laſt plagues: for by them is fulfilled the wrath

of

of God. 2 And I ſawe as *it were* a glaſſie ſea, mingled with fire, and them that had gotten victory of the beaſt, and of his image, and of his marke, and of the number of his name, ſtand at the glaſſie ſea, hauing the harpes of God. 3 And they ſung the ſong of Moſes the ſeruant of God, and the ſong of the Lambe, ſaying, Great & marueilous *are* thy workes, Lord God Almightie: *Pſal.* iuſt and true *are* thy * wayes, King of Saints, 145. 4 * Who ſhall not feare thee, O Lord, and glo- 17. rifie thy Name! for thou only *art* holy, and all *Ierm.* nations ſhal come and worſhip before thee: for 10.7. thy iudgements are made manifeſt. 5 And after that I looked, and behold, the Temple of the tabernacle of teſtimonie was open in heauen. 6 And the ſeuen Angels came out of the Temple, which had the ſeuen plagues, clothed in pure and bright linen, and hauing their breaſtes girded with golden girdles. 7 And one of the foure beaſtes gaue vnto the ſeuen Angels ſeuen golden vials full of the wrath of God, which liueth for euermore. 8 And the Temple was ful of the ſmoke of the glory of God, and of his power, and no man was able to enter into the Temple, till the ſeuen plagues of the ſeuen Angels were fulfilled.

CHAP. 16. *The ſeuen vials powred out.*

AND I heard a great voyce out of the Temple, ſaying to the ſeuen Angels, Goe your wayes, & powre out the *ſeuen* vials of the wrath of God vpo the earth. 2 And the firſt went, and

powred

powred out his viall vpon the earth: and there fell a noysome and a grieuous sore vpon the men, which had the marke of the beast, and vpon them which worshipped his image. 3 And the second Angel powred out his vial vpon the sea, and it became as the blood of a dead man: and euery liuing thing died in the sea. 4 And the third Angel powred out his vial vpō the riuers and fountaines of waters, & they became blood. 5 And I heard the Angel of the waters say, Lord, thou art iust, Which art, and Which wast: and holy, because thou hast iudged these things. 6 For they shed the blood of the Saints, and Prophetes, and therefore hast thou giuen them blood to drinke: for they are worthy. 7 And I heard another out of the Sāctuary say, Euen so, Lorde God almightie, true and righteous are thy iudgements. 8 And the fourth Angel powred out his viall on the sunne, & it was giuen vnto him to torment men with heate of fire, 9 And men boyled in great heate, & blasphemed the Name of God, which hath power ouer these plagues, & they repented not to giue him glory. 10 And the fift Angel powred out his vial vpō the throne of the beast, & his kingdom waxed darke, & they gnawed their tōgues for sorow, 11 And blasphemed the God of heauen for their paines and for their sores, and repented not of their workes. 12 And the sixt Angel powred out his vial vpon the great riuer Euphrates, and the water thereof dried vp, that

the way of the Kings of the East should be prepared. 13 And I saw three vncleane spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of that dragon, & out of the mouth of that beast, and out of the mouth of that false prophet. 14 For they are the spirits of deuils, working miracles, to go vnto the Kings of the earth, & of ỹ whole world, to gather them to the battell of that great day of God Almightie. 15 (x Behold, I come as a theefe. Blessed is he that watcheth and keepeth his garments, lest he walke naked, and men see his shames) 16 And they gathered them together into a place called in Hebrewe Arma-gedon.

Chap. 3.3. *matt.* 24.44 *luke* 12.39.

17 And the seuenth Angel powred out his viall into the aire, and there came a loude voyce out of the Temple of heauen frō the throne, saying, It is done. 18 And there were voyces, and thundrings, and lightnings, & there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were vpon the earth, euen so mightie an earthquake. 19 And the great citie was diuided into three partes, and the cities of the nations fel: and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, + to giue vnto her the cup of the wine of the fiercenesse of his wrath. 20 And euery yle fled away, and the mountaines were not found. 21 And there fel a great haile, like talents, out of heauen vpon the men, & men blasphemed God, because of the plague of the haile; for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

Iere. 25.15.

CHAP.

THen there came one of the ſeuen Angels, which had the ſeuen vials, and talked with me, ſaying vnto me, Come: I wil ſhewe thee the damnation of the great whore that ſitteth vpon many waters, 2 With whom haue committed fornication the Kings of the earth, and the inhabitants of the earth are drũken with the wine of her fornication. 3 So he caried me away into the wildernes in the Spirit, & I ſaw a woman ſit vpon a ſkarlet coloured beaſt, full of names of blaſphemie, which had ſeuen heades, and ten hornes. 4 And the woman was arayed in purple and ſkarlet, and guilded with golde, and precious ſtones, and pearles, and had a cup of golde in her hand, full of abominations, and filthines of her fornication. 5 And in her forehead *was* a name written, A myſterie, That great Babylon, that mother of whoredoms, & abominations of the earth. 6 And I ſaw the woman drunken with the blood of Saints, and with the blood of the Martyrs of Ieſus: and when I ſaw her, I wondered with great maruaile. 7 Then the Angel ſayd vnto me, Wherefore marueileſt thou? I wil ſhewe thee the myſterie of that woman, and of that beaſt, that beareth her, which hath ſeuen heads, and ten hornes. 8 The beaſt that thou haſt ſeene, was, and is not, and ſhal aſcend out of the bottomleſſe pit, and ſhal goe into perdition, and they that dwell on the earth, ſhall wonder (whoſe names are not written in

the Booke of life, from the foundation of the worlde) when they beholde the beast that was, and is not, and yet is. 9 Here is the minde that hath wisdome. The seuen heads are seuen mountaines, whereon the woman sitteth: they are also seuen Kings. 10 Fiue are fallen, and one is, and another is not yet come: and when he cometh, he must continue a short space. 11 And the beast that was, and is not, is euen the eight, and is one of the seuen, and shall goe into destruction. 12 And the ten hornes which thou sawest, are ten Kings, which yet haue not receiued a kingdome, but shal receiue power, as Kings at one houre with the beast. 13 These haue one minde, and shal giue their power, and authoritie vnto the beast. 14 These shall fight with the Lambe, and the Lambe shall ouercome them: *for he is the Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are on his side, called, and chosen, and faithfull. 15 And he said vnto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are people, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues. 16 And the tenne hornes which thou sawest vpon the beast, are they that shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked and shall eat her flesh, and burne her with fire. 17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his wil, and to do with one consent, for to giue their kingdome vnto the beast, vntill the wordes of God be fulfilled. 18 And that woman which thou sawest, is that great cie,

Chap. 19.16. 1.tim. 6.15.

se, which reigneth ouer the kings of the earth.

CHAP. 18. *The destruction of Babylon.*

AND after these things, I saw *another* Angel come downe frō heauen, hauing great power, so that the earth was lightened with his glory. 2 And he cried out mightily w'a loude voyce, saying, * It is fallen, it is fallen, Babylon that great *city*, and is become the habitation of deuils, and the hold of all foule spirites, and a cage of euery vncleane and hatefull bird. 3 For all nations haue drunken of ỹ wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth haue committed fornication with her, and the marchants of the earth are waxed rich of the abundance of her pleasures. 4 And I heard another voyce frō heauen say, Go out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sinnes, and that ye receiue not of her plagues. 5 For her sinnes are come vp into heauen, & God hath remembred her iniquities. 6 Reward her, euen as she hath rewarded you, and giue her double according to her works: *and* in the cup that she hath filled to you, fill her the double. 7 In as much as she glorified her selfe, & liued in pleasure, so much giue ye to her torment & sorow: for she saith in her heart, I sit being a queene, and am no widow, & shal see no mourning. 8 Therfore shall her plagues come at one day, death, and sorowe, and famine, and she shall be burnt with fire: for that God which condemneth her, is a strong Lord. 9 And the kings of the earth

Chap. 14.8. *isa.* 21 9. *iere* 51.8.

ſhall bewaile her, and lament for her, which haue committed fornication, & liued in pleaſure with her, when they ſhal ſee the ſmoke of that her burning, 10 And ſhal ſtand afar off for feare of her torment, ſaying, Alas, alas, that great citie Babylon, the mightie citie: for in one houre is thy iudgment come. 11 And the marchants of the earth ſhal weepe and waile ouer her: for no man byeth their ware any more. 12 The ware of gold and ſiluer, and of precious ſtone, and of pearles, and of fine linen, and of purple, and of ſilke, and of ſkarlet, and of all maner of Thyne wood, and of al veſſels of yuorie, and of al veſſels of moſt precious wood, and of braſſe, & of yron, and of marble, 13 And of cinamom, and odours, and oyntments, and frankincenſe, and wine, and oyle, and fine floure, and wheate, and beaſtes, and ſheepe, and horſes, and charets, and ſeruants, & ſoules of men, 14 (And the apples that thy ſoule luſted after, are departed frō thee, and al things which were fat and excellent, are departed from thee, & thou ſhalt finde them no more) 15 The marchants of theſe things which were waxed riche, ſhall ſtand afarre off from her, for feare of her torment, weeping, and wayling, 16 And ſaying, Alas, alas, that great citie, that was clothed in fine linen and purple, and ſkarlet, and gilded with gold and precious ſtone, & pearles. 17 For in one houre ſo great riches are come to deſolation. And euery ſhip-maſter, and all the people that occupie ſhips, and

and ſhipmen, & whoſoeuer traffike on the ſea, ſhall ſtand afarre off, 18 And crie, when they ſee the ſmoke of that her burning, ſaying, What citie *was* like vnto this great citie! 19 And they ſhal caſt duſt on their heads, and crie weeping, and wayling, and ſay, Alas, alas, that great citie, wherein were made rich al that had ſhippes on the ſea by her coſtlineſſe: for in one houre ſhe is made deſolate. 20 O heauen, reioyce of her, and ye holy Apoſtles & Prophets: for God hath puniſhed her to be reuenged on her for your ſakes. 21 Then a mightie Angel tooke vp a ſtone like a great milſtone, * & caſt it into the ſea, ſaying, With ſuch violence ſhall ỹ great citie Babylon be caſt, & ſhalbe found no more. 22 And the voyce of harpers, & muſicians, & of pipers, and trumpetters ſhalbe heard no more in thee, & no craftſman, of whatſoeuer craft *he be*, ſhall be found any more in thee: & the ſound of a milſtone ſhalbe heard no more in thee. 23 And the light of a candle ſhal ſhine no more in thee: and the voyce of the bridegrome & of ỹ bride ſhal be heard no more in thee: for thy marchants were ỹ great men of ỹ earth, & with thine inchantments were deceiued all nations. 24 And in her was found ỹ blood of the Prophets, and of the Saintes, and of all that were ſlaine vpon the earth. *Iere. 51.63.*

CHAP. 19. *The battell with the beaſt.*

AND after theſe things I heard a great voyce of a great multitude in heauen, ſaying, Hal-

Iehu-iah, ſalnation, & glory, and honour, and power *be* to the Lord our God. 2 For true and righteous *are* his iudgements: for he hath condemned ỹ great whore, which did corrupte the earth with her fornication, and hath auenged the blood of his ſeruants, *shed* by her hande. 3 And againe they ſaid, Halleiu-iah: and her ſmoke roſe vp for euermore. 4 And the foure and twentie Elders, and the foure beaſts fell downe, & worſhipped God that ſate on the throne, ſaying, Amen, Halleiu-iah. 5 Then a voyce came out of the throne, ſaying, Praiſe our God, all ye his ſeruants, and ye that feare him, both ſmall and great. 6 And I heard like a voyce of a great multitude, and as the voyce of many waters, and as the voyce of ſtrong thundrings, ſaying, Halleiu-iah: for the Lord, the God, that Almightie one hath reigned. 7 Let vs be glad and reioyce, and giue glory to him: for the marriage of that Lambe is come, and his wife hath made her ſelfe readie. 8 And to her was graunted, that ſhe ſhould be arayed with pure fine linnen and ſhining: for the fine linnen is the righteouſneſſe of Saints. 9 Then he ſaid vnto me, Write, Bleſſed *are* they which are called vnto ỹ Lambs ſupper. And he ſaid vnto me, Theſe wordes of God are true. 10 And I fell before his feete * to worſhip him: but he ſaid vnto me, See thou doo it not: I am thy fellowe ſeruant, and one of thy brethren, which haue the teſtimonie of Ieſus. Worſhippe God

Mat. 22.2.

Chap. 22.9.

for

the testimonie of Iesus is the Spirite of prophecie. 11 And I saw heauen open, & behold, a white horse, & he that sate vpon him, was called Faithfull & true, & he iudgeth and fighteth righteously. 12 And his eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crownes: & he had a name written, that no man knew but himselfe. 13 And he was clothed with a garment dipt in blood, and his name is called, THE WORD OF GOD. 14 And the hostes which were in heauen, followed him vpon white horses, clothed with fine linnen white & pure. 15 And out of his mouth went out a sharpe sword, that with it he should smite the heathen: for he shall rule them with a rod of yron: for he it is that treadeth the wine presse of the fiercenes and wrath of Almighty God. 16 And he hath vpon his garment, and vpon his thigh a name writte, *THE KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS. 17 And I sawe an Angel stand in the sunne, who cried with a loude voyce saying to all the foules that did flie by the mids of heauen, Come, & gather your selues together vnto ỹ supper of ỹ great God, 18 That ye may eate the flesh of Kings, and the flesh of hie Captaines, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, & the flesh of all free men and bond men, and of small and great. 19 And I sawe the beast, and the Kings of the earth, and their hostes gathered together to make battell

Psal. 2.9.

Chap. 17.14. 1.Tim. 1.16.

tell against him, that sate on the horse, & against his armie. 20 But the beast was taken, & with him ỹ false prophet ỹ wrought miracles before him, whereby hee deceiued them that receiued the beastes marke, & them that worshipped his image. These both were aliue cast into a lake of fire, burning wᵗ brimstone. 21 And ỹ remnant were slaine with ỹ sword of him that sitteth vpon the horse, which commeth out of his mouth, and all the foules were filled with their flesh.

CHAP. 20. *Satan bound. 8 Gog and Magog. 12 The bookes of iudgement.*

AND I sawe an Angel come downe frō heauen, hauing the key of ỹ bottomlesse pit, & and a great chaine in his hand. 2 And he tooke the dragon that old serpent, which is ỹ deuil and Satan, and he bounde him a thousand yeeres: 3 And cast him into the bottomlesse pit, & he shut him vp, & sealed *the doore* vpon him, that he should deceiue the people no more, till the thousand yeeres were fulfilled, for after that he must be loosed for a litle season. 4 And I sawe seates: & they sate vpon them, & iudgement was giuen vnto them, & *I saw* ỹ soules of them that were beheaded for the witnesse of Iesus, and for the word of God, & which did not worship the beast, nor his image, neither had taken his marke vpon their foreheads, or on their hands: & they liued & reigned with Christ a thousand yeere. 5 But the rest of the dead men shall not liue againe, vntil the thousand yeeres be finished: this

in the first resurrection. 6 Blessed & holy is he, that hath part in ỹ first resurrection: *for* on such the second death hath no power: but they shall be the Priestes of God, and of Christ, and shall reigne with him a thousand yere. 7 And when the thousand yeeres are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, 8 And shal go out to deceiue the people, which are in ỹ foure quarters of the earth: *men* *Gog & Magog, to gather them together to battel, whose number *is* as the sande of the sea. 9 And they went vp into the plaine of the earth, & they compassed the tents of the Saints about, and the beloued citie: but fire came downe from God out of heauen, and deuoured them. 10 And ỹ deuill that deceiued them, was cast into a lake of fire and brimstone, where that beast and that false prophet *are*, and shalbe tormented euen day and night for euermore. 11 And I sawe a great white throne, and one that sate on it, from whose face fled away both the earth and heauen, and their place was no more found. 12 And I sawe the dead, both great and small stand before God: & the bookes were opened, & *another booke was opened, which is *the booke* of life, & the dead were iudged of those things which were written in the bookes, according to their works. 13 And the sea gaue vp her dead, which were in her, and death & hell deliuered vp the dead, which were in them: and they were iudged euery man according to their works. 14 And death and hell

Ezek. 39. 2.

Chap. 3. 5. and 21. 27 phil. 4. 3.

were

were cast into the lake of fire: this is ỹ second death. 15 And whosoeuer was not found written in the booke of life, was cast into the lake of fire.

CHAP. 21. *The newe Ierusalem descending from heauen.*

Isai. 65.17 *&* 66. 22. *2. Pet.* 3.13. AND I saw * a new heauen, and a new earth: for * the first heauen, & the first earth were passed away, & there was no more sea. 2 And I Iohn saw the holy citie newe Ierusalem come downe from God out of heauen, prepared as a bride trimmed for her husband. 3 And I heard a great voyce out of heauen, saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shalbe their God with them.

Chap. 7.7. *Isai.* 25.8. 4 * And God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes: & there shall be no more death, neither sorowe, neither crying, neither shall there be any more paine: for the first things are passed.

Isai. 43.19 *2. cor.* 5.17. 5 And he that sate vpon the throne, sayd, * Behold, I make all things new: and he sayd vnto me, Write: for these words are faithfull & true.

Chap. 22.8. *and* 22.13. 6 And he said vnto me, * It is done: I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning & the end. I wil giue to him that is athirst, of the well of the water of life freely. 7 He that ouercometh, shal inherite all things, and I wilbe his God, & he shall be my sonne. 8 But ỹ fearefull & vnbeleeuing, and the abominable & murtherers, and whoremongers, & sorcerers, and idolaters, & all lyars

shall

shall haue their part in the lake, which burneth with fire and brimstone, which is the second death. 9 And there came vnto me one of the seuen Angels, which had ỹ seuen vials full of the seuen last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come: I wil shew thee the Bride, ỹ Lambes wife. 10 And he caried me away in ỹ spirit to a great and an hie mountaine, & he shewed me that great citie, that holy Ierusalem, descending out of heauen from God, 11 Hauing the glory of God and her shining was like vnto a stone most precious, as a Iasper stone cleare as chrystall, 12 And had a great wal and hie, and had twelue gates, & at the gates twelue Angels, and and the names written, which are the twelue tribes of the children of Israel. 13 On the East part *there were* three gates, *and* on the North side three gates, on the South side three gates, & on the West side three gates. 14 And the wal of the citie had twelue foundations, & in them the names of ỹ Lambs twelue Apostles. 15 And he that talked with me, had a golden reede to measure the citie withall, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof. 16 And ỹ citie lay foure square, and the length is as large as the breadth of it, and he measured the citie with the reede, twelue thousand furlongs: & the length, and the breadth, & the height of it are equall. 17 And he measured the wal therof, an hundreth fourtie & foure cubites, by the measure of man, that is, of the Angel. 18 And the building of the

wall

wall of it was of Iasper: and the citie was pure gold like vnto cleare glasse. 19 And the foundations of the wall of the citie were garnished with all maner of precious stones: the first foundation *was* Iasper: the second of Saphire: the third of a Chalcedonie: the fourth of an Emerauld: 20 The fift of a Sardonyx: the sixt of a Sardius: the seuenth of a Chrysolite: the eight of a Beryl: the ninth of a Topaz: the tenth of a Chrysoprasus: the eleuenth of a Iacinth: the twelfth of an Amethyst. 21 And ỹ twelue gates *were* twelue pearles, and euery gate *is* of one pearle, and the street of the citie *is* pure golde, as shining glasse. 22 And I sawe no Temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the
Isai. 60.19 Lambe are the Temple of it. 23 * And the citie hath no neede of the Sunne, neither of ỹ Moone to shine in it: for the glory of God did light it:
Isai. 60.3. and the Lambe is the light of it. 24 * And the people which are saued, shall walke in the light of it: & the Kings of the earth shall bring their
Isai. 60.11 glory and honour vnto it. 25 * And the gates of it shal not be shut by day: for there shalbe no night there. 26 And ỹ glory & honor of ỹ Gentiles shalbe brought vnto it. 27 And there shal enter into it none vncleane thing, neither whatsoeuer worketh abomination or lies: but they
Isai. 60.11. which are written in the * Lambes Booke of life.

CHAP. 22. *The riuer and tree of life.*

AND he shewed me a pure riuer of water of life, cleare as chrystall, proceeding out of the

the throne of God, and of the Lambe. 2 In the mids of the ſtreete of it and of either ſide of the riuer, was the tree of life, which bare twelue maner of fruits, and gaue fruite euery moneth: and the leaues of the tree *ſerued* to heale the nations with. 3 And there ſhalbe no more curſe, but the throne of God, and of the lambe ſhall be in it, and his ſeruants ſhall ſerue him. 4 And they ſhall ſee his face, and his name ſhalbe in their foreheads. 5 *And there ſhall be no night there, and they neede no candle, neither light of the ſunne: for the Lord God giueth them light, and they ſhall reigne for euermore: 6 And he ſayd vnto mee, Theſe wordes are faithfull and true: and the Lord God of the holy Prophets ſent his Angel to ſhewe vnto his ſeruants the things which muſt ſhortly be fulfilled. 7 Beholde, I come ſhortly, Bleſſed *is* he that keepeth the wordes of the prophecie of this booke. 8 And I am Iohn, which ſawe and heard theſe things: and when I had heard and ſeene, *I fell downe to worſhip before the feete of the Angel, which ſhewed me theſe things. 9 But he ſaid vnto me, See thou *doe* it not: for I am thy fellowe ſeruant, and of thy brethren the Prophets, and of them which keepe the wordes of this booke: worſhip God. 10 And he ſaid vnto me, Seale not the words of the prophecie of this booke: for the time is at hand. 11 He that is vniuſt, let him be vniuſt ſtill: & he which is filthie, let him be filthie ſtill: and he that is righteous,

Iſai. 60. 19

Chap. 19. 10

righteous, let him be righteous ſtill: and he that is holy, let him be holy ſtill. 12 And beholde, I come ſhortly, and my reward is with me, * to
Rom. 2.6. *Chap.* 1.8. & 21. 6. *Iſa.* 41.4. & 44 6. giue euery man according as his worke ſhalbe. 13 I am * Alpha & Omega, the beginning and the end, the firſt and the laſt. 14 Bleſſed are they that do his cõmandements, that their right may be in ỹ tree of life, & may enter in through the gates into the citie. 15 For without ſhall be dogs, and enchanters, and whoremongers, and murtherers, & idolaters, and whoſoeuer loueth and maketh lies. 16 I Ieſus haue ſent mine Angel, to teſtifie vnto you theſe things in ỹ Churches, I am the roote & the generation of Dauid, and the bright morning ſtarre. 17 And the Spirit and the bride ſay, Come. And let him that
Iſai. 55.1. heareth, ſay, Come: and let him that is athirſt, come: and let whoſoeuer wil, take of the water of life freely. 18 For I proteſt vnto euery man that heareth the wordes of the prophecie of this booke, If any man ſhall adde vnto theſe thinges, God ſhall adde vnto him the plagues, that are written in this booke. 19 And if any man ſhal diminiſh of the wordes of the booke of this prophecie, God ſhal take away his part out of the booke of life, and out of the holy city, and from thoſe thinges which are written in this booke. 20 Hee which teſtifieth theſe thinges ſayeth, Surely, I come quickly. Amen. Euen ſo, come Lord Ieſus. 21 The grace of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, *be* with you all, Amen.

THE END.